SWALLOWED STAR

BOOK 03

I Eat Tomatoes

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Swallowed Star

(*The Legend Of Spacewalker*)

(*Tun Shi Xing Kong*)

(吞噬星空)

by

I Eat Tomatoes

(*Wo Chi Xi Hong Shi*)

(我吃西红柿)

Synopsis

Year 2056, in a city in the Yuan Jiang Su Jin area.

On top of a ruined, shattered six story residential apartment sits a teenager wearing a combat vest, militaristic trousers, and alloyed battle boots.

On his back is a hexagonal shield and equipped is a blood-shadow battle knife.

He sits there silently on the edge of the roof. At this time, the sparkling sky was shining and there was a refreshing breath within the air that blew towards him.

However, there was only silence within the ruined, deserted city, with an occasional howl that makes your heart skip a beat.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the team @ Wuxia Translations, Translation Nations, and Qidian International.

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Volume 7: Rebirth

Chapter 1 – Assembling a Spaceship?

Luo Feng's return made his parents very happy. However Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan didn't know that within the short span of three to four days, Luo Feng had experienced so much! Early the next day, just as the morning mist had permeated the air, Luo Feng bid his family goodbye again, preparing to head towards the Hong Ning headquarter city.

"You just got back and you are leaving." The dining table was filled with breakfast, his mother got up to push the wheelchair to send Luo Feng off.

"It'll be quick, I'll be back for lunch." Luo Feng laughed.

"Back for lunch? Mom will personally go get ingredients and cook a delicious meal of your favourites." Gong Xin Lan said happily.

Luo Feng nodded.

Even though he's had luxurious delicacies within the virtual wargod palace, much better than what his mother cooks, whenever the smell of his mother's cooking permeates the air, Luo Feng would feel a sense of joy from the bottom of his heart.

"Dad, mom, I'll be leaving. When afternoon comes, I'll give you all a surprise." Luo Feng laughed mischievously and ran towards the auto jet.

“Surprise?”

Sitting on the wheelchair, Luo Hong Guo and his wife Gong Xin Lan looked at each other curiously.

******

The dark blue triangular auto jet swiftly flew from the Ming Yue district, heading straight towards west asia, towards the Hong Ning headquarter city.

“I’ve always wanted to let my parents use the spirits of nature, this time, I can finally trade for some of them.” Luo Feng was excited and filled with glee.

“Luo Feng.”

A clear crisp voice resounded in his head.

“Babata?” Luo Feng channeled a thread of spirit energy into the space within his wrist guard.

“Luo Feng, this is a good chance to exchange.” Babata continued, “while the spirits of nature may have some benefits and powers, its sum is too little. It’s only useful to normal people and student levels. To a star traveller, it hardly does anything! After obtaining some spirits of nature, let’s see if there are any other treasures we

can exchange for! Your head may have been hiding some good stuff."

"Oh, ok, anyway I officially have 4.5 crystals, I can exchange for a total of 90 stars worth of stuff." Luo Feng's thoughts flowed, "I'll exchange for a few spirits of nature, whatever else you can decide."

"Haha, relax, let me handle it!" Babata said.

……

Location: Hong Ning Base, a large spaceship is in construction.

Donning an expensive black fur clothing, wearing a hat, and looking around 60 years old, a silver haired old lady walked out from the ship's entrance. The three underlings who were waiting below from earlier immediately went to receive her.

"Chairman."

"Chairman, are we returning now?"

Out of these three underlings, two of them were actually wargods, and the last was a butler.

"No rush, we'll stay in the Hong Ning headquarter city for three days. While our negotiations with Hong didn't succeed, we can still look for other investigators and guards." The silver haired old

lady's voice was prominent and her face expressionless. Yet when she surveyed the surroundings with her gaze, no one around her dared make eye contact.

Even though she was a woman!

She was the king of the entire earth's underground, the HR Alliance's chairman!

"Pay attention to Hong Ning headquarter city, if you discover any of the three guards or the six investigators, let me know." The silver haired old lady ordered.

"Yes." The butler beside her acknowledged.

"Let's go." The old lady ordered.

Very quickly, a lavish Maybach car seemingly filled with history, under the underlings' protection rolled up. This old lady entered the car. As the wheels began moving, the car left the Dojo of Limits headquarters.

Approximately one hour later.

A dark blue auto jet descended from above, landing in the landing pad beside A youth donning black casual clothes with a backpack jumped out and the cabin door closed behind him automatically.

“Investigator.”

“Investigator.”

The base’s guards saw Luo Feng, bowing with respect.

Luo Feng had on a backpack, walking briskly towards the entrance. These spaceship bases, even within the Dojo of Limits, few higher ranked personnel had the authority to enter. Barging in without access permission would only result in the defense systems shooting and killing. Yet obviously...Luo Feng was one with permission and clearance of the highest degrees.

“Investigator.”

“Investigator.”

Under the greetings of a few personnel in blue, Luo Feng went straight to look for the Head.

.....

At the same time...

“Chairman, Dojo of Limits’ Investigator Luo has just entered the base.” News swiftly reached reached the Chairman of the HR Alliance.

******

Walking to the entrance of the ship's construction.

"This is an interstellar transport ship." Babata's voice was filled shock and curiously as it resounded in Luo Feng's mind, "I wonder what damage it has received. I would really like to survey it, but its system is completely locked down, no way I'm getting in."

"What will you get from surveying it? This is the Head's ship." Luo Feng communicated.

"Simpleton, since the Yun Mo Planet Ship is beyond repair, I now have to think of a way...to leave the earth. Without a ship, how will you leave?" Babata retorted.

"This ship can still fly?" Luo Feng asked.

"Nope, this interstellar transport ship is damaged and hasn't flown for too long. I estimate several parts have rusted and corroded; over time's endless flow...even the strongest masters will decay. A completely perfect condition interstellar transporter, left underground for thousands of years will also have problems, much less one with damage."

Luo Feng nodded: "Then why are you so stunned?"

“It is damaged, but it proves a point that there’s still many universe spaceship remains on earth. Get more remains, we might be able to build a small ship from them.” Babata excitedly said.

“Build a spaceship?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“That’s a small task! Don’t you know who you are talking to, I am a living AI! My knowledge compartment has stored vast amounts of information, several high level civilization information etc. With enough machinery, materials, robots etc, a large interstellar battleship is possible too. Don’t even mention putting together a simple spaceship.” Babata said confidently.

Luo Feng was filled with curiosity towards the vast universe.

Especially the virtual universe network, according to Babata, entering the network would allow him to meet with the vast universe’s countless cultures and clans.

“Universe…”

While his heart wasn’t ready to wander the universe yet, building a ship capable of just that was always a good idea.

“Babata, I can buy a lot of machinery, materials for you to build.” Luo Feng said.

“Oh…”

Within the virtual space, Babata's face had a helpless expression. "Covering long distances in the vast universe demands a lot from a ship! It's not just the internal power supply system etc, the body itself has to be durable! The material on earth, strength and durability wise doesn't even come close. Hence, the best option is to get remains from spaceships and rebuild from there."

"This isn't urgent, once you've reached the Star level, checking out other planets occasionally wouldn't be too far." Babata said.

.....

Regarding the building of the spaceship, Lou Feng left it to Babata to plan, putting his own energy and concentration into his own training.

Within the ship, the room was still.

"Head." Luo Feng bowed.

"Luo Feng, sit," A black dressed Hong sat crossed legged on a praying mat, Luo Feng followed and sat crossed legged.

"For what purpose have you come?" Hong looked towards Luo Feng.

"I would like to exchange for some things" Luo Feng directly

said, “using the Mu Ya crystals!”

“Haha, good.”

Hong couldn’t help but smile, he was very clear on the Mu Ya crystals’ abilities! Be it for his own training or to feed the growth of his cloud contact vine, Hong needed them! Thus, he was very appreciative of others coming to exchange their crystals.

“This is the exchange catalog, it’s more detailed than what you saw before!” Hong waved his hand.

Hu!

Within the dark quiet room, a large screen appeared, displaying a large number of goods, with their explanations and their price.

“It’s definitely more than before.” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up.

“Whatever you want to exchange for, just exchange.” Hong looked towards Luo Feng, “You should be able to exchange for 90 stars worth of goods. If you have more Mu Ya crystals, you can also use them.” Finishing his last line, Hong’s face revealed a smile, he had already guessed that in the Misty Island treasure hunt, there would be people who secretly hide one or two Mu Ya crystals.

Luo Feng was glued to the screen.

“Spirits of nature, three of no. 2, two of no. 5, and two of no. 9.” Luo Feng immediately reported.

Hong nodded as he heard that.

He wasn’t afraid of Luo Feng buying, in contrary, he was more afraid of him not buying!

“Babata, have you seen the screen?” Luo Feng’s used his thoughts to ask.

“I can see it. I knew early on that you earthlings wouldn’t have any treasure. And as I suspected, you guys sure are poor, using these toys as treasures.” Despite having prepared mentally, Babata was still disappointed with the low level of goods Hong had displayed.

“Ah, there’s a small treasure.” Babata shouted, “Luo Feng, the ancient apparatus right at the bottom, the gravity room.”

Luo Feng quickly looked below.

Ancient gravity room: 1-1000 times earth’s gravity, price 90 stars.

Luo Feng was shocked!

Isn’t this the renowned training device gravity room? In the previous exchange, it wasn’t there. This time, Hong actually could

bear to take it out, looks like he really wants the crystals. However…it's priced so high? 90 stars, that was 4.5 Mu Ya crystals, looks like there's very little in the entire world.

The Head purposely priced it at 90 stars, obviously to lure Luo Feng to use all his stars to buy.

"Head, this ancient gravity room, I want it." Luo Feng said.

"Oh?"

Hong looked shocked at Luo Feng, "Looks like you've really had some other findings, this ancient gravity room..is very efficient for training, I've always been reluctant to sell it. Now that you want it, I'll sell it! Those spirits of nature, do you still want those?" The price of the ancient gravity room was 90 stars, officially, Luo Feng could only afford that much.

"Add on two more portions of dragon blood, and two portions of 100 year black crow root, sum it all up." Luo Feng said.

"Spirits of nature, two 1000 year black crow roots equate to three stars…a total of 20 stars. Along with the gravity room, it's a total of 110 stars!" Hong was shocked as he looked at Luo Feng.

110 stars, that's worth 5.5 Mu Ya Crystals!

5 Mu Ya Crystals appeared from Luo Feng's black casual shirt, plus the 0.5 owed to him from Hong.

“Tsk tsk, Luo Feng, your earnings this time is not small at all.” Hong smiled.

“Indeed it wasn’t, no one else saw.” Luo Feng smiled, “however in an instant, my pocket is empty.”

“Spirits of nature, you’ll receive the moment you leave! As for the ancient gravity room, you’ll have to wait a few days, I’ll have people to send it to your place.” Hong was happy, the entire earth’s powers only attained a total of how many crystals? And knowing its capabilities, everyone was trying to vie with each other for more, who would sell them?

And Luo Feng sold them, this made Hong’s mood extremely good.

……

As Luo Feng walked out of the cabin door, his hand held a silver briefcase, filled with the spirits of nature.

“Investigator.”

Luo Feng was shocked, in front of him stood a silver haired old lady in lavish black fur clothing. Surrounded by three underlings, she smiled as she spoke with proficient chinese, “How are you, Investigator Luo, allow me to slightly disturb you, you can call me Isadora! I wonder if I have the honor of having a cup of coffee with

investigator Luo?”

“Isadora?” the name immediately jolted Luo Feng’s memory.

The underground empress of the world, the HR Alliance’s chairman...Isadora !

Chapter 2 – To Meet Again

As a star traveller, Luo Feng was aware of earth's important figures. Isadora! This was earth's underground empress, her stories could be written into a series of books.

Within a private room of a quiet coffee shop in the Hong Ning headquarter city.

Luo Feng and Isadora were sitting facing each other.

"Lady Isadora." Luo Feng opened the sugar packet, pouring into the coffee cup, stirring gently, "I wonder what you need from me?"

"Investigator Luo is so direct, I too shall be frank." Isadora smiled, wrinkles appearing at the side of her eyes, "The big Misty Island excavation. Everybody from every side fought for the Mu Ya Crystals, invigilator Luo's power could actually match the 3rd and 4th representatives, it was definitely an eye opener for everybody!"

Luo Feng smiled, the incident definitely raised him to the same level as those three representatives.

"Your earnings this time were not small either." Isadora looked at Luo Feng, "My HR Alliance really want those crystals, of course, the price can be yours to decide. We'll be very fair."

Luo Feng laughed.

Mu Ya Crystal?

He understood that the whole world and it's powers were going to be fighting to acquire them, they had many uses, one was to raise a student level 8 or 9, within a month's time, to enter the star traveller level. Meaning...one crystal could create a new representative!

The earth only had so few representatives? To the five big countries, one representative was akin to a mobile nuclear weapon!

"Stupid, another willing to use the Mu Ya crystal to create another star traveller level 1." Within the virtual space, Babata donned a lavish emperor robe, sitting at the dining table and eating while saying, cursing, "actually using Mu Ya Crystals, such a treasure, wasting them on creating level 1 star travellers, what a waste!"

It was indeed a waste!

Mu Ya Crystals were nothing to the master of the Yun Mo Planet, but he did collect a lot of them, and they were considered treasures within the universe...yet within the universe, a star traveller level 1 was nothing but small fry, there were too many of them and they were the weakest of the lot. Who would waste a crystal to create such a warrior?

Even Hong, Thunder God couldn't bear to go help out the wargods. Without the crystal, reaching the star level would be very

hard for them. With it however, their chances were better.

……

However, on earth, a star traveller was already amongst the elite of earth.

“Mu Ya Crystals? My apologies, I just exchanged mine for these with my Head.” Luo Feng looked apologetic.

“Oh, it’s like that.” Chairman Isadora looked at Luo Feng, “Investigator Luo, are there any left?” Even if it’s one crystal, it can still create one more representative!”

Luo Feng gave a mysterious smile.

Chairman Isadora immediately caught on, understanding Luo Feng still had some hidden.

“How about this, Lady Isadora, I’ll personally go visit you next time.” Luo Feng laughed, “However, I prefer ancient civilization items, like spaceships or whatever’s weird and out of this world.”

“Oh?” Isadora was shocked.

To the countries, these ancient items were secret, as studying the science behind these items could lead to amazing discoveries.

“Alright, I’ll prepare a list and document, awaiting your arrival.” Isadora laughed.

A few ancient remains for Mu Ya Crystal, she didn’t hesitate.

******

Luo Feng was clear, most of earth’s ancient civilization remains were already discovered, whatever could be taken have long been taken! Whatever Hong and the others couldn’t take away, he couldn’t possibly take himself! Since that was the case, he could only come up with ways to work with the countries, HR Alliance and dojos, to see if he can get materials and whatnot from them to build his ship.

It was a good trade!

Anyway, the crystals were treasures everybody wanted!

……

That afternoon, Luo Feng sat in his auto jet back to the Yang Zhou city where his house was.

After lunch.

Luo Feng’s house’s 2nd level, had Luo Feng, Luo Hua and his parents, the family of four.

“Dad, mum, Luo Hua, after swallowing you’ll feel your whole body go limp and numb, you’ll have a refreshing feeling!” Luo Feng put the already sliced three pieces of green pulp in front of them, these were all from the same spirit of nature. It’s medicinal effects were very gentle, non-damaging to the body.

However, to give a spirit of nature to three ordinary people to consume, no one would ever do that. It was simply too much of a waste!

One spirit of nature could help a higher level fighter rise straight to become a middle level wargod or higher wargod, and its large amounts of medicinal properties that would gather in the body, absorbing over time, raising one’s power very quickly! That was why one spirit of nature was equivalent to a high level wargod.

Giving it to normal people...

The most it would do was create a warlord level fighter!

“It’s quite sweet.” Luo Hong Huo lightly bit into it, putting it into his mouth.

“It’s nicer than carrots.” Gong Xin Lan commented.

“It’s delicious.” Luo Hua swallowed it down.

Luo feng looked as his family finished it, saying: “Oh, this may taste only a little better than carrots, but its price is much higher than a carrot! It’s worth more than the 1000 year old Black Crow root by quite a bit.”

“What!”

“Worth more than the black crow root?”

Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan and Luo Hua were all shocked. The last time Luo Feng was trapped in the Archeological ruin 9, the family faced a predicament...it was Luo Hua who used the 1000 year black crow root to become one of the leading eight prominent business figures. The price of that root was already unbelievable.

“One bite was worth a few hundred million?” Luo Hong Guo and the other two looked at each other.

“Dad, mum, you cannot use money to measure its worth. There are many treasures on earth money can’t buy.” Luo Feng shook his head, “these spirits of nature, you all just ate one. I’ve brought in my briefcase eight of them, along with two portions of dragon blood, Luo Hua, these will be left in your care.”

“Eight spirits of nature? Two portions of dragon blood?” His little brother Luo Hua was too shocked for words.

Luo Feng laughed when he saw this.

Different positions meant one looked at problems with different perspectives. Just power wise, once he accepted his master, he was on the same standing as Hong and Thunder God! To these two who were high above everybody else, stronger than the five countries by a little. This position meant that the earth's currency wasn't worth much at all.

And talking about position...

As Yun Mo Planet's master's only disciple, this position itself was greater than even the Emperor of the Silverblue Empire that leads eight galaxies. It was a pity...Yun Mo Planet's master was dead, whatever power he had before was gone. Luo Feng was still really grateful, if Yun Mo Planet hadn't been destroyed, he wouldn't have had the chance to become the disciple of Yun Mo planet's master.

.....

Looking at his parents and little brother trying to move his blood red battle knife, Luo Feng laughed.

"Babata, scan for me, my parents and little brother's body conditions." Luo Feng ordered, "what level."

"Your father is a student level 3, mother is a student level 2, and your little brother is a student level 3. Normal people's absorption efficiencies are really low, that spirit of nature, though split to three, each portion was no less than one portion of dragon blood. With one portion of dragon blood, your normal fighter could become a beginner warrior." Babata said.

Luo Feng was satisfied.

As long as his family was healthy, that was enough. He never once expected his parents to go out in the wild to kill monsters.

“Dad, mom, I have something to tell you.” Luo Feng said.

“What is it?” Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan were still lost in the refreshing feeling brought about by consuming the spirits of nature.

“I’ve got news, we still have relatives that are alvie!” Luo Feng said.”

“Alive?” his parents immediately got excited,” Little Feng, quickly, how many?”

“Right now I’ve discovered two.” Luo Feng said directly, “one is mom’s younger cousin Gong Xin Hua.”

“My uncle’s Little Hua?” His mother was a bit happy and surprised, but clearly not extremely happy. During the Great Nirvana, she was still too young to remember much. Later amidst escaping, only did she learn about such a relative from Luo Feng’s grandfather. That’s why she didn’t have too vivid a memory of Gong Xin Hua.

“What about the other relative?” Luo Hong Guo asked.

“The 2nd, is your great aunt Luo Hong Qin, also my grandfather’s sister. Her child Tang Chen is also alive. Right now Tang Chen is married with a pair of twins. The twins are the same age as me this year.” Luo Feng said.

“My aunt is still alive?”

“Aunt is alive?” Luo Hong Guo’s eyes opened wide.

Seeing them made Luo Feng feel a sense of longing, when they used to live in an inexpensive rented place, he would often hear his father mention this great aunt, because before the Great Nirvana period, his dad could already remember things, and his impression of this great aunt was very deep! That’s why when reminiscing about relatives, besides Luo Feng’s grandmother and father, it was all about this great aunt.

“My aunt used to always bring good food when she visited, she even bought me a hand held game device, I still remember her appearance vividly.” Luo Hong Guo’s tears flowed, “To think she’s still alive, right, back then, they were in Japan on holiday when disaster erupted. They were trapped there. Later on, that area expanded and became Kyoto headquarter city.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Japan is considered a part of China, the place with the highest

survival rates during the Grand Nirvana period.

“Little Feng, do you know where your grandfather’s sister is now? I would like to go immediately to visit.” Luo Hong Guo said.

“Right now?” Luo Feng looked towards his mother and she nodded at him.

How many years have passed.

Who could wait that long?

“Then let us prepare to leave immediately.” Luo Feng nodded.

******

That afternoon 4pm, the dark blue auto jet was parked at one of the eight great cities of Kyoto headquarter city, Tian Jin city, at the Dojo of Limits neighborhood districts.

Luo Feng didn’t allow anybody to see him off, just his family of four sitting in a car, heading towards his father’s aunt’s house.

……

“Director, Tian Jin city’s report.”

A bald middle aged man received a file from his underling, waved for him to leave before opening it and looking at the report.

“Luo Feng has come to the Kyoto headquarter city?” The bald middle aged man was shocked, immediately picking up the telephone and dialing on the secret line.

“Put me through to the no.1 senior official.”

Chapter 3 – Cell Phone

China's returns from the Misty Island incident were definitely not bad. However, Mu Ya Crystals were treasures, no one would ever complain about having more! When Luo Feng reached Kyoto headquarter city, news spread quickly, China's top executives began moving immediately. Luo Feng was however keeping a low profile sitting in a normal car with his family going to visit his great aunt.

******

An apartment in a small district.

Ring, ring.

Luo Feng and his family stood outside one of the several villas lined up together, father Luo Hong Guo pressing the doorbell.

"Don't bother, there's nobody home. The house's old lady has been hospitalized, her son and his wife have all gone to look after her." An old man walking his dog shouted.

"Oh?"

Luo Feng spreaded his spiritual force to search the compound, there was indeed nobody.

“May I ask sir, which hospital?” Luo Feng asked.

“It’s definitely Tian Jin’s People’s Number One Hospital.” He said, “The Tang family is rich, it’d be weird if they didn’t go to that one.”

……

Luo Feng and his family took the car, one in front beside the chauffeur and the other three behind.

“My aunt seems to be doing fine, living in a villa, much better than what we used to live in.” Luo Hong Guo smiled, “I can rest easy.”

“My aunt’s family’s grandson, granddaughter were all very clever when they were young. They had good scores and they went to college at the age of 15. Right now they are working in a government important research facility, that villa was given to them by that facility.” Luo Feng said, this was all information included in the file sent over.

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan laughed: “Brilliant! Just like my two children.”

Luo Feng and Luo Hua couldn’t help but look at each other.

“Wahaha, this is called talent!” Within the wrist guard space, Babata, who was comfortably lying in a bubble bath laughed, “Luo

Feng, looks like your mental aptitude probably came from your Luo family's bloodline. Being born after the Great Nirvana period with the Luo bloodline, you four, not bad."

"I mean just look, your little brother is also really smart, being able to perform so well in the stock market by relying only on himself. Your Aunt's granddaughter and grandson all has your aunt Luo Hong Qin's blood, hence their cleverness."

"People with high mental aptitudes are naturally clever." Babata said, "Of course they are nowhere near you...haha..."

.....

Tian Jin city, one of the eight great cities of Kyoto headquarter city, the People's Number One hospitall, in a special patient ward.

An old lady with full white hair lay on the bed, her face pale and void of blood. Laying on the sofa beside was a middle aged couple sleeping, and a pair of youths, a boy and a girl, by the side of the bed talking to the old lady.

"You people are?" the young girl curiously said as she turned to look at the entrance of the room.

There stood Luo Feng and his family.

Luo Hong Guo walked over, looking at the old lady on the bed whose breathing was a little uneasy. The old lady too looked

curiously at the middle aged man, before her expression began to change, clearly agitated: “You, you are…” This caused the middle aged couple on the sofa on the side to get up.

“Mom, what’s wrong?” The couple ran over.

“Who are you?” The middle aged man looked at Luo Hong Guo with some apprehension.

“You must be Tang Chen.” Luo Hong Guo looked back, “in a blink of an eye, we’ve grown old.”

“You are…” Tang Chen looked suspiciously at the person in front of him.

Luo Hong Guo couldn’t help but tear, looking towards the old lady, she too began to struggle to sit up, looking carefully at him: “You are…Hong Guo?”

“Yes, that’s me, Hong Guo! Aunt, you still recognize me.” Luo Hong Guo was clearly emotional.

“It really is Hong Guo, you look almost exactly like your father, that mouth…” The old lady excitedly extended her thin frail hand, holding onto Luo Hong Guo, “Hong Guo, you are still alive, your little aunt never thought that she’d be able to see you again in this life.”

“You are my older cousin?” The middle aged man looked at him.

“Yes.” Luo Hong Guo nodded.

“My god, this, it’s been over 40 years, Cousin! Cousin!!!” The middle aged man Tang Chen was emotional beyond compare, the Great Nirvana period had broken countless families, separating the survivors all over. With the travelling functions broken and communications gone then. The countries lost many household names and they vanished.

“I recognized you from one look” The old lady was extremely happy, “you look almost the same as my older brother. Hong Guo, where’s your dad and mom?”

Luo Hong Guo shook his head.

The old lady saw and sighed.

“Feng, Hua, come over.” Luo Hong Guo waved his hand and looked at the old lady, “Little aunt, these are my two children.”

“Hong Guo, back then you were still a little kid, in a blink of an eye, you have two sons, and they are so big. Come, let me see.” The old lady struggled hard to open her eyes wide, Luo Feng and Luo Hua walked close to the bed. The old lady looked carefully, “Hm, not bad, quite handsome, they have the looks of our Luo family!”

“Yong Qing, Yong Yuan, Little Feng, Little Hua, come over, you four children should have a good talk.” The old lady gestured.

Peng!

The ward door was suddenly kicked open, scaring a bunch of people within it. They all looked disapprovingly over. Three men walked in, a youth with a cold gaze along with two built men following behind. Seeing those three men, Little Aunt's entire family's expressions changed.

"What are you doing here!" Little Aunt's granddaughter Tang Yong Qing stepped up, face filled with rage.

"I'm here to tell you you only have three days to choose!" The youth with the cold gaze looked coldly at her, "Yong Qing, you should know my temper!"

"You, you should leave now, don't come here." Tang Yong Qing said.

Her brother Tang Yong Yuan stepped forward, angrily pointing at the youth: "Wang Xing An! Don't push it, my sister and I are top researchers at the research facility, you..."

"Bullshit!"

The youth gazed coldly at Tang Yong Yuan, "Your research facility isn't worth my attention, don't bring up this bullshit research. Punk, don't think I won't hurt you just because of your sister, I've given her three days...three days later, if she doesn't

submit to me. Not just your sister, you punk who already scolded me three times, I'll deal with you all!"

"Three days..." The youth raised three fingers at Tang Yong Qing, smiling evilly, "three more days...my beautiful Yong Qing, I really hope such a beautiful flower won't wither this way!"

Tang Yong Yuan was trembling with rage.

"Yong Qing, what's going on?" The middle aged couple beside asked.

"Dad, it's nothing." Yong Qing consoled them.

"Old man, listen well." The youth stared at Tang Chen, smiling, "three days later, if your daughter agrees to be my woman, your family will live a good life! However, if she doesn't... I'll see that your family goes to hell! Your fates, now lies within Yong Qing's hands, haha.."

Luo Feng was standing quietly at the side, Luo Hua looked towards him: Brother?"

"Don't rush, let's see more of it." Luo Feng said calmly.

Luo Hua nodded.

.....

Tang Chen and his wife were baffled, the old lady in the bed began to shout: “Yong Qing, just who is this man? What’s going on?”

“Wang Xing An. You already have so many women, why do you pester my sister!” Tang Yong Yuan raged.

“I have no other hobbies, my only hobby is to collect the many different types of women.” Wang Xing An smiled evilly, “Look at your sister…Tsk tsk tsk, her looks get 85 points, that scholar attitude can probably add another 20, exceeding the full 100. So alluring, my collection lacks such a woman. Yong Qing, if you resist, you know the outcome.”

“With such a sentence, just close your eyes and enjoy, no point resisting.” Wang Xing An smiled, “I really do not wish to personally destroy you, you know, when I destroyed the women who resisted me before, my heart ached so badly!” He grabbed his chest where his heart was.

“You pervert!” Tang Yong Yuan shouted.

“This kind of person, will never understand me.” Wang Xing An’s gaze had a look of grandeur, looking pitifully at Yong Yuan, “that expression of rage, tsk tsk, in my eyes, you are just an ant.” Turning to Yong Qing with a more despondent look, “Yong Qing, we were so good back then when we loved each other, wasn’t it? Do you have to force me to be like this, I’m not a person fond of using his fists.”

Yong Qing bit her lip.

“Pa! Pa!”

Applause rang.

Everyone in the ward turned over, even Wang Xing An and his henchmen turned curiously over, Luo Feng clad in a casual black shirt was lightly clapping his hands, smiling at Xing An.

“I really dislike people acting high and mighty in front of me.” Wang Xing An raised his head, gaze condescending and cold like a poisonous snake, “he clapped his hands, no. 2, go break his hands.”

“Yes.”

A sturdy man laughed.

“Stop.” Yong Qing shouted, looking at Wang Xing An and crying, “I’ll promise you, stop this, don’t be like this.”

“Haha, isn’t this good?” Wang Xing An raised his eyebrows, laughing, “No. 2 come back, I’ll be the bigger man and be magnanimous, I’ll spare him…”

“I never expected I’d encounter such a situation in Kyoto headquarter city.

A voice sounded.

Everyone turned, Luo Feng spoke. Wang Xing An's expression began to turn really ugly, gaze as cold as ice: "you must be looking for death."

"Don't interfere." Yong Qing looked nervously at Luo Feng, "He is Wang Xing An, a member of the Kyoto headquarter city's Wang family, and they have great economic authority, he is their family's first heir and his mother is from Kyoto headquarter city's main military sector..."

"I should call you cousin."

Luo Feng laughed, Yong Qing froze.

Luo Feng walked directly to Wang Xing An, calmly pacing himself.

"Who are you?" Wang Xing An stared hard at Luo Feng.

"Who am I?"

Luo Feng let out a laugh.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Several pieces of paper suddenly flew from the bedside, breaking into six pieces that danced around, six pieces capable of destroying, with a speed so fast no one could react, it flew past Xing An's two arms, legs, backbone and lower abdomen! A trickle of blood flew out, actually gathering itself in the air and forming little balls beside Luo Feng.

"You, you..." Wang Xing An wanted to struggle, but his entire body seemed paralyzed, only his head could move.

The entire place was silent, the two bodyguards were dumbfounded...they were clear, their enemy was a spirit reader! Everybody else including Yong Qing and others were staring at Luo Feng and his family, just what did this family do? Where did this fierce person come from?

"You dare to lay a hand on me." Wang Xing An gritted his teeth angrily.

"This expression of rage..." Luo Feng overlooked Wang Xing An, "in your words...in my eyes, you are only an ant."

"You are courting death, courting death." Wang Xing An's gaze was scary.

"Courting death?"

Luo Feng looked at him, "Tell me, who are you looking for to

take revenge for you? Your mom has connections with the main military sector? Oh, China's army's number 1 person, is a person exceeding the wargods 'Jia Yi'. And your Wang family is one of the nine big families under the HR Alliance, the highest position in the HR Alliance is the Chairman, Isadora!"

Luo Feng took out his handphone from his pocket, opening it, showing the screen to Wang Xing An, "These two numbers in the middle, one is Jia Yi and the other is the HR Alliance Chairman Isadora. If you want to look for them to take revenge for you, go ahead...don't look at the other numbers, the one on top is the Dojo of Limits Head Hong."

Chapter 4 – The Meeting

Wang Xing An was paralyzed on the floor of the ward as he looked at the phone screen's display.

Jia Yi? China's army's number one person!

Isadora? The underground empress who controls more than half of the world's economy!

Hong? The invincible no.1 in the world!

These three names, any one of them was sufficient to shake the world. And right now these young man had these numbers in his phone! To be able to take directly through phone to them, was harder than trying to call a country's government to discuss matters!

"This, this..."

Within the ward, Tang Yong Qing, Tang Yong Yuan and the rest of their family, along with Xing An and his bodyguards, everyone was staring at Luo Feng. Just who in the world was this youth in a casual black shirt and where did he come from?

"You're kidding me!!!"

Wang Xing An was raging uncontrollably, his expression was

struggling, lying on the floor staring at Luo Feng, “You think you can randomly show me numbers and expect me to stop? You say you know the HR Alliance Chairman and the Dojo of Limits head. I can say I’m Hong’s son, random lies, who can’t do that?”

“In this whole world, the people able to directly communicate with these three people are too few! There probably aren’t more than three people on this earth who can do such a thing at a young age like yours!” Wang Xing An laughed, “If I have such luck to meet one, I can go win the lottery!”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but laugh.

“Hmph.”

“I can see you are a spirit reader with some background.” Xing An lay on the floor, staring hard at Luo Feng, “You want to play with me civilly or with force?”

“Civil, force? Luo Feng curiously looked at Xing An. “Humor me.”

“Force, meaning you are crazy enough to kill me here! The hospital is a public place, under the base’s supervision system, it’s everywhere in this hospital...whatever goes on here, will all be recorded in the base’s recording system very clearly. When the Wang family goes through the court systems, even if you are a higher Wargod, you’ll still be put to death!”

“If you kill me, the court will put the death sentence on you, this is through force!”

“The civil way is simple, you let me go! I won’t leave, I’ll stay here outside this room…awaiting the headquarter city’s police force! Based on our own methods, we’ll see who’s more unlucky, you or I.” Wang Xing An stared at Luo Feng with a crazed look in his eyes.

Luo Feng looked down on him.

The Tang family within the room were scared silly, the legendary ‘Wang’ family, was not something they could deal with. Right now, this relative whom they just met…was actually a spirit reader. And not some ordinary person! No matter, their Tang family was a small one.

“Wang Xing An.” Luo Feng looked calmly at him.

“Speak.” Xing An stared back.

“Even if you are not afraid of death, you have some capability.” Luo Feng nodded, “However the amount of people who aren’t afraid of death are too many. Just like the fighters who are constantly fighting in the wild, constantly on the brink of death! I’m curious, why do you force so many women to submit to you?”

Xing An seemed a little proud from that: “Hobby! My one and only hobby! Every exceptional girl, are all creations from up above,

they are the best collector's items!"

"So if they refuse, you use force?" Luo Feng continued, "if they still refuse you destroy them. Why do you destroy girls who don't submit to you?"

"They are just ants! To be able to join my collection is their honor." Xing An confidently said.

Luo Feng stared at this youth on the floor.

"They have no history or feud with you or any relations. You actually get to decide what to do with people's fates?" Luo Feng looked at him, "You let me know whether you want to do this the civil way or the hard way."

"I'll tell you!"

"If we go by force, you die! I'm fine!"

"The civil way, you'll still die! I'm fine!"

Luo Feng looked calmly at him, "without any feud or history with you, even my cousin who does her country service as a researcher, has never done any evil. She rejects you and you want to send her family to hell? Just based on that one point...Xing An, I can tell you this!"

“I can wait for the police to come!”

“I can wait for the army

“I can wait for your Wang Family people to come down!”

“Even if you had ample preparation and then go to court! Whatever method, whatever background and connections, use them all, I hereby declare…The court’s final decision will be death…immediate execution!” Luo Feng’s voice was calm, almost like saying some very mundane.

Luo Feng looked at the two guards: “Take your master and leave! Clean him up!”

The two bodyguards looked at each other, one of them began dragging the paralyzed Xing An out, the other began cleaning up the bloodstains on the floor.

******

Outside the ward.

The hospital’s security guards along with the department head was there, however after reviewing the tapes in slow motion, they realized one of them was a spirit reader and were too frightened to go in.

“Master Wang!”

“Master Wang, are you ok?”

Head Tian and Head Fu ran quickly as they saw him being dragged out.

“Not dead yet!”

Xing An’s expression was cold.

Within Kyoto headquarter city, whoever with a little position would know of a few special princes, Wang Xing An was one of them! Director Tian, as a higher ranked department head in the hospital, definitely recognized the important people and treated Xing An with respect.

“Young master, what do we do?” The 2 bodyguards looked at Xing An.

“Kyoto headquarter city and its eight cities, among the elite, who doesn’t recognize me? Tian Jin city’s special forces head Li Dong has even drank with me before, he’ll be the first come! Also send this news to my Wang family.” Wang Xing An had a crazed look, “He’s crazy! Crazier than me!”

……

A red auto jet arrived, flying about the airspace above Tian Jin City.

The cabin door opened.

Dressed in a chinese tunic suit, Jia Yi sat there, posture upright.

“Mr Jia, we’ll arrive in Tian Jin city soon, Luo Feng is currently in the Number 1 hospital there.” Within the cabin, a middle aged man wearing glasses smiled as he said.

“Ok.”

“Luo Feng acquired quite a number of Mu Ya Crystals this time, if I can get one from him, it’ll be considered a success.” Jia Yi nodded, “remember, I’ll be doing the talking later, don’t interrupt! This Luo Feng’s growth speed is too shocking, on Misty Island he actually was on par with the 3rd chairman.”

“And he’s only 21! Too young!” Jia Yi lowered his voice, “You never know, in the future, he might be just like Hong and Thunder God, existences whose positions cannot be challenged.”

Hong, Thunder God!

That was a point where one’s strength was already above a country’s! The five great countries also treated the two with respect. Their overpowering strength dictates that. And with Luo Feng’s growth speed...a few years and he’s on par with the 3rd

chairman, it'll be no surprise if he catches up with Hong and Thunder God.

No choice! Luo Feng was too young, his potential was too shocking!

"Mr Jia, we've reached the hospital. Oh, why's there a police car below?"

"Let's go down." Jia Yi said seriously.

……

Kyoto headquarter city, main city sector, Wang Family.

"Who's their head of security?" Donning a lavish suit, a bald old man was roaring like a lion, "Don't tell me they've never seen a picture of Luo Feng before? After the news came from the Tian Jin special forces, he actually didn't stop the special forces from heading there!"

"Dad."

The middle aged man beside him said, "Luo Feng is a representative, you know it. Representative pictures and news are kept secret, hardly ever leaked! The head of security Old Li may have seen his picture, but not the real person, even after seeing the tape from the Tian Jin city, to be able to identify that young man as Luo Feng wouldn't be easy."

“Get out!”

“You’re still yapping! Hurry up and call Xing An, are you not satisfied with the amount of trouble he’s caused? Luo Feng! He’s on par with the 3rd chairman, our Wang Family cannot afford to offend him!” The head of the Wang Family lost his composure as he raged.

No choice!

To face such a figure, one that was on par with the 3rd chairman, one that even countries had to treat with respect, what was his one family? A few representatives were in the HR alliance as temporary guests, but they were temporary after all! Even the HR alliance wouldn’t easily mess with a regular representative, and don’t even mention one of Luo Feng’s level!

****

Tian Jin First hospital.

Special ward room.

The Tang family, along with the Luo family were in there. There was a huge number of special forces in armor outside.

“It’s quite a ruckus out there.” Luo Hua looked out, “big brother,

a huge number of police are here.”

“Don’t worry.”

Luo Feng took out his phone, “Hello, you’ve arrived at the hospital? Haha, right, I’m here. Can you see the large number of police? I’m right in the center of their barricade. Haha..no problem, I just met a piece of scum, handled it. Oh ok, you can come over then.”

……

Outside the ward.

“Team 1 is in position!”

“Team 2 is in position!”

“Team 3 is in position!”

Hearing the responses from the communicator, the head of the special forces Li Dong said, “The target is a spirit reader. Everyone has to follow the plan, don’t be careless, we have to take him down with one blow. Also…don’t harm the other innocent people inside.

“Affirmative.”

“Affirmative.”

“Affirmative.”

Li Dong shook his head, as Tian Jin city’s most powerful special force, they had their methods in dealing with powerful fighters. Wang Xin An was being supported in a chair beside, looking as things unfolded.

“Hm?”

Li Dong suddenly took out his phone from his pocket, getting a shock from the number displayed.

“Yes, Senior official!” Li Dong immediately stood at attention, expression serious.

“Yes!”

“Understood!”

“Understood!” Li Dong closed his phone, picked up the communicator, “Retreat, full retreat!” The troops that were already spaced out in critical points ready to move were all forced to swiftly retreat, under Li Dong’s order, they quickly lined up in their groups to welcome the senior official.

“Li Dong, what’s going on?” Wang Xing An shouted from the

chair he was sitting in.

"Shut up!" Li Dong stared at him, "Senior official Jia is here."

"Jia Yi?" Xing An was shocked.

The special forces formed two rows, in the corridor sides, everyone at attention. Walking in behind from the back, a skinny small middle aged man dressed in a chinese tunic suit, with two underlings following him, strolled pass! The rank displayed on these two underlings shoulders made the policemen stand even more at attention!

They were generals!

Two generals following behind? Just who was this leader?

"Aunt, you take care here. Dad, mom, you two stay here and keep her company, I have things to attend to." Following the commotion outside, a youth dressed in a black casual shirt walked out.

The corridor was silent!

The special forces policemen, the hospital head and others, along with Xing An stuck in a chair, were all unable to speak. The special forces were in two rows along the walls of the corridor, in the center...Jia Yi was walking towards Luo Feng. The moment Luo Feng stepped out of the room, Jia Yi walked over.

“Representative Jia.” Luo Feng smiled as he walked over.

“Representative Luo!” Jia Yi walked towards him.

The two smiled as they shook hands.

No one around could utter a sound. Xing An’s face had gone ghostly pale.

Chapter 5 – The Inheritance of Yun Mo Planet's Master

"Let's find a quiet place to talk." Luo Feng said, following that, he and Jia Yi headed straight towards the corridor end's elevator, followed by the two colonels behind.

Besides Luo Feng and Jia Yi, nobody else uttered a sound.

This was the scene of the two of them leaving through the elevator.

"Phew!"

"My god, did you see their ranks? Two generals." When the two had left for awhile, noise erupted in the hallway.

"That's a being that surpasses a wargod Jia Yi. When we were escaping during the Grand Nirvana period, I saw him battling a monster." shouted the hospital deputy director, whose hair was all silver.

……

"Its senior official Jia Yi, the other representative was definitely Luo Feng." Special forces head Li Dong was covered in sweat, "I was just about to prepare to capture Investigator Luo, I was really courting death." While he may never have seen Luo Feng in person

before, as the head of the Tian Jin city's police system, he knew of his name and reputation.

"Wang Xing An, I was almost killed because of you!" Li Dong turned to Xing An, who was lying in a chair that was moved to the side.

Xing An's face was ghostly pale.

"It's over!"

"It's over!"

Xing An's mind began to recall vividly the conversation he was having before... "Under any circumstance, background or connections, I hereby declare...the court's final decision will still be death, immediate execution!"

Suddenly his phone rang.

"Your phone is ringing." Li Dong shouted. Xing An's two bodyguards beside immediately picked up the phone and answered, putting it to Xing An's ear.

All he heard was his father's roars of rage and orders.

"Dad."

Xing An looked as though he was hugging on to his last strand of hope, “That was Luo Feng in the ward earlier...” At this time, he didn’t dare to hide any single piece of information. He explained it from start to end, hoping that his family could help him out. Yet his all his father could do was hang up and look for the Head of the Family.

Just five minutes later.

In the hallway.

Three army personnel dressed in black uniforms walked directly to Xing An’s side, one of them taking a piece of paper out, at the bottom of it was a very special seal: “Wang Xing An, you are suspected of murder, you’ll be arrested immediately.” The other two handcuffed him and lifted him away. They left immediately without even looking at Li Dong.

“It’s over, no one can save him.” Li Dong knew there was no chance when he saw the seal.

The earth was filled with savage and lawless people.

However...

As the saying goes, one who constantly walks by the river will someday wet his shoes, heaven’s net is wide and nothing ever escapes it. One day, he’ll meet his just deserts! Wang Xing An, in the eyes of Luo Feng or Jia Yi, was nothing but a small figure, not

worth that much trouble at all. Just a word and they could kill him.

Kill him personally? That was a waste of strength.

******

Within a quiet waiting room of the hospital.

Luo Feng and Jia Yi sat facing each other with cups of hot tea.

“To allow you to encounter such a thing in Kyoto headquarter city.” Jia Yi shook his head, “However, there is definitely darkness on earth, without it, there can be no light! So…there’s no way to avoid darkness in any era. This Wang Xing An will be immediately executed through the courts.

Luo Feng nodded.

He understood this point well, it was inevitable for darkness to exist.

“Jia Yi, what’s the purpose of you looking for me?” Luo Feng asked.

“Mu Ya Crystals.”

Jia Yi smiled," I'll be frank, no choice, these crystals are too important. One of them can create a representative. And those loyal to their countries are how many? One more would increase the influence of our country and also its position."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

"Of course, we won't just take the crystals without returning anything, we'll be very fair." Jia Yi said, "Whatever condition you want, just mention it."

"I'm not attracted to any mundane things."

"Luo Feng continued, "However, the ancient civilizations have many different apparatus that I'm interest in. A few treasures, weird things and even the remains for some of them. I hope Jia Yi can arrange for list for me so that when the time comes I can pick the ancient civilization items that I want."

"No problem!" Jia Yi smiled while nodding his head.

When the ancient ruins were first discovered, the countries had acquired many treasures. However compared to the Mu Ya crystals, they were far less important.

"However that list, with images and video will take two to three days to complete." Jia Yi said.

"Then we'll talk again then." Luo Feng laughed.

“Ok, I’ll personally go to Yang Zhou then to talk to you.” Jia Yi smiled and nodded.

……

Right now on earth, Babata had already prepared training methods for Luo Feng! The only things that could truly catch Luo Feng’s attention were the ancient civilization items. Be it Luo Feng or Babata, they could only hope to be able to gather enough remains to build a small spaceship.

******

When the news of Wang Xing An’s sentence of death reached Luo Feng that day, his new cousin Yong Qing was extremely happy, she had finally left that nightmare behind. She had always thought Xing An was a god beyond rules, and that she’d be trapped in that nightmare forever.

The Tang family were very happy.

As Luo Hong Guo had been separated from them for over 40 years before meeting up again, they decided to stay for a few days to keep his aunt company. Luo Feng and his family temporarily stayed at a peaceful villa prepared by the military.

……

Nightfall.

It was snowing heavily, yet the villa was filled with warmth.

2nd story, training room.

Luo Feng sat cross-legged.

Luo Feng, I will transmit your thoughts straight into the virtual space I have built for you." Babata's voice sounded in his head, "At the same time, I will have security defense raised for the surrounding 1000m, you can focus within the space."

****

In the virtual space.

There was an enormous mountain reaching the clouds. Dressed in white, Luo Feng suddenly appeared on it.

"Hm?" Luo Feng surveyed his surroundings.

The mountain was so deep he couldn't see the bottom, all he could see were the clouds and sky...he actually even saw a huge planet! It almost took up 1/3 of the sky.

"Shocked?" With two horns, red pupils and dressed in black,

Babata floated beside him, “The universe is mysterious beyond belief, two planets this close, or one of them being especially big will result in this phenomenon.”

Luo Feng nodded gently.

“Today!”

“You will officially accept the teachings of the master!” Babata lifted his head, face full of confidence, “First you have to understand, to build a skyscraper, one’s foundations must be solid and steady! This is also why you have to spend 50 years in the star traveller level to build your basics!”

“If you do not care about anything else, and train as crazily as stuffing ducks, within three years, I can help you get to the star level. However the price would be you’d forever be stuck and unable to reach the universe level!” Babata said.

Luo Feng listened carefully.

“To become a domain lord, and a sector lord! You have to treat each step seriously!”

Babata waved his little hand!

Crash!

A blood red castle appeared suddenly behind him.

“Follow me.” Babata flew towards the castle.

Luo Feng ran behind him.

Rumble!

The castle doors opened.

“Master!”

Eighteen tall stone statues that were 8m tall stood by the castle door entrance respectfully greeted.

Babata shook his head, “These eighteen iron towers, used to follow the master, they are extremely loyal. However when Yun Mo Planet was destroyed, they too lost their lives. I’m only emulating them now. Within this castle, I’ve simulated eighteen iron towers and thirty six concubines.”

Following Babata, he saw a wide bevy of beautiful women from different ethnicities along the way. It wasn’t long before they reached a large room on the 2nd level of the castle.

“This is your training room!”

“Look!”

Babata pointed to the four walls of the training room, shua! Immediately, the four walls were covered by bookshelves. “And right here, I’ve already prepared for your star traveller level, star level, universe level, domain lord level, sector lord level books to study.” Saying that, the shelves began to fill themselves with books.

The entire training room was filled with over 10 thousand books.

“You are currently in the star traveller level!”

“That’s why, these two shelves of books, you have to study them.” Babata pointed to the top two levels of a particular bookshelf. “The top level is for training as a fighter. A strong spirit reader also requires a strong body. Your powers, body strength all require training.”

“Your body is currently at the student level 9, consciousness also at its peak, to break through to the star traveller level 1 body would be easy.”

“The 2nd level is for the spirit reader side, even more important! It’s mainly broken into the sections of <Control>, <Illusion> and <Mixed>, every one of them is profound and deep.” Babata said, “Master’s teachings are unique and special even in the universe.”

“The master’s fighter training structure demands are very high,

the spirit reader side is even more demanding!”

“The master had nine undying underlings!”

“These nine undying beings, had actually had their souls permeated by mysterious powers long ago, they were controlled by their souls, these nine undying underlings! These nine had all their knowledge and memories, the only thing was that they’d be 100% loyal to the end to the master! When they were being controlled, one of them was at the universe level, six were domain lords and two were sector lords!”

“As the master’s powers rose, they were gradually training and rising too!

“Master’s mysterious methods, allowed the underlings to have self-awareness and the ability to train.” Babata proudly spoke, “And these underlings would never hesitate in their loyalty, once the master died, they would die along with him. The five undying beings in the Yun Mo spaceship died because their master died”

Babata looked at Luo Feng, “Of course, master’s teachings are extremely difficult to learn.”

“That’s why before he died, he created an inheritance soul print, when I first interacted with you awhile ago, I had already imprinted it into your body.” Babata said, “It will subtly, permeate into your soul without any trace. I estimate, in about three hours, it will be fully complete.”

Chapter 6 – Secret Technique

Luo Feng looked at Babata, shocked.

Soul imprint? He didn't feel anything at all!

"Why are you so shocked!" Babata waved his hand. A chair appeared beside him, Babata lay on it, swaying on it contently, as though rocking a baby's cradle, "The master was an undying being, if the soul imprint he created cannot permeate your soul without a sound and without you actually noticing it...how can he still be called an undying? With master's level of soul imprinting, even sector lords would not notice a thing, much less a star traveller punk like you."

Luo Feng was helpless.

Facing the teacher that had prepared everything before he died, Luo Feng had no resistance ability at all!

"Luo Feng!"

Babata crossed his little leg, waved his hand and a common apple from earth appeared. He began gnawing at it, "From today on, whenever you enter this virtual space, your main motive is to train and study! And today, we will determine which path you will take!"

"You should know, no matter what you do, it's always good to

have a plan, before taking one step at a time, this is the only way you can go far. Without a target or plan, blindly training will only waste time." Babata said, "I can give you suggestions, but I cannot make decisions for you!"

Luo Feng nodded: "I understand, what suggestions do you have?"

"One, you must recognize the importance of fighter training, you cannot neglect it!"

"Two, the manuals, <Control>, <Illusion> are both basics, you have to completely master them. And the <Mixed> manual is a treasure of the Yun Mo Planet legacy, as one of us, these are treasured secrets, you definitely have to learn them! Whichever path you take later on, be it a controller or an illusionist, you pick for yourself!"

"Three, take out some time for me to teach you the common language of the universe."

Luo Feng couldn't help but laugh.

Out of Babata's three suggestions, number one and three were things he definitely had to do, the 2nd point was a choice he had to make down the line.

"Common language of the universe? Luo Feng just opened his mouth to speak, "Don't we have translating devices?"

Even earth has translating devices, why would the universe not? Why should one have to waste effort and time to learn another language? Honestly speaking, Luo Feng has never liked learning languages. Back in school before, he studied 12 years of English as a second language and could roughly understand everything. He could roughly speak it too.

However, compared to the other students, foreign language was Luo Feng's weak point.

It was lucky the College Entrance exams didn't test foreign languages. However, it was still a tragedy for Luo Feng.

"You have to learn it." Babata said, "In the vast universe, while you can use translating devices, those who do not understand the common language of the universe are instantly looked down upon! People will say that you are uncivilized, and come from a barbaric place. Whoever has position and rank can speak fluently in the common language of the universe. You are Yun Mo Planet's representative, how can you not speak the common language of the universe?" Babata's blood red eyes were staring so hard they looked like they were about to pop out.

"Ok, ok, I'll learn it!" Luo Feng nodded.

"Good."

Babata nodded his head contently.

“Babata, these fighter trainings, I’m a spirit reader, training a strong enough body is sufficient. Everything else…I’ll just do the minimum. I don’t need the rest.” Luo Feng said.

“Your foresight is too lacking!” Babata was so angry he threw the remaining half of his apple to the ground.

“Let me tell you!”

Babata explained seriously, “The main two divisions in the universe are the fighters and the spirit readers! Both have their pros and cons, the spirit readers however have more diverse and weird methods. For fighters to evolve and breakthrough, they must focus on spirit and willpower. For spirit readers to evolve and breakthrough, they must also realize the importance of body and genetic energy.”

“You will not be able to see it now!”

“However, the universe level, especially the domain lord, sector lord, be it spirit, willpower, energy, body, all have very high demands!” Babata said, “For a wooden pail to be able to store more water, it has to rely on its shortest board! That’s why; fighter’s training should never take a backseat. Your training on the fighter’s side currently is too weak, too weak, and only capable to using 3.5 of your body’s strength? Blade technique and body technique are all at the basic level?”

Luo Feng interrupted: “My blade skills are at the expert level and my body technique is at the perfect level”

“That’s how you call them on earth!”

Babata couldn’t help but raise his head, “According to the universe levels, your blade technique and body technique are all at the basic level, belonging to the lowest level of all. Your multiplier is at 3.5? It’s just pitiful. In the Yun Mo Planet, the student level 9 are capable of a multiplier of 10!”

“10?” Luo Feng was shocked.

This was higher than even Thunder God!

“And your earth’s training methods have so many problems!” Babata said, “For example, with a brute force of 1 million kg, multiplier of 3 times, your attacking strength is only 3 million, your speed also increases a lot! So why can’t your defensive capabilities also increase?”

Luo Feng’s eyebrows creased.

Attacking power along with speed multiplies, defense...Earth’s fighters were all researching, only their defense hasn’t been able to multiply.

“A fighter’s training, you can study on your own, if you don’t understand something, just ask me,” Babata waved his hand, a gorgeous glass table immediately appeared in front of Luo Feng, the table had six chairs beside it, the books that were all for his star

traveller level training immediately began flying over, landing on the table."

"Slowly study all these"

Babata waved his hand again, the books pertaining to spirit reader training all flew over.

"Your main focus should be these!"

"Especially the mixed manual!" Babata said, "You need to study this book especially well, the mixed manuals...every book has a golden cover. Very eye-catching."

Luo Feng surveyed the books.

Within that pile, over 10 of them had golden covers, the rest had black covers.

Randomly picking up one of the golden covered books, <Soul Imprint>! The top of the book had two very unnoticeable words, 'Mixed manual.'

Taking up another golden covered book, <Tower of the Void>! It too had the words 'Mixed Manual' by the side.

The 3rd book <Soul Transfer>

The 4th book <Six Blades>

The 5th book…

……

“Every book is expansive and in depth, like the <Soul Imprint>, the only reason the master could control nine great undying underlings was because of this secret technique <Soul Imprint>. The ‘inheritance imprint’ left for you was also based off of this technique. It is a very mysterious power, what you have in your hand is only the basics. Once you learn it, I’ll pass second volume of <Soul Imprint> to you.” Babata said.

“These are Yun Mo Planet’s unique and special secrets, not to be passed to outsiders.” Babata proudly said.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but pick up the book <Soul Imprint>.

This is a treasure!

To be able to control underlings, along with allowing them to have self awareness and training, it was truly impressive!

“<Tower of the Void> is another secret technique for soul defense from Yun Mo Planet. From the disciples master had before, only one managed to acquire the teachings from him. When master was alive, it was hard for even one of the disciples to get the chance to learn, and the skills wouldn’t be passed down completely. You are

very lucky, every skill is there for you, and they are all complete!” Babata said.

Luo Feng was extremely happy.

Teaching a capable student meant less jobs for oneself, when the master was alive, it was hard to get even one secret. But since the master knew he was going to die, he of course had to leave behind all of his secret manuals.

……

Treasure trove!

This was the true treasure trove!

While <Control> and <Illusion> was important, the other undying beings all learnt it too. <Mixed> however was a compilation of secret skills, be it defense, attack, technique, techniques that required risking one’s life or controlling underlings…these were all extremely mysterious and special! To attain such skills in the universe required a huge amount of luck or treasures to exchange with.

Luo Feng? He managed to get all of them in one go!

From the star level to the domain lord, the teachings from the Yun Mo Planet were all complete.

.....

He stayed in the virtual space, studying the books for awhile.

“Hm?” Luo Feng felt a piercing pain.

Within the training room, he felt his body start to grow numb and blur, before disappearing altogether from the virtual training room.

“Oh, three hours are up, the merging has reached its last step.” Babata laughed.

******

Tian Jin city, within the second level of the temporary villa’s training room. It was snowing heavily outside. Luo Feng’s mind had just undergone an amazing and shocking change.

In his consciousness.

In his vast consciousness, there was a miniature planet, one that was emitting light rays, this little planet was formed from several crystal pyramids closely packed together! It was a perfect structure, the whole planet was giving out a formless mysterious wave.

The core of the mini planet!

A prismatic blood red crystal lay at the core of the miniature planet! Formless blood red threads revolved around this crystal body as it's core, covering the entire miniature planet!

"Chi chi..."

Countless blood red threads continuously revolved and threaded through the mini planet.

Piercing pain, that was the soul trembling!

The miniature planet began to change colors at a speed which one could witness with his naked eye...from the semi transparent state before to gradually changing to pink, light red, slowly soaking through till the planet became very red, until it finally changed to the same blood red as the crystal body at its core.

As the planet changed, it seemed to have shrunk by a size.

"Hu, it's so comfortable." Luo Feng was extremely relaxed.

"Luo Feng, congratulations on passing the hardest hurdle! Normal spirit readers are unable to accept Yun Mo Planet's secret techniques, they have to first change their psychic powers. Before, the disciples had to train by themselves for a long time. You, however, with the help of the master, have passed it." Babata was extremely happy and pleased.

“Babata, my spirit’s core, that blood red crystal hasn’t fully disappeared, what’s going on?” Luo Feng asked.

“That’s the soul imprint! The master thought that the newer disciples would be stronger, however you are only a star traveller level 1, the soul imprint has yet to fully be absorbed. Even so, the transformation completed successfully!” Babata said, “Right now, you are already accepted! However, you are only a student level fighter level 9, so…let’s not waste time and step into the star traveller level fighter first.”

Luo Feng was gleeful.

He was a star traveller level 1 spirit reader, but only a wargod level fighter.

“Your willpower and spirit are definitely enough, your body has also reached the peak of the student level 9 stage, it’ll be really easy. A few breathing exercises and it’ll happen.” Babata said.

Chapter 7 – Luo Feng's Special Ability

Luo Feng has met all the conditions and can breakthrough to the 'star traveller level one stage fighter' level. However, Babata still taught Luo Feng nine consecutive movements, which were kind of like the Dao Yin technique.

"Breathe!"

After performing the first movement, Luo Feng felt his entire body heat up. After he performed each of the movements, every cell in his entire body seemed to be boiling. The genetic energy in each cell that hasn't been absorbed yet started gathering together like droplets of water. These droplets formed a stream of water, and then a creek, a river.....

Heat emanated from his entire body and continuously gathered. It finally gathered in the dan tian* in Luo Feng's abdomen.

"BOOM!"

Spirit readers and fighters have one big difference: the essence of a spirit reader is the 'realm of consciousness' in the head, while the essence of a fighter is the 'dan tian' in the abdomen.

In the dan tian.

As if a new land was being born, the dan tian that didn't even exist before instantly opened! The spinning genetic energy started

spinning even faster. It expanded and contracted constantly. Every time it contracted,it became even smaller! Luo Feng felt like his consciousness was trembling and his body was shaking!

He succeeded!

In his vast dan tian, a miniature planet appeared! Unlike the transparent ‘miniature planet’ that was born in his realm of consciousness, the miniature planet in his dan tian was the color of gold! The entire golden miniature planet was actually six large golden crystals combined as one!

This golden miniature planet continued to rotate and, at the same time, gave off an odd vibration!

“Genetic energy!”

With a thought from Luo Feng, a sliver of golden genetic energy instantly charged out of the dan tian and flowed through his entire body.

“Crack~~”

“Crack~”

In an instant, all the bones, bone marrow, skin, veins, organs, etc. in Luo Feng’s body began to undergo a transformation. This transformation was even more dramatic than the time when his spiritual force stepped into the star traveller level! Luo Feng felt

like his bones were being smashed into pieces and then being gathered together again!

“Let me see what your special ability is.” Babata laughed weirdly.

“Don’t be nervous, genetic energy is the most suitable thing for changing your body. It can change your body’s ability amplifier, which is way better than the change resulting from spiritual force”

“Oh? Hehe.....”

“It’s actually diamond body!”

“Haha, Luo Feng, you’re pretty lucky!” Babata was extremely happy.

And the body transformation process was still undergoing.

Luo Feng’s body was dramatically becoming more and more powerful. His transformation process was even more dramatic than a normal fighter stepping into the star traveller level! For example, even though the body of ‘Li Yao’ also underwent a transformation, it wasn’t even near the level of transformation that Luo Feng’s body was undergoing. And out of all the things that are transforming, the most dramatic change was occurring in his ‘bones’!

Luo Feng’s bones were giving off a ‘CRACK CRACK CRACK’ sound, as if they were being forged by a hammer. The sound even

went out of Luo Feng's body. If someone came to the training room on the second floor at this time, they could probably slightly hear the 'crack crack crack' sound of the bones as they transformed.

"Babata, you said 'diamond body'. What's that?" asked Luo Feng.

"During the student level, spirit readers have an extremely large advantage!" said Babata, "however, once stepping into the star traveller stage, fighters also have their own methods! Their methods are their special abilities. Different star traveller fighters have different special abilities. Some of them might have the special ability of 'fire' while some of them might have the special ability of 'light'....."

"This is just the basic way you earthlings say it"

"In the universe, the various special abilities are mainly categorized into eight main categories—— metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, lightning, and light. Yours is the slightly rare 'diamond body' in the 'metal category'" said Babata.

Luo Feng became confused as he heard this.

"Simply put, it's because of differences in the soul and body"

"The way your bodies absorb cosmic energy is actually different. So of course, the resulting genetic energy is also different!" said Babata, "Genetic energy is mainly split into the categories of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, lightning, and light. And your

special abilities come from your genetic energy!”

“Special abilities are also split into the eight main categories, but each main category can be further split into several subcategories!”

“For example, the category of ‘fire’ has subcategories of ‘human torch’, ‘flame of refinement’, etc. Even in the subcategory of ‘flame of refinement’, the flames that different people at the star traveller level one stage possess vary in temperature.

.....

Luo Feng finally understood what was going on. Truthfully, no one main category is better than the other. Every main category contains extremely powerful special abilities, and every category also contains extremely weak special abilities.

And Luo Feng’s special ability is ‘diamond body’ under the main category of ‘metal’.

The training room on the second floor in the villa.

“I’ll wash off” after his transformation finished, Luo Feng entered the bathroom and lay in the bath. Snow flew around outside of the bathroom’s window.

As he lay in the bathtub, Luo Feng’s consciousness communicated with Babata.

“Diamond body. This means that your bones and muscles will be more powerful than other fighters of the same level! This is quite a rare ability. If your bones and muscles strengthen, you’ll be able to explode with more power! Your attacks will become more powerful too” said Babata, “This means your attacks, speed, and defense will all increase, especially your defense. Once your genetic energy merges onto the surface of your skin, your defense will be extremely amazing!”

“So ‘diamond body’ is quite a rare ability”

“The most common special ability under the category of metal is ‘sharpness’! Which gives your attacks more piercing power!” said Babata.

Luo Feng slightly nodded.

Luo Feng was quite satisfied with his special ability ‘diamond body’. This means that, on the same level, his body will be more powerful than others! And his defense will be amazing!

“Diamond body!” with a thought from Luo Feng, genetic energy immediately merged onto the surface of Luo Feng’s skin. Luo Feng could even clearly see his skin shine with a metallic light. HUALA! Luo Feng walked out of the bathtub and stood in front of the mirror. This mirror had a function to remove fog.

The Luo Feng shown in the mirror was like a god of war!

You could feel the immense power just by looking at that body with a slight metallic shine on it.

.....

It was already the third day at Tianjin city.

Places like the lawn in the small sector were covered in snow. After Luo Feng and his family ate lunch with his great aunt's family, all of them walked on the street of the sector.

"Yong Qing and Yong Yuan were only able to come back by taking some time off from the research center. After a bit, they'll have to rush back. The rules at the research center are strict" Tang Cheng walked with his cousin Luo Hong Guo side by side. Both of them experienced the Grand Nirvana period when they were kids.

"Work is important." smiled Luo Hong Guo as he nodded.

"Thanks a lot for back then. Otherwise, that Wang Xing An would definitely cause our family to....." Tang Cheng couldn't help but to shake his head.

"It's all in the past." said Luo Hong Guo.

"Maybe it's nothing much for your family's Luo Feng, but for our family, this is a great blessing. Yong Qing, Yong Yuan, how can you

two be so shy. Hurry up and go thank your cousin!" yelled Tang Cheng. After hearing this, Tang Yong Qing and Tang Yong Yuan turned their heads towards Luo Feng.

"Cousin, thank you" Tang Yong Qing was a bit nervous beside Luo Feng.

Indeed.....

Not only Tang Yong Qing, the entire Tang family couldn't help but to be a bit nervous after knowing Luo Feng's identity! There's no helping it. If your relative turned out to be the president of a powerful country and was standing beside you, could you talk casually without any nervousness at all? This isn't something that a normal person can do.

"Thank you, cousin." said Tang Yong Yuan.

"It was nothing much. When you two have time, you can visit our home at Jiang Nan headquarter city's Yang Zhou city." smiled Luo Feng.

As they walked on the road of the sector.

Luo Feng's cell phone suddenly vibrated.

Luo Feng picked up his cell phone and walked to the side. The phone's display showed that the call was from Jia Yi.

“Hello” Luo Feng’s face let out a smile. The treasures from the archaeological ruin are here.

“Luo Feng, it’s Jia Yi” Jia Yi’s voice was filled with power, “Regarding the various items from the archaeological ruins, we’ve prepared the list. Are you at Tianjin city? I’ll be right there. There’s no problem right?”

“No problem”

Luo Feng smiled, “Actually, madam Isadora from the HR alliance contacted me yesterday, but, I’m still going to exchange with you first!”. This was actually the truth, since the HR alliance also prepared their list. However, Luo Feng still prepared to purchase the goods from his own country first. When he goes to Isadora later, there’ll be no need to buy an object he already has.

“Haha, thanks a bunch” Jia Yi laughed loudly, “I’ll be there in 15 minutes”

“Okay”

Luo Feng hung up.

.....

After Luo Feng and his family sent off their relatives, his parents

and his brother went to visit his great aunt in the hospital. Luo Feng stayed at home.

Villa's second floor, reading room.

"Turn on this notebook and then enter the password. After that, accept the download." Jia Yi stood to the side while holding some data storage device.

"The password worked, I'm ready." Luo Feng sat in front of the notebook.

"BEEP!"

After Jia Yi pressed the button, large amounts of information swiftly flowed into Luo Feng's notebook. In just a few seconds, the data transfer was complete.

"Jia Yi, you can sit and drink some tea first. I have to take a good look." smiled Luo Feng.

"Alright, no rush"

Jia Yi sat on the side and held his tea cup. In his heart, he was hoping that this Luo Feng would pick a few more items from the archaeological ruin, since even one extra Mu Ya crystal makes a huge difference.

Luo Feng started looking carefully in front of the notebook.

Each of the special items from the archaeological ruin had photos beside them. Some of them had special functions that were even shown through a video. Their uses and prices were all explained.

“Babata” Luo Feng pretended to look at the data but said in his heart, “Did you receive the data?”

Even though Babata was a living AI that could read various information via the internet, every country stores their confidential data offline because of the ‘archaeological ruins’! The data never gets on the internet and any action of connecting them to the internet is forbidden.

Because of all these safety precautions, Babata wasn’t able to read some of the confidential information.

And now..... this notebook has already been connected with Babata.

“Received it!” responded Babata.

“Alright, take a careful look and see which ones are useful.” Luo Feng pushed all the work to Babata. As for him, he had to pretend to look through all of the various items from the archaeological ruin.

Chapter 8 – Upgrade

“Luo Feng, I’ve chosen whatever we need to buy from the list. I’ll send it over to your notebook immediately.”

It took a total of about one second for Babata to come up with an answer.

“So fast!” Luo Feng was shocked.

“I am but the highest degree of AIs, a Living AI! My processing speed is of course fast.” Babata’s voice in Luo Feng’s head was all but modest.

In the study.

Luo Feng lifted his head to look at Jia Yi, Jia Yi, who was lifting his cup of tea realized his gaze and laughed: “No worries! There’s quite a lot of information to sift through, it should take about three to four hours. Luo Feng, take your time!” As he said that, walked over to the nearby bookshelf to retrieve a book and began reading.

Luo Feng could only force a laugh.

Three to four hours?

A normal person would take a long time to go through the data,

however, filtering through crucial data and making the choice were all done by the Living AI Babata! One second was more than enough to finish.

"If I tell him I've already finished, he would think I'm a monster."

"I just have to wait a couple of hours." Luo Feng moved the mouse, opening the file sent by Babata.

The file opened.

It was a detailed list of items to purchase.

"So many?" Luo Feng was shocked.

The amount of ancient civilization items on the purchase list was extremely huge, so huge that 10 large passenger ships couldn't possibly transport it all.

"Babata, we are exchanging for so many things?" Luo Feng asked.

"Is it a lot? It's not much at all." Babata said, "What are we trying to do? We are trying to build a spaceship! Under such impoverished conditions, to build a ship able to cruise in the universe, one that's able to travel from galaxy to galaxy! Just the materials needed for the ship's body requires a lot! Earth's natural alloys are hardly suitable for such a ship, we can only rely on such remains!"

Luo Feng suddenly understood.

For a ship to be able to fly in the universe, it had to be very heavy. It would definitely require a lot of materials.

“Those remains and materials are not worth it. One Mu Ya crystal can exchange for countless materials in the universe.” Babata wasn’t fully satisfied.

“That’s in the universe! Earth is different.”

……

Three hours later.

“Jia Yi, I’ve made my choices.” Luo Feng passed the digital notebook over, facing the screen to Jia Yi, “This is the exchange list.”

“Oh that was fast.”

Jia Yi smiled as he moved his chair closer to the desk. He began to carefully scan through the exchange list, getting a big shock as he finally went through it; “Luo Feng, why are you buying all these ship remains? These ancient ship remains have been broken for years, they’ve also been separated by the different countries taking them away, the ship remains that we have, many of them have

been disassembled, you want them?”

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“1, 2, 3…”

Jia Yi looked at the list, he was indeed very shocked.

He initially thought Luo Feng was going to buy some special apparatus, but he realized…none of the apparatuses were bought at all! Luo Feng only went for the many different kinds of ship remains, or pieces! Some of the pieces were of extremely hard material, not something earth’s tools had the capability of cutting open.

The ship remains themselves, only a few could be dissected too.

“Your order is huge, this particular ship remain weighs more than 800 tons!” Jia Yi looked at Luo Feng, “In fact, it’s price is unknown, as a material for machinery and the fact that we’ve been unable to damage it! It’s stronger than our SS grade materials by far. So the price for it…”

“Jia Yi, they are nothing but remains, don’t be too brutal.” Luo Feng laughed. “, No one on earth knows how to deal with these remains. Since they are unusable, they are as good as worthless. Actually, I’m pretty sure the HR Alliance and the other countries have some remains too.”

Jia Yi's eyebrows arched up.

Indeed!

Ancient ship remains were abundant in the different countries! Like Hong from the Dojo of Limits, the whole headquarters was a large interstellar transport ship. To say it was precious...these ship materials were indeed unique and priceless! However, they were worthless too as man has been unable to cut or use these materials, and unusable materials are as good as worthless.

"The remains and parts all added up come to more than 5000 tons!" Jia Yi looked at Luo Feng, "even if they are just remains and worthless, these amount of weight and so many ancient remains, how about this, three Mu Ya crystals!"

Luo Feng remained silent.

Babata raged angrily in his head: "5000 tons of rubbish! They don't mean anything, one of earth's aircraft carriers alone weight a few ten thousand tons! A small universe ship that weighs a few ten thousand tons is very normal. One Mu Ya crystal, in the universe, can easily exchange for ten small space ships. To exchange for rubbish, even if it was 100 million tons doesn't mean anything, for three whole crystals!!! He must really think the crystals are like vegetables!"

"That's too expensive."

Luo Feng shook his head.

“5,000 tons of ancient materials.” Jia Yi said.

“Our Dojo’s headquarters, how heavy do you think that large space ship is?” Luo Feng looked at Jia Yi, “That is a spaceship that’s longer than 10 thousand meters!”

One interstellar transport ship, more than 10 thousand meters long.

If one was to weigh it, it would definitely be more than 100 million tons.

“Does that mean that that ship would be worth tens of thousands of crystals?” Luo Feng looked at Jia Yi.

“It’s not a good comparison.”

Jia Yi said, “That’s your Dojo of Limits headquarters! In addition, it’s not even possible to cut open that huge ship.”

“Alright, how about two crystals.” Luo Feng said.

“Luo Feng, are you stupid!!! Two crystals? I find even one is too many!” Babata was shouting in his mind.

“Two crystals?” Jia Yi stared, before nodding his head, “Alright, I’ll show you some respect, two crystals it is! I’ll arrange for my men to transport the remains that weigh more than 5000 tons to Yang Zhou.” Jia Yi was extremely happy.

These remains had been lying dormant, unable to be used. They were worthless just sitting there. To be able to exchange them for two Mu Ya crystals was a good deal! He initially thought that just getting one crystal would be pretty good already.

“Luo Feng, where shall I leave these materials?” Jia Yi asked.

“In the wilderness outside Yang Zhou City, I’ll designate a destroyed factory somewhere in the wilderness as a large warehouse, you can put it there.” Luo Feng smiled.

……

Once the negotiations were complete and both parties had signed on the agreement, Luo Feng gave one crystal as a deposit.

“Luo Feng, you’ve become stupid, two crystals to exchange for 5,000 over tons of rubbish? I can bet that even with one crystal, Jia Yi would have agreed.” Babata was extremely unsatisfied.

“In this time and era, when the countries and monsters battle, there’ll be much losses. By giving one more, I’ll be supporting my country.” Luo Feng said.

Babata was speechless!

******

The 2nd day, Luo Feng sat alone in his intelligent battleship to go visit Lady Isadora.

From Isadora's side, he bought over 9,000 tons of remains and materials. However this time, he only used 1 crystal! This exchange was easy, the transportation was however very difficult! It was lucky that the HR Alliance had a lot of remains and materials in China itself, transporting by train was possible.

.....

The business was done, the goods however would require one to two months to arrive.

******

Jiang Nan base Yang Zhou city, Ming Yue district.

Luo Feng's house 2nd story training room. It had already been separated into two sections, one for training and the other was sectioned to put the ancient gravity device! The device's length was six meters, its height too was six meters! It punctured the ceiling, as such...to install it, Luo Feng's villa had to be remodeled.

2059 January 13th.

Luo Feng's house, within the gravity room.

"1——1000 times gravity? Luo Feng took his first step into the gravity room.

"This has been remodeled? It's terrible!" Babata scolded, "This is afterall a universe basic level gravity room model, its specifications should go from 0-1000 universe gravity force, damn…take a look, it has been remodeled to power with earth's electricity! Using electricity to power this gravity room? I don't know whether you guys are smart or stupid."

"What's wrong?" Luo Feng asked, "You said, universe gravity force?

"In the universe, the unit for gravity is 8.89 times of earth's! Meaning to say, one unit of the universe's standard gravity is 8.89g! This particular gravity room, was meant to go from 0——8890g of gravity force, now it's only going from 1-——1000g!" Babata continues, "I can't blame this on you earthlings. You people don't have the proper power for it, to be able to use electricity is not bad."

Luo Feng nodded.

When earth discovered the ancient civilizations, they found mostly nothing but remains. From within they found this gravity

room. Without the proper power, they had no choice but to remodel it to use electricity. This was already considered a success.

"Leave it to me!"

"I'll upgrade the gravity room to surpass its old self, before using a C12 power crystal. This is considered an excellent power source that even the higher civilizations would only get to use sometimes. I deduce that I can push it to 0-90,000 times earth's gravity force. That's probably the limit. Any more and the gravity room itself won't be able to take it." Babata said, "No choice, it's like the cars on earth, if its basic materials are that way, if it moves too fast, it'll just spoil! If I try to further upgrade the circuit power of this gravity room and raise its power capabilities, it'll probably crumble."

Luo Feng wiped his forehead: "It's enough, it's enough.

Its highest point was 90 thousand times earth's gravity!

It was unbelievable!

However when he thought about the scene he witnessed, two universe level fighters battling on the white dwarf planet, Luo Feng calmed down. That scene alone, that white dwarf planet, that was 300 million times earth's gravity!!!

90 thousand times compared to 300 million times, it wasn't even worth mentioning!

However, to his current self, it was more than enough!

……

Under Babata's work and his intelligent control over tools, it only took one night's work for the ancient gravity room to be completely remodeled!

"From today, Luo feng, you will train in here everyday!"

"Fighter's training, in the gravity room. Spirit Reader's training, also in there! For someone like you whose basics aren't solid enough, the effects will be very beneficial."

"Oh, even though you might be a star traveller level 1, your muscles and bones are able to handle a greater amount of gravity. Your heart, liver and other internal organs however are weaker, this is due to your basics not being solid, your internal and external are not equal. So, you'll start from 100 times earth's gravity. This'll help your internal organs grow stronger quickly."

Under Babata's orders, Luo Feng began to work on his foundations within the gravity room. The days of his training had just begun.

Chapter 9 – A Year of Growth

Within the next few days, the HR Alliance swiftly delivered the ancient civilization spaceship remains over, a few unique broken pieces were sent about a 100km outside Yang Zhou city. They were all stored in a huge warehouse in the wilderness outside! Shortly after, Babata put all these materials into his own virtual storage space.

Luo Feng had the storage ring! However, Babata himself had his own storage space.

The storage space could only hold non-living items, bodies etc. Babata's storage space was obviously much bigger! He could even fit all the materials, including tools and actually begin to build a ship within the space!

AI, machinery, power source etc, these are all non-living, hence began the construction of the spaceship within the spatial storage!

"Babata, just how big is your storage space?" Luo Feng asked, "Before, you actually kept the Yun Mo Planet ship in it, my ring can't even store that ship! Now, you've actually stored the whole warehouse and begun building the ship! Just how much space is there?" Luo Feng was extremely curious of his private hoard.

"Bigger than yours." Babata was frank and direct.

"How long would it take to finish building the ship?" Luo Feng asked.

“Five or six years!” Babata said.

“My god, five or six years? Aren’t you an amazing AI, why would it take so long?”

Babata was unsatisfied, “We are building a ship to travel in the universe! Not a spaceship model! Also, to build the ship requires many very specific tools, I don’t even have the tools and I’m working under such conditions, building from scratch! On earth, how long would it take to build an aircraft carrier? The thing I’m building is tens of millions of times harder and more complicated, five or six years is considered very fast!”

“Alright, I’m in no rush.” Luo Feng didn’t push it anymore.

“Right, having my help to build it is a blessing. Otherwise, with earth’s technology, be it a 100 years or 1,000 years, you’d only be able to just enter space. To travel the milky way would require 100 thousand light years! To travel interstellar, earth wouldn’t be able to construct a ship like that in 1,000 years.” Babata was very proud.

Luo Feng’s knowledge was limited in that sense, he definitely didn’t know what went into building such a space ship for universal travel, just how many obstacles were involved in the building process!

This was a real spaceship, not a model.

Five or six years for it to be completed was already unbelievably fast.

******

As the pinnacle of all AIs, Babata was able to easily build a basic AI support to help build the ship. All these while watching over Luo Feng's training!

"Don't get complacent, all star traveller's level 1 muscles and bones are able to withstand 1,000 times earth's gravity! It's only because of your internal organs being weaker, that's why you have to start at 100 times only. Using 28 days to get used to 1000 times normal gravity is nothing to be proud of!"

Babata's roar resounded within Luo Feng's mind.

Within the gravity room.

With nothing on but his underpants, Luo Feng stood barefoot in the gravity room, his body riddled with sweat, with the occasional drip of sweat falling to the ground! The screen beside displayed the numbers, 1088g!

Exceeding more than 1,000 times normal gravity, the force worked on Luo Feng's entire body, every muscle and every cell. These 28 days of getting used to it maximized his strength and training as a star traveller warrior. Everytime he trained, he used a Mu Ya Crystal and this enabled his internal organs to improve at

an extreme rate!

“Alright, it’s almost time. Absorb a Mu Ya crystal.” Babata said.

Luo Feng immediately sat crossed legged, a crystal appeared his hand. Its fragrant smell naturally caused one to drool, under the gene’s induction, energy began to permeate his body swiftly. The Mu Ya crystal’s energy was different from genetic energy, the crystal’s energy was extremely pure! Its nature was extremely higher!

Moreover, it was filled with vitality! Filled with spirituality!

Once it had permeated Luo Feng’s body, his body began grow almost like a little plant that had been watered, evolving at an incredible speed!

At the same time!

His consciousness entered the virtual space. Under Babata’s teachings, when a person’s consciousness enters the space, the body still has its own unconscious mind, with special training, even when his consciousness entered the virtual space, his body unconsciously worked on one thing, absorbing the Mu Ya crystal!

……

“Let’s begin the fighter’s training, martial arts first, begin!”

Beginning his martial arts training within the virtual space, in that space, Luo Feng's body essence maintained his initial wargod level, just like back when he was in the training camp in the virtual space.

……

Five months later.

Dusk.

In his underwear, Luo Feng walked into the gravity room, closing it behind him.

"Babata, let's work on Control today. Help me scan, check out my condition." Luo Feng said.

"Taking the initiative? Looks like someone is very confident." Babata laughed weirdly.

Luo Feng laughed.

He started by pressing the buttons at the side, keying in 1910, the gravity force in the room immediately raised swiftly. There was a low hum in the room, at the same time, a scary amount of gravity began working on Luo Feng's body, he couldn't help but sink initially, knees slightly bent, before standing back straight up.

“Phew.” Luo Feng took a deep breath.

“It’s begun.” Luo Feng used a little strength to lift his right hand, it in he grasped the hybrid copper essence shard, this shard, on earth weighed more than a ton, and in the gravity room with 1910 times earth’s gravity, weighed more than 2000 tons! A wargod wouldn’t be able to even lift it.

Even Luo Feng had to use quite a bit of effort.

Luckily the gravity force only worked within the room. If the gravity force was 5 tons, then no matter how strong the force was within the room, it didn’t affect whatever happened outside! Even if the gravity force went up to 10,000 times normal gravity, the pressure it exerted outside remained unchanged. Maintaining the magnetic field of the gravity force was done by the power source.

“Begin.” Babata said.

“1st move!”

Luo Feng used a thread of spirit energy to begin moving the shard.

“2nd move!” Luo Feng used more spirit energy to move the shard.

“3rd move! 4th move!” ...

The blade shard began floating up.

“10th move! Luo Feng continued to apply more spirit energy.

Before his induction into Yun Mo Planet’s training, he could control 18 threads of spirit energy, however he used these 18 threads to control 18 independent items. He had no way to unite these 18 forms of energy together. They worked independently. Combining them would mean they affected each other’s attacking power.

Also, the way Luo Feng’s initial spirit energy was used on his armor was weak. This was due to his detailed control being weak, thus his armor had little gaps and was easy to breakthrough.

Now it was entirely different!

“19th move!”

Luo Feng shouted his last move.

“Whoa, you can control 19 threads of spirit energy now, combining them without affecting their power?” Babata was shocked. “Before you could only do 18 right?”

“I’ve improved a little.” Luo Feng laughed.

“Very good. Let’s try 2000 times gravity force, controlling 19 threads of spirit energy and combining them without affecting each other. You’ve definitely made some progress on the Control side’s Concentration stage. Babata praised him, “the remaining eight basic steps of Control, Disperse, Acute, Tenacity, Flexible, Strength, Dance, Illusion, Harmony. Since you’ve made some progress in the Concentration step, let’s begin the Acute step!”

……

Five months ago, Luo Feng could only control 18 threads of spirit energy, after five months of hard training, he can do 19 now!

However, with such small progress in the first step, his battle prowess had already risen by countless increments!

Following the demands from the nine steps from《Control》, once he’s made progress in all nine steps, his spirit energy could be formed into an ‘iron panel’. With more training, it could be formed into a needle to pierce enemies! Normally, when spirit energy enters a body, it would just permeate and come straight out, however after the nine steps, it would be a lot more concise and deadly!

It’s piercing ability would be incomparable!

It could be used as a weapon! However without the proper technique, it would be difficult for one person to emulate.

****

Year 2060 January 12th. Afternoon.

Luo Feng's house, the 2nd level training room, within the gravity room.

Under a light yellow light.

A youth clad in full blood red body armor sat crossed legged, there was a shard revolving and dancing around him. Suddenly his eyes opened, the screen beside him displayed 3100g. Most star traveller warriors on earth would explode the moment they walked in!

Whoosh!

Without a sound or trace, the blood red armor immediately vanished into his skin, revealing a fierce body!

He stood up!

Compared to a year ago, his body was slightly skinnier, he even seemed a few centimeters shorter. However, just standing there, he emanated a power that was similar to a king level monster, a power that made people tremble!

“Spirit energy training is indeed harder than fighter’s training, I just stepped into the 3rd level star traveller level 3.”

“Luo Feng, quit being narcissistic! These trainings are considered easy at the beginning; it’ll only get harder! Look at Hong and Thunder God, as they grow, it gets harder and harder.” Babata said.

Luo Feng laughed.

Four months ago, he had already broken into the fighter star traveller level 3, however it was only today that he broke into the spirit reader level 3 star traveller.

“ Right now, even with my fighter ability, I can defeat the 3rd representative!” Luo Feng was extremely confident.

His foundation couldn’t be more solid!

As a spirit reader, he was stronger than the 4th representative by countless times. As his foundations were solid, the soaring shuttle and arc cutter blade were easy to control, and Luo Feng’s trump card, the hybrid copper essence shard and the awakened Cloud contact vine, which was a blood red armor before, was more developed with vines now.

The Luo Feng now...

Whether it was internal or external, he had changed drastically!

He was now worthy of being a disciple of Yun Mo Planet!

Suddenly, the phone outside the gravity room rang.

“Hm.”

Luo Feng walked out of the gravity room, picking up the phone and looking at the screen, it was Xu Xin! With Xu Xin running her own business and the base of operations being Yang Zhou city, the two often spent time together.

“Hello, Luo Feng, I’m almost there. I was just buying the ingredients.” Xu Xin’s voice sounded.

“My parents have gone on holiday, I’ve also let my housekeeper go home. Didn’t we say we were going out to eat today?” Luo Feng asked.

“I’ve just learnt some tricks from television, I’ll personally cook today for you to try. Its also my first time cooking. Oh, I’m already at the district!”

Luo Feng walked towards the window and looked out.

There she was...

A beautiful curved white car had pulled around the district, with Luo Feng’s eyesight, he could clearly see Xu Xin dressed in a white

cotton dress smiling with happiness on the driver's seat.

"Xu Xin personally cooking?" Luo Feng took a deep breath, gritting his teeth, "Even if it tastes horrible I have to finish it. I even have to put on an excited expression and praise her!"

Chapter 10 – End of The World

Luo Feng quickly went into the bathroom. He went in the shower and washed himself with warm water.

Immediately after, with just a thought, a golden energy surrounded his body, evaporating the water droplets. He quickly got dressed and ran downstairs! At this time, Xu Xin had just parked her car and was walking in with her food basket.

“Wow.” Luo Feng opened the door.

“You’ve bought quite the number of ingredients.” Luo Feng was surprised when he saw the basket.

“You just wait and eat.” Xu Xin said confidently. Once she had placed the basket in the kitchen, she took out an apron from her bag and put it on.

“You come prepared.” Luo Feng laughed.

“But of course!”

Xu Xin went directly into the kitchen, closing the door behind her, beginning her battle with the pots and pans!

Luo Feng laughed and walked towards the sofa, turning on the television. It was now the winter holidays...his little brother’s

girlfriend was on holiday and the two were happily on tour, enjoying their alone time. His parents had unexpectedly decided to go travel too! Suddenly, all that was left was Luo Feng.

It was lucky Xu Xin came regularly, the two had some alone time.

After about 40 minutes.

The kitchen door opened, a fresh aroma emanated out, Luo Feng picked up the smell: “Wow, it smells good, I wonder how they it tastes.”

“It’s time to eat!” Xu Xin was wearing gloves as she brought out a large soup pot and placed in on the dining table.”

Luo Feng went in to help with the rice bowls and other dishes.

“It’s complete!” Xu Xin took off her gloves, apron and sat by the side, “Three dishes and a soup, Luo Feng, try them!” Saying so, she looked with anticipation at Luo Feng, almost like a child who had finished writing her first essay and awaiting approval.

“Let me wash my hands first.” Luo Feng got up.

“Try it first.” Xu Xin pulled Luo Feng back, clearly a little impatient as she stared at him.

Luo Feng laughed: “Alright, I’ll first try this potato with fried

diced meat.”

“Eh, it’s potato with shredded meat.” Xu Xin corrected Luo Feng.

“This is shredded?” Luo Feng looked surprised at the chunks of meat on the plate, Xu Xin was embarrassed as she said: “I have no experience, so my slices were not thin enough. I just chopped it up a little more.”

“Ok, as long as it tastes good.”

Luo Feng held back his laughter, using chopsticks, he took some potato along with some meat and put them in his mouth and chewed. His conditioned reflex to smile was well prepared from before, since it was his girlfriend’s first time cooking, he had to encourage her no matter how bad it was.

But...

His expression froze.

“What’s wrong?” Xu Xin was startled, surprised as she looked at him.

“Oh? It’s actually not bad!” Luo Feng said shocked as he looked at the ’shredded meat’, picking up another piece and eating.” Wow, it’s really not bad! This taste is not far off from the restaurants, not at all. Whoever said that girls can’t cook on their first try are clearly lying.”

Xu Xin looked at Luo Feng mumbling to himself; “What are you saying!”

“Eh, It’s nothing, I’m complimenting you.” Luo Feng said.

“But of course, I’ve tried some in the kitchen, it was delicious.” Xu Xin picked a piece up and ate, “I must say I have some natural talent in cooking.”

Luo Feng wasn’t lying at all, Xu Xin’s dishes were not bad.

He secretly let out a sigh of relief…he was lucky his stomach didn’t have to suffer.

Luo Feng and Xu Xin began to eat, chatting as they ate. Xu Xin spoke frankly about her business and other matters.

“Luo Feng, the couple safety amulet you gave me, I’m always wearing it. It keeps me refreshed.” Xu Xin lifted from her neck a safety pendant, this was in fact a very special silver pendant that had unique engravings on it.

“It’s of course something good, you can’t even buy it with money.” Luo Feng took one out from his neck too.

These pendants were actually gifts from Babata for Luo Feng and his wife, with one each, they had some protective abilities.

“Items from the archaeological ruins are obviously good things.” Xu Xin laughed.

“Oh, these safety pendants were made for married couples.” Luo Feng looked at Xu Xin, with a queer smile, he said, “Xu Xin…when are we getting married? My parents are pestering me.”

“Marriage, my family has been pestering me too.”

Xu Xin’s perfect smooth face began to grow red, “However, there’s no rush for this.”

“Yup, no rush!”

Luo Feng caught on and nodded, “That’s good too, let’s wait a few years.”

“You…” Xu Xin stared at him wide-eyed.

“Angry?” Haha, are you worried you’d be left on the shelf?” Luo Feng immediately laughed.

Xu Xin was even more flustered!

“Come on, don’t be angry, how about we register for the marriage this month?” Luo Feng said.

“That’s too soon.” Xu Xin seemed nervous.

“One’s too fast, and the other’s too long. Women.” Luo Feng sighed a big sigh, Xu Xin said with dissatisfaction: “I’m just not ready and nervous.”

To see the usually calm and collected Xu Xin throw such a little girl’s tantrum made Luo Feng feel a sense of warmth in his heart.

Indeed, this year had been warm and peaceful.

His parents had been happy, his brother too had opened an investing company and his own progress in training had been phenomenal and steady. With his constant evolution, and his relationship with Xu Xin steadily growing stronger, they were indeed ready to talk about marriage.

******

Since the incident at Misty Island, the entire earth had had peace for an entire year!

The five countries, HR Alliance, two big dojos, they all had at least three or four Mu Ya crystals from the incident, the lucky ones got seven or eight of them! This helped the several powers gain a few more representative fighters within the year, 2059 that year, was the year where the number of representatives on earth had increased by the most, a total of thirty of them!

Even though they lost several representatives during the Misty Island incident.

However, the number of representatives on earth had reached a staggering 81! With humanity growing stronger, dealing with the sea monsters had become easier. With the countries deploying star traveller warriors, there was no shortage of fighters.

……

A.D Year 2060 13th January dusk, North America, New York.

New York, during the Great Nirvana, was earth's economic center, it was deemed the planet's capital! Back then, the predecessor of the HR Alliance, along with the various financial groups, families were all in New York. However, the great nirvana occurred and since New York was closest to the Atlantic Ocean, it was the first to get attacked.

Hence, it became a paradise for the monsters!

……

Just like China's Shanghai being linked directly to the East China sea, so was New York to the Atlantic.

Hence, America built a big military sector not far from New

York. It even built a military base in New York to prevent the sea monsters from entering the mainland.

A base that exceeded 500m in length, was like a malevolent monster had taken up that space in the river itself.

Within that base.

The rays of light from the sunset shone in, within a bunker below, five american soldiers sat crossed legged on the floor gambling. There were hardly any battles that occurred, and when they do occur, there wre many casualties. Hence when the soldiers gambled, the higher-ups wouldn't bother.

"Oh my god, lousy card!"

A young black man cursed as he threw his card away.

"Ten of spades, ten of spades, ten of spades!" a white youth beside couldn't stop shouting, picking up the card that was dealt to him, flipping it over only to curse. "What bad luck, I've lost again!"

"Haha, I've won again."

A youth with blonde curly hair laughed, through the bunker's little gap in the wall, he sent a flying kiss out," Oh beautiful statue of liberty, continue to shower me with good luck!" The gap faced straight towards the statue of liberty, however the statue had long fallen and turn to ruins.

“Bullshit! The statue of liberty has already fallen, I don’t believe you’ll keep winning, again.” The bald youth shouted.

“Wow, quickly come see, what is that!”

One of the soldiers was pointing through the gap, the others immediately ran up to look.

“My god!”

“Oh god!”

“It’s an emperor level monster!”

An ear piercing alarm rang, sounding through the entire base. The calm and relaxed base became busy and tense immediately, countless soldiers began to take their positions and prepare for battle!

With the sunset rays shining down, in front of the enormous military base…a large monster had appeared!

This monster’s body was about 180m long, it’s body structure was similar to a ‘lion’ type monster, its body was covered with black scales that were as big as houses, every one of them seemed terrifying. It even had a 200m wingspan that was covered in black scales, they looked like they were made of steel!

The horn on its head seemed to want to pierce through the heavens.

It's singular black horn was wrapped by a gold pattern, its complex patterns spread down to its neck, all over its back and even to its tail! It was like its entire body was covered by a gold and black mixed armour. What was most chilling was those dark golden pupils!

A pair of dark golden pupils, almost, almost like god's eyes, keeping its gaze on the tens of thousands of creatures below it!

A pair of pupils concealing a malevolence.

Ice cold!

Brutal!

This was it! An existence that had never appeared on earth before!

"An emperor level monster in the air, it's courting death."

"Use the laser cannons to shoot it down!"

"It's definitely going to die."

While the base's many soldiers were shocked and afraid, they were still very confident in their laser cannons, man's greatest weapon!

Whoosh!

Whoosh!

Whoosh!

Three white beams at frightening speeds attacked the black and golden monster's scales directly!

The beams dissipated!

The scales...were undamaged!!!

"Wooo..." A low humming noise. It was as though the god's roar filled everywhere.

The entire ruined New York's monster population lowered their head in fear, it was oppression on the spiritual level. All the soldiers in the base felt nothing but extraordinary fear. The generals in charge could only look in fear at the monster figure that took up more than half the screen.

"Just what is that creature?"

“Even the powerful laser cannons couldn’t hurt it one bit?”

Suddenly…

The creature opened its mouth!

“Howl!”

“Rumble!

The earth was dark, in an instant, the space around the creature’s mouth had warped, the entire base actually lifted off the ground and flew towards its mouth. As it flew closer, it became smaller and smaller! The base, which was originally bigger than the creature’s entire body had actually shrunk to no more than five meters long, the soldiers who nothing more than ants to the creature were all petrified with fear, shouts and screams of fear filled the air.

The creature swallowed the base in one gulp before closing it’s mouth!

The entire base was gone!

“Oh my god!”

In the distant ruined skyscraper from which the laser was shot

from, the soldiers were all pale, almost as though they had seen a ghost.

Rumble...

Two other enormous sea creatures surfaced, if Luo Feng or Hong and the others had seen this, they would have recognized...these two creatures were the other two ‘Grand Emperor’ monsters. The waters began to boil as countless other sea monsters surfaced, they all looked as though they’ve seen their god in that mysterious creature.

“Howl!” The creature raised its head and roared, it’s horn piercing the skies!

It was almost as though it was announcing...It had come!

Chapter 11 – Emergency Summons

Following the declaration-like roar from the mysterious creature, the two Grand Emperor monsters behind...one was an enormous octopus shaped monster that covered both the land and skies, engulfing the entire island, the other was something out of the chinese legends, a dragon whose length meandered over 1000 meters, except its body was constantly flickering with electricity and energy.

The two grand emperors too let out earth shattering roars!

Rumble...

The roars spread in all directions, countless other roars and noises started to come from the water below, where the countless number of water creatures began to swiftly follow the flow and attack into humanity's mainland area!

*****

China, Jiang Nan headquarter city's Yang Zhou city, Luo Feng's house.

It was currently 8pm.

On the sofa in the living room, Luo Feng sat with Xu Xin, watching television while eating some fruits and snacks.

“Today one of my subordinate ladies ran over to tattle on someone. While I’m not too fond of these ‘reports’, our company’s manager Li really doesn’t know how to conduct himself in public! Does he have to be so narcissistic and arrogant? It puts me in a spot.” Xu Xin chatted with Luo Feng as she watched television.

“Just fire him.” Luo Feng said frankly.

“Running a company isn’t that easy, I can’t just fire anyone on a whim.” Xu Xin said, “Manager Li’s skills and expertise are still decent, I’ll have a word with him when I get back.”

“Oh, I don’t know anything.”

Luo Feng casually said, “Right, my parents are returning tomorrow.”

“What.” Xu Xin was shocked, “what do we do?”

“What do we do? Relax! You can just stay here.” Luo Feng turned to look at her, saying, “Anyway you are already mine, what’s there to be shy about.”

“What do you mean I’m yours!” Xu Xin stared hard wide-eyed at him.

Luo Feng immediately laughed out loud.

“You!” Xu Xin immediately brandished her claws and prepared to pound on him.

“Hold on, telephone.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Don’t lie to me.” Xu Xin said, disbelieving.

“There’s really a call.” Luo Feng picked up the telephone and answered it.

“How are you Luo Feng.” A deep voice resounded.

“Oh, Mo Henderson.” Luo Feng smiled, “Do you need something from me?”

Ice Emperor Mo Henderson?

Xu Xin shut her mouth shocked, she didn’t dare to utter a sound or disturb his conversation in any way.

Since the incident on Misty Island, this Ice Emperor and Luo Feng has had a little grudge, both had not been in contact ever since. Luo Feng never would have thought that America’s number one strongest and 3rd representative Ice Emperor Mo Henderson would personally call to look for him.

“It’s a very important matter, it concerns the survival of humanity. You should hurry into the Palace of Wargods, all the

representatives, chairmen, government officials and higher-ups will be there.” Mo Henderson said.

“What’s happening?” Luo Feng said shocked.

Earth and humanity’s survival?

“There’s no time to explain in detail, I still have people to inform. Just hurry over to the Palace of Wargods.” As he finished, Mo Henderson hung up.

Indeed, for the American government to relay news to someone as important and with status as Luo Feng, they couldn’t just pick a random worker to call, lest Luo Feng just dismisses it! However, someone like Mo Henderson relaying the news had a lot more credibility.

There was silence in the living room.

Luo Feng arched his eyebrow.

“Luo Feng, what’s happening?” Xu Xin said worried.

“No idea, I’ll enter the virtual space to see. I’ll tell you when I get back.” after telling her, Luo Feng directly went to the 2nd floor and into the gravity room.

******

Closing the gravity room door behind, in its normal condition, the room maintained just 1x earth's gravity.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged.

"Babata, help me connect straight into the virtual space of the Palace of Wargods." Luo Feng's directed his thoughts straight to his wrist cuff space, talking to Babata.

"No problem!"

Laughed Babata, who was wearing underpants, lying in a rocking chair, and being massaged comfortably by a servant within the wrist cuff space.

……

Whoosh!

An enormous room, this was the first time Luo Feng was entering the room where the wargods lived. He entered into the room donning a full golden Chinese robe.

"Representative Luo, please head straight to the top floor's meeting room." An automated voice sounded in that room.

"Top floor's meeting room?" Luo Feng was shocked.

That was the wargods' biggest meeting room, usually most meetings were held there. For the gathering this time to be held there...it obviously meant something big had happened.

Luo Feng quickly left the room and headed up.

Up the winding stairs, Luo Feng met two other representatives, along with some wargods in white robes. Luo Feng began chatting with the two representatives and it was clear... that these two representatives weren't sure of what was happening either, just that the American side and urgently informed everyone to enter the virtual space.

.....

At the Wargods' top floor meeting room, already more than 50 representatives donning golden robes had appeared, along with wargods in white robes! The many in white consisted not only of wargods, but also the higher ups and leaders from the five great countries.

Those leaders may be presidents or vice presidents, but their battle strength aren't all at the wargod level.

Normally, they wouldn't have the authority to come in, today, however, they had special permission.

"Luo Feng."

“Jia Yi.” Luo Feng walked over to shake Jia Yi’s hand, “Do you know what’s going on?”

“I think something big has happened in America, I’m not too sure of the details.” Jia Yi shook his head, “However according to the brief conversation we had with the American president, things are very serious! Something catastrophic. However, they didn’t get the chance to explain things in detail, they had to rush to inform all the other countries and parties.

“Catastrophic?” Luo Feng’s heart sank.

“Let’s go, you still haven’t met quite a number of our Chinese leaders, go get familiar with them.” Jia Yi pulled Luo Feng along to meet several leaders.

The number of people in the meeting room steadily grew.

The atmosphere in the room was tense, before five minutes were up, all the representatives, leaders of the five great countries, the HR Alliance chairman and people had all arrived! It could be said that...within that short time span, all of earth’s powers, leaders and governments had all gathered in that one space.

“The 1st representative is here.”

“America’s president is also here.”

Luo Feng turned his head, Hong, Thunder God along with Mo Henderson and others had arrived together, amongst them was the president. The meeting room suddenly grew silent.

The president walked straight to the podium.

“Fellow leaders, representatives, chairmen.” The black skinned president had a troubled expression and lowered his voice as he spoke, “Right now all of the world’s powers are gathered here, it should be a joyous gathering. However, I must painfully inform everybody…catastrophe and the end is upon us!”

Everyone’s expression changed.

A country’s president, couldn’t possibly lie in front of everybody.

“I’m unable to fully explain it, please everyone, take a look at this footage!” The black skinned president said seriously.

Whoosh!

A large screen appeared at the front of the meeting room, it began to run a video.

At the start, the sun was setting, a military base was peacefully sitting on the river.

“It’s the district in New York from the Great Nirvana period.” Jia

Yi said softly.

"Just what's going on?" Luo Feng's eyebrow arched as he looked on.

On the screen.

The scene was calm, until suddenly...a huge silhouette broke out from below the water, its speed was terrifying and fast that it was hard to see clearly. One could only make out a black silhouette that rose up and floated in front of the base! This was a mysterious creature that man had never experienced before!

Strong claws, enormous wings that were covered in scales, a powerful tail and a horn that pierced the skies! Plus those cold expressionless golden eyes!

This was a huge creature whose length exceeded 180m!

"What kind of creature is this?"

"Never seen before!"

"Looking at its length, it should be the emperor level."

"An emperor level monster appearing in front of a military base, is it courting death? A laser cannon would kill it immediately."

The representatives along with some of the countries' leaders had begun a soft discussion, everyone was still glued to the scene, waiting to see how it would unfold. At the same time, everyone watching the screen and the creature all had a certain indescribable sense of fear, however, the magnitude was different between the strong and weak, Hong and Luo Feng didn't feel too much fear! This made Hong, Thunder God, Luo Feng and several other stronger fighters very suspicious.

At their level, there shouldn't be anything on earth that could make them feel fear.

On the screen!

Three glaring laser beams hit the creature directly, everyone held their breaths as they watched.

The lights dispersed!

"What!"

"The scales are undamaged?"

"That's impossible! Even a Grand emperor monster may be able to defend against the strongest lasers but it wouldn't escape unscathed!"

The meeting room erupted in noise

Even the calmer warriors, including Hong, Thunder God and Luo Feng changed their expressions immediately! Under the power of the laser beam, the grand emperor monsters, Hong nor Luo Feng wouldn't be able to escape unscathed!

"Everybody, I can guarantee that those three laser beams were at 100% power." The black skinned president said seriously, "Please continue watching!"

Silence!

Everybody continued watching.

On the screen, the mysterious creature opened its mouth, warping the space around it, this was clear even to the naked eye. The base, which was much bigger than the creature had actually floated up! It even grew smaller and smaller as it flew towards the creature's mouth, to the point that it had shrunk till no more than 5 meters wide before it was swallowed.

"My god!"

"That's impossible."

"Oh god."

No matter how calm the leaders were, or the warriors...everyone

was stunned!”

This scene had completely destroyed man’s understanding and physics, it was something science could not explain at all! For a base that exceeded 500m long to fly up and shrink? How was this possible? To actually eat a base?

“All of the base’s 50 thousand soldiers were all eaten, no survivors.” The black skinned president said seriously.

“However!!!”

He took a deep breath, “This, is just the beginning!”

He pointed towards screen in which the mysterious creature was howling, “With this creature as the leader, the other two grand emperor and countless other sea monsters, they all follow its command and have begun to attack inwards!” Saying that, countless sea monsters appeared on the screen madly rushing down the river towards the mainland.

On the screen, the scene changed, it was the continent of North America.

The mysterious creature had actually swallowed yet another base!

“There’s no way to resist!”

“No matter how strong the base, or how brave the soldiers, how powerful the warriors, it, swallows the all in one gulp!”

“It’s a nightmare.”

“Catastrophe!”

“Apocalypse!!!”

The black skinned president looked towards everyone in the meeting room, everyone had grown silent, no one could utter a sound.

Chapter 12 – Space Beast

"The sea monsters are on the move and progressing, with that mysterious creature as the leader, we have no way to defend! Everybody, what should we do?" The black skinned president anxiously looked around the meeting room, everyone's expression was serious, the president continued worriedly: "Currently, the death toll has already hit 210,800, this means over 21 hundred thousand death notices!" His eyes began welling up.

Everybody's hearts sank as they heard this.

They had lost so many lives already!

Luo Feng watched the mysterious creature on the screen, the creature was killing and eating American people, while it was painful to watch and he pitied them, his feelings weren't particularly strong. On the contrary...what he felt was more of an oppressing feeling! If it was America today, what about tomorrow?

If it were his own Chinese countrymen being eaten in the tens of thousands, so many of them dying...

He couldn't imagine such a scene happening!

"That must never be allowed to happen!" Luo Feng clenched his fist tightly.

"Just where did this creature appear from? No one has ever seen

it before!”

“Four claws, with wings, with scales that cover the wings!”

“How is it able to swallow a base in one gulp?”

“What is this monster?”

There was a soft discussion in the meeting room, the various countries’ leaders, chairmen, representatives all had a difficult and worried expressions. Facing such an unknown creature that popped out from nowhere, such a terrifying beast, it had everybody flustered and lost. Even Hong, Thunder God looked serious, they were clear...

To be able to lead two Grand emperor monsters and to be unscathed against the most powerful laser beams.

This creature’s power far exceeded theirs!

“I know!”

“I know!”

Suddenly, an English speaking voice resounded, Luo Feng’s ears automatically activated the virtual space’s translating facilities. “What do you know?” Luo Feng turned his head, everybody in the room turned, an old man with a full head of white hair shouted,

everybody looked over, the old man said: “I am Claus, from the HR Alliance, I’m in charge of the archaeological ruins research and documentation.”

“What do you know?” Hong, dressed in black, asked him.

Everyone in the meeting room turned to him.

The old man with a full head of white hair bowed slightly before straightening up: “Greetings chairmen, representatives, everybody knows…to get to the representative level is to in fact step into the star traveller level 1.”

Most of the representatives remained silent.

However, a few country’s leaders along with the few dozen wargods in this meeting were shocked.

“Silence.” Hong said seriously.

Silence.

The white haired Claus continued: “Following the ancient civilization records and data, once a star traveller reaches level 9, to progress further would be to reach the star level. Above that lies the universe level! And it takes countless galaxies to give birth to a universe level fighter. However in the vast universe, there exists some very unique monsters…the space beasts!”

“Eh?”

Hong, along with Thunder God and others were shocked, they obviously didn’t know of the space beasts before.

“Space beasts, are extremely few in numbers, any one of them grown up can easily reach the universe level! They can easily destroy a planet.” Claus’s eyes were lit, he pointed towards the screen’s mysterious creature, “This mysterious creature, is probably a space beast…the swallowing type of space beast.

“The swallowing type, is a particularly strong type among the space beasts.”

“To be able to swallow the base means that it has some special devouring abilities. In the universe, only this particular type of spaces beast should have this kind of ability. So I assume that this is a swallowing type space beast!” Claus said with confidence.

There was a moment of silence in the room before noise erupted.

“What’s the universe level?”

“What’s the star and universe level.”

“Space beast?”

“It takes countless galaxies for a universe level fighter, does that mean that there’s intelligent life from other planets?”

The meeting room was chaotic beyond compare.

While this old man’s news was extremely shocking, with the various earth’s powers discoveries about the ancient civilizations and ruins, many powers on earth actually knew of the universe and it’s basic knowledge! People like Hong, Thunder God were very familiar with the cloud contact vine and its information, some countries even knew about the Mu Ya crystals! With that said, Hong and Thunder God felt even more pressure to push into the Star level!

Obviously, the upper levels of humanity wouldn’t be that clueless.

It was just....

The news was too shocking to release publicly! Normally, people who became representatives and reached the countries’ upper echelons would only then be deemed worthy of receiving such information. However, it was clear that many in the meeting room didn’t know about these things.

“Silence.” Hong spoke up.

There was immediate silence in the meeting room, the elites of the entire world turned to look at him.

“What he said earlier isn’t wrong.” Hong said seriously, “To become a representative means to step into the star traveller level 1! And there’s a total of 9 levels! Above that is the Star Level and above that lies the Universe level.”

“Universe level warriors are extremely strong, they can easily destroy a planet!”

“I shall not mention more about anything else.”

Hong’s voice was cold as ice, “All I know is that this mysterious creature, which is actually a space beast, is a catastrophe that is hard to get rid of. We all need to work together to think of a way out of this predicament. Claus, can you send all the information on the space beasts over here.”

Claus froze, he looked at Isadora, the chairman of the HR Alliance behind him and saw her nod.

“Okay.” Claus nodded.

“Oh, can you tell me, just how strong this space beast is approximately? Is it at the universe level?” Hong said seriously.

If it was a universe level existence!

Then there would be no need for resistance, because there was no

power at all to do it. The only way was to arrange for evacuation procedures, for humanity's survival and future generations.

"No, it's definitely not at the universe level."

The white haired old man shook his head, "According to my calculations and from what I know, a universe level space monster should at least be about a few thousand meters long, some are even crazier, a few ten's of thousands of meters long. This particular devouring beast, is a total of only 180m! According to my calculations, it's probably a star traveller 8 or 9, maybe a star level."

Hong and Thunder god looked at each other, this was a predicament humanity might have a chance of resisting!

.....

Luo Feng looked at the mysterious creature on the screen.

It was actually easy to guess, a grand emperor monster was about a star traveller level 6, this particular creature was much stronger. Hence, a star traveller level 8 or 9 or even a star level was possible!

"If it's at the star level then it'd be troublesome." Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

"Please sit everybody."

The 3rd representative Mo Henderson shouted, “Let’s all think together of a solution, how can we deal with this…let’s just call it temporarily the swallowing monster! How to we deal with it, not killing it means more people will die.”

In the meeting room.

Everyone sat down and began their discussions. Even with the discussion, the truth was humanity’s hands were tied! The strongest weapon they had before: Laser cannons, with it’s highest efficiency and power didn’t even leave a mark on that devouring monster’s scales, what else could they do?

There was only one way left!

Nuclear warheads!

Nuclear warheads definitely had a terrifying power, however it required the target to be hit directly in the center for the damage to be highest! Also, the radiation that results from the blast usually creates even more mutations of creatures. Under normal circumstances, humans would never resort nuclear warheads. The gains didn’t justify the losses.

This time however, there was no choice, humanity didn’t have any stronger trump card.

“Using nuclear warheads?”

“How big of a yield? 50 megatons? Or more?”

“Is there a guarantee?”

The world’s elite were all anxiously discussing.

“Speed!”

“At the start of the footage, when it flew out from the water, how fast was it!” someone shouted immediately.

The speed was calculated quickly.

“When the devouring monster first showed itself, its speed was 13082 meters per second! Subsequently, according to satellite records, there was an instance when it was even faster, 14899 meters per second!” A worker from the American side messaged through the internet to the virtual space meeting room.

“That fast?”

Hong, Thunder God’s expressions changed. Their speed was way slower than this creature.

Luo Feng’s expression too wasn’t looking good.

Now that he was a level 3 spirit reader, even with the soaring shuttle, his max speed was only a little more than 5000 m/s! This was relying on both his spirit reader powers and the soaring shuttle! Luo Feng estimated...flying speed in the air, as a fighter, even Thunder God wasn't faster then himself. Yet the speed between him and the devouring monster was too different.

"Babata, Babata." Luo Feng's thoughts shouted out.

"What do you need me for, I'm sleeping!" Babata's thoughts reached Luo Feng.

Within the virtual space, AIs were able to enter, it was afterall a space built by the AIs.

And Babata was above the AI that built the Wargod palace, much much stronger! That was why he could enter the space without the Wargod palace's AI even noticing.

"Tell me, that creature on the screen, what exactly is it and is there any way to kill it." Luo Feng said.

Only Babata could help now, his knowledge and experience of the universe was much more vast than earth and humanity.

"Oh? Let the demon Babata take a look!" Babata said confidently.

Luo Feng waited quietly.

“My god!!! Babata shouted surprised, “I’ve seen a ghost, where did you get this footage, how did you get this footage?”

“What footage, this is earth. Right now this mysterious creature is on earth destroying and slaughtering.” Luo Feng said.

“On earth?”

“You are saying, that this ‘golden horned beast’ is on earth?” Babata said disbelieving.

“Right! It’s currently in the North American continent.” Luo Feng said.

“This, this, how is this possible? In the master’s 60 million years of life, travelled countless galaxies, he only met a total of three space beasts, and none of them were of the higher level bloodline!” Babata couldn’t believe it, “and a golden horned beast actually popped up on earth!”

Luo Feng was unsatisfied: “Babata, clarify yourself!”

“Remember what I told you before!”

“In the universe, the space beasts are really powerful, and among the space beasts there are various bloodlines, three types specifically, one of them is the strongest, the one that when it

reaches maturity becomes a sector lord! This is the strongest bloodline in the universe, the one I introduced that eats the milky way, the flaming star beast."

"And what you see here is the space beast that is similar and is at the top of the bloodline, the golden horned beast, it's even more ferocious than the flaming star beast! It's reputation is even bigger!"

"Once it's fully grown, it'll be a sector lord!"

"These golden horned beasts and flaming star beasts all belong to the space beasts swallowing type, however the flaming star beast is fire based, and the golden horned beast is metal based. It's the strongest type, stronger than even Man's strongest bloodline! The golden horned beast is ferocious and brutal, its attacking powers are extremely strong!" Babata sighed, "It's over, now that it's on Earth, Earth is done for, There's no hope, it's over."

Chapter 13 – When The Root Dies, How Can The Leaves Live?

‘It’s over’, ‘there’s no hope’, ‘it’s over’, Babata’s words were like a hammer pounding on Luo Feng’s soul, his entire person was in shock.

The Earth is done for?

It seemed exaggerated. However, since 5000 years ago, from the ancestors of China, the three sovereigns and five emperors, from the Xia, Shang and Zhou dynasties, the spring and autumn and the Warring States periods, there were countless births of special people that shone lights on eras. The Qin Emperor, Liu Guan Zhang of the three Kingdoms who united the kingdoms, burning Red Cliff etc, Liang Jin of the Northern and Southern dynasties, Yuan Ming Qin of the Tang Song dynasties…up to the 21st century, man was living in a modernized society. During the escaping and evacuation when the Great Nirvana happened, it had been peaceful within the bases and people lived happily.

At a particular base and citadel, there was a student at a high school.

His name was Luo Feng.

His classmates, teachers, his dojo buddies, instructors! His parents and relatives, his loved ones, and the people he had interacted with since he was young! They were all nothing but droplets in the entire Chinese community, however, they were still

part of China.

Now...It's over?

"No!"

Luo Feng felt his soul trembling, a piercing pain!

If the entire earth's population was to die, what was the point of he himself living?

"We have to kill it!" Luo Feng pointed at the golden horned beast on the screen, "It, must definitely die!!!"

"Luo Feng, what are you thinking?" Babata asked.

"Babata, the gold horned beast must die!" Luo Feng said.

"Are you running a fever? You are only a level 3 spirit reader, what power do you have to even stir up this star level gold horned beast? You are a disciple of Yun Mo Planet, but this beast's background stretches way further. It's of the elite bloodline, its power is huge. To kill it now, is simply, simply just dreaming!" Babata said, "We have no reason to fight it head on, even if it was dangerous, when the time comes, you just have to enter the Yun Mo Planet ship, once the ship closes, no matter how strong it is, it wouldn't be able to break through! Also with the weight of the ship, it wouldn't be able to swallow it either."

“No!” Luo Feng dismissed Babata’s suggestion.

“Don’t be stupid, why not we just bring along your family and loved ones into the ship too.” Babata said.

“Babata, are we nothing but tortoises that hide in their shells, hiding away from this crisis! After everything has passed and we walk out...oh the rest of humanity is gone. The colleagues that my parents have, the neighbours etc all dead. All that’s left would be me and my family? There’s no meaning in that. How can my parents live with that? How can I live with that?” Luo Feng asked.

It was impossible to imagine!

It was a scene Luo Feng couldn’t imagine, it was terrifying! It chilled his heart.

“I cannot understand you humans and your way of thinking.” Babata was unsatisfied, “you aren’t a match at all, and you still want to fight!”

“Man, cannot live without society.”

“Man, cannot live without his nationality or motherland!”

“If the earth was empty and lonely with just one survivor, it’s as good as being dead!” Luo Feng’s heart chilled at the thought,

“Babata, when a country is destroyed, it’s survivors have a name, they are called slaves of a vanquished nation!”

The earth was his roots!

China was his roots!

When the root dies, the leaves too would dry and wilt!

And himself…he was nothing but one of the countless leaves, just one that was a little better.

When the root dies, how can the leaves live?

“Babata, tell me, how can we kill it.” Luo Feng’s thoughts went through.

“Come on, there’s no way.” Babata said without any hesitation.

“Babata, you can build a spaceship, can’t you build a strong enough weapon to kill it?” Luo Feng’s thoughts questioned, extremely anxious.

“A weapon capable of killing a star level creature?”

Babata understood Luo Feng’s anxiousness, he thought about it carefully, “Luo Feng! In the universe, a star level is considered

quite strong! Universe level warriors and on can battle interstellar fleets with only their bodies! This means, normal interstellar fleets have a hard time killing universe level fights, killing a star level too requires quite a powerful weapon."

"That level of weapon, building it is complicated and difficult, it also requires at least a few years of work." Babata said, "however, with the gold horned beast's speed, one month would be enough for it to wipe out the entire earth."

Luo Feng understood.

The gold horned space beast was leading countless sea creatures and invading across earth and it's lands, it was indeed too fast.

"What's more Luo Feng!"

"Building a strong weapon is the easy part, what about operating and firing? To hit the target with such a weapon is very difficult." Babata said, "That's why, if you really want to fight, there's only one way.

"Tell me." Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat.

"There are some wreckage of universe battleships, those remains could be used to build a weapon! While time could have corroded some of them and made them unusable, if I can work on them, they might be able to work again." Babata said, "Of course all this relies a lot on luck! Ultimately, a weapon able to kill a star level is

considered powerful even amongst an interstellar fleet. For example, your Head's ship is only a transport ship, it's weapons are comparably weaker."

Luo Feng listened, there was some hope.

Right...

Look through the ancient ruins, look for a weapon that surpasses humanity's.

"Babata, can you measure accurately the strength of this space beast." Luo Feng asked, to know oneself and his enemies was the only way to win a hundred battles unscathed

"It?"

Babata said, "Look, that horn on its head that's covered in gold engravings, does it have one protruding out?"

Luo Feng looked carefully at the screen.

Right! On the head of the gold horned beast, besides the one horn that pierced the sky, there was a slight protrusion beside it.

"A gold horned beast's growth is very easy to determine! Because at different stages, it has different unique feature. 'Infant stage' it only has one horn on his head! 'Growth stage', it begins to grow

it's 2nd horn. 'Youth Stage', it begins to grow its 3rd horn, 'Young adult', the 4th horn. 'Maturity', it grows its 5th horn!"

"As its power grows, the engravings on its horns get more complex, until finally, the horns look almost totally gold."

"That's why, it was named the Gold Horned Beast!" Babata said.

Luo Feng understood.

"It's 2nd horn has only just begun to protrude, that means it hasn't stepped into the star level for too long." Babata continued, however, it's bloodline is too strong, its growth speed is terrifying! In its growth stage, it will madly devour metal to absorb, thus it's power rises constantly. To kill it, we need to do it now and quickly, before it gets even stronger."

Luo Feng understood.

Once it reaches maturity, it becomes a sector lord Gold Horned beast, its growth speed would definitely be shocking.

"No wonder he devoured the base, it's mostly made of metal." Luo Feng sighed."

"Relax, as a swallowing beast, while he might have his own internal world, it's still a little punk in its infant stage, there's a limit to its intake." Babata said, "however Luo Feng, I still have to advise you...not a single one of the space beasts are worth stirring

up, their blood contains accumulated memories and experience from ancient times."

"To kill a space beast is very difficult."

"To kill a gold horned beast that's ranked at the top is even more difficult!"

"The master once heard, there was once an undying in the universe who met a sector lord level 'gold horned beast' and wanted to kill it! Normally, for an undying to kill a sector lord was an easy feat. However...while the beast couldn't win the battle, it still managed to flee." Babata sighed, "These bloodlines with populations that are extremely small, even if you can win in battle, killing them is extremely difficult."

Luo Feng was silent.

"If we don't try, how will we know?" Luo Feng said, "Babata... This battle, I have no choice!"

"It has to die!"

"If not, to allow it to destroy humanity on earth, I'd rather die first!" Luo Feng said seriously.

Luo Feng had never regarded himself as noble or great, he could watch an entire base get swallowed by the gold horned beast. However when faced with humanity's extinction and China's

destruction, he felt that he was just a leaf without any roots and there would be no meaning to living. He'd rather die than let it happen.

"That stupid way of thought."

Babata was helpless, "It's a pity the Yun Mo Planet ship doesn't have any weapons!"

For undying beings, those weapons didn't have much meaning! Like the Yun Mo Planet ship, it's body was made of the hybrid copper essence, one shard was more than a ton, how much did the entire ship weigh? With its strength, it only needed to accelerate to a terrifying speed, along with its piercing abilities, no one damage it!

Normally, flying about in the universe, breaking through asteroids and banging right through them, cutting them just like tofu.

With impact! Even a planet could be cut through!

Killing a star level, was like cutting vegetables.

It as pity...

The ship was damaged and couldn't fly.

……

As Luo Feng was discussing with Babata in his head, so were the others in the room.

“Old Wang, if it is a level 8 or 9 star traveller level creature, we still have hope. If it’s in the star level…then the chances of success are only 1%.” The 2 old men sat and quietly discussed.

“Oh, Old Li, anything from your discussion there?” an old man with a head of white hair asked.

“Oh, during the Great Nirvana, there was no place to test a large amount of nuclear warheads. However during the headquarter city era, there were large open spaces with tens of thousands of kilometers! The only thing is.” Old Li nodded his head, “a detailed plan, has to be discussed by the countries’ experts. I’m thinking if we fail…”

“You are talking about the human survival project?” Old Wang looked at him.

Old Li looked back.

The two of them had worked and lost blood and sweat during the Great Nirvana building the headquarter cities. They of course couldn’t bear to lose their country and people!

“The commoners are all living peaceful lives and suddenly the

end is here?” Old Wang closed his eyes, tears welling up before he opened them again. His gaze was firm, “I believe all the countries are the same, let the human survival project begin quietly! If we are unable to defend against it, we’ll do it full scale. For the full details, we’ll discuss after leaving the virtual space!”

Old Li nodded, but he felt a sense of heavy breathing!

“Perhaps…if things weren’t that bad.” Old Li said quietly.

……

The entire meeting room.

Be it fighters like Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, or the countries’ leaders, or some of the specialist invited by the weapons divisions, they were all racking their brains for a solution.

They were the earth’s elite!

No one was willing to give up!

Chapter 14 – Archaeological Ruins Item List

Everyone in the meeting room was feeling anxious.

“Brother Hong, do you have any guarantee?” Thunder God and Hong were sitting in a corner, no one around dared to go close.

“None at all!”

“Hong shook his head, “However, even if we have no guarantee, in the end, we will still have to fight! As a star traveller level 7 along with my own domain, I already have no match in the star traveller level. Plus my fast evolving cloud contact vine that I’ve been feeding the Mu Ya crystals to, even if I battle to the death with a Star level 1, I might still have some hope!”

“The biggest problem lies in we not knowing much about the swallowing beast” Hong said seriously.

“Right.” Thunder God nodded.

However, Hong and Thunder God clearly didn’t know…a star level one human fighter and a star level 1 monster was very different! Not to mention the scariest of the monsters…the space beasts! Even more so the elite of the space beast bloodline, the golden horned beast, this was the leading bloodline in the vast universe.

This was also why Babata had deemed it the end of the world!

“Attention!”

“Attention!”

The American president, “The American side has just sent over a footage regarding the swallowing beast!”

Immediately everybody went silent.

Luo Feng too looked over.

A new footage was showing on the screen, this was in the vast wilderness, a base was one a wide river. At this particular base a large number of soldiers and personnel were in the midst of fleeing! One after another, the disc shaped battleships were flying and leaving!

“They had just received orders from headquarters, give up the base and quickly retreat.” The american president said. “Headquarters had determined from our satellites that the swallowing beast was headed in that direction.”

“However, it’s too fast, the retreat hadn’t completed…”

On the screen, a golden light stopped, it was that four clawed, scaled winged swallowing beast.

There was silence and a sense of dread in the meeting room.

“Another is about to get devoured?” Luo Feng shook his head.

On the screen , the swallowing monster actually rushed straight at the base, almost like lightning, and swept past the base. Its wings’ scales acted like knives and sliced past the base, cutting through almost like it was tofu and destroying the base. The soldiers who were unable to evacuate in time were either crushed to death or cut into slices by the wings!

The base had turned into a wreckage!

With its ice cold golden pupils, it looked at the battleships fleeing in all directions, their speed…was just pitiful compared to its own!

It simply moved it’s front claws!

“Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!”

Five golden rays shot out!

It’s speed was shocking, it immediately hit five of the battleships, those hit immediately exploded into large fireballs, lighting up the dark night sky.

That was the end of the footage!

“Attention all.” The American president said seriously, “This footage has shown us two things, one, it didn’t devour the base this time, it destroyed it. Two, it has long range abilities.”

“Bastard!”

“Bullshit!”

In the meeting room’s sides, the nuclear warhead experts had formed a discussion group, after seeing the footage, they exploded and began to curse! The old men with heads of white were all elites and of status, it was usually impossible to get any one of them to lose their composure. This time however, a great many of them were raging, their faces bright red.

“What’s wrong?” Hong looked over.

“Let me explain”.

One particular big nosed Russian nuclear weapons expert stood up, he looked at everyone, “We’ve been discussing of using a large amount of nuclear warheads on the creature’s body or inside his mouth! What we were most worried about before was its swallowing ability, once devoured, whether our electronic signal would be compromised and we wouldn’t be able to detonate! However, we pretty much can deal with that!”

“Now we realized our biggest problem! It has long range capabilities!”

This big nosed Russian said angrily, “With this swallowing monster’s unbelievable defensive abilities, even with a large amount of nuclear warheads, if they don’t get within 50 meters to detonate, they probably wouldn’t be able to break through its scales!”

Everyone in the meeting room was startled.

“Attention all!”

“The cons of a hydrogen bomb, is its ‘shockwave’ and the resulting ‘nuclear radiation’, it’s initial explosion is but a small factor. However…its initial impact are nothing to this swallowing monster. Radiation? Even the representatives here aren’t afraid of it, much less this swallowing monster.”

“That’s why! Only the explosion at the start can harm it!”

Luo Feng nodded his head as he heard.

When a large amount of nuclear warheads explode, that initial explosion had temperatures that went up to over 20 million degrees…

“However, it has to be right on its body!”

For such an existence, the closer the better, the best would be

inside its mouth! It's internal organs durability cannot compare to its outer scales, to detonate over 100 megatons of nuclear warheads in its mouth would blow its head right off!"

Luo Feng's eyes lit up as he heard.

100 megatons of nuclear warheads?

He didn't believe that wouldn't do the job!

.....

Within his wrist cuff, Babata'a body stood.

"Detonating 100 megatons of nuclear warheads in its mouth?" Babata was eating an apple, shaking his head, "Wishful thinking. They obviously don't understand the swallowing beast...Its reputation is known far and wide in the vast universe, the golden horned beast, an elite bloodline even among the space beast."

"Even the low level civilizations, middle, high level civilizations all cannot belittle it."

"If it was so easy to kill, it wouldn't be a golden horned beast."

"it's a pity...I have too little knowledge on the golden horned beast. I'm not clear on its weaknesses." Babata felt helpless.

Even for undying beings, meeting the space beast was hard due to their small population.

They could be rated as rare and uncommon animals!

China's endangered animal was the panda bears, even now, several zoos didn't have variations of the pandas. The golden horned beast...even undying beings, Yun Mo Planet's master's 600 million years of life, travelling over countless galaxies, had never seen a gold horned beast.

Even the golden horned beast, for birth till death, such an incredibly long life of roaming the universe would probably never meet another of its kind!

It's population was small beyond compare!

Due to that factor, seeing one was hard enough, when one had the chance to meet one, it was even harder to get the chance to dissect and analyze one! And if one had the chance to dissect one, it was hard to research just what the beast had and its special abilities!

Hence!

In the vast universe, the knowledge on the space beast had always been blank! Even the undying beings weren't too clear, they just roughly knew. Maybe if the Yun Mo Planet's master had lived longer, with greater powers and met more warriors, they would

have known more.

600 million years of undying, it was indeed young.

……

Virtual war god palace, meeting room.

“Attention all, now the biggest problem is…if we were to fly the ship with the nuclear warheads to him, it would shoot it down with a golden light. Within a 1000m radius, it would be destroyed, what do we do? Within a 1000m radius, even if it successfully detonated…even a star traveller warrior wouldn’t be killed.” That Russian with the big nose said.

“Attention all, to detonate the bombs on its body, we would only have one chance.”

“Once we fail, with its intellect and the damage it would receive, I’m afraid it wouldn’t let another ship close to itself again. We would have no more chances.” The Russian said as he looked at everybody.

Suddenly…

Hong stood up: “When the time comes, we’ll use my prehistoric level auto jet to deliver the bombs! With my auto jet’s defensive abilities, unless it attacks it up close, even its golden lights wouldn’t be able to destroy my auto jet. With the nuclear warheads

in the autojet, once it gets close, the AI system will self detonate!”

“Thank you.” The Russian with the big nose was elated.

Hong’s prehistoric level auto jet was the earth’s strongest battleship!

a universe level auto jet, it could forcefully go against an emperor grade monster.

Hong’s prehistoric level, was even more capable of fighting a grand emperor level monster!

With its defensive abilities, it was even higher than Hong’s! It was definitely one of Hong’s greatest rewards from the archeological ruins.

“With this, the chances of detonating the warheads in the creature’s mouth is high, much higher.” The big nosed Russian was extremely excited, the earth’s leading experts too were all elated.

Yet at that time...

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, connecting his thoughts to Babata.

“Attention all.” Luo Feng stood up.

Everyone in the meeting room turned over, looking at Luo Feng with suspicion. Hong and Thunder God too turned over curiously. Luo Feng wasn't a nuclear expert, nor was he a leader of a country, what could he say?

"Regarding the swallowing monster, I have some information." Luo Feng said seriously.

There was a sudden silence in the room.

"One, when the monster swallows, it warps the space around it. It isolates the things from the outside world. To control an auto jet to detonate from far away is impossible. Also...when it's swallowing, within that swallowing space, the auto jet and the nuclear warheads will automatically break apart, so the chances of trying to explode it within its mouth is very low!"

The moment he said those words, everyone's expressions changed.

This was the worst news they could receive!

"Two, this swallowing beast's power is indeed at the star level! Luo Feng said.

"Three, the only good news, is that it has a limit to how much it can swallow, it is not a bottomless pit. Just like how it chose to destroy the base instead of swallowing it."

“Luo Feng’s voice resounded across the meeting room.

This 3rd news was the only good point, the first two were just devastating!

“Representative Luo, are you sure?”

“Are you very sure?”

The nuclear experts were all looking towards Luo Feng.

“Definitely.” Luo Feng nodded, “This swallowing monster has the ability to swallow, digest, and absorb metal!”

“No wonder it ate the base.”

“Damn, we are in trouble.”

This news flustered a great number of people.

At this time Luo Feng walked towards Hong, Hong was still troubled over his news that the monster was at the star level.

“Head.” Luo Feng looked at Hong.

“It looks like you’ve earned some rewards from this one year, you actually have precious information on this swallowing beast.” Hong looked at Luo Feng, he didn’t find it strange at all. There were many researchers on earth who dug into the archeological ruins. After becoming a representative, not researching would the weird thing.

“I would like to acquire a list of all of earth’s archeological ruins.” Luo Feng said seriously, “every archeological ruin’s condition, I hope the list comes with some sort of description for each one.”

“This is?” Hong was shocked.

“I want to see if we can find a powerful weapon from these ruins!” Luo Feng said.

Hong shook his head: “The list of Ancient ruins, along with their descriptions, I can give you. However, Luo feng, to find a weapon capable of killing a star level is too difficult. And even if there was one…I’d expect it to be corroded by now.”

“I want to give it a try.” Luo Feng didn’t want to hesitate.

He had time, but humanity and earth didn’t

Looking at Luo Feng’s expression, Hong nodded his head seriously: “Alright, I’ll immediately send over the list. However, you must be careful!”

“Yes.” Luo Feng slightly nodded his head, his body suddenly disappeared from the virtual space, he had left the space.

“Humanity’s survival is at stake.”

Hong muttered, “Luo Feng is trying his best, everyone is trying their best, I really hope we can pass this calamity!”

Chapter 15 – Grievous News

Yang Zhou City's Ming-Yue sector.

Within the gravity room, Luo Feng opened his eyes. He swiftly got up, the door of the room automatically opened.

"Xu Xin, Xu Xin."

Luo Feng quickly rushed down the stairs.

Xu Xin, who was in the living room watching television saw Luo Feng coming down and got up asking: "Luo Feng, what's happened"

"There's no time, come with me now, we have to go get my parents and little brother back." Luo Feng was insecure about his family being outside, "I'll explain along the way."

"Oh, ok."

Xu Xin could see that something major had happened.

******

Within the Emperor class auto jet, they swiftly flew out of Yang Zhou city.

“Hello, mom? Where are you two? Dongbei headquarter city? Good, I’ll be heading over, don’t leave. I’ll pick you two up. Don’t ask, I’ll explain on the way back.” Luo Feng hung up and called his brother, “Hello, Luo Hua, where are you? Oh, in Yang Zhou city? Rush back home now! Yes, immediately!”

Only after finishing the two calls did Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief.

“Luo Feng, what’s happened?” Xu Xin only just dared to ask.

“Calamity.”

“It’s earth and humanity’s calamity.” Luo Feng said seriously, this made Xu Xin’s expression expression change immediately.

“A ‘swallowing monster’ has just appeared from amongst the sea creatures. I, Hong and Thunder God are no match for it.” Luo Feng said, “Even the strongest laser cannons have yet to leave a mark on its scales! Right now, the American side has lost many bases and hundreds of thousands of people, and it’s quickly rising!”

“Xu Xin was slightly shocked: “Hundreds of thousands? That many?”

“Many?” Luo Feng shook his head, “At this rate, the South America, North America, Africa, Asia, Europe and other headquarter cities will all be destroyed, The amount of deaths will

go up to the hundreds of millions. And without the headquarter cities, humanity will be like lambs sent to slaughter."

This calamity, might be even worse than the Grand Nirvana period." Luo Feng said.

At this, Xu Xin was finally flustered.

The Grand Nirvana? It was humanity's greatest disaster, however, for Luo Feng, Xu Xin and that generation of people who didn't experience it, they often heard from their parents' generation , to them, it was like a nightmare! The entire humanity's nightmare!

.....

Returning from the north east base with his suspicious parents.

Mid flight on the return trip, Luo Feng let Xu Xin keep his parents company while he himself looked at his watch communicator and ordered: "#1, connect with my communicator and pull up a virtual display."

Di!

A screen with the words, "Archeological ruins" appeared in front of him.

“Archeological ruin #1. Located at the North Atlantic, the Bermuda seas’ surroundings right at the ocean floor. It is a 1200m tall silver pyramid. It is extremely dangerous, any material which entered gets destroyed immediately with the warrior. Till now, the no. 1 ruin and its remains have yet to have more discoveries.”

“Archeological ruin #2, located in underground Russia’s ‘Wrangel Island’, is a remains of a split open spaceship.”

“Archeological ruin#3…”

……

“Archeological ruin#31, located deep within China’s Hubei’s ‘Shennongjia’, is a gigantic circular shaped ship with a diameter of over 800 meters. Its surface has many small holes, which are releasing a large amount of poisonous gas. These gases can permeate skin…Till now, no one has survived after entering ruin 31. It has the same level of danger as no. 1 and no. 12. Entering these three means certain death!”

Scanning till the end, Luo Feng carefully thought about every one of the ruins.

Some of them were scary, like no. 31, while some of them were only remains, like no.2. Some of them were special, like no.9.

“Babata.” Luo Feng’s thoughts went through.

“You’ve seen it right, what do you think, which should I go to?” Luo Feng asked in his mind.

“Except for the three big dangers, the other ruins in the countries have all been searched. No point going.” Babata said, “These three big dangers, #1 and #31 are the real dangers. These are ruins that even universe fighters will die if they go! You should go to #12 of the 3.”

“Universe fighters will die from them?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Right, when you have greater power we’ll come back. Your target will be archeological ruin #12.” Babata explained, “This ruin, with your current power, might come with some dangers, but with caution, it shouldn’t be too big a problem.”

“At this time,” Luo Feng’s gaze were as sharp as knives, “No matter the danger, I still have to go!”

Within the wrist cuff space.

“Babata rubbed his face, while he didn’t fully approve of Luo Feng’s stupidity, however, towards his master’s disciple’s willpower and determination, he was extremely satisfied: “The master once said, be it evil people or good people, or even demons, the truly strong always have a determined heart.”

……

Luo Feng was very clear on his motives and path, even in the virtual meeting room, he was shocked and shaken by the news initially but he quickly made up his mind.

Back then when he talked to the southeastern military sector's military commanding officer Li Da Wei...

Luo Feng had made up his mind...'When I close my eyes for the final time when I die, I don't want to have any regrets because I didn't work hard enough in the past!.'

No Regrets!

"If I don't risk it all now, and watch as my people die, my culture destroyed while only my family lives on this earth, will I regret this in the future?" Luo Feng's asked himself in his heart, the answer was clear as day, definitely!

So...

Now's the time to risk it all! Do it!

Even if he was down to his last drop of blood, as long as he succeeds, he believes that when he dies and closed his eyes, he would be smiling! Actually, ever since he chose the path of becoming a warrior, Luo Feng had never feared the thought of death, he just wished his death would be worth it!

****

Late night, the moon shone brightly on the villas, many of which still had lights on.

The auto jet landed on a grass plain, Luo Feng, Xu Xin and his parents walked down.

“Hello.”

Luo Feng picked up the phone.

“It’s me, Jia Yi.” An obviously distressed voice sounded, “Luo Feng, something bad has happened.”

“What else could have happened?” Luo Feng was somewhat shaken.

Now that the calamity had come, what else could happen?

“Luo Feng, previously in the meeting room, the various leaders, using the satellites had discovered, after the swallowing monster had destroyed all of North America’s bases, it actually began to swiftly head over to Europe and began destroying some of their important bases. I believe very quickly, it will head over to Asia’s bases and do the same!”

“Without the bases to stop the sea creatures, countless sea creatures would rush inland! I’m afraid it’ll only be a day or two

before our main base will have to battle it!”

Jia Yi’s words made Luo Feng go pale.

“You, you mean…” Luo Feng’s eyes were red.

“With the swallowing monster travelling over 10 thousand meters per second, it can destroy all the bases on earth within half a day! When that happens, the countless sea creatures will quickly follow the rivers and kill inland! Even if we fought it out…I’m afraid humanity’s struggle will last at most, three days, three days before half of us gets wiped out! Seven days, everyone will be gone.”

Luo Feng choked and cleared his throat.

My god!

“I, I thought we had one month.” Luo Feng shook his head in disbelief.

In the sector, Luo Hong Guo and his wife, along with Xu Xin, were all shocked at Luo Feng’s expression…ever since Luo Feng had attained his position and status, they’ve hardly ever seen him so distressed.

“Right, I too thought we had time…but…” Jia Yi’s voice was low and serious, filled with pain and agony.

“Why! Why is it like this!” Luo Feng was flustered.

There was too little time, too little!

Initially, if the swallowing monster had moved slowly, eaten a few bases everyday, humanity would have more time! But right now, the monster was actually preparing to destroy all of humanity’s bases within half a day, allowing countless sea creatures to attack humanity!

It was too cruel!

However, Luo Feng understood, if he was a swallowing beast, he too would first quickly destroy his enemies, and comfortably devour everything else.

“Luo Feng, the swallowing monster will destroy the bases, along with the laser cannons. It’s too intelligent, it has intellect, it’s very clear the laser cannons are dangerous towards the emperor level creatures. That’s why it easily used its golden beams to destroy the cannons.” Jia Yi said, “It’s even too lazy to chase after the fleeing armies, it lets the emperor level monsters do that job.”

“To be chased by an emperor level creature, even the armies ranging in the tens of thousands would all die.”

“To kill an emperor level monster, is to save over 10 thousand people or more.” Jia Yi said, “And one representative alone doesn’t

have the guarantee to kill an emperor level monster."

"Understood." Luo Feng nodded.

He himself had to, within the shortest time possible, go to the archeological ruin! And come back just as swiftly...

When the time came, building the weapon would be left to Babata!

And himself...

He would have to go on a massacre!

"Emperor level monster? You want to massacre humans, I'll massacre you all!" Luo Feng's gaze was ice cold, unprecedented cold, at a time like this, he himself was going a little crazy.

Anxiousness, rage!

To be forced to the edge of such a cliff, with nowhere to run!

"Luo Feng, because of how crazy the swallowing beast is, we'll carry out the nuclear warhead plan today." Jia Yi said, "If we can just kill that swallowing beast, we will have hope. Right now it is in Europe, looking at it's direction, it'll quickly head to Russia's side...When that happens, we'll carry out the nuclear plan in Russia."

Luo Feng nodded his head.

Before the Grand Nirvana period, Russia was the largest country on earth. During the headquarter city age though, area didn't have any meaning. Man could only live in bases.

And the population in Russia was lower.

The bases were all constructed on the continental plates, that's why...there was over 10 million square kilometers of uninhabited space where it would be ideal to conduct the nuclear warhead attack!

.....

"Tonight?" Luo Feng silently prayed in his heart.

Chapter 16 – Boom! Boom! Boom!

It was a very crucial time, no time to waste at all for Luo Feng.

“Dad, mom, all of you should remain in the house, no matter the danger, you just have to enter the 2nd floor’s gravity room. Luo Feng emphasized, the material of the gravity room was incredibly durable, even a star level warrior would have a hard time trying to break though! It was afterall a training device for a star level warrior.

Within the gravity room, they would be much safer.

“Babata, set the gravity room for my parents, my brother, Zhen Nan and Xu Xin these five max.” Luo Feng said, “Also, set the gravity to one time, normal.”

“Already done.”

Babata’s efficiency was extremely high, he could control it directly from a distance.

“Little Feng, be careful.” Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan said to him as they were returning after finding out the severity of the problem. Only Luo Hua and Zhen Nan weren’t too clear on what was happening.

“Big brother, come back early.” Luo Hua shouted.

Luo Feng waved and swiftly left the house into the night.

……

This night was humanity's race against the time!

Luo Feng's auto jet was swiftly flying in the night, leaving Yang Zhou.

The fastest speed of the auto jet is currently 8,000m per second. How long will it take to reach archeological ruin 12?" Luo Feng asked, this auto jet's basic speed wasn't very fast, however, during his free time, Babata had kept the jet in his virtual space and made several adjustments.

It's speed immediately rose, from ten times the speed of sound rising straight to 8,000m per second!

Following Babata's words: "This improvement didn't count as anything, to be able to fly in the universe, for a ship to be able to go light speed was the most basic thing ever! Compared to light speed, their current speed was nothing." Luo Feng didn't say much, he had no place compared to Babata who was from a higher civilization in the universe, the living AI.

Such an improvement was indeed easy.

"To reach archeological ruin 12 will take about 20 minutes." Babata said.

“Oh?” Luo Feng’s handphone rang, he checked, it was the Head Hong calling.

“Hello.” Luo Feng picked up.

“Luo Feng, there’s something we need you to sacrifice.” Hong’s voice came through.

“Please speak, Head.” Luo Feng said without any hesitation.

“Following the nuclear warhead attack plan, before my prehistoric level auto jet attacks, there will be other ‘Limit model’ auto jets carrying atomic bombs attacking! This is to confuse it.” Hong explained.

Luo Feng nodded slightly as he heard.

Right!

Hong’s prehistoric level auto jet, was a unique jet from the dojo of limits, it was triangular! Just like Luo Feng’s. The other countries all had disc shaped auto jets, to allow Hong’s auto jet not to raise any suspicion, they needed to have more triangular battle ships carrying atomic bombs to attack first, making the creature lower its guard.

Atomic bombs?

Several tens of thousands tons of atomic bombs, even Luo Feng, Hong or Thunder God, they wouldn't even bother them. Much less the swallowing beast.

"We want to use the other triangular auto jets to carry atomic bombs to attack. The beast will realize that the attacks have no danger." Luo Feng's eyes lit up, "After that, we will suddenly send what seems like another harmless attack, but with a much more powerful explosion!" Luo Feng thought about it and agreed it was a good plan.

It seemed simple, and easy to succeed.

"Luo Feng, there aren't too many auto jets from the Dojo of Limits in Asia." Hong said, "I need to reach the battlefield within the shortest amount of time possible. I hope your auto jet can be used as one of our cannon fodder."

"No problem." Luo Feng said without hesitation.

One auto jet didn't mean much to Luo Feng, much less during such a crisis. Even Hong was willing to sacrifice his higher level auto jet, how could he be petty about it?

"Your auto jet actually has a backdoor command, I can control it from afar" Hong said, "I'll begin controlling it now, are you currently in the jet or out?"

“Come out.”

Luo Feng flew out directly.

Looking at the dark blue triangular autojet, Luo Feng watched. While in Babata’s eyes, this ship was only capable of flying within atmospheres, in the universe it was nothing but cheap goods and a toy. However, it had been with Luo Feng for a pretty long time.

“You’ve also done your part for humanity.” Luo Feng looked at his auto jet.

“I’m controlling it to leave.” Hong’s voice sounded from his phone, immediately, the dark blue triangular auto jet swiftly left, heading towards the Jiang Nan headquarter’s main sector. It was obviously heading to stock up on atomic bombs first.

“Head, can you tell me, how much explosives is going in?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

“Due to the lack of time, we are going with 150 megatons.” Hong said, “During the Great Nirvana, there was no space to test such a large amount. When the time comes and it explodes, even if it’s night, even China would be able to see a little sun illuminate the darkness.”

150 megatons?

Luo Feng nodded his head, this was humanity’s last weapon, it

might actually help mutate and evolve a large amount of the creatures...

However, they couldn't care anymore, to have to deal with emperor class monsters was actually a good thing, they couldn't compare at all to the swallowing monster.

"Luo Feng, archeological ruin #12 is in the Pacific ocean, not far from Hawaii and that group of islands, from here to the destination is 8000 km. You can only rely on the soaring shuttle now to fly...estimating a speed of 5000 meters per second, you require 1600, your speed exceeds 5000m per sec, it will be about 25 minutes to get there." Babata said.

"Ok."

"Let's go."

Luo Feng didn't hesitate, jumping on the soaring shuttle and becoming a beam of light, swiftly heading towards the pacific ocean and Hawaii.

****

Europe, China, Russia all teamed up. Europe gave three atomic bombs, China gave five, Russia gave eight. The dojo of Limits gave two. These 18 atomic bombs were separated into 18 triangular battleships, one of which was Luo Feng's.

And the 150 megaton hydrogen bomb and the atomic bomb used to detonate it, were contributed by Russia!

As time was critical, during the rush to find the warheads, they realized...

Russia, one of the five great countries could actually produce a perverted plaything with a yield of 150 megatons, and in humanity's crisis, Russia would definitely not hide it anymore. They actually just took out this huge thing! They placed it within Hong's prehistoric level auto jet and flew it towards north Asia's district.

.....

With 18 other cannon fodder, there were a total of 19 triangular battleships! They came in different colors, some were red, blue, black etc.

Within in was Hong's higher level ship, one heaven and earth level ship, four emperor level ships, and thirteen other limit level ships. These thirteen ships may be weaker, but they could go into autopilot mode too! All 19 were unmanned! Just from appearances wise these 19 ships hardly had any differences.

.....

"We must succeed."

“We must succeed.”

America, Russia, Europe, China, India, twenty three headquarter cities, HR Alliance, the whole world’s elite were relying on the satellites, watching as the 19 battleships flew. The 19 were separate, some were in front while some flew in the back!

……

Night, the pacific ocean, Luo Feng had become a beam of light after riding the soaring shuttle and swiftly flying towards the group of islands around Hawaii.

Luo Feng had the ability to control 19 weapons separately, while rushing there, he was watching his watch and multitasking. This itself was definitely nothing to him!

“The 1st ship! Luo Feng was watching through his communicator watch.

On the screen.

A black triangular battleship was swiftly flying towards northern asia, where the swallowing beast was in the wilderness destroying a base.

……

North Asia.

The black beast which was over 180m long, its claws waved and it flew swiftly into the sky above, its golden pupils ice cold. They were brutal and savage! The golden horned beast, was the most fearsome of all the space beasts, it's bloodline itself contained savagery and was tyrannical!

Suddenly, it stopped and floated.

It had noticed a little speck of something flying towards it. Perhaps it couldn't keep up from behind. However with the satellites tracking, and coming on from the front, it had the chance to clash!

"Wu!" The gold horned beast waved its right claw!

"Boom!

The 1st triangular battleship, was one of the emperor level battleship cannon fodder. Following the AI system's order, it would explode the moment the swallowing monster began to attack, regardless of the distance!

"Rumble!!!"

The moment the emperor class battleship exploded, the 20 thousand ton yield atomic bomb too exploded!

……

On Luo Feng's communicator watch screen, all that could be seen was a little sun that illuminated the dark night, stirring the far away swallowing monster. The mushroom cloud rose up and the ripples of shock waves rushed in all directions just like water rippling, brightness.

With just a breath, the swallowing beast was over 100km away.

There were no signs of damage on it's body.

A 20 thousand ton yield atomic bomb exploding a few 100 meters away was nothing than a breeze to the swallowing beast.

"The 2nd ship is coming." According to the screen, the 2nd battleship was flying over.

……

Eighteen cannon fodder atomic bomb ships, all with about 15 thousand to 60 thousand tons of explosive power. If a 20 thousand ton yield atomic bomb was to explode in a city, from the center out, a few hundred meters would be laid waste, and two to three thousand meters out would be covered in damage and glass and debris, a city with a population of a few hundred thousand would lose a hundred thousand.

With this kind of power, detonating it here with an area of over 10 million square kms of uninhabited land was ideal and wouldn't affect humanity.

"The 2nd ship, it didn't attack the 2nd ship from the distance!"

"That's great."

……

Mid air, night.

The gold horned beast opened its huge wings, the explosion from before piqued it's interest, the 2nd ship was only 50m away from it before it used its claw to attack!

Rumble!

Another little sun had ignited in the wilderness, a mushroom cloud rose into the sky!

"Wu." The gold horned beast felt the explosion on its claws and thought it was rather comfortable, and according to this ancient memories, the moment it stepped into the star level, this planet had nothing that could damage it. This was the reason it only surfaced after reaching the star level!

……

The 3rd atomic bomb, the 4th atomic bomb…

One after another, little suns illuminated the night sky!

One after another, mushroom clouds rose up!

The bombs were just like fireworks in the Northern Asian region, exploding one after another!

Explosion! Explosion! Explosion!

The entire Earth's elite watched anxiously as each ship attacked. Even Luo Feng, who was flying above the sea, Hong who was in the Dojo of Limits and Thunder God were all nervous to the point their palms were sweaty! Because…the main meal that was mixed amongst the cannon fodder was about to make its entrance!

Chapter 17 – Earth Shattering

Eighteen decoys and one plane carrying the hydrogen bomb. As of now, nine consecutive planes have exploded with their atomic bombs!

The tenth plane!

In this moment, all the star traveller level fighters and the the higher ups of China, America, Russia, and the other countries were watching the direct satellite broadcast. All of their hearts were hanging! Because according to the plan..... the real one would be one of the planes in the range of the tenth to fourteenth.

Night.

The golden horned beast lightly waved its scaled wings as it swiftly flew forward. A bit of excitement could be seen in its dark golden eyes. The heat, particle flow, etc. resulting from the consecutive explosions of the atomic bombs caused the portions of its body that came into contact with the atomic bombs to go a bit numb.

And it realized!

This stimulation to its body caused its body to grow faster! For example, when someone trains their muscles, they need to burden them to a certain extent to make them grow faster. As for this golden horned beast, after living in the ocean for such a long time, it never felt threatened before, so it grew normally.

This bit of stimulation.....

Proved quite beneficial!

“WU!” the golden horned beast saw another triangular fighter jet approach from the distance and let out a joyful cry.

“Whoosh!”

The fighter jet was as fast as lightning!

“WU!” the golden horned beast happily shook its powerful tail that was covered in scales. Its tale was extremely fast, way faster than the speed at which the fighter jet was flying at!

“RUMBLE~~”

When its tail came in contact with the fighter jet, the atomic bomb exploded! An atomic bomb with a yield of 30,000 tons exploded right on its tail. An explosive energy exploded, forming a bright ‘sun’ that covered the golden horned beast’s entire body! The shockwave swiftly spread out in every direction, and the ground shook like a wave.....

Pacific ocean. A human image was flying a few hundred meters above the ocean like an extremely fast stream of light.

“Luo Feng, your fighter jet is gone”

Babata’s voice sounded in his mind. Luo Feng was staring at his tactical communications watch on his wrist, “If it’s gone, then it’s gone. Watch the 11th plane” Luo Feng stared as the display of the tactical communications watch switched to the 11th fighter jet——a blood red colored triangular fighter jet!

“It’s the head, Hong’s!” Luo Feng’s heart started pounding.

“Luo Feng, let me remind you that you’ve already arrived above the location of archaeological ruin #12” Babata’s voice rang.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng swiftly accelerated, and then stopped above the ocean.

“Let’s wait a bit before going down” Luo Feng stared at the display, “This 11th time, is the real one!”

“If a 150 megaton bomb explodes right on the surface of a ‘golden horned beast’ that just stepped into the star level… hard to say. Since I’ve never heard of anyone actually doing something like this before” Babata was quite excited. Unlike him, Luo Feng was filled with nervousness and expectation.

Not just Luo Feng!

In this moment, Hong, Thunder God, other peak fighters, the leaders of all the countries, the higher ups of the military, etc. were all watching nervously. The 11th plane! This is the real one!

Success!

And humanity will be able to survive this disaster!

And if it fails.....

Then humanity will fall into a nightmare! A nightmare far more horrifying than the Grand Nirvana period!!!

.....

America, main headquarters.

The black skinned president was currently together with his cabinet members as they watched the display in front of them! The president was even grasping on to his daughter's hand, tightly grasping!

"Dad, it will succeed, it will succeed" said his daughter.

"It will definitely succeed, it definitely will" the black skinned president held his breath completely.

The entire room could feel the pressure.

All of the people in there watched the blood red colored fighter jet on the display..... which was swiftly flying towards the golden horned beast.

.....

China, wilderness.

A large number of troops were moving on the ground and a disc shaped fighter jet was patrolling in the air above. This was the forward military base that just retreated in the southeastern military sector.

In the fighter jet.

Commander Li Da Wei was currently staring at his tactical communications watch.

“It will definitely succeed.”

“It definitely will,” repeated Li Da Wei to himself silently. His gaze was sucked to the watch’s display like a magnet as sweat appeared on his forehead. His entire body couldn’t help but to slightly tremble.

.....

At this moment, Russia, India, EU, and the 23 headquarter cities were all watching this same scene at the same time! Everybody prayed to themselves in their heart..... in front of a disaster like this, even crazy people and people filled with ambition and evil were praying for success.

“Still 30 more seconds until contact with the swallowing beast”

Hong and Thunder God watched the display in front of them as the AI’s voice reverberated in the room.

“23 seconds!”

“22 seconds!”

In the countdown, Hong and Thunder God’s gaze were like blades, as if they were going to cut open the display in front of their eyes.

“10, 9, 8, 7, 6.....”

.....

Northern part of Asia.

Its entire body was as black as ink and its single golden horn that had golden engravings on it seemed to pierce towards the sky.

When the golden horned beast was flying, it comfortably shook its tail twice.

So comfortable!

Its tail went a bit numb after coming into contact with the atomic bomb. At the same time, its tail started to absorb its metallic power within.

“WU!”

The swallowing beast discovered the 11th triangular fighter jet, which was a blood red colored fighter jet! The swallowing beast immediately let out a joyful cry that shook the sky and earth. Even though..... the ‘golden horned beast’ has a long history, this one has only been born for a few short years. As of now, it can only count as a child.

The swallowing beast spread out its scaled wings! And then it flew forward!

Its scaled stomach was preparing to come into contact with the plane. It will definitely be comfortable for its stomach to go a bit ‘numb’.

“Succeed!

“It definitely must succeed!”

“KILL IT!”

“God, protect humanity!”

“Please succeed!”

As of now, the higher ups and elites of the world were all extremely nervous. Luo Feng, Hong, and the others were so nervous that they didn’t even dare to breathe! When they saw that the swallowing beast was going to use its stomach instead of its tail or claws to ‘come into contact’ with the hydrogen bomb, an unsuppressable excitement rose in everyone’s hearts!

“2!”

“1!”

The final countdown rang in Hong’s room in the Dojo of Limits headquarters.

Time seemed to be frozen in this moment!

The skin on the golden horned beast’s stomach collided with the ‘blood red colored fighter jet’ with alarming speed. And around 10 meters before they collided, the atomic bomb in the blood red colored auto jet already exploded! The explosion of the atomic bomb triggered the explosion of the——hydrogen bomb with a ‘150

megaton yield'! Humanity's most threatening weapon!

The fighter jet self destructed!

The hydrogen bomb exploded!

When faced with this explosion which was who knows how many times more powerful than the previous ones, the golden horned beast immediately retreated off of instinct! Clearly, it sensed danger.

However.....

The hydrogen bomb exploded right in front of its stomach. How could it hope to retreat in time?

"BOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOM!!!!!"

It blew up!

In this moment, the screens that Luo Feng and the others were watching instantly became white!

.....

China, Jiang-Nan headquarter city main city sector.

The lights on the street were shining in the night.

“Look!”

“To the north!”

“So bright!”

To the horizon in the north appeared a sun in the sky! This sun had an unrivaled brightness! This caused many people on the street to freeze.

“How could there be a sun late into the night?”

“Holy”

Quite a few people excitedly made phone calls to tell their family and friends. Some people even prepared to record this on their phones!

“No signal on my phone”

“What’s going on! How come I disconnected!” in a cybercafe to the side, a few teenagers rushed out.

“Wow, there’s a sun in the night!”

“It’s a nuclear bomb, a nuclear bomb, it definitely is a nuclear bomb”

The streets went into an uproar.

In this moment, all of China, all of Russia, and all of the EU saw this shining sun! The gigantic mushroom cloud caused one to gape at it with their eyes wide. And..... over half of the world’s communication lines were cut off. In China, EU, and Russia, only the higher ups with special connection lines were still able to communicate.

Silence!

Leaders from every country, the higher ups from the military, and every star traveller level fighter was staring at their display. The display wasn’t so glaring anymore. It’s just that..... the smoke was rumbling and the gigantic mushroom cloud charged to a height 100 km above the ground as it entered the ionosphere.

The number of monsters that instantly died in the northern part of Asia reached an astronomical number!

Large numbers of monsters were instantly vaporized into nothing by the high temperature, and even more were directly killed by the powerful shockwave!

.....

“Did it work?”

Above the Pacific ocean, Luo Feng stepped on his soaring shuttle as he stared at his tactical communications watch nervously. All of the higher ups on earth were watching and waiting nervously.....

As if they were waiting for the declaration.

The declaration as to whether all of humanity lives or dies!

Northern part of Asia.

A golden flowing light ferociously charged out of the rumbling smoke, and then stopped flying.

Black scales covered its entire body. The scales that extended from its neck and back to its tail had golden engravings on them, as if it was wearing black and gold armor! Its head was still held up high, and its golden horn was still as sharp as usual! However..... a gigantic wound that was over 10 meters wide appeared on its abdomen. Blood was flowing from it. Its large and powerful muscles could be seen entangling each other like tree branches as it self repaired!

“WU!!!”

The golden horned beast let out a roar of anger! Something as majestic as it was actually injured on this planet!!!

.....

China’s Kyoto headquarter city, main headquarters.

After seeing the swallowing beast raise its head and roar with anger and the wound on its abdomen on the display, everyone froze.

“This, this——”

A gray haired old man widened his eyes, his face filled with nervousness, surprise, anger, and dissatisfaction, “PU——”

He immediately spit out a mouthful of fresh blood and then collapsed onto the ground.

“Head” someone immediately went to support him.

However, all the other leaders either were trembling, had pale white faces on, or were filled with disbelief.

“No, this can’t be” Jia Yi in a chinese suit stared at the display.

.....

Despair!

In this moment, a very small amount of higher ups on Earth directly died of stroke. Some of them had heart attacks. All the other higher ups were completely filled with anger and disbelief! They couldn’t accept this! In this moment, no matter the skin or ethnicity, all of them felt the same despair and disbelief!

The golden horned beast was alive!

Which basically declared for the humans on Earth——death!

Chapter 18 – Archeological Ruins No. 12

Luo Feng grit his teeth as he stared at his watch communicator, his eyes blood red, his fist clenched so hard you could hear his bones grinding, the veins popping out from the back of his hand.

“If it was a human star level 1, a 1.5 hundred million tons of explosives would kill him immediately. The golden horned beast really lives up to its elite bloodline of the space beast. Be it defense or offense, they all have the metallic properties of a devouring beast.” Babata was feeling proud for the space beast.

Metal properties, were naturally stronger in defense.

Not too mention a devouring metal type, one that swallows metal to grow, its defense was just absurd.

“Don’t say anymore.” Luo Feng raged.

Within the wrist cuff virtual space, Babata, who was lying on the sofa was just about to continue singing the beast’s praises, discussing the golden horn beast. However, Luo Feng’s cold remark totally cut him off.

“You actually dare to chide me, demon Babata.” Babata bared his teeth, revealing his fangs, before muttering apprehensively, “I’m the great demon Babata! Back then, I’ve killed countless sector lords, to actually be chided by...this punk, who’s on the verge of insanity from mourning. Forget it, I’ll be the bigger man and forgive him.” Babata understood the logic behind Luo Feng’s pain.

However, he himself was unable to experience it, after following the Yun Mo Planet's master for over tens of thousands of eras, seeing one planet and its race get destroyed was an all too familiar sight.

That was why he felt nothing.

But he knew...Luo Feng was on the brink of losing his mind! It was safe to assume that the Earth's elite were all on the verge of hysteria, trying their best to suppress their madness.

******

Luo Feng couldn't care too much, he immediately called his family.

"Little Feng, we just saw the northern side light up very brightly, almost like a sun, your little brother said this was from a hydrogen bomb, what exactly has happened..." Luo Hong Guo just spoke before Luo Feng said immediately: "Dad, mom, all of you should immediately head to the 2nd floor and into the gravity room! If you want to know what's going on outside, bring my Taiwanese notebook and go onto the internet to check it out. All the other computers right now shouldn't be able to enter the web anymore Remember, if I do not return, you all shouldn't come out from that room."

"Ok, ok."

His family could feel the sense of urgency and desperation of the situation.

Yet they didn't know...just how serious the entire thing was!

After hanging up the phone, Luo Feng lowered his head to look into the dark endless ocean: "The only hope now, is to find a weapon capable of killing the golden horn beast within one of the three dangers, archeological ruin no.12."

"Down!"

Luo Feng's gaze was like an ice cold sharp blade, stepping on the soaring shuttle, with an aura about him, he rushed straight into the ocean...

.....

Darkness within the ocean from night, ripples about, endless and vast.

A beam of light shot straight into the water, rushing straight downwards!

"Luo Feng, the distance between the surface to the seabed is about 5100m. And archeological ruin no 12 is below the seabed by 3300m." Babata said.

“Understood.”

With Babata’s instructions, even though he was surrounded by seawater, Luo Feng’s path remained clear and straightforward.

This serene waters had a large amount of sea creatures! With a large number of sea creatures actually following the rivers and attacking inland, yet…there still only made up a small portion of the sea creatures. Afterall, there were just too many, too many sea creatures!

One must know, Man’s strength was above that of the dry land monsters, but why does Hong still have to enter into negotiations with them? And not just kill all of them?

This because…

The land creatures had some emperor class monsters, but no grand emperors. However, with the entire population of human warriors only hitting up to 1 million, an outbreak of a level 3 tide mouse alone usually ranged up to the hundreds of millions! A level one outbreak usually ranged in the 100s of millions! If the land creatures were to forcefully go against humans, their numbers and strength would be too much, one nest alone had quite a number, humans couldn’t compete.

No matter how strong Hong was, would he be able to kill the countless number of monsters on earth? That’s why they maintained peace!

The land creatures forced humanity into this...

Be it in numbers, or variety, the land creatures were much less than the sea creatures, even if they blocked all of the rivers, it would only mean a small portion of their population was blocked.

.....

Heading downwards, Luo Feng saw a large number of sea creatures.

“Heng!”

Luo Feng, who had become a beam of light, had killed all the sea creatures within a 100m, fresh blood stained the ocean around.

Kill!

It was totally convenient to kill, Luo Feng’s rage, pain and sense of injustice led to him killing all these sea creatures to vent of the steam! Also, Luo Feng could imagine...what would happen if the countless sea creatures had rushed inland through the rivers, attacking the bases, killing countless humans.

“Sea bed!” Luo Feng had reached the bottom, the place was uneven, almost like a mountain range.

5000m deep, the sea's pressure was terrifying, but Luo Feng's cloud contact armor had greatly reduced it. It reduces damage, helps in defense, his cloud contact vine far exceeded the capabilities of a black god set. Especially the first feeding, had helped the cloud contact vine evolve greatly.

"3300m below."

Luo Feng swiftly head downwards!

Breaking past the rock layers on the seabed, constantly drilling downwards...

"Babata, for such a secret place, how did Earth's countries first discover it?" Luo Feng asked as he pushed downwards.

"Just relying on Earth's apparatus would be impossible. They relied on the apparatus found in some interstellar ship remains to search the entire planet." Babata said, Other than something like me, who's able to actively disguise signals and separate them, making you all unable to detect, every other ruin has probably been discovered already."

"Luo Feng, we've reached." Babata said.

Luo Feng immediately slowed down.

Peng!

Breaking through the rock stratum, he bumped into something hard, causing his whole body to tremble.

“Battle ship remains?” Luo Feng used his spirit energy to search the place, immediately spreading 500m wide, getting a rough image of the entire structure...This was an extremely large battleship, and Luo Feng’s spirit energy could only check and survey a small portion of it. On observation...

Luo Feng could feel, it was bigger than the Dojo of Limit’s headquarters by a little.

After swiftly breaking the rocks around, he immediately drilled into a hole from the already damaged ship.

“Chi chi, Luo Feng, we’ve come to the right place! We’ve come to the right place!” Babata was excited.

“What’s up?”

Luo Feng realized too, the walkway within the ship was made with an alloy, one that was already rusted and corroded from time.

“This is a mothership from an interstellar fleet.” Babata said, “that means, it is the leading commanding ship of the entire fleet.”

“Mothership?” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up.

“I initially suspected it was a mothership, otherwise, normal ships cannot be called a danger at all.” Babata said, “This mothership, is about 16000m long, 3200m wide, 800m tall. While it’s not the biggest battleship in the fleet, it’s defensive capabilities are the strongest, its offensive capabilities are also one of the strongest.”

Luo Feng too was getting excited: “Where are the weapons? Where’s the danger?”

The mothership’s entire body was the real archeological ruin no.12, the real danger, was within the ship’s secret cabin.

“Hold on, let me search.”

Babata too had his own methods of searching, he swiftly scanned the entire mothership carefully.

“Luo Feng! Because of the damage, this mothership has no defense abilities. The weapons within has all been taken down, those that weren’t have already corroded or rusted. It doesn’t have any security.” Babata said, “Right now, the hope is within this archeological ruin 12. You just have to follow down this path and walk straight...”

The core of archeological ruin no. 12 was one of the mothership’s secret cabins.

……

While walking within the enormous ship's remains.

"Luo Feng, all of the countries' leaders have gathered in the wargod palace meeting room." Babata suddenly said.

Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat.

Earth was currently in a predicament it had never faced before, even the strongest weapon, the hydrogen bomb has been used. And after that one time, the golden horn beast would never let humanity get another chance again.

"They decided, the military will be taking over the countries, they are beginning the survival plan." Babata said.

"What?"

Luo Feng's expression changed.

The military, represented the bases and markets' stock exchange, markets etc, almost everything! Wherever people lived, what they did, ate, this were all governed by the military! Even rations were determined by them! Where they lived, when to evacuate were all according to their plans!

To enable the military this way, the situation was obviously at its

most dire!

Regarding the survival project...it was obvious the countries had all assumed the battle was lost, now the only battle was to see how many survivors they could get. One could only imagine how many people would be lost in this battle...the number of survivors would definitely be very little. Even if they survived, they would still be danger.

“Hurry, let’s find the strongest weapon and kill that golden horned beast.” Luo Feng continued heading to the reputed archeological ruin no. 12.

A moment later...

In a secret enormous cabin, a disc shaped spaceship about 100m wide was parked, its entire body was black. Even though it was parked there for unknown tens of thousands of years, its body had corroded very little. A dragon with two wings was engraved on its body.

“Archeological ruin 12 represents this ship, just this one?” Luo Feng raised his head from below to survey the ship.

The various countries have all been wracking their brains over these many years to get into this black disc shaped spaceship.

That was because many have died from entering this ship.

Even representative warriors have died in here! Till today, it remains undamaged!

“Haha, so it’s this, it’s actually this!”

“Back then, the master destroyed an interstellar fleet, it looks like this mothership was one of them, and within it was probably a prominent figure. They could actually afford a Black Dragon Mountain, X81 model spaceship. It’s no wonder no one on earth has entered it, this X81 spaceship, is a reputable ship known for taking risks and dangers within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.” Babata was extremely excited.

Luo Feng knew…

The Black Dragon Empire, it was the empire that controlled the black dragon mountain starfield, even the Silverblue Empire was one of its 500 vassal states.

“Luo Feng, there’s hope! This X81 spaceship’s construction cost is more than the entire mothership. The weapons that are fitted in the X81, have the powers to even kill a star level 7 or 8 creature!” Babata was extremely excited, “Who would’ve thought, that this mothership actually had someone capable of buying an X81.”

Chapter 19 – Hercules Jack

“There’s hope of even killing a star level 7 or 8?” Luo Feng was shocked.

He had learned much from his time spent in the virtual space over the year.

He also understood more…a universe level fighter could go up against an interstellar fleet without any weapons! A star level 7 or 8 was at least a 100 times stronger than a star level 1, it was extremely close to the universe level! It was one of the top warriors in the universe, even an interstellar fleet would have problems killing one, much less a scout ship.

“This is a black dragon mountain…X81 ship!”

Babata said, “There are 8000 over galaxies in the black dragon mountain starfield, countless planets. These are considered very good scout ships, they are mostly used by universe level fighters or those with wealth and reputation. Only these people can afford them. A ship used by universe level fighters that comes with weapons capable of killing star level 7 or 8 fighters, what’s strange about that? Also, all I’m saying is there’s hope and a chance, powerful fighters would not stand there stupidly or put themselves at such risks!”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but carefully analyze the ship in front of him

Pure black, disc shaped.

“Hehe, with this X81, I demon Babata won’t have to work that hard to build a ship from scratch. As long as I can hack into the X81’s AI system and take over the control systems. Then I’ll do some modifications on this X81 scout ship. Luo Feng, once that’s done you’ll be able to ride it and have adventures in the universe.” Babata was excited.

Building from scratch couldn’t compare to the convenience of just getting one immediately.

“Ok.” Luo Feng nodded his head.

“Also Luo Feng, even if I build a ship, it won’t be better than this, its craftsmanship is good, and its foundation material used to build the entire ship is a metal called black yttrium! The lousy remains that you gave me could never come close to this metal black yttrium. You can’t get anywhere without the proper equipment, no matter how good I am, with such lousy materials, all I can build is a normal universe ship, it can never be better than this.”

“This X81, with the black yttrium metal, even universe level fighters have to use a large amount of effort to break through.” Babata praised it, “Normal universe level fighters normally ride ships of this grade. They normally wouldn’t bear to buy anything even more expensive than this.”

Luo Feng nodded.

This ship, was a universe warrior's standard for ships, the Yun Mo Planet ship, was for a champion amongst the undying, the master of the Yun Mo Planet.

It was a pity...

That it was broken.

If it wasn't broken, riding the Yun Mo Planet ship, with just a straight rush, it'd cut through the golden horned beast! It was after all a terrifying ship capable of cutting through planets.

"Luo Feng, controlling this ship would be very difficult." Babata said, "Earth's countries have risked so much just for this X81 scout ship, they've lose countless lives, without even being able to enter the cockpit door."

"Babata, how do we get in?" Luo Feng asked.

Following the document Hong gave him...

The toughest part of the archeological ruin no,12 was the entrance route, once the cabin door was open, there was only one path to follow! At the end of the path was the cockpit door. Yet, many of the various countries elites have all died just in that path, to open the cockpit door was something even Hong or Thunder God couldn't do.

"The construction details of the X81, I'm very familiar with it!"

Within the virtual space, Babata was was wearing a black robe, he lifted his head, “After opening the main door, the main and only path is a laser path! The lasers shot out in this path can easily kill even a star traveller level 5 or 6. Earth’s representatives, star traveller level 1 or 2, would still die even if their black god sets mitigate some of the damage. Only Hong or Thunder God, with the black god sets might stand a chance.”

Luo Feng listened carefully.

“The lasers are very powerful weapons. If you humans on Earth carefully researched lasers more, you might have better results.” Babata assessed.

“Very powerful?” Luo Feng hardly heard Babata praise something like that.

“Of course it’s powerful!”

Babata continued, “Logically speaking, the more light is concentrated in one point, the stronger it gets, this means it’s power can constantly increase…Theoretically speaking, the laser’s power can rise indefinitely! Of course there are many difficulties doing this in reality. However, the laser weapons from the higher civilizations in the universe are weapons that even sector lords have to be careful of.”

“Of course, the lasers in this path aren’t of that level.” Babata said, “All you have to do now is to rush past the laser path and

open that cockpit door!”

“Once you pass the laser path, we can get in from there.”

“Opening the cockpit door won’t be easy! Your Head Hong and that so called Thunder God, honestly speaking, Thunder God, that name irks me.” Within the wrist cuff’s virtual space, Babata snorted, “The two of them do not have the means to open the door! This cockpit door, to lift it up, requires a star level 3 or 4 warrior to open.

“Star level 3 or 4 warrior?” Luo Feng shook his head.

He definitely wouldn’t be able to lift it.

The difference was too huge.

“Can we just break through it? With the knife shard.” Luo Feng asked.

“The door’s material is black yttrium metal, you think you can break though? I just said, even universe fighters would have to use a large amount of effort. The hybrid copper essence shard may be powerful, but with your power…” Babata said, “Ok, that’s it, all you have to do…is to put this plaything and wedge it in the groove below the cockpit door.”

******

A strange tool appeared in front of Luo Feng.

At first glance, it looked something like an axe, the edge of the blade was extremely thin, also, this tool was about 3m long, 1m wide.

“You just have to use that thin side and wedge it between the door and the ground in the groove, That’ll do it.” Babta said.

“Ok.”

Luo Feng’s channeled his thoughts, immediately, the cloud contact vine leaves extended, becoming an armor that protected Luo Feng’s entire body.

Following the dust filled ground, walking towards the ship.

“Cabin door!”

Luo Feng floated at the cabin door, both hands grabbing the cracks of the door, pushing forcefully, “Open!!!”

Hua La!

The cabin door was opened, what appeared was a pathway that was about 30m long, both walls on the sides had little clusters of holes, not glass items and such as what Luo Feng had imagined.

“Laser path eh?” Luo Feng took a deep breath, the soaring shuttle had transformed into the mountain bulwark, protecting his body.

Sou!

He fiercely rushed forward!

“Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!...

Immediately, beams of white light lit up the entire pathway, some of the lasers, as though they had sensed Luo Feng, the holes in the walls adjusted and bent accordingly, shooting directly at Luo Feng.

The speed of the lasers...300 thousand kilometers per second!

Even the golden horned beast wouldn’t be able to dodge it, much less Luo feng.

“Rumble!”

A portion of laser hit the mountain bulwark, and that smashed into Luo Feng’s body! More lasers began to hit Luo feng’s body directly, at the same time, over 10 beams hit him!

Within the pathway.

Luo Feng, who originally rushed in, used an even faster speed as he got shot to fly back out.

……

On the ground, Luo Feng was rubbing the ground for a few dozen meters, before punching the metal wall of the mother ship.

“Luo Feng, what are you doing?” Babata couldn’t help but shout.

“Rush in and wedge this tool between the ground and the door, wasn’t that what you said?” Luo Feng massaged his chest, “If I don’t rush in, don’t tell me I can just use my spirit energy to control this tool? I’m just afraid the moment it goes in, it’ll be destroyed by the lasers.”

Luo Feng had full faith in the cloud contact vine.

The first cultivation helped it evolve extremely quickly, it ate mostly Mu Ya crystals after that too. Currently, the cloud contact vine’s power was at the star traveller level 7 or 8. If the vine were to battle Luo Feng, unless Luo Feng used his hybrid copper essence shard, he wouldn’t be a match.

It was because of the vine’s strong defense that Luo Feng dared to enter.

“No problem, this tool won’t be destroyed so easily.” Babata said, “Just use your spirit energy to control it!”

“That makes it much easier.”

Hearing those words from Babata, Luo Feng didn’t have to worry about the durability of the tool anymore.

Those were, after all, lasers that could kill star travellers.

……

Once more in though the cabin door.

Luo Feng used his spirit energy to control the axe-like tool, nineteen strong threads of energy wrapped around the tool.

Xiu!

The axe became a beam of light!

“Pa!”

A white laser beam hit it, the axe immediately got shot outside.

“It really didn’t break?” Luo Feng’s spirit energy was controlling the axe tool, “The lasers are too fast, what can we do?” Luo Feng

glanced around before coming up with a plan.

"Mountain bulwark."

The soaring shuttle broke into 365 knife blades, swiftly forming the mountain bulwark.

The mountain bulwark covered the top of the axe tool, sticking to the ground.

"Go!" Luo Feng's gaze was cold.

Xiu!

The mountain bulwark and the axe tool below it moved as quick as lightning, lasers shooting directly at it!

"Gather!" The lasers hit the mountain bulwark.

"Separate!"

The mountain bulwark actually immediately separated into 365 knife blades, with so many knife blades, a large number of the laser beams began directing themselves towards them, and the axe tool on the ground was moving as quick as lighting, sticking to the ground and heading straight in!

Between the yttrium cockpit door and the ground, there was bound to be an extremely small, extremely small gap.

“Chi!”

The axe tool penetrated in with its extremely thin blade.

“Huhuhuhu…”

The axe tool began to emit a weird noise, all that could be seen was the black yttrium cockpit door begin to lift up! Under the door was the axe tool, what was once the extremely thin blade of the axe tool had actually become two levels, the upper level unrelenting in lifting the door! It lifted the whole black yttrium door, this scene made Luo Feng dumbstruck.

“Babata, you said this black yttrium door requires a star level 3 or 4 to lift up.” Luo Feng was amazed.

“Why don’t you look at what I’m using, this is a hercules jack. Oh, with the universe language, it’s called XXX.” Babata said, “It’s similar to Earth’s normal jack. You must know, maintaining a spaceship requires lots of tools. When I was building ships before, I acquired many different tools. This hercules jack is just one of them.”

“Like when a ship gets damaged, or whatever gets stuck. If the warrior cannot move it, what can he do? Use the hercules jack!” Babata said proudly, “This hercules jack’s technical capability is

extremely high.”

Luo Feng was amazed.

“Luo Feng, why are you not rushing in yet!” Babata said.

Luo Feng looked towards the end of the laser pathway...

The cockpit door had already been lifted a good 1m, the universe repair tool ‘hercules jack’, was still continuously lifting the door.

Chapter 20 – Robots

The black metal pathway was covered in dust, the laser attacks from before only left little marks.

“Huhuhuhu…”

The hercules jack was slowly and steadily raising the door up. In the laser pathway, Luo Feng had covered himself in the cloud contact armor swiftly. From head to toe, he was fully covered! At first glance, he seemed like a blood red statue.

“Charge!”

Luo Feng rushed fiercely in, sticking close to the ground and charging forward! Above him, the soaring shuttle had transformed into the mountain bulwark.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Flashes of laser beams shot directly at the mountain bulwark and Luo Feng! The moment the mountain bulwark was shot, under Luo Feng’s control, it immediately separated into 365 knife blades! With so many knife blades flying around, the laser’s reaction system caught on and began to generate even more lasers, directing them at the blades. Luo Feng too was ‘massaged’ by a couple of shots.

“Gather!” Luo Feng’s entire body was hit by a laser and knocked

onto the ground.

The lasers on the side even caused him to slide leftwards!

Within an instant...

Luo Feng had become like a ping pong ball, being shifted around wildly by the shots of lasers. Yet, he was strongly maintaining his spirit energy to guide himself forward. Forward! Forward!

Whoosh!

Luo Feng slid under the power jack, which was lodged into the ground, rushing into the ship.

“I’m finally in!” Luo Feng felt soreness and pain from his entire body.

At the same time, he felt the cloud contact vine’s discomfort, as though it was still reeling from the many shots it took, Luo Feng couldn’t help but laugh: “Don’t pretend, it was no big deal, I’ll feed you more when we get back!” The cloud contact armor’s blood red color began shimmer and sparkle, as though it was very excited.

“Shua!” The power jack behind immediately vanished, the cockpit door fell and crashed straight onto the metal floor.

“I’m keeping the hercules jack.” Babata said.

Luo Feng surveyed his surroundings, he was in a spacious straight path: “Babata, now where do we go?”

Luo feng didn’t know what dangers awaited him in that dark path.

“Haha, Luo Feng, you’ve already entered the black dragon mountain X81 ship. Relax, there’s no more danger.” Babata said, “Walk, hurry and head towards the command room, insert the signal device into the ship’s AI system. Only once I’m connected with the ship directly will I be able to hack into the AI’s defenses and control it.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng nodded.

Suddenly, something similar to a storage card for notebooks appeared, Luo Feng raised his hand to take it.

“Just use the golden side and insert it into the slot. Let’s go, to the command room.” Babata said.

“Lead the way.” Luo Feng thought.

“Left!”

Under Babata’s instructions, Luo Feng swiftly made progress in the Black Dragon ship.

******

The Black Dragon Mountain X81 ship's command room.

It was dark and black!

When Luo Feng had slid through the door earlier, the moment he entered the ship...

"Ding!"

The spacious command room lit up. A man dressed in military uniform was sitting calmly in the center of the command room, behind him were three underlings dressed in black standing. This uniformed man and his three underlings, were not moving...the command room's control display lit up.

"XXXX..." The screen displayed a large number of universe language words.

The translation...

"Human race star traveller spirit reader intrusion!"

"Danger level, weak."

“Measures…exterminate!”

……

Within the black dragon mountain X81 ship’s lower levels, a closed room suddenly lights up. Within lay three motionless metal robots, these three robots were about 2.1 or 2.2 meters tall, their entire bodies were black, their eyes were red crystals.

Ding!

When the signal from the ship’s main AI system reached over, the three metal robots’ red crystal eyes lit up.

Ka, ka, ka…

The energy capsules with their body began to quickly rotate, at the same time, the doors of that room swung open. The three robots stepped out in an orderly manner and became three beams of light heading through the lower level pathways to the mid level pathways. Luo Feng was currently at the stairs between the mid level and upper levels.

******

Luo Feng swiftly followed the stairs, to the upper level.

“Luo Feng, there are three metal robots behind flying over to kill

you.” Babata said.

Luo Feng was shocked and then hurriedly scurried up, leaving as much distance as possible, his eyes fixed on the stairs in front. Luo Feng’s feet could feel the tremors, those were the tremors of feet hurriedly rushing and catching up: “Babata, didn’t you say... there’d be no more dangers once we entered?”

“This ship has sunk for more than 800 thousand years! It actually, actually still supports its robots, So much so that they are still working, man it’s stubborn.” Babata couldn’t help but say, “This ship’s owner must have collected a large number of power cells in the storage room, that it can maintain its power till today.”

Luo Feng didn’t have the time to discuss with Babata.

That was because...

The metal robots were arriving!

“Rumble!”

A black beam of light, following the stairs, rushed fiercely to the upper level, Luo Feng had seen the metal robots clearly, their entire bodies were made of ferrous metals, its eyes gleaming red! Their fists seemed mismatched, just due to the size, they were too big, like a couple of heavy hammers!

“Break!”

Luo Feng's soaring shuttle transformed into the mountain drill, during the time the robots were rushing over, the mountain drill lit up with 18 golden light beams, swiftly wrapping around the drill and gathering at the tip!

"Ang..."

The mountain drill brought along with it a fearsome wind and ear piercing sound, swiftly drilling into the chest of one of the robots! At this point, Luo Feng was a level 3 star traveller spirit reader, the soaring shuttle had also reached the 2nd level of the nine stages of the three big states, simultaneously controlling 18 threads of spirit energy!

Even Hong and Thunder God will be damaged from such an attack!

"Gather!" The metal robots had flown directly up the stairs and smashed into a wall.

Swish! Swish!

The other two robots below also rushed up.

"Rumble!"

A heavy punch flew right in front of Luo Feng's face, as the

mountain drill had just attacked one robot, it hadn't had the time to recover and attack a second time.

"Fast." Luo Feng was secretly shocked, "it's faster than my flying speed by quite a bit."

At the same time, a strange whip had appeared in Luo Feng's right hand, forming a curved line, viciously hitting on the metal robot's head! "Pa!" Whilst being hit by the whip, the metal robot continued to punch Luo Feng's body, a large number of vines and leaves appeared on his body, layers on layers to protect him.

Swoosh!

Luo Feng was hit by a fist and flew backwards, during that time, his gaze was cold...a blood red shard appeared before him, this shard was unbelievably sharp!

"Hybrid copper essence shard, cut its head off!"

Immediately, nineteen extremely tough threads of spirit energy, like nineteen tentacles wrapped themselves around the blood red shard, in that moment, it gave off an extremely strong driving force! This made the shard's speed greatly increase! Also, as it was unbelievably sharp, the air resistance it met with was extremely low. The driving force exceeded the resistance, naturally...

Continuous increase in speed!

“Xiu!”

The blood red shard was shockingly fast, it immediately flew towards the heads of the 3 robots, trying to cut off their heads clean!

“Ka!”

An ear piercing sound, there were actually sparks from the metal robots’ necks, the initially extremely fast hybrid copper essence shard had been deflected away. After receiving that heavy attack, the robots retreated a little. Luo Feng opened his eyes wide, it was clear to see...

The robots’ necks were slightly scratched, there wasn’t even a proper wound.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

The three robots became light beams and rushed forward once again, with no feelings or emotions whatsoever in their red crystal eyes.

“Babata, just what are these robots?” shouted Luo Feng in his mind, he didn’t have any more cards up his sleeves, even the hybrid copper essence shard didn’t have any effect. Within Luo Feng’s calculations...relying on the mountain drill, he could even go up against a star traveller level 7 or 8.

However, by relying on the hybrid copper essence shard , something even undying level fighters had trouble damaging, he could perhaps harm a star level 1 fighter. The premise for that was however...that the enemy stood there without moving, letting him attack.

“Babata, what now?” Luo Feng said.

“Don’t worry, don’t worry, I’m working on it.” Babata said.

“You are working?”

Luo Feng couldn’t worry about anything else, he turned in the pathway and ran! However, his speed couldn’t compare to the three metal robots, hence...two long vines grew in Luo Feng’s hands, when he saw that they were approaching, he would whip them! With this, he managed to slow them down!

“No good, I’ve reached a dead end.” Luo Feng’s spirit energy had scanned the place and he realized, there were no more routes in front to run.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng was startled, his spirit energy had realized the three metal robots behind had actually fallen, motionless. Luo Feng turned around...the three black metal robots weren’t moving at all.

“Luo Feng, these three robots are under my control.” Babata said.

“Control?”

Luo Feng was shocked.

“These metal robots, were controlled by the ship’s wireless AI system. Since they were actually wireless signals…as long as the security levels aren’t that high, I can hack into it. When you were fighting them before, I was quickly working on hacking in and now I’ve got total control of the three robots.” Babata was very satisfied with himself, “The robots’ danger levels are actually not that high, it’s just that their entire bodies are metal, these three are all made of black yttrium metal, for you to break them…very difficult.”

Black Yttrium metal!

Even universe level fights have to use a large amount of effort to break it.

“The good points about the metal robots, is that they are extremely durable and you can use strong metals to create them. The weak points however are far too many…for example those three, they didn’t have any intelligence. Hence their attacks were simple. With a little more intelligence, if the three teamed up, while they might have difficulty breaking through the cloud contact vine and killing you, capturing you wouldn’t be difficult.” Babata said, “Alright, on to the command room.”

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

Walking forward, the three metal robots were following behind obediently.

Luo Feng suddenly looked up ahead, it was an exquisite looking silver door.

“We’ve reached the command room.” Babata said.

Chapter 21 – Barbaric Destruction

Even after acquiring the three metal robots, Luo Feng wasn't in the least excited. The only thought plaguing his mind was to acquire a strong enough weapon to kill the golden horned beast.

This concerned the survival of the entire earth's humanity.

"Creak…"

Luo Feng used quite a bit of strength to push open the silver door. This door hadn't been open since the time the ship had sunk! The moment Luo Feng opened it, there was a slight convection in the air between the inside and outside, a breeze blew out from the spacious and luxurious command room!

The command room was well lit.

In the center sat a uniformed military personnel, there were three black uniformed bodyguards behind him. Luo Feng was shocked from seeing people inside.

"Hu!"

A breeze blew past.

The soldier sitting in the chair, just like dust, became powder, even his uniform had degraded to powder. It was just like this that

his whole body, which had degraded to powder, began to blow off the chair onto the floor little by little. The black uniforms of his three bodyguards behind fell apart from the wind, landing in pieces on the floor, with a few pieces still hanging on their bodies.

At the same time, they revealed their bodies and skin! One of them was a female, Luo Feng even saw her half naked body.

“This, this…”

“Babata, didn’t you say this ship has sunk for more than 800 thousand years, what’s up with these three people? Luo Feng used his spiritual force to sense that the three had no life force, they were clearly dead.

But they hadn’t decayed, were they undying beings?

How was that possible!

“Hehe, the one on the chair. That dead soldier was indeed a prominent figure. These three bodyguards are not actually human, they are a special kind of merchandise called liquid silver guards.” Babata said proudly, “These liquid silver guards, their main material, liquid silver, is even more expensive than the black yttrium. They even have a built in AI system. Normally, they behave just like humans! They can even talk and run errands etc.”

“What’s more, because their body structures are made of liquid silver, their bodies are like water, even if they are attacked by

strong opponents, they can easily mitigate the force of impact!”

“That’s why they are extremely good bodyguards!”

“For example, when you encounter an assassination, they can use their entire bodies to block.”

“Even though their attacks aren’t too strong, however when surrounded by them, even universe level warriors would have to use quite a bit of time to break free! They are extremely good bodyguards.” Babata said, “However these liquid silver guards, are different from machines. Liquid silver guards, one, only listen to orders from their master. Two, they require power to maintain their lives, power to them is like their life force.”

“Over 800 thousand years, their energies have been completed depleted.” Babata said, “Even if it wasn’t, the ship’s AI cannot order the liquid silver guards.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Looking at the control board at the side, the screen above it suddenly displayed a jade green haired woman figure, staring at Luo Feng.

“XXX...” The universe language reverberated about the command room.

“Please leave?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but shake his head. Over

the last year, under Babata's guidance, the universe language may have still been difficult to speak, having to constantly translate to mandarin in his head before considering how to answer, but listening wasn't too big of a problem anymore.

'Luo Feng, insert the signal device into the control board's left side, that green entry point." Babata said, "Don't bother with the ship's AI and her rubbish! AI...no matter how intelligent, are nothing but AIs. If they cannot control weapons or anything, then they pose no danger at all. Right now, she is nothing but a stripped naked woman who has been bound and tied up..."

Within the wrist cuff virtual space, Babata sighed and shook his head: "Now, I'm going to ravage her. Gaga," he revealed his two fangs.

Luo Feng shook his head helplessly.

He immediately inserted the signal device into the green entry point on the board.

"Du...du...du"

An ear-piercing alarm immediately erupted within the command room.

Large numbers of words immediately appeared on the screen.

"Haha, watch me, Luo Feng, this AI's system is not bad, however,

within 30 minutes of hacking, this black dragon ship will be ours!" Babata immediately began focusing on his hacking, the ship's AI system too naturally began to resist and begin its defense!

"Warning, system under attack." The universe language resounded.

"Please enter the password within 30 seconds, otherwise, self-destruct will engage.

"30.""29.""28."……

When that voice sounded.

Luo Feng's expression changed.

"Damn, self-destruct procedures? Luo Feng, we are in trouble! This ship's owner is too much of a bastard, he actually programmed the AI to self-destruct when it is attacked?" Babata too was obviously panicking.

"What do we do now? Is there no other way?" Luo Feng asked.

"30 seconds, even the universe's strongest AI cannot possibly hack into this kind of system within 30 seconds." Babata was in panic, "I have no clue about the bullshit password. It's over…I wanted to ravage this AI system, I didn't expect her to resist to the point of suicide! It's over, it's over…" Babata was feeling helpless.

Luo Feng couldn't help but rage: "Babata, at this point in time, there's no point in saying these kind of words. Quickly think of a solution, what should we do!"

"Eh..."

Within the wrist cuff virtual space, Babata's blood red eyes were wide open, he blinked a few times, he knew...Luo Feng was very angry! Indeed Luo Feng was raging within, there was no time to crack jokes with Babata.

The sound reverberated and a countdown appeared on the control screen.

"10。""9。""8。""7。"……

Luo Feng was extremely worried.

"There's no choice." Within his mind, Babata said with a dejected voice.

"Chi chi..."

Suddenly, the control board gave off an ear piercing sound, large numbers of words began to appear madly on the screen, a large number of the buttons and panels on the control board even began to burst in flames.

“5.”“4.”……

The control board’s voice began to grow more obscure and stutter.

“Du…du…du” An ear piercing alarm rang throughout the entire ship, it wasn’t just the control board that was on fire, even the ceiling, a few pathways, and many other places in the ship, began to ring out, fires sprouting out all over.

It was as though it was about to explode!

“Babata, what are you doing?” Luo Feng asked.

“Gather!”

A sound rang out, almost like an explosion had erupted.

The control board’s screen had gone all black, the lights within the command room also went out, shrouded in darkness.

“Luo Feng, I could only do this.” Within his mind, Babata’s voice spoke.

“What did you do?” Luo Feng asked.

“This black mountain dragon X81 ship, was programmed by its master to self destruct if ever there were any external signal devices trying to hack the AI system, unless he/she can key in the password within 30 seconds. And hacking this system within 30 seconds is impossible, so...there was only one solution...using an overflowing amount of current and energy to destroy the AI system!”

“Barbaric destruction, the end result is that the ship’s control system will be damaged, several transmission systems too would be burnt.” Babata said helplessly.

“However, if I didn’t do so, the result would be...the ship would initiate it’s self destruct program and, with a boom, explode!”

“And Luo Feng, you need the ship’s weapon, I could only do this.” Babata explained.

Luo Feng understood immediately.

In the beginning, Babata had wanted to use the soft approach to hack and control the ship’s AI. However, the conditions didn’t allow it! To save the ship from exploding, he could only resort to this.

“Babata, thanks.” Luo Feng said.

.....

Within the wrist cuff virtual space.

Dressed in a black robe, a disheartened Babata was obviously upset with his failure. His initial chest pounding and proud demeanor, ended up in a result that couldn't be considered winning.

"Babata, thanks." Luo Feng's voice spoke through.

Babata was startled.

Thanks?

Babata, who was originally disheartened raised his eyebrows and smiled, revealing his cute fangs, laughing: "No need for thanks Luo Feng. Hehe, Aren't I incredible! Such barbaric destruction also requires power, my abilities as an AI far exceeded hers, within that time span, I overflowed her with power till the point she couldn't resist and finally collapsed!"

.....

Luo Feng turned around to look at the three liquid silver guards and the powder and remnants the military man had left behind.

"Luo Feng, back then, because earth was close and within a 1000 light years, with many races with good potential, the master had made earth part of his territory. Back then, it had belonged to the Silverblue Empire. That's why...the master displayed his powers,

with one spirit energy attack, he attacked an enormous interstellar fleet, causing the soldiers' souls to be annihilated, the fleets falling onto the various planets." Babata said. "This particular black dragon ship's master, should have been a prominent figure from that fleet.

To be able to afford a black dragon mountain X81, along with the liquid silver guards, within the milky way, he's considered to have status and rank." Babata assessed, "His remnants should be good, take it."

Luo Feng nodded.

Also, those liquid silver guards may have depleted their energy; I wonder if my reserve energy crystals are compatible. Hm, I'll keep those three liquid silver guards, fix them a little and see if they still be used." Babata said, at the same time, the three half naked liquid silver guards vanished.

Luo Feng's thoughts moved.

The dead military man's ring, weapon and other remnants were kept away.

……

Once again using the Power jack to jack up the door, casually walking out the laser pathway and out of the ship.

“Babata, when can the weapons on this ship be ready? Luo Feng asked.

This black dragon ship’s AI System and control systems have been damaged, but the weapons and others are undamaged. However, over 100 thousand years, even if this ship had the three robots maintaining it, I estimate the weapons should still have several small problems. Relax, I’ve checked through, to build a weapon capable of killing a star level 6 or 7, is still possible. Time however…I’m not sure, about one or two days.”

Hu!

The black disc shaped ship instantly vanished.

“I’ll be keeping this ship and beginning on the the weapons repair.” Babata said.

“Ok, sorry to trouble you, Babata.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but say.

“Hehe, no problem, no problem.” Babata said, “Oh, right, when we head out, I’ll also store the mother ship’s remains.”

The mother ship’s body, was much much bigger than the X81.

Babata’s storage space, was indeed much much bigger than Luo Feng’s storage ring.

“Whoosh!”

Luo Feng swiftly followed the pathways within the mothership, his family constantly on his mind. He didn’t even know what was going on with the various countries and the situation with the devouring monster, just how bad it had gotten. After receiving the hydrogen bomb attack, what would the angered golden horned beast do?

Luo Feng was extremely uneasy and worried!

With his greatest speed, he swiftly left the sea bed and came out on the surface. Stepping onto the soaring shuttle, becoming a beam of light and swiftly heading towards Asia’s mainland China...

Chapter 22 – The Rampaging Swallowing Beast

Madness enveloped Yang Zhou, one of Jiang Nan Base's eight large districts. Painful screams of agony and anguish filled the skies, several skyscrapers had been demolished into halves, some bursting with flames, it was as though the city was experiencing an apocalypse.

A small district under the moonlight.

A disc shaped battleship had landed in a grass patch, three special forces military personnel stepped out, almost like a breeze of wind, swiftly rushing into Luo Feng's house.

Deng deng deng!

The three men swiftly rushed up to Luo Feng's second story.

Up there, within the gravity room were beds, sofas, and computers.

Luo Feng's parents Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan, his younger brother Luo Hua and his girlfriend Zhen Nan and her parents, and Xu Xin! All of them were staying within the gravity room, it was a good thing the room was 6m wide, spacious enough for a group of people to stay. Zhen Nan's parents were called over due to Zhen Nan's earlier panic by Luo Hua, who thought of them as his future mother and father in laws. "Mr. Luo Hong Guo! Please leave the

gravity room, quickly! Staying here isn't safe for you all."

"Mr. Luo Hong Guo! Please leave the gravity room, quickly! Staying here isn't safe for you all."

The three military personnel standing outside the gravity room, one of them said anxiously, "The ground and the buildings' foundations may all end up as targets for the swallowing monster. The head has ordered for us to take you Mr Luo and your family! Time is crucial, you'd better hurry."

"I've already told you over the phone, I'm not going."

"We won't leave."

"You all better leave. We'll wait for my bro to return before leaving."

Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan and Luo Hua said.

The three men outside were helpless.

Suddenly, the leader of the group's communicator watch vibrated, he looked, color changing in his face: "Leader's official's number."

Immediately answering.

“Leader, Representative Luo’s family refuses to go.” The leader reported.

“Yes!”

“Yes!”

The personnel stood at attention , quickly ending the call.

“Mr Luo Hong Guo, we’ve just managed to contact Representative Luo, He’ll be here shortly.” The leader said towards the gravity room.

The Luo family within were all extremely excited.

Luo Feng is returning?”

Tonight was indeed a nightmare, they were constantly worrying about Luo Feng within the gravity room.

“Disperse!” The leader waved his hand, the three of them quickly left immediately.

Up in the sky of Yang Zhou.

Within the darkness, a beam of light swiftly pierced through the sky, Luo Feng had donned the cloud contact armor, standing on

the soaring shuttle, right hand holding the curved shield. It was a weapon he had acquired from Yun Mo Planet's dead master who had left it behind for him...arc cutter blade! The arc cutter blade and the soaring shuttle were comparable to each other.

One was for fleeing.

The other was for attacking.

With regards to controlling the spirit weapons and their uses, Luo Feng understood already! Back then when he could only control 18 threads of spirit energy, he attempted to form the mountain drill's second stage, even with countless tries he still failed! That was due to his control of spirit energy being too crude, too weak.

And after the 'nine secrets of control', with steady progress, Luo Feng's foundation became more and more solid.

These two weapons, after two or three attempts, he managed to use them!

"Luo Feng, why were we unable to contact you earlier?"

"Earlier I had gone to an archeological ruin, the signal there was probably blocked." While flying, Luo Feng was communicating, "What's going on?"

"What's going on? That swallowing monster has gone on a mad

rampage after being injured! It's currently destroying Hua Xia, India and some other bases. It's basically venting all it's rage in Asia and beginning to attack the big cities and humanity." Jia Yi said anxiously, "Also, Yang Zhou has been involved too."

"What." Luo Feng panicked.

"The little district of Ming Yue hasn't been affected yet, the entire city of Yang Zhou has suffered about twelve beams of golden light attacks, it's pretty serious." Jia Yi Said.

Luo Feng was even more worried.

It was lucky Yang Zhou wasn't too far from the east coast, Luo Feng could reach Yang Zhou quickly.

"My god!"

Flying high up in the sky, Luo Feng took a deep breath.

The entire Yang Zhou City was filled with screams of pain and anguish even from far away, close to 10 million people were concentrated in the city, at that time, about twelve places had deep craters, and the surroundings of these twelve places, the skyscrapers were all set ablaze, fires burned in the small districts, large buildings had collapsed, it was almost like the city had been bombed by over a thousand tons of explosives.

These twelve places, had large numbers of military personnel,

policemen gathered. It also had survivors crying in pain.

“Bastard.” Luo Feng was raging within.

“Lucky his venting is just like this, he’s spreading it out over the various cities!” Within his mind, Babata’s voice resounded, “If he had focused his rage on just Yang Zhou, he could have easily destroyed the whole city!

Luo Feng understood this!

Shooting out randomly twelve beams of golden light, was a considered a very normal and easy attack for the golden horned beast. Maybe from it’s point of view, this was only a small city, the main district was the big city! Maybe it felt it shouldn’t waste too much energy on a small city.

……

Luo Feng swiftly flew towards Ming Yue district, entering his own home through the 2nd storey window.

Di!

The gravity room’s metal door automatically opened, there were a total of seven people inside.

“Brother.” Luo Hua was the first to rise from his chair in front of

the computer.

Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan carefully examined Luo Feng, only relaxing after seeing he had no external wounds. Beside, Zhen Nan's parents smiled, but it was clear their faces were pale.

"When we entered the gravity room, the door shut and we couldn't open it no matter what." Luo Hua said.

"It's what I programmed." Luo Feng said.

Compared to a government defense shelter, Luo Feng had more faith in the gravity room's sturdiness! The gravity room was something even Hong, with his maximum strength, could only leave a small mark on. That golden horned beast...even if a golden beam of light were to hit the room, it wouldn't damage it at all!

"Xu Xin."

Luo Feng held up Xu Xin's hands naturally, they were cold and her face was pale, "Luo Feng, come and see," she turned the computer's screen over and Luo feng looked down at it.

The screen displayed a large amount of footage and pictures.

One of the pictures, was the scene of the wreckage of a skyscraper.

“The swallowing monster is rampaging all over the world! It was wreaking havoc earlier here in Asia, now it’s gone to Africa. Look at it’s speed, I estimate it’ll head to Europe soon.” Xu Xin said.

“How many from China have died or been injured?” Luo Feng asked.

“Not clear.” Xu Xin shook her head.

Luo Hua said from beside: “Brother, following a few satellite images and footage, from the six headquarter cities in China, a conservative estimate would be that we lost more than 5 million people!” The moment that was said, everyone’s expression in the gravity room changed immediately, they were obviously in pain and anguish.

“A conservative estimate and its 5 million?” Luo Feng’s heart sank.

Millions of his fellow countrymen.

“The swallowing monster is mostly attacking the main districts, since the population and the population density there is greater. It attacked like crazy…if it just attacked the skyscrapers it would still be ok, since nobody is in those buildings at night. However, when it attacked the residential areas and communities, small districts…” Luo Hua looked at the blurred bodies on the screen and couldn’t continue talking.

Beside, mother Gong Xin Lan, Xu Xin and Zhen Nan couldn't help but cry.

It was too tragic!

Luo Feng's face paled.

"Golden horned beast." His gaze grew ice cold.

However at that point in time, he was still powerless!

The leading bloodline in the universe, the space beast that was the most savage, named the golden horned beast, even though it had only reached the star level, for humanity... it was the end.

From it's birth to now, this was the first time it had been injured!

It was extremely furious!

That was why, it needed to vent and destroy! Hence, Asia, Africa, Europe and subsequently North and South America. A few bases, it just flew over and casually sent a few beams, ten beams of golden light. However, for a few of the larger cities, it would go all out.

Humans were weak and small, like ants.

And right now, the golden horned beast was like a giant, running

from one ant nest to another and stepping on groups and groups of ants.

Humanity was trembling under the golden horned beast's rage.

Its revenge carried on for over 4 hours.

In South America, a cry of pain, explosion sounds were all mixed in the air. The golden horned beast opened its large scaled wings, it's chest scales seemed to have recovered fully, without a single mark. It looked down and surveyed the city below, its eyes cold and filled with madness, before it suddenly raised its head!

"Wu..."

Its fearsome roar reverberated around, the air surrounding it all shaking from the sound. It formed an attacking wave that was visible even to the naked eye! It was as though it was declaring that its dignity and position shouldn't be disrespected!

Xiu!

The golden horned beast swiftly left, flying into the sea, down to the seabed to rest.

That one night...It had destroyed all of humanity's bases, suffered damage and subsequently rampaged madly! It had indeed used up a large amount of energy, it had grown tired and needed to rest!

Yang Zhou Ming Yue little district, Luo Feng's house.

The living room's television was still broadcasting, Hua Xia's leaders were all announcing to the country.

"My fellow countrymen!"

"Tonight, we feel incomparable sadness and pain. This is a catastrophe for all of humanity, we fight for survival!"

Within a short time, it seemed like all of China's citizens were watching and listening.

At the same time of the broadcast, large numbers of little screens and footages were being shown. It wasn't limited to China, all of the other countries on earth were doing it! The citizens on earth all knew...what exactly just happened! A catastrophe, much bigger than the Grand Nivana had come!

At that time...

The citizens who originally had disputes with the army, after watching the large numbers of deaths from both citizens and soldiers, changed. Several youths stepped up one after another to join the army! Large numbers of trained and ready personnel signed up! Large numbers of warriors and fighters began to join the army!

Also...

At the same time of the television's broadcast, the motherland's countless rivers, had countless sea creatures rushing inland to kill. All that could be seen was the army battling it out with the monsters. Along with the situations of the other countries.

It was tragic!

Humanity versus the monsters, it was a battle between the races!

"For survival!" Luo Feng watched the television with a heavy heart.

Suddenly, Luo Feng's watch communicator vibrated and he answered.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng"

"There are twelve emperor level beasts that just flew out from the sea in the eastern region of Yang Zhou city, within them, there are six that are headed towards the south eastern military sector. Please head over there immediately to give support. Please head over there immediately to give support." Jia Yi's voice was extremely panicked.

Chapter 23 – Beacons of Light

“Received.” Luo Feng replied.

“Luo Feng, at a time like this, I won’t say anymore. Please!” Jia Yi pleaded.

Strength wise, there were only a few fighter on earth capable of killing a group of emperor class monsters. These were Hong, Thunder God, Luo Feng, Mo Henderson and a few others.

Ka.

After hanging up the phone, Luo Feng turned to everyone else in the house, Luo Hong Guo and the others were all looking at him.

“Be careful.” Luo Hong Guo only spoke those two words.

Luo Feng nodded.

With a thought, whoosh! Three pure black metal robots appeared in the room, which shocked everyone in the house.

“xxxx…” Luo Feng gave an order using the common language of the universe.

He ordered one of them to protect his family, the other two to prepare…the moment Yang Zhou city came under attack, they

were to go out and assist in the defense!

“xx.” The three metal robots received their orders.

While their AI system’s capabilities were low as they required a very precise order to be given…they were still much better than the battleship’s AI from before.

“Little Feng.”

“Big brother.”

Within the hall, everyone looked shocked at Luo Feng, three robots? Earth did have robots at the time, but they were all clumsy and stupid.

“Dad, all of you should hurry upstairs. Go into the gravity room when it becomes dangerous.” Luo Feng said.

When he was done with the instructions, he didn’t dare waste a minute as he immediately flew out of Ming Yue district!

It had already begun to grow brighter in the day, the entire Yang Zhou city however had already been lit up way before. Large amounts of voluntary personnel youths filled the streets and armies were everywhere.

Up in the sky.

Luo Feng was on the soaring shuttle swiftly flying towards the east.

“It’s a pity those three robots were only repair and maintenance robots on that ship.” Within his mind Babata spoke, “attacking capability wise, they can’t compare to you Luo Feng.”

“Have you finished fixing the Liquid Silver guards?” Luo Feng asked, “How about the weapon?”

“The liquid silver guards use a C grade power source. However, it’s been depleted for a long time. After using it for many hundreds of thousands of years, they require repairs. I think it should take about three days. As for the weapon! I’ve already taken the black dragon mountain X81 ship’s most powerful weapon down and have begun repairs on it.” Babata said, “As for the required power source, I have some reserves.”

Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief.

The laser cannon, according to Babata, was a very advanced weapon. In theory, its power could go close to being limitless! According to legend, the more advanced laser cannons could even pose a threat to sector lords!

“How’s the power?” Luo Feng asked.

“It can kill a star level 6 human fighter.” Babata said, “A Star

level 6, compared to a star level 1, is stronger by tens of times! Even if it was a space beast! It definitely won't be able to block the laser cannon attack."

Hearing the words 'definitely won't be able to block' was a big relief to Luo Feng.

Babata may behave like spoiled brat at times, but he never spoke rubbish.

"However, I need time!" Babata said.

"As fast as possible, think of ways, the faster the better." Luo Feng said.

"If I rush it at my maximum capacity, I estimate it would require about 28-30 hours." Babata said.

Luo Feng pondered about it, 28 to 30 hours? That was a little more than a day, China would have heavy losses over such a long time, but it's main cities would probably still be standing! Unless that swallowing monster was to show up again...

Pray! He could only pray within his heart!

"Whoosh!"

Luo Feng's flying speed wasn't at all affected by his mental

conversation with Babata, he was heading towards the south east military district.

China's capital base, the general headquarters.

Several leaders were here, the general headquarters' screen was displaying two scenes from satellites, one was displaying six enormous emperor class monsters flying towards the south eastern base, while the other displayed a youth clad in blood red battle armor on the soaring shuttle, flying over.

"Luo Feng is already flying towards the south eastern base." Jia Yi said.

"Broadcast this battle to the entire country immediately." One of the leaders from China spoke, his hair white and his body thin and frail.

"Old Zhou?" Jia Yi was shocked as he looked at the old man.

Old Zhou said seriously: "Jia Yi, you said before, even within the emperor class monsters, there were strong and weak ones. Even representative warriors may lose to the emperor class monsters. At this crucial time of life and death, we need our representative fighters to risk it all and fight for us. In a time like this, are you going to just let them sacrifice for nothing in secrecy?"

The leaders within the headquarters were all at a high level of intellect and wisdom, they understood human psychology well.

They understand everything from just a hint.

Representatives can only make the decision to risk their lives themselves, the country can't force them.

"Only if they are willing. So we have to make them willing, we have to stir up their blood and determination!"

"Only with that can we win!"

"Only with fortitude!"

"Will they risk it all!"

Old Zhou said.

Immediately, every television screen in China began to switch.

"Southeastern military base in danger, Southeastern military base in danger."

"Currently, there are six emperor class sea monsters flying towards the south east base." Under the reporter's voice, the scene appeared in every television screen across China. Be it households, screens in the streets or the screens in the underground bases, they all showed the same scene.

Six emperor monsters, extremely malevolent!

One was entirely green and black, its abdomen was purple and long like a snake, its total length was close to 200m. That means, when it stood straight up, it was comparable to a 70 storey building!

It was like an enormous submarine in the sky, ‘mountain shaking whale king.’

It’s gaze had a mysterious red glow, this scaled long dragon, was the renowned east sea’s green dragon.

Nearby was an enormous transparent jellyfish, its umbrella like skin span was more than 30m large, it’s countless tentacles were all at least a few hundred meters long.

……

Six emperor class monsters!

Every one of them were incomparably strong, especially the east sea green dragon and the poisonous jellyfish emperor, even if Jia Yi was to come, he would have to be very careful about them.

When China’s 1200 million citizens saw the screen and the scene, they held their breaths. When have they ever seen such fearsome creatures? The reporter on the side was quickly explaining the details of each of the emperor class monsters, making them worry

even more for the southeast base's hundreds of thousands of military personnel.

"No."

A little girl covered her eyes as she couldn't bear to watch.

"It can't be."

The elderly were in front of the televisions, quietly praying to Buddha and the Goddess of Mercy.

"Emperor class monsters."

"Six of them!"

Youths filled with hot blood were all wide-eyed, whatever they had trained for, and their knowledge of the monsters, were nothing in the face of these six emperor class monsters."

"Before, that swallowing monster attacked the entire earth, the military districts and bases had all their lasers destroyed. Against these six emperor class monsters, the southeastern military sector has begun their retreat and evacuation, however their speed cannot compare to the monsters' flying speeds. Their speeds go up to 820m per second!"

The citizens watching the screens all held their breaths.

……

Suddenly, the screen switched to a different scene.

A youth clad in blood red armor standing on board the soaring shuttle, flying at breakneck speed.

Immediately…

The countless citizens in front of the screens were all excited, flying? This was humanity's elite warrior…a being that exceeded the wargods!

It's representative Luo!"

"Representative Luo is currently flying at his fastest speed towards the southeastern military district! The calculations show that Representative Luo's flying speed is currently reaching…5610 m per second! Wow, I haven't misread it, my god! It's really 5610 m per second, 16.5 times the speed of sound!!!" The reporter's voice was filled with shock!

It wasn't just him, the star traveller warriors watching too were all shocked.

In terms of flying speed, even Hong and Thunder God couldn't compare to Luo Feng.

“He’s catching up, Representative Luo is catching up!”

On the screen, it finally showed Luo Feng and the six emperor class monsters in the same screen.

When he first appeared, compared to the six ridiculously enormous emperor class monsters, Luo Feng was just like an ant. One ant against six giants? The scene made everyone watching nervous and anxious. Suddenly, the enormous jellyfish emperor suddenly spit out a green fog that spread over a few thousand meters.

It was a poisonous gas!

Suddenly, the screen had gone all green! The reporter on the side explained, this was the jellyfish emperor’s poisonous gas, adding on with some details about the jellyfish emperor, which made the people even more shocked…This jellyfish emperor was one of the most poisonous monsters on earth.

“What’s happening?”

“What’s going on? How’s representative Luo dealing with the gas?”

Everyone’s hearts were tensed.

“Luo Feng.” Xu Xin’s body was trembling.

“Luo Feng.” Wei Wen raised her head to look at the screen in the street, nervous beyond compare.

Within the poisonous gas.

Luo Feng was on the soaring shuttle; his spirit energy had formed a protective barrier around him! With the toughness and density of his barrier of spiritual force, there was no chance for the gas to even seep through.

“Killing one emperor class monster is akin to saving hundreds of thousands and millions of my fellow countrymen.” Luo Feng looked at the six emperor class monsters rushing towards him, their gazes ice cold and filled with killing intent, “that’s why, I’ll kill all of you!”

Boom!

Luo Feng fiercely waved the arc cutter blade in his right hand!

“Pu!”

It was as though space itself was cut open, the arc knife actually became an enormous golden colored arc blade, madly dancing around! The first to bear the brunt of this attack was the jellyfish emperor, it’s flexible but tough body, under Luo Feng’s controlled arc blade, was immediately sliced in half! The monster with a

triangular brain, carrying a huge shell on it's back, was also sliced along with its shell!

Slice! Slice! Slice!

The arc cutter blade, compared to the soaring shuttle, was stronger in its attacking abilities!

The six emperor class monsters, while the one east sea green dragon was a little harder to slice, eventually it still succeeded! Six emperor class monsters, under the frenzied dance of the arc knife, were immediately cut into seven or eight pieces, various pungent smells, fragrant smelling blood flew out.

China, countless people glued to the screens, their hearts all tensed.

The footage about the devouring monster before had all of humanity feeling dejected and hopeless. Now...all of Hua Xia's sons and daughters were all hoping for victory, for something to give them hope!

There was a little hope for survival!

On the screen.

The poison quickly dissipated, there was only Luo Feng waving his hands in mid air on the soaring shuttle, the golden blade which was at least tens of meters long returned to his hand. The

surrounding space was filled with large amounts of body parts falling, be it large claws, a tentacle or scales or minced meat...

"We've won."

"We've won."

"The monsters have all been killed."

This scene made countless people erupt in joy! Finally! Finally! There was some good news.

"Representative Luo is too powerful."

"His flying speed is 16.5 times the speed of sound."

"With representative Luo around, we can win." Countless people at the time remembered Luo Feng's name.

"The southern central military sector is in danger, Representative Yao Wei Wu is rushing to assist." The screen changed quickly again.

Luo Feng may be very strong, but he was still one man, he couldn't fight two battles at the same time.

Battles happened all over one after another!

In the motherland, beacons of light were lit all over!

In the dire times of humanity's survival, representatives were stepping up and appearing!

One after another, mysterious names that no one had ever heard of were being recognized by countless people, "Luo Feng, Zhu Xi, Yao Wei Wu... At this time, they were humanity's strongest warriors and they shone the brightest in the time of need.

Chapter 24 – Realm

January 14th was fated to be a crazy day!

On the five continents the humans of earth were living on, countless sea monsters were moving forward through the rivers. Because of distance, most of them haven't reached the headquarter cities. And the 'emperor level monsters' and the human 'star traveller level fighters' have already begun their peak showdown! And every country and every headquarter city broadcasted their battles!

Each battle contained the hopes of many.

And all the hopes of everyone on earth caused a formless aura! That blood boiling aura caused a few hesitating representative fighters to become passionate and to stand up to fight!

Battles! Are always bloody!

Of course there are stronger and weaker monsters in the emperor level category. The weaker ones are comparable to a 'star traveller level one stage' while the stronger ones are comparable to 'star traveller level three and four stages'. The only advantage that human star traveller level fighters have are——their black god sets! These caused the casualties of the human star traveller fighters to be lower than the emperor level monsters.

However, no matter how low they were, representative level fighters still died!

Since..... the biggest advantage the monsters had were their numbers!

The number of emperor level monsters on land were already much higher than the human representative fighters. And there were even way more emperor level monsters in the sea! Even though there were nearly ninety human star traveller level fighters, on just January 14th, 903 emperor monsters came out of the sea!

Ten times more than the humans! And this was just a portion of them.

The huge showdown between humans and monsters caused the names of many mysterious fighters to be known by all.

Luo Feng! Mo Henderson! Eastbourne!

Each of their names were shining!

And the most famous one was Luo Feng. In Luo Feng's first battle, he killed six emperor level monsters. After that, he swiftly went around China! When other star traveller level fighters move out, they might have a bit of difficulty dealing with one emperor level monster. Sometimes, they even have to retreat.

But Luo Feng is different!

Once he moves out, there will only be one result——victory!

From dawn until 3 PM, the number of emperor level monsters that died to Luo Feng had reached a horrifying 37! Holy, all the emperor level monsters killed by the other star traveller level fighters in China hasn't even reached half of that number!

His name shook the ground !

In time, China and all the other countries broadcasting the battles caused countless people to praise Luo Feng!

And then!

Killing thirty seven emperor level monsters was a huge encouragement to humans. However, to sea monsters..... they were extremely enraged! Powerful monsters also have intelligence. The loss of thirty seven emperor level monsters quickly enraged the two grand emperor level sea monsters.

The Octopus Beast Emperor!

This octopus beast emperor was different from the grand emperor back in the misty island. The grand emperor from the misty island only got to that level from eating Mu Ya crystals. As for the octopus beast emperor and the lightning dragon emperor, these two grand emperors grew from battling in the boundless sea over and over again. They are much more powerful!

.....

Around 120 km from Kyoto headquarter city, midair.

The battle on January 14th was still ongoing. On one side was the ‘octopus beast emperor’, which seemed like a floating island that covered the sky and earth. In terms of body size, the octopus beast emperor was one of the largest monsters on earth, much larger than the grand emperor monster back at the misty island. Just its gigantic brain seemed like a small mountain.

Its eight tentacles were much thicker than the tentacles of the grand emperor from the misty island, while their length seemed to be about the same.

And on the other side, was the human fighter ‘Luo Feng’!

“Representative Luo Feng is extremely fast!”

“Watch out!!!”

Every country was broadcasting the battle. Since the battle progressing so quickly, they didn’t have time to carefully explain what was going on.

“You dare to underestimate me. You’re scared of Thunder God and Hong, but not me?” with a wave of his hand, a golden arced blade that was a few dozen meters long landed on Luo Feng’s hand and then transformed into the arc cutter blade.

Luo Feng also received the news.

When the golden horned beast was rampaging across earth, it went out of its way to visit Hong Ning headquarter city to attack the Dojo of Limits headquarters and kill the two most powerful human fighters——Hong and Thunder God! The two grand emperor level monsters probably told the ‘golden horned beast’ that the two hardest humans to deal with are Hong and Thunder God.

However——the golden horned beast didn’t succeed.

Hong and Thunder God hid in the spaceship headquarters’ training room to avoid danger.

The transport spaceship itself was already quite sturdy, so there was no way for a star level one stage golden horned beast to destroy it. And don’t even mention destroying the even sturdier training room through the outer shell of the transport ship.

As for the weight?

The transport spaceship was over 10,000 meters long and a unit of ‘a hundred million tons’ was needed to weigh it. Keep in mind that an aircraft carrier, which is like a ‘tiny speck’ to the transport spaceship, is already a few tens of thousands of tons heavy. The material making up the transport spaceship was denser and the size of the ship itself was over 10,000 times bigger than the aircraft carrier. Its weight could be extrapolated from there.

A star traveller level one stage can at most lift up an object that is a thousand tons heavy. A star level one stage? To lift a transport spaceship weighed in the unit of ‘hundred million tons’ is impossible!

It can’t destroy it.

It can’t move it.

And it also can’t swallow such a huge thing! Absorb it? Even it will need an extremely, extremely long time to absorb such a huge transport spaceship. The golden horned beast gets full after swallowing a few military bases made out of earth’s metal, so its ‘appetite’ can be extrapolated.

So, Hong and Thunder God have escaped danger!

“I wanted to get rid of you quickly, but who would’ve thought that your defense was so powerful. Then I guess we’ll take more time” Luo Feng’s gaze turned cold, “DIE!” the arc cutter blade in his hand waved once again. The curved blade pieces on the arc cutter blade quickly assembled and then finally transformed into a curved golden blade that was only one meter long and as thin as a cicada’s wing!

Compared to the blade that was around a few dozen meters long before, this one was extremely focused and dense!

Whoosh!

With a flash from the golden curved blade, as if it was entering an apple, it directly sliced into the mountain-like brain of the octopus beast emperor.

“ANG~~”

The octopus beast emperor let out an ear-piercing cry. HUALALA~~an ink-like poison ferociously sprayed over.

This battle caused everyone on earth to hold their breath.

When Luo Feng was completely covered in the black colored poison, countless people were worrying. Keep in mind that other than the swallowing beast, the strongest monsters in the sea were the two grand emperors. One of them was the octopus beast emperor while the other was the lightning dragon emperor. The lightning dragon emperor wins with its speed, electricity, and power! The octopus beast lord wins with its defense, regenerative capabilities, poison, and strangling power!

In terms of poison!

The octopus beast emperor is number one!

“ANG~ANG~ANG~” the octopus beast emperor suddenly let out cries of pain and its eight thick tentacles started crazily shaking around. Its gigantic mountain-like brain continued to bulge and

depress. Its two eyes that were bigger than houses were filled with madness and pain.

PENG!

A wound that had a diameter of two to three meters exploded on its head. Instantly, white and red liquid directly sprayed out like a fountain.

The octopus beast emperor's eight large tentacles fell down powerlessly and its gigantic body started descending rapidly.

"RUMBLE!"

Its gigantic body, which was like a floating island, smashed into the wilderness below, causing the ground to shake as if an earthquake was going on. A few houses that have been standing there for a few dozen years were split apart because of the shockwave. Dust emanated everywhere.

The octopus beast emperor of the two grand emperors, is dead!

And in the black poison, Luo Feng stepped on his soaring shuttle and flew out of it to take a look at the corpse of the octopus beast lord that fell to the ground.

Suddenly——

People of all ages, gender, skin color, and nationality were extremely excited.

Yet, Luo Feng was calm.

“This octopus beast emperor sure was suicidal” Babata held an apple in the wrist guard space as he insulted out of disdain, “He isn’t even Thunder God or Hong’s opponent after leaving the ocean! Now that Hong and Thunder God are hiding, it thinks it’s invincible? Luo Feng, you’re actually even stronger than Thunder God, so taking care of that little shrimp is like eating breakfast! What an idiot” as he said that, Babata ferociously took a bite out of his apple!

For the current Luo Feng.

Using the arc cutter blade was enough to kill a star traveller level six stage monster emperor.

Once he uses the hybrid copper essence blade piece, he can even rival the world’s strongest fighter ‘Hong’.

The whole world was in an uproar because Luo Feng killed the monster emperor!

And the star traveller level fighters who stood at the peak were even more shocked. The grand emperor! After so many years, even Hong and Thunder God couldn’t deal with those two grand emperors in the sea. Even though Luo Feng and the grand emperor

had their battle in the air and not in the water..... other than Luo Feng, Hong, and Thunder God, is there a fourth person on earth who can battle with the grand emperor?

The third chairman Ice Emperor Mo Henderson? The fourth chairman Eastbourne?

None of them can!

Only until now did the fighters all over the world understand..... Luo Feng was a genius whose strength was comparable to Mo Henderson and Eastbourne right after stepping into the star traveller level. And one year later, he has strength comparable to Hong and Thunder God!

In terms of strength!

Luo Feng should be the third chairman, and maybe even the second chairman! But Luo Feng never challenged anybody and quietly stayed in Yang Zhou city.

.....

Hong Ning headquarter city, Dojo of Limits headquarters.

The transport spaceship had sustained some damage on the outside, but the inside wasn't damaged. In one of the training rooms in the transport spaceship.

A barefoot man in black quietly sat cross-legged.

In front of him was a bald man wearing white and was also barefoot.

One black, one white.

These two were precisely Hong and Thunder God who were hiding in the transport spaceship's training room due to the 'golden horned beast'.

"This Luo Feng sure is Earth's genius spirit reader, his strength actually was able to grow so quickly" Hong opened his eyes, and his eyes were calm, "With his strength now, he is the undisputed #1 spirit reader on Earth! He probably isn't too far off from second brother either"

"That's a good thing"

"For such a genius to be on Earth, if I die, I'll be able to rest in peace" Hong's eyes were as calm as the ocean.

Suddenly——

A bit of electricity started to slowly appear in the entire training room, which caused Hong to let out a face of surprise. The white robed bald 'Thunder God', who was originally calmly sitting cross-

legged, still had a calm expression on. However, electricity started faintly appearing around his body. In just moments, the entire training room transformed into a domain of electricity, with electric snakes flowing.

The white robed bald man opened his eyes. Lightning could barely be seen in his eyes as he let out a smile. This smile seemed to be like the smile of China's legendary Buddha.

"Brother Hong" said Thunder God slowly, "The legendary 'man and Earth as one' state in ancient Indian yoga and the completed state of 'man and body as one' in China's internal martial arts. The way of stepping into the state of the domain was to surpass them"

"Congratulations" smiled Hong.

Hong himself was an expert in Chinese internal martial arts while Thunder God practiced both of them. Some of the instruction manuals on Earth were based off of combining these ancient martial arts and the power of humans today! Maybe they are much more powerful, but in terms of their realms, Hong and Thunder God have greatly benefited from ancient civilization.

Man and Earth as one, man and body as one, man and blade as one, completed Tai Chi, etc. these were all descriptions of the highest level.

And then.....

Above them, was the domain!

“Brother Hong, me and you have been brothers to the death for a few dozen years! It is unthinkable that we retreat this time” Thunder God looked towards Hong.

Hong looked towards Thunder God, as if he saw the scene of the two of them fighting on the border of life and death back during the Grand Nirvana period.

“Okay, let’s go together” Hong slightly nodded.

“Let’s go together” Thunder God let out a smile.

Chapter 25 – Hong and Thunder God

“Brother Hong,” Thunder God laughed, “No wonder I was never your match. The domain, is actually like this!”

Hong laughed.

Domain…

Even in the vast universe, it was considered a high state to reach. So much that a universe level fighter that happens to be born in one galaxy may not even have his own domain!

“Second brother.” Hong looked towards the white robed bald headed youth, “After that devouring monster rampaged for one night, it should be at the bottom of the sea resting. Even if we were to battle it to the death, we have to get it out from the sea first. That’s why, right now, I’ll share whatever I know about the domain and its usage with you.”

Thunder God nodded.

Stepping into the realm of domain, he finally realized…the domain level was deep and immeasurable. He could only be considered a rookie after just stepping in. Hong was someone who had stepped in for tens of years, he was definitely much stronger.

While Hong was sharing his experience and usage methods with Thunder God, the battle between humanity and the sea monsters

had reached a whole new level.

Hua Xia, Jiang Nan base east, a few hundred meters in the air.

“Arrived at destination.”

A disc shaped battleship was in the air above the wide river, this wide and big river was Hua Xia’s famous Chang Jiang.

“Huahuahua…”

Within Chang Jiang, there were countless blurry sea creatures! Randomly throwing a bomb in would kill a few 100 hundred monsters!

Countless sea monsters, were madly following the river and advancing inland!

“Throw no.12 medicine.”

“Yes!”

A hole appeared at the bottom of the disc shaped battleship, a green liquid with strains of red flowed out into the river and mixed! The battleship followed the course of the river and flew, the medicine constantly flowing out, mixing below the river. A few seconds later…

“Howl…”

“Ga…”

“Hiss hiss!!!”

Various kinds of howls and roars sounded, the originally blurry Chang Jiang filled with sea monsters began to boil! Some of the monsters even jumped out from the pain, while others began to madly attack in all directions. A short time passed and Chang Jiang returned to its quiet state, the number of sea creatures moving seemed to have lessened by quite a bit.

……

Yang Zhou City, one particular command base.

Hua Xia had a total of six bases, why this place ended up being called the base center, was because these six bases had the strongest defense, it was humanity’s final standpoint! After so many years, humanity had been using all kinds of methods and ways to strengthen itsit’s defenses.

Within the Command base, Luo Feng was currently together with the just retreated Li Da Wei commanding officer.

“Bastard!” Li Da Wei expression was ugly.

“What’s wrong?” Luo Feng asked.

The sea creatures following the river have entered inland! According to my plans…” Li Da Wei’s face was ashened, “When a large number of the sea creatures flood the rivers, we would poison the rivers, causing a large number of them to die immediately! One was to kill a large number of them, two was to let the bodies block the way…

“The result was nowhere close to what we wanted!” Li Da Wei’s eyebrows creased.

“The newly researched poison no.12, is actually better suited for the climbing types of sea creatures, and against the intestine types, thorn skinned types, the results…” Li Da Wei shook his head.

Luo Feng could feel the heaviness in the air.

Even though he could kill one grand emperor, just how much impact did he make on the bigger picture? The monster that made humans the most helpless was…the golden horned beast!

“We aren’t afraid of the sea creatures, the emperor class monsters even!” Li Da Wei said seriously, “Bases, we’ve been constantly upgrading and fortifying! No matter how vicious the sea creatures are, we’ll never be exterminated! The only thing that frightens us is…that devouring monster!”

“No one!”

“None of the bases could stop it. “These two days, Li Da Wei’s hair had all gone white.

January 15, wee hours 5 am.

Luo Feng sat in his own house in front of his computer, looking at the notebook’s screen and it’s many news. Because of the day’s many groundbreaking battles, the monsters had suffered heavy losses, especially the loss of the grand emperor the eight claw emperor, they were frightened and didn’t dare rush as quickly.

This allowed Luo Feng to take a breather.

His body was rested, but his heart was still anxious!

“Yesterday morning, the golden horned beast entered the sea bed to rest, who knows when it’ll reappear.” Luo Feng heart was anxious and worried, “Babata, when will the laser cannon be ready?”

“Luo Feng, don’t worry don’t worry, soon, soon.” Babata said.

Luo Feng took a deep breath, trying his best to contain his worry.

Turning to look outside, through the glass window...outside, the sky was still dark.

“When will dawn come through?” Luo Feng mumbled.

“Weng!”

Luo Feng looked down towards his wrist cuff, his watch communicator was vibrating, it was his Head Hong.

“Hello.” Luo Feng answered.

“Luo Feng, immediately enter the wargod’s palace virtual space.” Hong said, “I have important news to announce.”

“Alright.” Luo Feng answered.

“Luo Feng, your power has grown by a lot.” Hong praised him, “Keep on working hard.” He ended the call the moment he finished his words.

……

Wargod Palace virtual space.

Shua!

A golden robed Luo Feng suddenly appeared within a spacious room.

“I wonder what the Head is so anxious to announce, gathering everybody from the different countries for.” Luo Feng was curious, leaving the room, he headed swiftly towards the top floor meeting room.

Along the way, he met a few friends.

“Luo Feng, how are you?” A white man shouted.

“Terrence.” Luo Feng walked alongside this man, “How’s Europe’s situation?”

“It’s bad, there’s already been three bases which have begun battles with the sea creatures.” Terrence, the European man shook his head, “I estimate within half a day, all of europe’s six bases would have begun an all out battle with the sea creatures!”

Luo Feng shook his head.

The entire world’s situation was bad, the worse was definitely the American side, afterall they were the first to suffer the wrath of the golden horned beast. The Asian countries were still ok... however, according to the news Luo Feng received, places like Jiang Nan base were estimated to begin battling the sea creatures within a couple of hours.

Within the meeting room, a lot of people began to gather quickly.

“Attention everyoneall!”

Only two people sat right at the top, a black clothed Hong and the white clothed Thunder God.

“Right now at this crucial moment, I’ve called everyone here to announce something very important.” Hong’s gaze was sharp as knives, “I believe everybody knows, that the sudden appearance of the golden horned beast has brought upon Earth its greatest catastrophe to date, without killing it, Earth and humanity will be annihilated!”

Everyone below remained silent.

Luo Feng looked at his surroundings, everyone’s expressions were ugly.

“The devouring beast, is a space beast from the universe, it’s growth speed is incredibly fast! While we may not be able to deal with it now, we managed to hide in the ship and survive, escaping the threat. However, as the devouring monster gets stronger, there will come a time where we won’t even be able to run.” Hong’s face was filled with pain and anguish.

Luo Feng nodded his head.

He too agreed with this point, this golden horned beast was a space beast with the most elite bloodline! When it’s fully grown, it could become a sector lord!

“That’s why, we have to kill it! Must!!!” Hong’s entire aura immediately began to grow frantic and serious!

“It must die.” Thunder God said coldly beside him.

“First representative, we all know we must kill it, however…even a 1.5 hundred million ton hydrogen bomb couldn’t kill it. What other plans do we have?” An old American man with a head full of white said anxiously.

Other representatives shook their head: “Even the strongest laser beam didn’t even leave a mark on its body. It’s too strong, there’s no way, no way at all.”

“I have a son and daughter.”

Hong stood up, surveying everyone, “I’m not a good father! I’ve put all my focus on training and martial arts, hardly caring for them. However…they are still my children.”

“I do not wish to let my kids live without hope!”

“My Dojo of Limits has an enormous flying ship, one so huge even the devouring monster cannot devour at this point. I can simply put all my children in and let them hide in there. But!!! I’m very clear, once that devouring monster matures to the universe level, there would be no safe pot anywhere on Earth!!!”

“Not a single place!”

Hong's voice shook everyone in the room, including Luo Feng.

"Thunder God and I have decided, to combine forces and fight it to the death, all to kill that devouring monster!" Hong's voice reverberated in everybody's ears.

"To the death! Kill the devouring monster!" Thunder God stood up and said beside.

Stunned!

There was pure silence in the meeting room, everyone was shocked, everyone knew of the devouring monster's strength!

"Head." Liu He couldn't help but stand up.

"Head." Allure, wearing a golden mask also stood up.

A total of eight people stood up together!

"The decision is made, no need to try and dissuade us." Hong said calmly, however, everyone felt his resolve about that heavy decision, one almost as heavy as Mt. Tai, it was a resolve no one could shake!

"First chairman, second chairman, do you two have any guarantee?"

“First chairman, suicide is not worth it!”

“If humanity cannot stop it, we still need to rely on you to lead the survivors.”

Many from different countries stood up.

Hong shook his head: “If the devouring monster doesn’t die, there will be no survivors!”

These words caused a great many of people to tear up.

Despair!

So much despair!

……

Luo Feng closed his eyes, what Hong said was true! If not for Babata who knew how to maintain, assemble and operate the machinery, even with a black dragon ship, there’s was no way to repair it enough to use it!

“Babata,” Luo Feng’s thoughts shouted out.

“Something the matter?” Babata replied.

“Is the laser cannon ready?” Luo Feng asked.

“I still need one more hour.” Babata said.

“Can it kill the golden horned beast with one shot?” Luo Feng asked.

“Relax, this is the black dragon mountain’s X81’s greatest weapon, it can definitely kill the golden horned beast with one shot, destroying it’s soul. There’s no doubt at all about it.” Babata was extremely confident.

“Very good.”

Luo Feng opened his eyes...looking at the elites from the various countries all struggling in pain, along with Hong and Thunder God who were ready to sacrifice themselves.

“Attention everyoneall!”

A loud voice reverberated across the meeting room.

Everybody went silent, including Hong and Thunder god, everybody looked up. Under the gaze of the earth’s elite, Luo Feng said seriously: “I have a guaranteed way to kill the devouring monster!”

Chapter 26 – B6 Laser Cannon

Everyone in the meeting room was suddenly dumbfounded, you could hear a pin drop in that dead silence. Nobody on earth could dare to say he/she had a guaranteed way to kill the devouring monster. Even the ones with domains Hong and Thunder God could only say they were going to fight it to the death, risking it all just to battle and give it a shot!

There was no guarantee!

“Luo Feng!” Hong stared hard at Luo Feng, “You, what did you say?”

“I didn’t hear it clearly.” Beside him, Thunder God too was staring hard at Luo Feng, “Can you repeat it!”

“Luo Feng, what did you just say!” Beside, Jia Yi grabbed onto Luo Feng, his voice trembling with anxiety.

“Luo Feng.”

Leaders from the various countries as well as representative warriors were all staring at Luo Feng, almost like people on the verge of drowning seeing a rescue boat pass by. Many of them began to clean and rub their ears, worried that they may have heard wrongly. Some even turned to their counterparts beside and asked if he was speaking the truth.

Nervous, anxious, apprehensive...different emotions filled the meeting room.

“I said!”

Luo Feng took a deep breath, looking at the surrounding people, “I have a guaranteed way to kill the devouring monster!”

“You really do have a guarantee?”

“Luo Feng, you, what will you use to kill the devouring monster?”

“Luo, you aren’t bluffing are you?”

Different skin colors, countrymen couldn’t help but shout out. One after another, some with their hair all while, but faces still flushed red.

“Silence.” Hong shouted loudly.

The meeting room gradually grew quiet, Hong said loudly: “I’ll ask Luo Feng, everybody please remain calm.” The scene was after all filled with the earth’s brightest. It was only due to their desperation to save their country, race, culture and earth’s survival that they lost their cool. Hearing those words from Hong, they couldn’t help but calm down.

“Luo Feng.” Hong looked at Luo Feng, everyone in the meeting room looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng looked at Hong: “Ask away.”

“What will you use to kill the devouring monster, don’t tell me, you’ll be battling it out with it.” Hong looked at Luo Feng, the meeting room contained the leading experts of the world, after listening to Luo Feng will they know if he really had a guarantee or he was just lying.

“Attention all.”

Luo Feng surveyed the crowd, “During the last assembly, I requested a record of all of Earth’s archeological ruins and their information from my Head.”

“I can attest to that.” Hong nodded, that information was indeed handed to him personally.

“When that devouring monster appeared, I too was extremely worried. I thought of ways and thought that the archeological ruins might have some hope of saving the world.” Luo Feng said seriously, “There are many ruins, most countries have already excavated. The only three that remain are the three big dangers!”

“Three big dangers?”

Many people were taken aback.

They were clear of the three big dangers and their level of danger.

“No.1, 12 and 31, which of these did you go?” Hong couldn’t help but ask.

Everyone of earth knew of the dangers from these 3 ruins.

No.1, at the sea bed of the Bermuda, the silver white pyramid and no 31’s ship around the poison fields, I cannot enter.” Luo Feng shook his head, “I went to no.12 ruins, the black ship.”

Many within the meeting room nodded.

There were many who knew of no.12, however, no matter who was sent there from the countries all suffered losses.

“That ship, to be able to maintain its laser path energy supply, I recognized straight away…that ship shouldn’t be too heavily damaged. Indeed!” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up, “When I entered, there were indeed some weapons damaged. However, the strongest single target weapon…the laser cannon was almost perfectly fine! I obtained several repair robots from the ship and it’s currently in repair, I believe it’ll be ready to use soon.”

“Laser cannon? Is it that powerful?” Several people were suspicious.

“Don’t speak rubbish if you don’t know.”

An old white man with messy hair stared at Luo Feng, “The laser cannon you acquired, what grade is it?”

Luo Feng was slightly shaken.

Within his mind, Babata said: “Tell him, it’s a b6 grade!”

“It’s a b6 grade!” Luo Feng said.

“My god, b6 grade, humanity has been saved! Humanity has been saved!!!” That old man with messy hair was so excited he began to cry and laugh on the spot.

Immediately, several representatives beside asked: “Bruce sir, this b6 laser, just how powerful is it?”

“Attention all.”

This Bruce old man surveyed his surroundings, saying loudly, “There are many here who know. We on earth who study lasers powerful enough to kill monsters begun our research from the ancient ruins and their damaged or broken laser cannons. Excavating them and research allowed us to build ours.”

“Back then, I obtained some information, the power of the laser cannons in the universe are separated into different grades.” Bruce

said, “Translated to earth language, the grades are A, B, and C these main grades.”

“For example, an A1 laser cannon, can kill a normal star traveller level 1 warrior!”

“An A2 laser cannon, can kill a normal star traveller level 2 warrior!”

“And so on, the A9 grade can kill a Star traveller level 9 warrior!”

“And the B grade laser cannons, are very precious in the universe. The B1 laser cannon can kill a normal star level 1 warrior.” Bruce laughed out, “And so on, the B6, can kill a star level 6 warrior! According to the information, this grade of weapon wasn’t even found in an interstellar fleet.”

Suddenly, the meeting room erupted.

“Haha! There’s hope, there’s hope!”

“There’s no need for more deaths, no need for so many others to die.”

“Haha.”

“Hoho.”

Many leading experts and elites lost their composure from their happiness. Nobody bothered...what was composure over this piece of news.

“Luo Feng.” Hong looked at Luo Feng, smiling, “Thanks!”

“Head...” Luo Feng was just about to open his mouth.

“There’s no need to call me Head, if you respect me, then be like Thunder God, call me Brother Hong.” Hong smiled, he was indeed very grateful to Luo Feng...even in a fight to the death, he only had a 20-30% chance of winning. If he could avoid death and still kill the devouring monster, who would still willingly go suicide?

“Brother Hong.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Haha, good, haha, happiness, I haven’t been so happy in a long time.” Hong lost his composure completely, Thunder God walked over from the side.

“Oh right, Luo Feng.” Hong’s expression grew serious, speaking, “I know the laser cannon’s speed can reach light speed, that devouring monster has no chance to dodge! However, if it doesn’t die from one shot, that devouring monster can definitely escape underground and swiftly find a way for its revenge to destroy the cannon. That’s why...there’s only one chance to kill it.”

Luo Feng was shocked within.

Right!

Laser cannon, also known as the light cannon, was indeed fast! However, after the first shot, the second shot took some time to prepare and charge, within that short time, the devouring monster, with it's unbelievable speed could definitely escape. The moment it escapes...it wouldn't give Luo Feng another chance.

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

His consciousness left the virtual space, back to reality, it was already after 6 in the morning.

It was already bright outside.

"Night has passed, the day has come." Luo Feng stood on his balcony, breathing into the glass, his hot breath causing the window to fog up.

"Luo Feng, it's done, it's done, wahaha...I, Babata, am just too awesome! Over eight hundred thousand years of non usage, I still have my ways to fix it." Babata 's proud laugh resounded in Luo Feng's mind. Luo Feng was happy, he didn't have the mood to bother about Babata's arrogance, instead he asked: "Where's the weapon? Take it out and let me see."

"Damn, don't rush."

Within the wrist cuff space, Babata stretched, "This laser cannon

may be a single soldier's weapon, however, it's still a universe's single weapon. It still takes up quite a large space. It requires 6m long, 6m wide, 3m high, such a space. Your balcony here cannot take it."

"That's called a singular weapon?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Call any robot or warrior and they can easily lift it. Of course it's a singular weapon." Babata said unsatisfied, "Don't you see, the huge ship based weapons, just their bodies alone are the size of your Earth's mothership!"

Luo Feng rubbed his head and laughed.

That's right.

An inter galaxy weapon compared to just a weapon for space, the difference should be huge.

Also, Luo Feng, you have no way to use this weapon, don't you have those 3 repair robots, pass one over to me. I'll give it instructions, passing this kind of jobs to robots is just right, even though they have no sense of creativity, they wouldn't commit any form of error for such a job." Babata said.

Luo Feng definitely agreed!

Those three black metal robots, one of them was quickly taken by Babata into his storage space, engaged in its reprogramming.

“Why hasn’t the devouring monster appeared from the sea bed?”

On Luo Feng’s house’s balcony, Hong, Thunder God, Jia Yi and others, including Luo Feng, a total of twelve people were gathered. The sun was high up in the sky, it was after 12 in the afternoon.

“What’s the rush, if it doesn’t come out forever, that would be the best.” Hong laughed as he glanced at Thunder God, Luo Feng was however looking at the big black metal robot in front of him, calmly settled with the enormous weapon…6m long, 6m wide, 3m tall, it’s entire structure looked to be made from crystal.

It’s interior was extremely complex, it made them dizzy just looking at it.

The mouth itself was 5m.

“Can one shot really kill the devouring monster?” Mo Henderson from America was worried.

“Relax.” Luo Feng said confidently, “Don’t be fooled by that devouring monster’s 180m long body, it’s brain is only 20m long. A laser beam with a diameter of 5m shot…will completely blow its head open, destroying its body and soul, it’ll be so dead it can’t even die again!”

“Oh, blow its brains out.” Mo Henderson was excited.

The group was waiting anxiously.

Only the black metal robot was moving at all, with the sun glaring down on its body, there was hardly any reflection.

Minutes and seconds passed.

Noon, 1pm, 3pm, 5pm...

When the sun had reached the west mountain, just as it was setting.

“Hello.” Hong answered his watch communicator.

“Head, the devouring monster just flew out from the Slovak island close to Antarctica! It’s out from the sea! A voice transmitted from the watch, the twelve people present were excited.

Almost at the same time, everyone else’s watch communicators vibrated.

It’s here!

The devouring monster had finally come out!

Chapter 27 – The Beam of Light That Shot Towards Space

On the balcony of Luo Feng's house, the twelve fighters' gazes all fell upon the black metal robot.

"Luo Feng, are you certain you should let the machine control the B6 laser cannon?" Thunder God couldn't help but ask.

"If we don't use the robot, who else is there? Which of us knows how to operate a B6 laser cannon?" Luo Feng laughed, everybody else laughed; their smiles however contained hints of nervousness! They couldn't help it, the pressure on them was too much. Afterall, if they failed…it meant the end of humanity!

Luo Feng looked at the metal robot.

"Start" Luo Feng said.

Di!

The metal robot's red crystal eyes suddenly lighted up, raising both its metal arms, grabbing onto that enormous crystal figure laser cannon, sou! Immediately flying up into the sky!

As the sun set in the west, the black metal robot swiftly vanished into the sky with the crystal laser cannon.

Luo Feng and the others looked up at it.

“Don’t look anymore, let’s quickly enter the house. We can follow it via the satellite.” Hong shouted, immediately, everybody else began to enter Luo Feng’s listening room on the 2nd floor.

Hua la la…

The endless pacific ocean was gently swaying, the time now in Hua Xia was after 5 in the evening, however over there, it was late at night.

Tonight, it was all dark, there was no moon!

Hu!

In the air above the pacific ocean, a totally black figure, with a horn covered in gold engravings; an enormous beast was flying. It’s wings covered in black scales made it look even more like a black shadow.

It! It was precisely this existence that had the world cowering in fear…the swallowing space beast with the most elite bloodline, ‘golden horned beast.’

In flight, its golden pupils surveyed below, they were filled with cold brutality.

More than 10,000km away from the golden horned beast, the sun had just set and the sky wasn't completely dark.

A 2.12m tall black metal robot was easily grasping onto a crystal figure enormous laser cannon, swiftly flying, leaving Hua Xia's dry land's range, entering the ocean range...The direction it was heading towards was closing the distance between it and the golden horned beast.

Yang Zhou city, Luo Feng's 2nd floor listening room.

On the left wall, it was almost as though the entire wall was covered with a screen. It depicted the swallowing monster flying in the night, and on the right, it was the metal robot grasping the crystal cannon flying towards it.

"The metal robot's flying speed, is 2,109m per second." A metallic voice reverberated around the room, "The swallowing monster's flying speed is 15,219m per second."

Within the listening room gathered the twelve fighters of Earth.

"Luo Feng, the voice doing the explanation is an AI." Hong said to Luo Feng softly.

"Attention all, I've already prepared the celebratory wine we'll enjoy when we succeed in a moment" on the side, Thunder God took out a wine glass from the liquor cabinet and poured, a total of twelve cups of wine, "Attention all, let's all watch how that

swallowing monster dies.”

“Haha, you are going to have to prepare more celebratory wine.”

Luo Feng and the others laughed.

Everyone was laughing!

However, everyone of them were still tense and nervous, this was just a way to diffuse their tension and relax. No one dared to fully relax at the time! Time passed by the minutes and seconds, even though the distance between the black metal robot and the swallowing monster had reached 10,000km, the swallowing monster could travel tens of kilometers within a second!

Minutes and seconds passed.

The air in the listening room was becoming more tense, almost as though it had solidified, making it impossible to breathe!

“The distance between them is 2,100km.”

“The metal robot has already stopped.” The mechanical voice spoke.

On the screen, the left side, the swallowing monster was still flying, as though it was headed straight towards China’s mainland. And on the right, the metal robot had already stopped, it was

floating in mid air.

“The laser cannon has a light.”

“It’s already started up.”

Luo Feng and the other eleven people held their breaths as they watched: the metal robot was grasping the B6 laser cannon with one hand while the other was aiming it carefully. The enormous crystal figure laser cannon began to light up its entire body, the light followed the veins around through the center and all over.

“It takes the 50 seconds to prepare the cannon for a shot.” Luo Feng said softly as he explained.

“Hm,” Jia Yi was obviously nervous, he nodded, “The laser cannon’s attack follows a straight path. They have to get closer, about 1000 km distance should be just right.”

Luo Feng nodded.

This laser cannon was a weapon used all over the universe, the factors of air resistance and dust within a planet hardly affect the laser cannon.

Fifty seconds passed.

On the right side of the screen, the metal robot controlled the

enormous laser cannon's muzzle, chichi...white light followed the cannon's muzzle to revolve one round, causing the entire muzzle to shine brightly.

"It's ready." Luo Feng said softly, "It can attack anytime."

"Shouldn't we attack now." Thunder God couldn't help but say.

"It's alright, the time is enough." Jia Yi cleared his throat, staring hard at the screen.

"Quickly, quickly, quickly." Mo Henderson mumbled softly.

"It's good, it's good, it can attack now." Hong also said quietly.

.....

Everyone was nervous beyond compare! The twelve on site were Earth's brightest with the highest level of mental strength. However, at a time like this... no one has ever been this nervous before. Even in the face of death, they never felt even a fraction of such nervousness!

.....

The American general headquarters.

“God, please protect your children.” The black skinned president’s forehead had beads of perspiration, he drew a cross on his chest, staring hard at the screen.

Besides the generals beside, the ministers beside all held their breaths.

……

The Chinese general headquarters.

The first senior official old Zhou was standing with his back perfectly straight, his eyes glued to the screen. Beside him, the other leaders didn’t utter a single sound.

……

Europe, India, Russia, the HR Alliance, twenty three bases, leaders of the world all held their breaths to watch the scene unfold, an incomparable amount of pressure, was pushing down on humanity!

Survive?

Or die?

It was all about to unfold!

The distance between the metal robot and the swallowing monster was 1200 km, 1150 km, 1100 km...The entire world was nervously watching the scene, yet the black metal robot's metal face, didn't have a single trace of nervousness. It's red crystal eyes suddenly lit up! A signal was immediately sent straight into the laser cannon!

At that time!

An incomparably glaring, resplendent and enchanting beam of white light shot out of the 5m long muzzle of the laser cannon, flying straight above the pacific ocean!

Within the blink of an eye!

This beam of white light that was extremely enchanting, reached within 1082 km of the target, the swallowing monster space beast golden horned beast!

Within the dark night, the sky above the pacific ocean, the golden horned beast's wings flapped casually, it's golden pupils were overseeing the sea below.

At that moment!

Time froze!

"Chi!"

Just like one's hair being scorched badly, with a "chi" sound, the extremely glaring beam of white light directly pierced through the golden horned monster's head! The light 'passed by' the entire top half of it's head, including a small top portion of its left wing! There was almost no sound or trace! Only that extremely short 'chi' sound.

Nothingness!

The golden horned beast's head was immediately left with only the bottom big mouth, lower jaw, everything from the nose up was gone! Everything including the brain, was all gone!

The white beam of light was incomparably dazzling, when it was shooting past the golden horned beast and continuing forward, before flying into the atmosphere, it actually broke past the atmosphere and headed straight through to the star filled space!

.....

Time stopped at that moment!

Within the listening room.

On the left side of the screen, was the swallowing monster stuck in its flying posture, its head however was only left with its mouth, there was basically nothing on top of that.

On the right side of the screen was the dazzling beam that shot towards space!

Within the listening room, the twelve fighters had almost stared right through the screen, before erupting in madness!

“HAHA! SUCCESS, IT SUCCEEDED!” Jia Yi, China’s number one person was excited and jumping up and down, waving his fist about.

“AWW YEAH” Mo Henderson shook his bottom with pride.

“HAHA, IT WORKED, IT WORKED!!!” Luo Feng shouted excitedly.

“COME, COME, COME, HURRY UP, LET’S CELEBRATE WITH SOME DRINKS.” Thunder God immediately picked up a wine glass beside him.

“GREAT!” Hong too was flushed with excitement.

And within Luo Feng’s mind, Babata’s excited voice resounded: “Aren’t I something Luo Feng? I told you before, this is a laser cannon that can kill a star level 6, shooting this beast just brushing past it and killing it. It was super easy and it had no choice but to die. Wahahaha.” Babata was extremely proud and satisfied.

Every country on earth, suddenly erupted in glee!!!

Everyone was excited!

……

“It’s finally done, we’ve finally survived this calamity.” Luo Feng walked excitedly towards Thunder God.

“Hm?” Luo Feng was startled, the loud and excited room had suddenly gone silent, even the representative Zhu Xi who was originally shouting stopped, Luo Feng’s heart trembled and turned to look at the screen.

On the screen.

On the left side, the swallowing monster’s head was still left with only a mouth, the suspicious thing was, it was still floating, its two horns, one short and one long were still floating beside.

The two horns’ engravings suddenly started shininged with a dazzling golden light!

Ang!

The swallowing monster’s body, especially the neck, back and golden engraved scales began to light up, the light swiftly flowed through the engravings through to the pair of enormous wings! In a blink of an eye, the pair of wings seemed to grow bigger a little,

its shape changing slightly.

Whoosh!

It became just like a golden beam of light!

The swallowing monster, with the top half of its head blown off and left with only its mouth, rushed straight into the ocean, rumble! The ocean exploded open!

“We’ve failed?” Hong’s face had gone pale, his body trembling.

Jia Yi looked at the screen, his face terrified as he shook his head non stop. He shook, and shook his head. Eventually, tears started rolling down his face.

Thunder God, who was holding a few wine glasses and getting ready to distribute them to celebrate, looked at the screen wide-eyed. The wine glasses in his hands dropped to the floor!

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

The glasses broke, shards flew about, the sounds felt like they were piercing through their hearts, Luo Feng stared hard at the screen, there was no more emotion left in him...

Despair?

His heart was as good as dead.

At this moment!

Everyone on Earth's hearts stopped beating, all of humanity felt despair!

At this moment!

It was like looking at humanity's extinction!

"The swallowing monster is travelling along the seabed at a speed of 36063 m per second! It's 2.37 times faster than before!" Within the listening room, the mechanical voice reported without any feelings or emotions, oddly enough, there wasn't any reaction in the listening room, everybody was as quiet as figurines, almost as if they all died!

Chapter 28 – Heavy Losses

Within the darkness of the listening room, Luo Feng could only feel a sense of emptiness in his mind, he couldn't hear anything from the outside world at all.

"We've failed?"

"We've failed? We've actually failed? How could we have failed? How could we have failed!" Luo Feng was swallowed by a surge of remorse and pain, with regards to the attack, he had placed too much, too much hope on it! Ever since the failure of the hydrogen bomb, humanity had had only one move left, to let Hong and Thunder God, the two strongest on earth go fight it out.

However, even a fight to the death didn't bring about any guarantee.

And the b6 grade laser cannon he had acquired was something that had a lot of guarantee. The entire earth's elites were all excited because of the cannon! Everyone was anticipating this attack!

Indeed!

The b6 cannon was incomparably strong! It easily destroyed the golden horned beast's brain, even shooting through to space. However!!! No one could have expected that even with it's brains blown off and left with only it's mouth, the golden horned beast was still alive and not dead!!!

“How could it not have died, how could this happen?” Within the wrist cuff space, Babata was shocked and shaking his head, “Not right, not right. Be it humans or animals, the soul is kept within one’s consciousness, and that is in the brain! Destroying the brain, means certain death. Unless it’s spirit imprint is in every cell, where with just a single cell, it can be reborn.”

“However, a star level definitely cannot reach such a stage!” Babata constantly shook his head, “Unless the the golden horned beast has some special talent?”

No one knew!

Within the universe, the understanding of the space beasts was too little, far too little. Even throughout the Yun Mo Planet master’s entire life, he had never come across a golden horned beast. The understanding of the golden horned beast was far too little!

Within the listening room.

“Hurry, the laser cannon, hurry and retrieve the laser cannon!” Jia Yi suddenly roared.

The 11 others in the house were shaken to their senses.

“The laser cannon!”

Luo Feng's eyes too were opened wide, staring at the screen, only to see the black metal robot grasping the laser cannon and frantically escaping, in the other scene, a huge silhouette was madly chasing behind.

"The metal robot's flying speed is 2110m per second, the swallowing monster on the seabed chasing, is moving at a speed of 36069m per second, the distance between the 2 is 520km, 460km, 398km..." Within the listening room, the emotionless mechanical voice said non stop, everybody's expressions changed.

"Hurry, hurry, hurry." Thunder God said urgently.

"It's not going to make it." Hong's face was pale, shaking his head, "The two originally had a distance of 1000km or so. The swallowing monster's speed is 36km per second, the robot's speed is too slow. 30 seconds and it'll catch up. The laser cannon won't get the chance to fire a second shot."

The group of star traveller warriors beside were panicking so hard their fists were gripped tight enough to hear their joints cracking.

Luo Feng stared at the screen.

As the swallowing monster was progressing underwater, the satellites were unable to get a picture of it. However, it could still follow and trace the golden horned monster's large life force! Afterall, it's life force was too huge. Especially now with its speed quickly increasing to twice of that before, its life force was a lot

stronger.

3200m below the surface of the ocean, the golden horned monster's wings were bigger than before, the scales on them were more closely packed, the golden engravings on the scales seemed to have some magical power, allowing the golden horned monster's speed underwater to increase to an unbelievable level!

Rage!

The golden horned beast was raging unlike never before, even the previous attack from the hydrogen bomb before was just a superficial injury to it. This time however, the damage was 10 times, 100 hundred times worse! This injury that was unlike any other previous one stirred up the madness and rage within its bones.

Suddenly, the golden horned beast's speed decreased!

"Ang!"

The two horns , one long and one short that had been floating on its back, the long one suddenly lit up with golden light and became a beam of golden light, rushing straight upwards!

Xiu!

As fast as lightning!

The golden horn instantly pierced through more than 3000m of the ocean, breaking through the surface. It was too fast, it didn't allow the black robot any time to evade! Both of the black metal robot's hands were grasping the b6 cannon; the cannon was still in the midst of preparation.

"Gather!"

The golden horn immediately pierced through the crystal figured beautiful laser cannon, breaking the cannon's preparation. With a bang, the cannon broke apart like glass, and at the same time, the golden horn had fiercely pierced into the black metal robot's body. Rumble…the black yttrium metal robot was extremely sturdy.

Weng…

The robot became like a shooting star, getting blown away in mid air and flying tens of kilometers back before falling straight into the ocean with a crash and sinking.

Within the listening room, Hong, Thunder God, Luo Feng and the others all watched the screen.

On the screen, the silhouette in the ocean was gradually sinking deeper, deeper…

"Luo Feng, the robot has suffered an immensely strong attack, causing the control systems within its body to be damaged, I can't

call it back anymore." Babata's voice resounded in Luo Feng's mind, Luo Feng closed his eyes, one repair robot didn't mean anything at all. However...the attack that carried the hopes of humanity, had failed!

"Sorry, Luo Feng, within my database, there's too little information regarding the space beasts. As for the golden horned beast, there's even less. I only know some common knowledge." Babata apologized.

He too knew what this failure tasted like to the rest of humanity.

Silence.

There was only silence within the work room.

Jia Yi stood by the window and took out a pack of cigarettes from his pocket. He lit one and smoked alone.

"Give me one too." Zhu Xi took one and also smoked.

Everybody else was either sitting quietly, or closing their eyes in pain. Basically, everybody was extremely silent.

"Strong defense, incredible speed, and it can even explode with even more shocking speed than before! Not just that, even with its brains blown off, it can still survive and attack! It even has the ability of a spirit reader, as it can control its horn to attack from a distance! Also, its power is huge." Luo Feng's mind was replaying

the information, “It has an internal world within that can directly ingest a large amount of metal into that world.”

“And its speed of growth is extremely shocking!”

My god!

How did such a space beast land on earth, and how could they resist?

“Weng weng…”

Suddenly a watch communicator vibrated, the 12 people in the work room all turned at almost the same time, it was Mo Henderson’s tactical communications watch. He pressed the button and immediately an American English speaking voice came through: “Do you guys have any ideas on that side? Are there any more ideas? Ask Luo Feng, ask the 2 chairmen, are there any more ways?”

“Alright, I’ll ask.” Mo Henderson said softly before hanging up.

Mo Henderson looked to the others.

Luo Feng shook his head.

Hong and Thunder God looked at each other, a smile appearing at the same time across their faces! A strange smile that seemed to

contain a feeling of acceptance of death, a smile that shook one's soul.

This failure was a heavy blow to every country. Originally filled with hope, many people excitedly watching the golden horned monster's head get destroyed, some people even fainted from their excitement. However, all of this fell apart and the scene changed from heaven to hell, they had entered a nightmare.

The swallowing monster, was more terrifying and more powerful than what humanity had imagined!

Even without its head, it was still as strong as before, and it's speed was even faster!

"My god."

"Oh lord, save your children."

"God."

A few of earth's elites, even those who weren't religious, began to quietly pray. Only in such dire, hopeless times will man wish for a miracle or divine intervention! And at that time, even these elites were hoping for such an intervention! Obviously...they were in despair and totally helpless!

.....

The rock stratum on the seabed, 23,000m or so below the surface.

The golden horned monster's body was lying within the darkness, its entire body was glowing with threads of golden light, its head which was only left with a mouth, had blood and meat intertwining, skin rebuilding and scales reappearing. Within a short time, it was growing back out! Even its ears have steadily grown out, and its pair of dark golden eyes have also regrown.

Finally!

Its entire head had regrown, with one short and one long horn on its forehead, the only thing was that the scales on its head were more tender and not as hard as the rest of its body. Rage could be seen within its pupils, endless rage! It was like a blaze burning!

"Howl..."

"Howl..."

A low pitched howl that contained anger continuously echoed throughout.

Its injury was too severe!

It would never forget the instant where the white light pierced through its body. The light was so fast it couldn't even evade it and

had no power to resist! Its entire body's power had gathered within...its horn! It was incomparably sturdy and incomparably sharp. Even though the laser had knocked it far away, it wasn't destroyed despite being heavily damaged.

"Wu!"

Once its body had fully recovered, the golden horned monster felt a hunger like never before! Its internal world too was extremely ravished! Every cell in its body was shouting out!

It had used up too much energy, its power had decreased by a lot.

It required emergency sustenance, "Wu..." The golden horned monster let out a low howl, rushing out from the rock stratum upwards. It needed food! It needed metal!

Luo Feng's home's listening room, the sky outside was getting dark.

Luo Feng and the other nine people were looking at two people... Hong and Thunder God.

"There's no chance for survival if we keep going on like this. This swallowing monster is too powerful, too strange." Hong shook his head, "It'll get stronger just by growing, even if we humans hid within the archeological ruins, we would still end up being killed by it. Also, I believe that it has sustained severe injuries after receiving the attack from the laser cannon. I suspect its last speed

burst was a struggle from the heavy damage. It might have even been its final last burst before it dies!”

After he said that last sentence, even Hong himself didn’t believe it.

“Even if it wasn’t a last burst, its power would definitely be a lot lower than before.” Hong said, “We have to take this chance while it’s weak and kill it!”

“Right, once we miss this chance, there won’t be any others.” Thunder God nodded.

Luo Feng and the others were a bit sad.

Were they going to watch Hong and Thunder God risk their lives?

“Thunder God and I both have our own domain. If we really risk it all, there’s hope.” Hong smiled, beside him, Thunder God too nodded and smiled.

Chapter 29 – Luo Feng's Responsibility

"Domain?" Luo Feng was somewhat taken aback.

Only Hong had his own domain on earth, and Hong became the undisputed number 1 on the planet because of it. However according to Hong , it seemed that even Thunder God had his own domain now.

"That's impossible!!!"

"How can that be?"

From the wrist cuff space, Babata's eyes were opened wide and he kept shouting out, "Domain! How can one planet suddenly come up with two who have their own domains, and they are both only star traveller warriors! This is just impossible, one's an abnormality, it's already like striking the lottery. How can there be 2?"

"Babata, there's no need for such a ruckus." Luo Feng's thoughts communicated to him, "If Thunder God having his own domain, then in a battle to the death with the Golden horned beast, there's a little more hope, it's a good thing."

Luo Feng's mood was extremely heavy.

"No, Luo Feng, you don't understand." Within the virtual space, Babata said, "Let's put it this way, your soaring shuttles three big

forms and nine levels, the conditions for the third form, you should remember right?"

"I remembered, reach the Universe level, multiplier at 48, and I must have my own domain. Only then can I train and put it to use." Luo Feng remembered clearly.

"3 conditions, reaching the Universe level is one, what does that mean? It means! Even amongst the Universe level warriors, there are those without their own domains! Universe level, normally, one galaxy only has one Universe level! And they don't necessarily have their own domain!" Babata couldn't help but say frantically, "According to the four stages of: Basics...Perception...Domain... World! Luo Feng right now, you are only in the Basics part of it."

"Even in the category of Star level warriors, very very few of them actually have their own domain."

"For a Star traveller level warrior to have their own domain? It's basically dumb luck, striking the 1st prize in lottery! Earth already had Hong, and now even Thunder God too? From a theoretical standpoint, this is...is basically one out of trillions!!!" Babata couldn't help but shout out.

Luo Feng thought for awhile, Babata's reaction did have its logic.

One galaxy usually only produces one Universe existence, and they didn't necessarily have their own domain. The probability of a Star traveller warrior to have his own domain was basically impossible, and yet earth had two!

“That’s good too.” Babata nodded, “This Thunder God having his own domain, if he and Hong teamed up, with an ultimate life sacrificing attack, they do indeed have some hope.”

“There’s hope?” Luo Feng was surprised after hearing those 2 words from Babata.

“Oh, Luo Feng, you haven’t muddled around in the universe before, you don’t know how hard it is to acquire one’s own domain. If Hong and Thunder God were to be discovered in the universe, they would either be killed by others who are jealous, or invited to join some big organization. Star travellers who have their own domains, are definitely labeled as geniuses.”

“And warriors with their own domains, once they risk it all!”

“Will be very scary, because they can use their genes and cells, body power, spirit and mental strength, consciousness all joined together. They can resonate with the space in the universe.” Babata explained, “and when they risk it all, their souls will burn. This combination of powers causes their strength to rise to a terrifying level.”

“Even when they don’t risk it all, Star traveller warriors with their own domains, are naturally invincible in their own class.”

“The moment they risk it all, one’s a Star traveller level 7 while the other’s a Star traveller level 8. I believe that Hong’s domain, is far more vast and deep, maybe even reaching the 2nd level of

domain already. When they both immolate their souls and battle to the death, it'll be hard to say." Babata sighed incessantly, "Two incredible geniuses...if they were exposed to the rest of the universe, they wouldn't even have to risk their lives."

Ming Yue district grass patch, Luo Feng watched as ship after ship left.

"Hong, Thunder God, you must succeed!" Luo Feng muttered quietly.

"Howl..."

"Rumble..."

A rumble from the east side, explosion, monsters' roaring sounds travelled over, fires ablaze. From early in the afternoon, the sea creatures had already begun their battle with the Jiang Nan headquarter city! However, with humanity's up to ten years of preparation, they could definitely withstand their attacks for at least quite awhile.

"Creak!" Luo Feng pushed opened the door and walked into the living room.

His entire family was in the living room.

"Bro, what's the matter?" Luo Hua stood up and asked.

“Is the swallowing monster dead?” Xu Xin, who was originally sitting in the sofa stood up, nervously looking hopefully at Luo Feng. The 7 people within the living room were all looking at Luo Feng, Luo Feng had earlier disclosed that they were attacking the devouring monster today, and that there was a high guarantee of killing it.

“No.” Luo Feng shook his head.

“However, there’s still hope.” Luo Feng said softly, “There’s definitely still hope.”

Finishing, Luo Feng went upstairs immediately.

The seven in the living room looked at each other, Gong Xin Lan said softly, “The stress on Little Feng must be huge, Xu Xin, go keep him company.”

“Ok.” Xu Xin followed the staircase up.

Inside the 2nd floor’s bedroom.

Luo Feng lay on the bed, looking at the ceiling.

“Babata, is there any other way to kill the swallowing monster?” Luo Feng asked.

“No, even the b6 laser cannon has failed and been destroyed, there’s no other way. You can only rely on the 2 Star traveller domain warrior genius to fight it out.” Babata said, “When they immolate their souls, there’s a chance.”

“Babata.”

Luo feng asked, “My hybrid copper essence shard, is incomparably sharp. If either Hong or Thunder God uses it, wouldn’t it be extremely powerful? They might even be able to kill the golden horned beast.”

“No, one of them uses a spear, while their other a blade.” Babata said surely, “Only when using a gun and saber, can they maximize the power of their domains. This hybrid copper essence shard, is only a shard, how will the 2 fighters use it? Only you as a spirit reader can use it.”

Luo Feng was panicking inside.

The feeling of waiting for humanity’s extinction, was painful. He felt extremely helpless.

“Don’t worry, I’m in the midst of building a spear and a blade.” Babata said, Hong and Thunder God’s weapons—— spear and blade, while they may be considered as godly weapons here on earth, in the universe, they are simply too weak. I’m using some metal materials from the ship to meld a couple of weapons, be it sharpness or sturdiness, they’ll definitely exceed what Hong and Thunder God have now.”

“Good.”

Luo Feng suddenly heard footsteps outside, Xu Xin opened the door and walked in.

“You must be very tired?” Xu Xin sat on the bed, gently massaging Luo Feng’s shoulders.

“I’m ok.” Luo Feng sniffed the fragrant perfume from Xu Xin’s body and couldn’t help but to extend his hand and pull her over to hug her.

Xu Xin moved closer to Luo Feng, placing her head on his chest, saying softly, “Luo Feng, there’s something I originally wanted to tell you after the disaster had passed, however, I’m afraid that if I don’t say it now, I’ll never get the chance to say it.”

“What is it?” Luo Feng asked curiously.

“I’m, I’m pregnant.” Xu Xin said softly.

Her voice was soft, yet it resounded like thunder within Luo Feng’s ears.

Hu!

Luo Feng immediately sat upright, looking shocked at Xu Xin,

“You, you are saying…”

“Yes.” Xu Xin nodded.

“Haha, let me check, oh, hehe, indeed, it’s a pair of twins, both boys. Haha…” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

“Pregnant? This, this…” Luo Feng’s eyes opened wide.

He was extremely happy and yet extremely worried.

What’s up with this!

Indeed, during the winter holiday before he stayed with Xu Xin, and they began discussing marriage. When a man and woman live together, things were bound to happen naturally. If not for the golden horned beast, he would have been elated after hearing such news. However, now…

Humanity and it’s society was facing extinction, yet Xu Xin was pregnant, and with twins!

“Are you not happy?” Xu Xin was startled.

“No, it’s not like that, I’m very happy, just very troubled.” Luo Feng’s worries, without any preparation, just increased ten fold.

Damn!

When he was with Xu Xin before, they never thought of protection, pregnancy was supposed to be a good thing since they were about to get married. Who would have known now...

If they didn't kill the golden horned beast, all of humanity was definitely going to die.

Even if he had the power to protect his wife and children, how could he let them live such a lonely life? And Luo Feng was very clear...travelling in the universe without reaching the star traveller level would mean certain death!

"Luo Feng, what are you thinking?" Xu Xin raised her hand and grabbed his arm.

"Nothing."

Luo Feng gently hugged Xu Xin, lowered his head, resting on her abdomen. This made her laugh: "It's still too early, you can't hear anything."

"I can hear it."

Luo Feng thought about it, this was the passing on of bloodlines. Hong's earlier speech about giving his children a chance of survival didn't resonate much with Luo Feng, but now...it did! It was a very peculiar feeling!

“Children, I don’t know whether I’ll get the chance to see your mom give birth to you. However, I promise, you will have a beautiful childhood, be able to go to school, practice martial arts…I won’t allow you to live in fear, forever living a life without hope. I promise! I promise with my life!”

January 16, Afternoon, there was some fog.

Luo Feng stepped on the soaring shuttle and arrived at Hong Ning base.

There was no pedestrians to be seen at Hong Ning headquarter city, only large numbers of military personnel swiftly advancing. Luo Feng landed on that interstellar transport ship’s entrance.

“Investigator Luo.”

The guard at the entrance bowed respectfully.

Luo Feng walked directly in, swiftly heading towards the training room where Hong and Thunder God were. Along the pathways, he met two people, one guy and one girl, both youths. The girl’s facial features were similar to Hong’s. Luo Feng had read information about Hong’s son and daughter before.

“Investigator Luo.” The two youths bowed.

“You two are the Head’s children?” Luo Feng asked, while they seemed young, these 2 youths were actually older than Luo Feng, only because of the difference in power, they seemed younger.

“Yes.”

The two youths’ eyes were red, it was obvious they had been crying.

“At this point in time, I won’t meet the Head. You two can pass these two weapons to the Head and Thunder God. Also, this body armor, give it to Thunder God.” Luo Feng said, passing the bag he was wearing over to them, within it was the sharp weapons Babata had rushed out the night before. Along with it was the tight armor the owner of the black dragon mountain x81 left behind when he died.

Hong had the cloud contact vine to protect his entire body, so he didn’t need it. Giving it to Thunder God naturally made more sense.

“This…” The two youths were shocked.

“The Head hardly ever looks after you two however, your father is very great and noble. Truly.” Luo Feng said before turning and leaving.

Chapter 30 – To Joke Together

Within the training room.

Hong was dressed in black, grabbing onto a completely black speak. And dressed in white was Thunder God, he too was examining a pure black blade.

“Good weapons.” Hong’s eyes lit up.

“The blade’s sturdiness, center, feels extremely comfortable to wield. It’s extremely compatible with my skills.” Thunder God couldn’t help but praise it, “And, it’s very sharp.” With an easy movement, just waving the blade around gave the feeling of it slicing through the air.

Hong laughed as he looked at Thunder God, “That armor is a treasure, you’ve struck gold.”

“Haha, looks like it wasn’t just us who earned some rewards from the ruins, this Luo Feng has gotten some too.” Thunder God couldn’t help but praise, “Did he find an armory in the ruins? Otherwise, how else could he have found weapons so compatible for us, and of such quality too.”

Hong and Thunder God both had their own domains.

They were of an extremely high level, even though they had just received the weapons, they just required a short movement and

feel of it before being able to maximize its full potential and power.

"Master."

A low voice sounded, "The swallowing monster has just appeared at America, it's roaming about the wilderness and it just devoured a broken down shipyard, swallowing many corroded steamers. It appeared for just 2 minutes and 18 seconds before flying back into the ocean."

Hong and Thunder God's expressions changed.

Last night, the swallowing monster appeared twice in a row, including this morning, that made it three times.

Every time it appeared it would come out for a very short time, devour a large amount of metal before flying back.

"It has become extremely cautious." Hong's voice was cold, "Obviously the laser from before has made it more careful. However, from last night till now, it actually come out three times to feed. It definitely has suffered heavy damage and requires ingesting large amounts of metal to regain its strength."

"Right, we cannot wait any longer." Thunder God said seriously.

"Yes." Hong nodded.

They were originally thinking of taking the chance when the swallowing monster comes out from the ocean to attack and kill it. They didn't expect the time it spent outside to be so short and retreating immediately!

"We'll fly above the sea following its life force and trace it. The moment it appears..." Thunder God's gaze grew sharp.

"Let's go." Hong was even more frank.

They were clear...

The swallowing monster now was one that was still recovering, the moment they wasted this chance, when the swallowing monster had regained its full strength, their chances would be even slimmer then!

Yang Zhou City outside walls.

Jiang Nan headquarter city was separated into the main district and the eight great citadels, these eight cities surrounded the main city! That's why after the battles started, the real fights were in the eight great cities, and the main district was right inside and very safe. Unless it got attacked directly by the swallowing monster, it would normally be untouched.

"Xiu, xiu, xiu!"

Knives were dancing, flying past the metal walls into the

spacious river, this river was filled with hundreds of millions of monsters following the course from the Yangtze river, digging their way through here. The river was 12 km long and 60m wide. Countless sea creatures swam along the course, killing in towards Yang Zhou city, not afraid of death at all.

"Retreating, they are retreating." The soldiers on the wall shouted excitedly.

"The number of monsters killed are simply too many, the entire river has been clogged. The creatures behind can't even get past, along with the horde leaders in front, they were all killed in an instant by Luo Feng. They couldn't do anything but retreat and regroup." Li Da Wei surveyed the scene below, "Hm, we have about two hours of time to rest."

Luo Feng surveyed the bodies that clogged up the entire river, shaking his head.

There were just too many monsters!

Everyday, countless more sea creatures were born, can humanity even keep up? They could resist for a short time, however as time passed, they would be worn down and the situation would get worse!

The worst thing was...the swallowing monster destroying the base's iron walls!

Once those were gone, the walls built over tens of years for protection, the sea creatures could directly enter and kill the populace...once that happened, it was over. The most pressing issue was to first kill the swallowing monster.

“Hm?” Luo Feng looked at his tactical communications watch, it was the Dojo of Limits and Thunder Dojo’s information sources sending out news.

The two great heads!

Hong and Thunder God had left and headed towards the Pacific ocean to battle the swallowing monster!

Li Da Wei beside him also lowered his head to look at his watch communicator.

“Has it begun?” Li Da Wei’s face had a hint of anxiety.

“Commanding officer Li, I’ll return first. If there’s any trouble, inform me.” Luo Feng said before swiftly flying off.

Luo Feng flew high above Yang Zhou city, he clearly saw that several huge screens within the streets had already switched to the scene above the Pacific ocean. And on the screens, a man dressed in black and another bald man in a white robe, flying side by side.

Luo Feng felt his heart sink.

“Humanity’s last hope?” Luo Feng thought, as to the reason for broadcasting this to the Dojo of Limits, the Thunder Dojo, and to the rest of the world, Luo Feng was extremely clear! After all, the two leaders of the biggest dojos were about to fight to the death for mankind and they had a high chance of losing. Were they supposed to just let their leaders sacrifice themselves in silence and secrecy?

For the rest of the world, this time, also spurred on humanity’s fighting spirit.

Should Hong and Thunder God succeed, it would of course be a joyous occasion.

Should they fail, they would still stir up humanity’s determination and fighting spirit.

Ming Yue district, as a small district of the Dojo of Limits, all the residents had already begun gathering and heading towards the dojo.

Within the Dojo of Limits’ biggest training hall, approximately 1000 people had gathered, the huge walls at the side had big screens on them, projectors projecting the footage on them. It was the pacific ocean...

“At this time, Hong and Thunder God, the two strongest warriors to date on Earth, are flying side by side above the pacific ocean, their target is the sea creatures’ strongest existence...the swallowing monster!” From the side came a voice explaining the

scene and this particular battle, this pivotal battle, was being broadcasted to the entire world.

This included the various countries' leaders who were watching nervously.

Humanity's two strongest warriors! They were risking it all!

"Investigator Luo, just how powerful is the swallowing monster? The two heads will definitely win." A youth said softly from behind Luo feng.

Luo Feng glanced at the youth, he was a new fighter, one who had just moved to Ming Yue not long ago. Looking at this youth, Luo Feng felt like he was staring straight to when he had just moved from his rented apartment to Ming Yue district some time ago.

"Definitely, they will win." Luo Feng said firmly.

With almost 1000 people within the training room, everyone raised their heads to look at the screens. As time was short, the dojo didn't have the capability to gather so many chairs, especially at such a time, no one could have prepared for this.

Luo Feng's family was present too. Luo Feng held onto Xu Xin's hand, quietly watching the screen.

At that time!

The entire world was watching two of humanity's strongest fighters to date, one in black while another in white, the two were like legendary gods flying in mid air! Indeed, it was only afternoon in Hua Xia, but for Hong and Thunder God who were way out in the ocean, the sky was already dark.

"Haha, Brother Hong, how many people do you think are watching us two right now." Thunder God grinned and laughed.

"More than six billion I guess." Hong laughed and glanced at him, "At a time like this, is there a need for such things?"

"Heck, can't one be proud even before one's death?" Thunder God was smiling.

"That mischievous face, decades of that mischievous face, even at a time like this, it's still the same." Hong smiled as he said that. At that time, their souls felt a never before sense of emptiness, they had already disregarded their imminent deaths, thrown everything else away from their mind, their target was only one...

To kill the swallowing monster!

Under such circumstances, the two however felt totally at ease! Every cell in their bodies were almost boiling, all ready to battle.

"Master, the swallowing monster is swiftly swimming upwards, it'll fly out from the surface very soon." A voice resounded in

Hong's mind.

A calculating AI system...

Actually, the number of AI systems Hong had acquired were numerous, like the construction of the wargod palace's virtual space, like the speaking voice within the Dojo of Limits that always spoke in that soft voice. Hong could take out so many treasures to exchange, so his earnings must have been much more than that. After all, he was the Earth's strongest, most of the treasures from the ruins earlier were taken by him alone.

Like back when Luo Feng was attending the investigators' ball, Hong just flipped his hand and the investigator's scroll appeared, this was because he had a space storage compartment, just like Luo Feng.

With regards to the quality of treasures, Luo Feng had acquired more than him.

However when it came to quantity, Hong had much more than Luo Feng.

"Flying out of the surface?" Hong's eyes it up.

"Go, over there." Hong shouted.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

One black and one white, two beams of light swiftly headed southwest.

In the dark night, the winds howled, the deep ocean was madly stirring and waves crashed against the surface, wave after wave tens of meters high formed.

Rumble!

A terrifying creature fiercely rushed out from the ocean, with enormous scaled wings, four claws, a powerful tail, and that golden horn that seemed to pierce the skies! However the golden engravings on the horn seemed to have dimmed a little from before. Yet, it's dark golden pupils seemed even more crazy and terrifying!

It was an oppressive rage kind of madness!

It was regaining its strength gradually, once its strength was sufficient, it would definitely take revenge, savagely!

"Roar!"

The golden horned beast immediately flew out of the surface of the ocean. About 10km out, it suddenly stopped, slightly moving it's head, the dark golden pupils seemed to be able to see a 100km out, noticing the two energies ahead! However, these weak and small energies actually dared to challenge it, this enraged the

golden horned beast even more.

Its pure and elite bloodline made it extremely proud and arrogant!

Looking to the vast universe, it was the leading and most elite bloodline. On such a small and weak planet, the puny humans actually dared to challenge it?

“Rumble!”

The scaled wings started to fan, within an instant, it became a beam of light headed straight towards Hong and Thunder God!

The entire world held its breath at that moment.

Within the training room of the Dojo of Limits in Ming Yue district, close to 1000 people were nervously watching the screen. On the screen, above the deep ocean, the enormous body of the swallowing monster was less than a 1000m from Hong and Thunder God. “Rumble! Rumble!” Hong and Thunder God’s entire bodies emitted a heart palpitating light.

In an instant, they had already began their soul immolation!

The battle had started within an instant!

“Hong, Thunder God, it’s all up to you.” Luo Feng held on to Xu

Xin’s hand, looked at Xu Xin’s stomach, and back up at the screen.

Chapter 31 – Indiscriminate Destruction

Night.

The deep pitch black ocean was roaring, the winds were howling, and all was dark. And above the ocean, humanity's greatest and most terrifying foe, the swallowing monster, was engaged in battle with humanity's two greatest warriors Hong and Thunder God!

Rumble! Rumble!

Within an instant, Hong and Thunder God had already begun to use the most powerful technique available to fighters with domains! If they didn't have their own domains, they would have no way to utilize such a skill!

Hong's entire body, including that spear, within an instant, was enshrouded in a black light.

Thunder God was enshrouded in a green snake-like light!

"Haha." Thunder god laughed loudly.

"Haha." Hong also laughed.

Xiu! Xiu!

The two immediately became two beams of light, charging

straight at the swallowing monster from different directions. The swallowing monster was floating in mid air, its dark pupils coldly glaring at the two humans rushing at it...from its point of view, these two humans were nothing but ants, two ants that were slightly stronger than the countless others!

Yang Zhou, within the Dojo of Limits training room.

Luo Feng's was beside his family, watching the screen nervously.

"They are giving it their all, Luo Feng, with Hong and Thunder God giving it their all, they've already begun their soul immolation! Their battle will last at most one minute. Within a minute, if the swallowing monster hasn't been killed, the two of them will not be able to resist." Babata's voice resounded in Luo Feng's head.

Luo Feng's heart was in a frenzy, "Soul immolation, is it similar to the Yun Mo Planet's spirit reader's soul immolation?"

Within the Yun Mo Planet's various books and manuals, there were many with regards to the basics. However, in the <Mixed> manual, there were also several secret techniques, for example, <Soul imprint>, <Tower of the Void> and others. Every one of them were profound and deep, naturally, there were skills regarding the soul immolation!

"It's definitely different, in skill level wise, the Yun Mo Planet's version is much higher! However...while the skill level is higher, its power cannot be compared to those two." Babata said, "What

they are utilizing now, is an ultimate move only fighters with domains can use! Spirit, raw power, strength, willpower have all come together through the universe, exploding at an immense level of power. It's extremely scary, if they can kill the enemy in a short amount of time, they can still live."

However, if the swallowing monster doesn't die, then they'll die." Babata said.

"Have the liquid silver guards reached there yet" Luo Feng asked.

Back then at archeological ruin #12, Luo Feng had acquired three powerless liquid silver guards, however through Babata's repair and power replenishing, they can now be used again.

"Almost! However, Luo Feng, the liquid silver guards are bodyguards. The two of them have gone on a suicide mission, so even the liquid silver guards won't have the ability to help." Babata said helplessly.

"We can only do all we can and resign to fate!" Luo Feng stared at the screen.

While the conversation with Babata seemed long, in truth, since it was just thoughts bouncing back and forth, it only took an instant. And within that short time!

The battle on the screen had already reached its climax!

It could be deemed as a star level battle, one that the ordinary folk couldn't see clearly with the naked eye. They could only watch the replays on the side, the slowed down versions and listen to the explanations.

And Luo Feng...

Was the only person in the entire training hall capable of watching the battle clearly.

"Not good, the ultimate devouring skill." Luo Feng's expression changed.

.....

The sky above the Pacific ocean.

The golden horned beast's tail had become a blur, quickly swishing past space and whipping towards Hong and Thunder God. A boom sound was heard, the golden horned beast felt an immense power from the enemies' spear, diminishing the power in its tail.

"Howl!!!"

The golden horned beast raised it's head and let out an ear piercing howl, it...was enraged!

It had originally thought these two were just ants that were a little stronger, that it only required it's normal strength to easily squash them. However after engaging, it realized...these two tiny humans had powers that were way more shocking. More so than what it's bloodline memories and knowledge had informed it about the star traveller humans.

Also, sword skills, spear skills were way more shocking! Every slash, every shot seemed to be made by heaven, making it unable to predict at all!

It could be said...

This golden horned beast which had only been born for a year, with its long life ahead, was comparable to a human infant who had just been born and was still drinking milk. Even though its bloodline was elite, its bloodline memories vast and huge, but besides its natural techniques, the other knowledge and memories all had to be learned!

One year's time, how's that enough?

Theoretically speaking, even compared to Luo Feng, it was way behind! Compared to Hong and Thunder God who have stepped into the world of domains, the difference was as much as hundreds of thousands of miles.

The two warriors who were using the soul immolation, versus the golden horned beast which had suffered heavy injuries, the difference wasn't really that big.

“Roar!”

The golden horned beast opened its mouth!

“Not good!”

“Careful!”

Hong and Thunder God’s expressions changed, the entire world watched through the satellite this scene, the fighters and warriors’ expressions all changed, everyone had seen the golden horned beast’s unique ability before, devouring.

“Rumble.”

Hong and Thunder God followed their battle plan from before, immediately heading in the same direction and flying! The two actually stuck together! The golden horned beast’s pupils surveyed these two little dots, enraged more so than before, these two unworthy little humans were basically asking to be killed. It thought it could first swallow one at a time, since they were together, it could just swallow both!!!

“Chi chi…”

The formless space spread out to a few hundred meters around, totally covering the Hong and Thunder God in the area.

“Brother Hong.” Thunder God’s expression slightly changed.

“Hmph.”

With a wave of his hand, Hong made a large amount of black metal remains appear between himself and the swallowing monster! It was so densely packed there didn’t seem to be any space at all between. If it was based on mass, the huge amount of metal remains seemed even bigger than the swallowing monster by a little!

180m long, 120m wide, 100m tall, that was an estimate of the amount.

The huge amount of metal remains were densely packed together.

One must know that the black dragon mountain x81 ship that Luo Feng obtained was only 100m big. And while the ship’s metal may have been a lot, there were large amounts of space within, like the big hall, the cabin, the control room etc! This meant that the battleship, the transport ships and others were all just shells! They couldn’t possible be totally made out of metal.

However...

What appeared was a densely packed metal remains form of a plaything.

“We let you swallow, all you want!!! If you can’t take it after swallowing a few military bases, these are ancient ruin ship remains that are probably way higher quality than the metal on the whole of earth! In fact, with so much metal, it’s even enough to build ten scout ships. Let’s see if you can swallow it all.” Hong’s eyes were cold as he thought to himself.

Common sense…

It was similar to man eating something, once he/she’s eaten too much, they’d be overstuffed.

“I’ll add on more for you.” Hong’s gaze was cold, swiftly waving his hand!

Hua!

Another set of densely packed long metals!

“Come on, this were all from me collecting from the various countries, there’s a total of 18 hydrogen bombs! There are other atomic bombs used to detonate the hydrogen bombs.” Hong just took out the hydrogen bombs.

“Roar!”

The golden horned beast was so enraged it stopped it’s devouring

and let out a roar!

The last time, the 1.5 hundred million ton hydrogen bomb and its power, the beast still remembered clearly. Now another 18 bombs? While their size was smaller, the golden horned beast didn't dare randomly swallow! And...that 180m long, 120m wide and 100m tall, made totally of metal remains, it too didn't dare to swallow!

Why did it have to use a few trips to ingest metal, and not just once and just ingesting more instead?

That was because it's 'stomach' had a limit!

Humans eating too much will get bloated!

That was the logic it didn't dare to eat too much! After all these metals, just one piece was equivalent to earth's normal metals 100 of the same size a piece. Eating so much, it's internal world would be so bloated it would collapse, once the internal world collapses, it too would die.

"Roar!!!"

It let out an enraged roar, the extremely angry golden horned beast's horn on its forehead suddenly started glowing through the golden engravings, its pupils too changed to a bright golden color! The gold light swiftly followed through its neck, back and all the way to its front claws, the sharp claws that it used to attack directly!

Peng!

The huge amount of metal remains was struck till it flew all over, those sharp claws immediately attacked past the metal to where Hong and Thunder God were. However...the moment those huge claws dispersed the large amount of metal, a black wave immediately rushed over, its speed shocking!

“Chi!”

A very soft sound, just like one’s hair catching on fire, exactly like how the swallowing monster was hit by the b6 laser earlier!

“Chi!”

The black wave brushed past the claws and crashed straight into the golden horned beast’s abdomen! Its incomparably strong scales were actually drilled into, leaving a hole!

“Brother Hong!!!”

A mournful sound resounded loudly in the sky!

A flash of lightning madly rushed towards that cavity!

“Roar!” Feeling the black clothed man actually drilling into it’s body, the enraged golden horned beast began clawing towards the

lightning covered bald white clothed man, “Chi chi…” the powerful air waves rushed towards the white clothed bald man, chi…fresh blood was spurting everywhere, the white clothed man’s waist down had been sliced into minced meat, only his upper half was fine only because of the fitting armor Luo Feng had given him.

Xiu!

He didn’t back down, even with the bottom half of his body was in pieces, he still had to rush in, he was clear on their plan, Hong would drill into the golden horned beast and the skill price he had to pay for using such a skill was terrifying. Their plan from the beginning had only been one…to kill the golden horned beast, the best way was to enter its body.

“All the way, regardless of death, we still have to kill it!!!”

There was half a white human silhouette.

Both eyes flushed red, madness beyond anything seen before!

Lighting was wrapping itself about the lower half of the white man silhouette, he pierced directly straight into the cavity!

“Roar!!!” The golden horned beast roared angrily, however those two darned humans had already entered into its flesh and body!

……

The entire world had gone silent.

Luo Feng stared at the screen only to see an extremely angry golden horned beast, while the right side of the screen was showing replays and slowed down footage.

In the replay...

Hong's skin was covered in blood, almost like a mad god, piercing through the golden horned beast's scales and into its body.

Thunder God, with only half of his body left, was madly rushing into its body, risking it all to kill the golden horned beast!

Chapter 32 – The Fall

Silence.

When Hong and Thunder God entered the body of the swallowing beast, everybody's hearts were hanging. However, nobody could see what was going on within the swallowing beast's body!

"Babata, can Hong and Thunder God win?" Luo Feng was also extremely nervous.

"Don't worry. Hong and Thunder God are the two genius fighters of earth and are extremely intelligent and decisive! To deal with the 'swallowing' move, Hong brought out so much metal debris. He was probably worried that the golden horned beast would actually be able to swallow all of that, so he even brought a bunch of hydrogen bombs! This made sure—— that the golden horned beast wouldn't devour all of that"

"And Hong used that chance to prepare his ultimate move! Clearly, his ultimate move needed time to prepare"

"When the enraged golden horned beast swiped at the metal debris with its claws, Hong's ultimate move unleashed right on time! The tricks were all connected, how magnificent" reminisced Babata, "Luo Feng, don't worry. Seeing their performance from beginning to end, the two of them have clearly made sufficient preparations! Now that they have entered the golden horned beast, the golden horned beast isn't able to attack with its claws.

Therefore, their chances of success have raised to around 50% or 60%.

How can Luo Feng not worry just from Babata's words?

He couldn't stop worrying!

Luo Feng continued to stare at the screen.

"The golden horned beast is still the holder of one of the most supreme bloodlines out of the space beasts, and it actually let Hong and Thunder God have a chance to pierce its scales and enter its body. It's just..... so naive. Its battle capabilities are way too low." Babata couldn't help but to say, "Looking at its previous battles, it only relied on brute force."

Indeed, with the golden horned beast's strength, talent, etc. as long as it fought more intelligently or skillfully, it wouldn't have ended up like this.

"If it was even more powerful, then we would have even less hope" Luo Feng was a bit bitter.

"I didn't mean it like that. I'm just saying that this golden horned beast is probably very, very young. It just stepped into its adult stage of growth. Maybe it has no experience at all because it's too young. Its methods of attacks are so simple and crude." explained Babata.

It was born with its body and talent.

But experience, skill, maturity, cunning, etc. need to be cultivated. Even Earth's genius Einstein and the wise Sun Wu from the Warring States period were 'naive' when they were babies. If you allow this golden horned beast to grow for 10,000 or 100,000 years, it will become absolutely terrifying.

But now?

It's still small! And this young, small golden horned beast almost caused humanity on Earth to go extinct.

In the sky above the Pacific Ocean.

"WU——"

"WU!!!"

The golden horned beast let out cries of pain. Chichi~~ Golden light spread out on the surface of its scales and then seeped into its body. It wanted to kill those two abominable humans in its body.

Clearly.

Since the battlefield is inside the golden horned beast's body, the golden lights let out by the golden horned beast weren't too destructive. Otherwise, it would be killing itself.

“BOOM~~”

The entire body of the golden horned beast shook. Its dark golden eyes held a bit of anger and pain in them. Fresh, red blood seeped out of its mouth.

“BOOM~~”

This peculiar trembling caused the golden horned beast to raise its head and roar in pain. Droplets of red blood started to seep out of the slits between the stacked scales all over its body.

“BOOM!” “BOOM!” “BOOM!”

While it roared in pain, huge amounts of droplets of blood started seeping out of the scales on the surface of the golden horned beast’s body. After around 10 seconds, its entire body was enveloped in a layer of blood. At first, it started to roar in pain. But as time went on, its roars continuously became softer. In the end, it no longer gave off any sounds. Suddenly——

Its dark golden eyes started to become dim. Its gigantic scaled wings sank, and its gigantic body actually started to powerlessly fall downwards!

In China, on the displays on the streets, televisions in homes, and inside military camps.....

“Its life force is weakening!”

“The swallowing beast’s powerful life force is swiftly lowering! It only has its original 80%, 70%, 60%, 50%, 40%, 30%.....” an extremely excited voice rang around every part of China. Not only China, every other location on earth was in a state of extreme excitement.

“We won!”

“Won!”

“Victory!”

Voices and even cries filled with excitement rang up. Everybody on earth around every location on earth went into an uproar! In this moment, no matter male, female, old, young, no matter what race or which country, every single person from every single country cheered in happiness.

In Yang Zhou city’s Limit Hall’s training hall, uproar!

Everybody was yelling excitedly.

“Success! Its life force is disappearing!” Luo Feng looked at the falling golden horned beast’s corpse that was covered in fresh blood with excitement.

It actually died!

This horrifying monster that caused humans to despair, is finally dead! Holy! Luo Feng could barely believe such happiness has arrived.

“What about Hong and Thunder God?” Luo Feng looked at the display carefully.

The broadcaster’s voice rang: “Everybody on earth, we must bring you a piece of saddening news. Right now, we cannot detect any sort of life force at all. Which is to say..... even though the swallowing beast is dead, the two of our most powerful fighters on earth, the heads ‘Hong’ and ‘Thunder God’, have sacrificed themselves! They are heroes, heroes who have saved the entire world!”

Silence.

The training hall settled down really quickly.

“Maybe not” Babata’s voice ranged in Luo Feng’s mind, “Hong and Thunder God might not have died”

“Maybe not? I thought they can’t detect their life force anymore?” a sliver of excitement and expectation raised in Luo Feng’s heart.

He didn’t want Hong and Thunder God to die like this either.

“No, your planet’s life force detectors were found in the ruins of spaceships! These detectors actually have an effective limit. When one’s life force lowers to a certain point, the life force detector isn’t able to detect it anymore. And the detectors themselves aren’t that good. It probably can’t detect any life force below the beginner student level fighter” explained Babata.

“NO!”

Shocked voices rang in the training hall, “The, the swallowing beast stopped”

Luo Feng froze, Xu Xin beside him froze, everyone froze.

Luo Feng looked over. The golden horned beast that was originally falling powerlessly on the display has indeed stopped its fall. It just hovered there. And the screen displayed..... that the golden horned beast is regaining its life force.

“The life force of the swallowing beast is becoming more powerful!” the broadcaster was full of shock.

Everyone was flabbergasted.

“What, what.....” Luo Feng widened his eyes in disbelief.

Why is it so hard to kill?

They sacrificed so much! WHY WON'T THIS SWALLOWING BEAST DIE!!!

The golden horned beast hovered in midair, its life force continuously strengthening, strengthening..... when it regained 10% of its strength, it continued to rise, 20%, all the way until 30%! When its life force raised to 30% of its original level, it stopped increasing.

.....

Countless people on earth despaired! Countless people cried without making a sound! Countless people fell to their knees in pain!

Holy!

In the sky above the Pacific Ocean.

The golden horned beast slowly opened its eyes. Its dark golden eyes were a bit powerless..... it has never been so close to death before! This time was even worse than the experience with the B6 grade laser cannon.

"wu" it roared powerlessly.

The golden horned beast looked towards its abdomen.

What was seen was a black clothed man and a white clothed man drenched in blood falling out of the hole in its abdomen. After that, they directly fell down towards the ocean below. The golden horned beast looked towards these two people..... these two seemingly insignificant humans caused it to approach death like never before. After this experience, it understood one thing!

You need to seriously exert your full force even against the weakest of foes!

“hu” the golden horned beast swiped with its claws!

HUA!

On the surface of the Pacific ocean stood a silverish white human. It started expanding ferociously right after appearing! From around two meters, it instantly expanded to a height of 200 meters!

A 200 meter tall silverish white giant! It was about as big as the golden horned beast!

“wu!” the golden horned beast was shocked as it looked at the silverish white giant below it.

The surface of the silverish white giant’s body seemed to have a flowing silverish white liquid on it. And now, it directly extended its gigantic palm between the swallowing beast and the two

fighters Hong and Thunder God!

“PUCHI!” the claw smashed into the palm, which actually started to depress from the impact. But when the golden horned beast retracted its claw, the depression in the palm automatically repaired itself.

When the silverish white giant was blocking the golden horned beast, another silver man extended his hands and caught both Hong and Thunder God, and then swiftly started escaping towards the distance.

There were two liquid silver guards in total!

Luo Feng told Babata to arrange them to come over here in advance. If they have a chance, then save Hong and Thunder God!

“wu!”

How could the enraged golden horned beast watch those two abominable humans be taken away? It spread out its wings and went around the liquid silver guard that was blocking it as fast as lightning. It chased towards the other one..... in terms of speed, the golden horned beast was indeed fast. The liquid silver guard was moving at a little over 10,000 m/s.

The swallowing beast quickly caught up!

“Hu!” the liquid silver guard that was being chased ferociously

expanded and transformed into a gigantic silver giant. In a moment, it wrapped around the swallowing beast.

The other liquid silver guard in the back swiftly picked up Hong and Thunder God and started running again!

Only after a while was the swallowing beast able to get out.

“wu!” the swallowing beast looked at the liquid silver guard that has contracted back into the size of a normal human with rage. Even though this weird thing isn’t as fast as the swallowing beast, and its attacks aren’t as powerful as the black clothed man and the white clothed man, its only advantage lies within—— its liquid-like body that can swiftly expand and contract. It could wrap around people like taffy.

The liquid silver guards could mitigate the swallowing beast’s most powerful attacks.

The swallowing beast understood.....

That it actually might not have a chance of stealing those two human bodies with these two liquid silver guards working together.

“wu!”

The swallowing beast, which is currently extremely damaged and weakened, let out a roar of anger and then directly flew into the

ocean.

.....

Ming-Yue sector, hallway outside of Limit Hall's training room, Luo Feng was holding his phone.

Luo Feng's face was purple from anger.

"Yes, I sent them. There's no use, the liquid silver guards can only stall people and act like a bodyguard. They can't kill the swallowing beast" Luo Feng hung up his call with Jia Yi. His heart was filled with an unimaginable amount of sorrow. Other people were shocked at the appearance of the two liquid silver guards and even started to get a little hopeful.

But Luo Feng was clear.

The liquid silver guards were high tech products in the universe and their function was extremely clear: bodyguarding.

"What should we do, what should we do, just what should we do? Babata, tell me, what should we do?" Luo Feng was about to go insane. He closed his eyes in pain, and a bit of glistening could be seen in the corner of his eye.

Chapter 33 – Earth's Number One Spirit Reader

Earth's Number One Spirit Reader

China, northeastern headquarter city

"Dad!"

A young beautiful lady was watching the broadcast on the screen, groaning and crying in pain, suddenly standing straight up, rushing into her own study. A few men and children in the same room watching the scene t oo were shocked in disbelief.

Within the study room.

The young lady quickly turned on her computer, entering into her emails and opening the latest and newest one. That particular email had a video attached, the lady bit her lip, trembling as she gently clicked the mouse once.

Beep.

A video opened, the scene that appeared was a bald dressed in white Thunder God.

"Little Lei." Thunder God didn't have the same mischievous smile, it was one of tenderness, "We haven't seen each other in

almost 16 years."

"I still remember back then, the first time I brought you to the amusement park, the first time teaching you martial arts, the first time I scolded you, the first time I hit you." Thunder God shook his head and smiled, "I know you hate me, however, if given a choice all over again, I would still choose to kill that useless fellow."

"I also know you won't be able to forgive me."

"Back then when your mum left you to me, I made a promise to let you live a life of happiness, not to ever let you go through any difficulties or hardship. I didn't expect things to turn out this way."

"I won't say anymore."

"In a bit, I'll be heading out with Hong. This time, I'm afraid it'll be difficult to come back alive. So I thought about it and decided to send you this email!" Thunder God wiped his shiny bald head, "Little Lei, don't worry, I, your father, will definitely kill that swallowing monster."

"I told you before, I won't let you suffer any hardship, this is a promise I made to your mum, and also one I made to you."

"Love always, your father!"

On the screen, Thunder God smiled and the video ended.

“Sob…Sob…” The young lady lay flat on the desk and cried, her tears non stop.

Only when one has lost something will he/she feel the pain.

“Dad, dad, dad, come back, come back. I’m wrong, I’m wrong.” The young lady kept crying, she cried till her voice went hoarse, memories flashing in her mind, her mother died young, she was brought up single-handedly by Thunder God, he had pampered her a lot with incomparable love.

The only thing was she was only 16, because of her first relationship, Thunder God had actually killed her boyfriend. Having been spoilt and pampered since young, she was extremely enraged and left home, and even left behind some cruel words…

Now.

She suddenly realized, just how much her father had loved her.

Kyoto headquarter city, outer wall defense. Jia Yi was looking over the injured soldiers.

“Don’t move, just lie down and rest.” Jia Yi said.

“Yes sir.” A disabled and bandaged young soldier shouted.

Jia Yi stood up straight.

“Senior Official.” One policemen ran over.

“What’s the matter? “Jia Yi asked, the policemen lowered his voice and said: “Senior official, Liu Ning has been sacrificed.” Liu Ning was Jia Yi’s youngest disciple, he was only 19 this year, and he was also Jia Yi’s most favorite disciple. When the battle occurred, Jia Yi had sent almost all of them immediately to the battlefield.

“Oh.” Jia Yi responded and went silent, only his facial muscles moved a little.

“Little Ning…” Jia Yi grimaced within, looking at the entire patient ward, many of the injured soldiers had taken out their handphones and were looking through either pictures or messages.

“They are all so young!” Jia Yi felt a pain within his heart, yet he was helpless.

Hong and Thunder God’s failure had left the entire upper echelon of the world in pain and turmoil, and they also found out from Luo Feng…the liquid silver guards didn’t have the ability to kill the swallowing monster, which was even more disappointing.

However!

While the upper echelon was in dismay, the broadcasts weren’t!

At that moment, the entire world was still broadcasting the battles, however they were only replaying scenes from the battles, saying Hong and Thunder God were only injured heavily and not dead. They even say the two silver giants were earth's latest technology, humanity's hope!

This led to countless commoners and communities to be filled with hope!

Countless soldiers to carry on fighting!

Luo Feng had reached home.

Within the living room, the television was on.

"These two silver giants are the results of research from the various countries. Just like the countless battles over these thousands of years, humanity will definite emerge victorious!" The voice from the television said, Luo Feng couldn't bear to listen and immediately left the living room for the third floor.

On the balcony.

A cool breeze blew, Luo Feng was slight refreshed.

"There's no use Luo Feng, give up!" Babata coaxed, "Earth has no hope, just let everybody else die, you can't stop it."

“This doesn’t just concern one or two people dying, it’s countless people.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but rage, “Am I to just watch as countless youths, children and infants die? Am I to watch as the Earth becomes a playground for monsters? Humans going extinct? There must be a way, there must be.”

For the Earth to be overrun by monsters, the thought alone was a nightmare.

“The soul, is the root of life.”

Luo Feng’s eyes lit up, “That swallowing monster’s life force has become a lot weaker, does that mean that its soul, is also much weaker than before? Babata, tell me.”

“Erm…” Babata was hesitating.

“Tell me.” Luo Feng was getting impatient.

“Right, it’s very weak. However, it’s still not something a Star traveller level 3 spirit reader like you can handle.” Babata said.

“Babata, you said before, it’s still very young! Indeed…A Star traveller level has no ability to wander the universe. It’s currently only a Star level, meaning it was probably born on Earth! As strong as it is, if it was born much earlier, it would have been discovered by man much earlier.”

“To discover it so late, means it probably wasn’t born too long ago.” Luo Feng said, “It’s still young, it’s soul should be more fragile.”

“Also, it consecutively received the B6 laser cannon attack, and Hong and Thunder God’s attack. His power should be only about 20% of before.” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up, “If I use the Yun Mo Planet secret technique <Tower of the Void> and risk it… The original power of the skill is already great, once I risk it all…”

“And if it’s not enough, I’ll use the <six blades> secret technique, allowing the other strongest warriors on earth to combine strengths with me…” Luo Feng was swiftly simulating a plan in his thoughts.

The secret techniques of the Yun Mo Planet were very strong!

And Babata had always emphasized the importance of Luo feng studying these techniques. Till now, even though his studies hadn’t been too profound, the more elaborate ones, with Luo Feng’s current power, he was unable to use them. He was, however, able to draw his power to the maximum potential already.

“Luo Feng, don’t think such crazy thoughts!!!” Babata raged, “I don’t allow it, I definitely don’t allow it, I’ve waited fifty thousand years, for a disciple like you, I definitely don’t allow you to go and commit suicide!!!”

“I’m not going to commit suicide, Hong and Thunder God’s soul

immolation, they didn't die did they?" Luo Feng asked.

"But they are in a coma!"

Babata raged, "In the universe, even undying beings who receive heavy damage to their souls, some sleep for a million years before they recover! And some, just sleep forever. Hong and Thunder god may not be dead, but their souls are currently in a deep coma! Their souls were originally not strong, if they are lucky, they may awake in a couple of years. If not, they will never wake again and remain in that coma."

"Luo Feng, don't be rash." Babata raged.

"I am Luo Feng, before I am a disciple of Yun Mo Planet." Luo Feng said firmly.

"You want to go die?" Babata raged.

"Babata." Luo Feng looked around, "you think I want to die? I don't want to die!!! I wish so much to watch my children get born, so much to hear them call me father! I want to live! Even in my dreams I want to live!"

"But you..." Babata hesitated.

"Babata, right now I only have two choices! One, be like a cowardly tortoise, watch as countless of my fellow kind get killed, watch as countless innocent children cry as their parents get killed,

watch as infants who are still drinking milk get killed...watch as they die, while I, along with my close ones and children hide in the Yun Mo Planet ship, like a tortoise! After that, my children will get born, they will live their days without sunshine, without friends, they will only know from our stories that the Earth was once filled with many many children like them, the only thing is, they all died."

"And Babata, you said before, only a Star level can comfortably get by in the universe! And my family and children who aren't Star traveller level, entering the universe and the other planets, is very dangerous." Luo Feng said.

Babata quietly accepted.

It was indeed true.

The universe, was unfair! Battles occurred on every planet, every galaxy. It would be tragic to bring normal people into the universe.

"I need to reach the Star level, to allow my family to live good lives in the universe, stable lives. And just how long will it take me to reach the Star level? Decades? My children will be living in a ship for decades?" Luo Feng shook his head "that's totally a nightmare, leaving society and passing life by in a ship for decades, I'd rather die than let my children live such lives."

"The second choice!"

“I Luo Feng, with the <six blades> technique, allow five other Star traveller warriors to donate their souls, fuse and soul immolation! After, I’ll use the <Tower of the Void> as my final attack and move! These two moves are Yun Mo Planet’s secret techniques, along with the soul immolation, to kill a space beast with only 10-20% of power, there’s hope.”

“There’s a few outcomes, one, success, I don’t die, countless people will have hope, that’s of course the best outcome.”

“Two, success, I die. However...My children can live good lives, go to kindergarten, find friends and playmates. And my parents, Xu Xin can take care of them, they will just have one less father. They will grow up and learn the history of their father, I believe, they’ll be proud of me.”

“Three, failure, I’ll definitely die too. That devouring monster will be seriously injured, allowing humanity the hope to kill it!” Luo Feng’s expression was calm. “Babata, which path do you think I’d take?”

Babata wanted to speak, but he didn’t know how to coax him out of it.

“Babata, seriously, since I was 18 and I became a warrior, I’ve never feared death!”

“It’s the opposite, I’m more afraid of my children living their lives in a ship for decades!”

“I’m even more afraid, Hong, Thunder God and the countless others who sacrificed themselves would be in vain!”

“Death, is not scary at all. Men, grow old or die of illness all the time, it’s all a cycle.”

“I want to help my friends, Wei Wen and others.

“I want to help my fellow people.”

“I want to help the countless unborn children, similar to mine.”

“On behalf of them, I want to fight.”

“It’s also for myself!” Luo Feng laughed loudly, “One must know, Hong and Thunder God fighting it out, they are the two strongest fighters on Earth. And me, I’m the Earth’s strongest spirit reader, how can I back down? Haha!”

Luo Feng’s laughed made Babata silent.

How long has it been…

Babata hadn’t been in such a complicated situation, it was the first time, Babata felt towards this averagely qualified, no other choice disciple, some respect.

“Alright, I’ll help you.” Babata said seriously.

“Haha, don’t be like that, I’ve said, we’ll fight it out, there’s still hope for survival.” Luo Feng’s spirit at the time was calm within.

Chapter 34 – The Six Humans

“It’s now 2:12pm in China, the fight between Hong, Thunder God and the golden horned beast was 1 hour ago.” Babata’s voice was serious, “This time, the golden horned beast’s life force has become very weak, it obviously received heavy damage. It would definitely take a couple of days to recover. However…you cannot waste time, the earlier you act the better!”

After agreeing to help Luo Feng, Babata was using his full strength in making a plan for him: “First you have to find five Star traveller sacrifices, use the <Six Blades> secret technique, and absorb all five of them as they use their soul immolation into the Tower of the Void and use the <Tower of the Void> technique.”

“Choose five people, these five must be Star travellers!”

“The stronger they are, the better. Their strength represents their life force, hence, the energy generated from the soul immolation will be even stronger!”

Luo Feng stood on the balcony, looking at the surrounding skyscrapers, in the distance, army transports were travelling back and forth. He said: “Babata, send my thoughts out to the groups, to all the Star traveller warriors! Those willing, ready to sacrifice themselves, let them come to me.” Luo Feng’s voice was soft but extremely firm.

“Ok.”

Under Babata's control, all of the Star traveller warriors on earth immediately received the news.

"Luo Feng, how many do you think are willing to sacrifice?" Babata couldn't help but ask, "They are Star traveller warriors and Spirit readers, even if the headquarter cities are destroyed and humanity has to flee, their chances of survival are still the highest."

"I don't know." Luo Feng shook his head.

<Six Blades>, the secret technique, was a very special move within the Yun Mo Planet techniques, one of them in particular allowed others to immolate their souls and transfer their energy. This move...could also allow one to control one's underling to become a sacrifice. This sacrifice, had to have consent, willingness and without reservation. It would fail the moment there was hesitation.

That's why, Luo Feng couldn't force others to immolate their souls and sacrifice themselves.

Beep!

Luo Feng's tactical communications watch let out a sound.

"Here's one." Luo feng opened, a message showed with only a few words.

“I…Allure, am willing.” Luo Feng’s heart skipped a beat after seeing the message, this first reply was actually one of Hong’s three guards, Allure.

Beep! Beep!

His communicator rang a couple more times.

“Two more?” Luo Feng was just about to check who they were.

Beep! Beep! Beep! Beep! Beep! Beep! Beep! Beep! Beep! .....

It was almost simultaneous.

The sound was soft, but the continuous sound shocked Luo Feng.

“How crazy.” Babata couldn’t help but say softly.

3 minutes 16 seconds!

The tactical communications watch had run straight for that long, the frequency of the Di sound after that 3 minute 16 seconds was much lesser, until it finally totally stopped.

“Luo Feng, you’ve received 81 messages, 62 of which are willing, and the others are questioning about how much of a chance you have in killing the swallowing monster.” Babata swiftly scanned

through and calculated.

Luo Feng nodded.

“Luo Feng, you decide, choose the five people.” Babata said.

Whoever he chose would become a sacrifice!

“According to their Spirit strength levels, whoever would help the most, Babata, you choose the five.” Luo Feng said seriously.

“Ok.”

Babata said, “I’ve chosen, they are Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi, and Sokolov. These five came from America, Europe, India, China and Russia. However, your wargod palace’s fifth chairman didn’t reply at all.”

“I cannot force anybody.” Luo Feng quietly muttered these five names. “Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi, Sokolov…”

Mo Henderson…the one known as Ice Emperor, an extremely aggressive guy, currently America’s ‘super hero’.

Eastbourne…Earth’s former number one spirit reader, now surpassed by Luo Feng.

Tripathi Singh…known as India’s strongest, given the name Lion King.

Sokolov…Russia, a warrior that was both fierce and brutal.

Jia Yi…one who’s always been contributing to China, a fighter from the Great Nirvana.

“Five.” Luo Feng understood.

As long as the <Six Blades> secret technique began, these five would be sacrificed. They already knew that, yet they immediately responded.

“Contact these five, give them 50 minutes to say their goodbyes to their families. Afterwards, immediately rush over at max speed towards the pacific ocean.” Luo Feng said gloomily.

“Ok.”

Babata immediately sent out the notices.

Russia.

Tall and sturdy, both eyes shining with a hint of red, a man with a scary appearance was standing at the door of a room, the door closed.

“Elena!”

The tall and sturdy man said in a deep voice, resounding across the room, “This will be the last time I see you.”

Him!

Sokolov, fierce and savage, Russia’s number one fighter, never been married, loved drinking, and loved women. No one in Russia dared to oppose him, yet few knew he actually had a daughter. This daughter was actually the result from his drinking.

“I’m heading towards the pacific ocean to deal with the swallowing monster, Elena, take care of yourself.” Sokolov roared out, staring at the door, those terrifying eyes had a hint of hope and expectation.

However, the door never opened.

Sokolov fiercely turned.

Taking big steps, he walked towards a disc shaped auto jet, very quickly, the auto jet powered up and began to fly.

Creak!

The room’s door finally opened, a lady with a long skirt looked carefully out, all she saw was but a very small disc flying far away

in the vast sky, till it disappeared altogether.

Looking at the footprints left in the snow below, the lady couldn't help but cry.

The fierce and savage Polar Bear Sokolov had said his goodbyes to his daughter.

The Ice Emperor Mo Henderson said goodbye to his wife, son along with his child who had just drank his milk.

The Lion King Tripathi Singh also said goodbye to his three wives and a group of children.

Eastbourne, simply locked himself in his room, and remained silent for 5 minutes before riding and leaving on the auto jet.

Jia Yi, simply gave a call to his loved ones and left on the auto jet.

Luo Feng's living room.

"Get up Little Feng, get up." Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan were filled with tears as they picked up the kneeling Luo Feng.

"Luo Hua, take good care of mom and dad."

Luo Feng looked towards his younger brother.

“Yes.” Luo Hua’s eyes were bright red, he nodded profusely.

Luo Feng nodded too, turning to look at the teary eyed Xu Xin, Luo Feng extended his hand to hold hers, saying softly: “Sorry.”

“Don’t say that.” Xu Xin shook her head.

“I owe you a wedding.” Luo Feng extended his left hand, immediately the mosquito netting’s top steel wire flew out, and in the midst of flying over, broke into two chunks. These two short wires automatically curled and formed two rings.

“Now, there’s no time left to buy rings.” Luo Feng held on to the two steel rings.

“With my parents as witnesses, Xu Xin, will you marry me?” Luo Feng asked softly.

“Yes, yes.” Xu Xin could only nod as her tears flowed.

Luo Feng gently gave the nameless ring to Xu Xin, putting it on her finger.

Xu Xin too put a ring on Luo Feng.

“I’m sorry, I’ve let you down, I’ve also let down the two unborn children.” Luo Feng looked at Xu Xin, lowered his head to kiss her,

Xu Xin closed her eyes...

They stayed that way for awhile.

When Xu Xin opened her eyes, all she could see was Luo Feng's back walking out the living room door.

"Little Feng."

"Luo Feng."

A group of people ran over, raising their heads in the yard.

The youth stepped on the soaring shuttle, became a beam of light and disappeared into the east sky.

Luo Feng, on the soaring shuttle, mid flying.

He surveyed below him, much of Yang Zhou city had disappeared below him, and what was left was a broken and destroyed city, filled with dust and wreckage, monsters all over...This was a city from even before the Great Nirvana, and now it was the home to monsters.

"I am Luo Feng. Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi, and Sokolov, pass me your current locations and auto jet flying speed, I'll determine the meeting point." Luo Feng simultaneously informed the 5.

“This is Mo Henderson, my auto jet’s speed is 3800m per second...”

“This is Jia Yi...”

.....

The five replied in a row with their speed and position.

Babata used this information to calculate the optimal meeting point: “Luo Feng, I’ve calculated the meeting point. You all just need 1 hour and 8 minutes to reach and gather. The meeting point is a total of 351 km away from where the golden horned monster is.

“Okay”

Luo Feng immediately informed the five of the meeting point.

.....

It was still afternoon in China, however, at the meeting point, the sky quickly darkened.

At the meeting point.

When Luo Feng arrived at the meeting point, a black disc shaped

auto jet was already floating there, a southern Asian man with slightly curly hair immediately flew out.

“Luo Feng, how are you.” The man extended his hand.

“Nice to meet you, Tripathi Singh.” Luo Feng too extended his hand.

The two shook hands.

Before long, the American Mo Henderson had arrived too.

The fourth to arrive was Jia Yi.

The fifth was Sokolov, sixth was Eastbourne.

“I’ve already went through the main points. Do you all understand?” Luo Feng looked at the five.

“Understood.”

Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi and Sokolov nodded their heads firmly.

“Alright, let’s us depart into the sea, where the swallowing monster is.” Luo Feng said.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Six people, six beams of light.

The flew in unison 300 km away.

At that time, everywhere on Earth was broadcasting this scene.

Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan, Xu Xin and others couldn't help but cry as they watched, and the rest of Earth's elites and leaders were all clear...this was perhaps humanity's final chance.

"America's strongest warrior Mo Henderson, Europe's strongest Eastbourne, India's strongest Tripathi Singh, Russia's strongest Sokolov and our hero forever from China, Jia Yi, along with... Earth's number one Spirit reader, the youngest genius Luo Feng."

"Let us forever remember their names."

The voice from the screen was solemn.

On the screen...

The six elite fighters were flew in the air and then rushed into the vast ocean.

Chapter 35 – A New Chapter

In the deep ocean, Luo Feng and the five others were rushing downwards, Luo Feng had the Cloud Contact armor, and the five others had Black God sets protecting their bodies, allowing them to head deep underwater.

“Luo Feng, that swallowing monster is currently at 1200m below the surface, won’t we wake him if we get too close? Won’t he interrupt you while you while you unleash your technique?” The Indian Tripathi Singh couldn’t help but ask, the other four too looked at Luo Feng, Luo Feng was the leader of this mission.

Afterall, they didn’t know what secret technique that was.

“Don’t worry.” With a thought, a liquid silver guard wearing black battle armor appeared beside them.

“Hm?”

The other five were shocked at the sudden appearance of the Liquid Silver Guard, just looking at its face, they deduced...this wasn’t a real human, and it was the one that saved Hong and Thunder God before, the special ‘robot’.

“This is something I got from the ancient ruins.” Luo Feng said as he landed on the seabed, the five followed.

“You guys command an autojet to come here.” Luo Feng said

solemnly.

“Why?” The other five were startled.

The autojets were indeed capable of flying and going underwater, but why command it to come here?

“The moment I use the technique, you will die. I’ll put your bodies in the autojet to leave here. As for me, I’ll immediately begin my battle with the swallowing monster.” Luo Feng said, the other five nodded as they heard this, they understood that in this battle, they were but pawns for sacrifice, to allow Luo Feng to grow extremely strong within a short time.

And Luo Feng, may die without even leaving a body behind.

Hua!

From high up in the sky, an autojet swiftly rushed towards the sea bed, reaching very quickly.

“Sit down, close your eyes, remember, don’t resist.” Luo feng said seriously.

“Understood.”

Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi and Sokolov, these five people glanced at each other, their faces each having a

peculiar smile on, smiles that held the power capable of shaking people's souls.

The five all sat crossed legged.

The five, plus Luo Feng, made six in total. They formed points of the <Six Blades> secret technique's 'Sacrificial Ritual'.

"Let's begin."

Luo Feng too closed his eyes.

Within his mind, there was a total of three mini planets, in the center, the mini planet was one that appeared when he reached the Star traveller level 1, the other 2 were respectively when he reached level 2 and 3. The 2 planets orbited around the middle one, like the earth around the sun.

The one in the center was the largest.

Three mini planets, all of them were entirely red. The three mini planets emanated threads of red fog, filling the entire space within his consciousness...Tower of the Void!

A blood red tower, the space within in vast like the universe, Luo Feng's three mini planets were within that.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Five blood red threads flew out from the Tower of the Void, leaving Luo Feng's body. The peculiar thing was, in the physical world, these spirit threads were transparent. The five threads of spirit immediately entered into Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi and Sokolov's consciousness.

"Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!"

The five souls immediately began to immolate!

……

Sea bed, six men sat cross legged.

When the five souls began immolating, their bodies began to emit a formless vibration, large amounts of spirit energy, under Luo Feng's precise control, began to follow the <Six Blades> wave to the center, Luo Feng, and enter into his consciousness Tower of the Void.

The five's life forces were declining rapidly.

Luo Feng's life force was rising rapidly

Yet, the five who were sacrificing themselves were all smiling.

……

Europe, Paris base, big screens were hung up in the streets.

“The six have stopped movement on the seabed. The one in the center Luo Feng, his life force is the strongest, the next in line is Eastbourne...” The broadcast report resounded across the streets, gathered there were many European men and women, all glued to the screens.

“Their life forces are declining! Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi and Sokolov’s life forces are rapidly declining! Luo Feng’s life force is increasing rapidly.”

On the screen.

The silhouettes representing the six, five of which were rapidly beginning to blur, Luo Feng’s silhouette kept getting clearer.

Suddenly...

The five silhouettes complete vanished. It was obvious the apparatus couldn’t detect any life force anymore.

“Oh.”

“God.”

Countless people of the streets couldn’t help but cover their

faces, they knew, once their life forces vanished, it meant death.

“This is Mo Henderson’s auto jet, it’s already gone out to sea, according to my sources, the auto jet currently has five bodies within it, Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi and Sokolov these five heroes! They, for the sake of humanity have sacrificed themselves! Please always remember them!”

“Luo Feng!!!”

“Luo Feng is heading towards the swallowing monster!”

The voices began to grow tense and nervous.

On the screen, the life force representing Luo Feng was swiftly heading deeper, closing up with the incomparably large swallowing monster’s signal.

“Let us pray!”

“Pray that Luo Feng will emerge victorious!”

On the streets, everyone held their hands to their chests, looking at the screen.

……

At that time, countless people all over the world were praying, hoping...that victory would come!

Rock stratum below the seabed.

Luo Feng was swiftly heading down.

“800m, 600m, 400m, 300m!” Babata continuously reported the distance between Luo feng and the swallowing monster, “200m!”

Luo Feng fiercely stopped.

The surrounding rock stratum broke apart.

“Golden Horned Beast, die!” Luo Feng’s pupils were fierce and glowing.

Within his consciousness.

The enormous Tower of the Void, two mini planets were orbiting around the center planet, suddenly...

Rumble! Rumble Rumble!

The three mini planets suddenly became fireballs, correctly speaking, it was the large amount of red fog rushing out from the mini planets, entering the Tower of the Void. The originally

collected power of five powerful warriors, made the extremely dazzling Tower of the Void begin to fiercely rotate.

Non-stop rotation!

This made the entire Tower of the Void look like a blur, the tip of the pagoda suddenly produced a dazzling shiny point.

“Years of hard work, all gone.” Within the wrist cuff space, Babata sat on a chair, shaking his head, “I hope, hope it can be like Hong and Thunder God. At least maintain some sort of foundation and enter a coma afterwards. At least that way, he won’t die.”

……

Luo Feng could feel himself getting weaker.

“Go!”

Hu!

A Tower of the Void invisible to the naked eye rotated to form a cone, drilling past 200m of distance, in an instance rushing straight into the golden horned beast’s body.

“Roar…” The enraged beast roared.

Rumble...

The surrounding rock stratum fiercely burst apart, Luo Feng could see the enraged Golden Horned Beast, those dark golden pupils staring angrily at him. However, 'shua, shua' two liquid silver guards defended Luo Feng's body.

"It's consciousness, is not in its head." Luo Feng's expression changed.

The Tower of the Void had rushed through the beast's head, there was no soul there! Luo Feng finally understood...why blowing off its head didn't kill it, it was because this golden horned beast, was different from humans, and also from the other monsters, its consciousness, soul wasn't in the head portion!

At that moment, the Tower of the Void was rushing down the neck portion swiftly, entering the Golden Horned Beast's torso interior!

"Hu!"

The Tower of the Void swept past everything.

To the Tower of the Void which was formed from spirit energy, the flesh and blood had no way to stop it.

"Eh? Here!"

Within the body of the golden horned beast, there was actually something that was emanating a golden light, it was about 20 or more cm, a transparent crystal ball. The crystal ball had countless complex golden engravings, these engravings were emanating beams of golden light! When Luo Feng's Tower of the Void brushed past, it felt a strong resistance.

It's soul is inside!

"Rumble!"

The rotating Tower of the Void fiercely impacted the crystal ball!

"Roar! Roar!" The golden horned beast roared within the rock stratum, its scaled wings were incomparably sharp, they became two large sabers. Its claws where even faster and sharper, its tail, incredibly powerful. At that time...they were all madly attacking at Luo Feng's body.

The two liquid silver guards were giving their all in defending.

"No good, it's spiritual defense is too powerful!" Luo Feng's expression changed.

Luo Feng's expression suddenly grew malevolent, gritting his teeth, "I'll give it my all!"

Rumble! Rumble Rumble!

Three mini planets visible to the naked eye flew out from Luo Feng's consciousness, "Rumble..." Luo Feng's consciousness left its foundation, immediately, it began to crumble!

.....

"NO! LUO FENG, NO!!!" Within the wrist cuff space, Babata was pale from shock.

Hong and Thunder God may have used soul immolation, but they never let their souls leave their bodies!

Luo Feng had actually given up his physical body, putting his entire soul into the Tower of the Void! This way, it was akin to leaving no way out after. This way, the attack would definitely be the strongest. However, even if he succeeded, his original body's consciousness would crumble, he couldn't return!

.....

"Die, die, die!"

Luo Feng's will had an incomparable sturdiness and madness within!

His entire soul had merged with the Tower of the Void!

The Tower of the Void had become a sharp cone, madly piercing in the direction of the golden crystal ball filled with golden engravings that were emanating countless golden lights! And the Tower of the Void's three mini planets were burning and constantly consuming, getting smaller as time passed.

"Why isn't it breaking?"

"WHY ISN'T IT BREAKING!!!" Luo Feng was extremely worried.

……

"Wail…"

The golden horned beast was painfully flailing its head, violently crashing into the rock stratum at the sides, its soul was under attack, causing it immeasurable pain. A few hours before, its soul had just received heavy damage. And now this human's attack, was no weaker than the attack from before!

……

"Break! Break! Break!"

Luo Feng's was going insane.

He wasn't afraid of death!

Just afraid of failure!!!

Within the Tower of the Void, the three spirit mini planets were shrinking quickly, puff, puff, the two smaller planets had shrunk into nothingness. All that was left was the center spirit planet! It's size too was left at only 1/3 of before. This blood red spirit planet too was constantly immolating, pushing large amounts of spirit energy into the Tower of the Void.

Immolate, immolate!

Smaller and smaller!

Luo Feng could feel his consciousness slowly getting blurry, he understood…he was dying.

"Kill it, kill it, kill it!!!"

Jiang Nan Base, Yang Zhou city streets.

Old people with heads full of white, crying hungry babies, at this time, everyone on the street was nervously looking at the screen, amongst them was Wei Wen, he was probably the most nervous: "Luo Feng, Luo Feng, my brother, you, you…must live on, live on!"

On the screen!

The life force signal representing Luo Feng, had already been mixed with the swallowing monster's life force, it was obvious they were engaged in battle!

Stifled breaths!

The whole world held their breaths at this moment.

"Rumble!"

Two forces fiercely clashed against each other, it seemed much stronger suddenly. It was almost like a star exploding just before it dies out!

Immediately...

Rapid decline!

"The life force is declining, declining, rapidly declining!" The voice finally spoke out from the screen, "There's no way to determine whose is whose life force, both are mixed together. Still declining!"

Wei Wen watched wide eyed.

Nervously watching too were Xu Xin, Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan, Luo Hua and the others.

Everyone on Earth were extremely nervous!

……

On the screen, the signals of life forces were rapidly declining, getting weaker, and weaker…

Puff!

They totally vanished!

The signals representing the life forces on the screen had totally vanished. Be it Luo Feng, or the swallowing monster, both had totally vanished!

One second, two seconds, three seconds…

“It’s dead?”

“Luo Feng and the swallowing monster both died?”

Everyone on Earth had seen it happen before, the swallowing monster had revived before. Hence, the anxiety and nervousness!

One minute, two minutes, three minutes…

The swallowing monster life force didn’t reappear, neither did

Luo Feng's.

There was silence throughout the world!

Time in China, afternoon 4.10pm, three Star traveller warriors of humanity dived into the deep sea, discovering the enormous body of the swallowing monster, however, they had no way of breaking through its scales.

The news spread all over, the entire world erupted in joy!

"The swallowing monster is dead, it's really dead!"

"Let us remember their names!"

"Hong, Thunder God, Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi, Sokolov and Luo Feng! It was them, who saved the entire humanity, them who gave us hope!"

"It's just like the myths and legends, only through hardship and pain will humanity gain a new flame, the gods and creators, giving humanity a place to survive and live."

"And Hong, Thunder God, Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi, Sokolov and Luo Feng!"

"Them, they gave us the hope of survival."

“We’ll always remember their eight names!”

“The oldest amongst them was 89, youngest was only 22!”

Afternoon 4.25pm, large numbers of monsters had gathered around that sea area, including the emperor class monsters. This made the humans retreat immediately, unable to enter the sea bed.

Nightfall, the entire world, the sea creatures originally madly attacking the bases all swiftly retreated!

When the next day’s sun rose.

The Earth had regained its previous peace.

Humanity’s history, had begun a whole new chapter.

Chapter 36 – Resurrection

Jiang Nan headquarter city Yang Zhou city, Times Square, there were flowers filling up the entire plaza.

The Swallowing Beast calamity had placed more stress and destruction on humanity than the Great Nirvana before. However, with the sacrifice of Earth's eight strongest warriors, humanity had overcome the disaster. Hong and Thunder God were deep in coma, while their heart beat was still there, there no mental functions or signals at all.

They could be said to be living dead!

The entire world's headquarter cities had initiated their own events and parades to celebrate the eight heroes, expressing their gratitude and respect.

And Yang Zhou city, as the hometown of one of the eight, Luo Feng, within the biggest plaza, countless people had gathered to grieve. In this battle...Luo Feng was the youngest among the eight, and also the most genius and talented, just 22 years old and he could easily kill a Grand Emperor monster.

With such talent, many people had believed him to continue growing, surpassing Hong and Thunder God was a very high possibility. Many even said...Luo Feng, being able to easily kill a grand emperor, was already on par with Hong and Thunder God.

However, there was no point in saying all these.

……

Times Square, bouquets of flowers filled the entire floor.

Groups after groups of people came to bow and deliver their respect.

“Luo Feng.” In the crowd, a young man accompanied by a young lady was in immeasurable grief, looking at Luo Feng’s statue, “You, you…”

“Ah Wen.” The young lady tried coaxing.

“He and I grew up together since we were infants, who would have thought he’d just go like that.” Wei Wen’s expression was filled with pain, “Ever since he entered the dojo, he had always been the most outstanding. From early on, becoming a high level student and onto a warrior. Step after step…I saw him grow stronger and stronger.”

“I knew, he would soar even higher. Who would have thought…” Wei Wen shook his head.

Wei Wen and his girlfriend were bowing in the plaza, before disappearing into the crowd after.

Ming Yue District, Luo Feng’s house second storey, bedroom.

The warm sun in winter, shone past the windows, Xu Xin's face while lying in bed was white and pale.

"Little sister." Xu Gang sat beside her on the bed, consoling her, "Don't be too upset, Luo Feng's death was for the highest of reasons, it was worth it. Also...You being so upset, along with being pregnant with child, is not good for the child."

"Big brother." Xu Xin said softly, "I know, you can leave."

"Take care of your body, even if it's for Luo Feng, you have to give birth to the children." Xu Gang consoled her and left.

From the relationship standpoint, Luo Feng, as one of earth's eight great heroes, the Xu family definitely wished for Xu Xin to give birth to Luo Feng's children.

From the logical standpoint, Luo Feng was Earth's greatest spirit reader, his genetic inheritance was more worthy than anything, these children definitely had to be kept.

.....

Luo Feng's house first floor.

"Doctor." Gong Xin Lan asked, "How's our Xu Xin doing?"

In Hua Xia's medical elites, the one at the top was Mr Hua, he came personally to check up on Xu Xin, as a form of respect to Luo Feng. He said solemnly: "Mrs Luo, there's actually no problem with the patient's body, only...emotional scarring, no matter how healthy the body, if she continues to wallow in despair, I'm afraid her body's condition will continue to decline."

"This..." Gong Xing Lan's expression changed slightly.

Yesterday, while watching the broadcast, the moment Luo Feng's life force signal had completely vanished, Xu Xin actually fainted on the spot.

Even though the Luo couple were in unbearable pain themselves, they didn't want to let their son's legacy experience any problems, hence inviting the doctor over...now, all they could do for their son was to protect his bloodline.

"No matter what the cost, Doctor Hua, you definitely have to protect the children within her." Gong Xin Lan emphasized.

"I understand! Mr. Luo Feng's bloodline, I will do my best." Doctor Hua stressed, "I'll immediately request from the country some spirits of nature and some other medicinal herbs to help her."

"My family has spirits of nature." Gong Xin Lan nodded.

"That's even better." Mr Hua nodded happily, saying, "The

spirits of nature and a few other medicinal herbs can help nurture and strengthen her body. However...the root, still lies within her heart. If she drowns in sorrow and worry...I'm afraid she'll have a miscarriage before she can give birth."

Gong Xin Lan's expression changed.

"That's why, we need to support her emotionally, help better her mood." Doctor Hua said.

"I understand." Gong Xin Lan nodded.

.....

On the bed.

Xu Xin lay in bed, unknowingly gently rubbing the steel ring on her finger, teardrops beading from her eyes, muttering: "Luo Feng, you, are you really gone? Have you really left me?"

Pacific Ocean, the place where Luo Feng had battled with the Swallowing Beast.

A large number of creatures had gathered.

More than 60 Emperor class monsters, among them was even the only Grand Emperor monster left...the Thunder Dragon Emperor! So many creatures gathered at the seabed, all for the body of the

devouring monster! According to their rules of evolution, eating a stronger monster's body would most certainly lead to evolution.

The Thunder Dragon Emperor was hoping to eat the body of the golden horned beast!

"Roar..."

The Thunder Dragon Emperor stared angrily at two people ahead of him...liquid silver guards!

It's been here for over three days, however it's been unable to go ahead, all because of these two Liquid Silver Guards! Key information, the Liquid Silver Guards were able to even defend against the Golden Horned Beast, restraining the Thunder Dragon Emperor would only be too easy. While the Liquid Silver Guards attacks are extremely weak, opposite...their restraining abilities were extremely strong.

Behind the Liquid Silver Guards.

The enormous body of the golden horned beast which was blacker than black was just lying there, no sign of breath or life.

.....

Inside the golden horned beast's body.

That crystal ball filled with gold engravings, was glowing very slightly, while it looked just like before, the truth was that there was some change occurring.

“So, leaving one’s body and possessing something else is so difficult! Babata, with these little steps, just how long would it take for me to be able to fully control this golden horned beast’s body?”

Luo Feng’s thoughts spoke.

“Don’t be anxious, the situation you are in has probably never happened in a 100 million years, be patient! Slowly.” Babata said.

Luo Feng never thought he’d survive!

Three days ago when he risked it all to attack the golden horned beast, Luo Feng realized, the golden horned beast’s defense was too strong, and just when his own spirit planet was about to burn out...a square blood red crystal beam within the core of the mini planet separated and immolated, immediately, an immeasurable amount of spirit energy rushed though Luo Feng’s spirit.

It was extremely large!

During the world broadcast, the reason behind the large surge in life force at a particular moment!

Luo Feng was very grateful!

He was grateful for his old teacher Yun Mo Planet's master, back then, he didn't know the power level of who he was passing on to. Star traveller? Star level? That's why, cautiously, he created the soul imprint, a soul capable of transforming a spirit reader to the Universe level!

And the soul imprint was but a tiny thing, just a small crystal beam.

But in fact, it was still something created by an Undying being! When this beam immolated, that immense energy swiftly surged through and broke through the Golden Horned Beast's defense, without any problem at all! Maybe the power of the Golden Horned Beast was stronger, but the character of the soul imprint was much too powerful.

One needle, piercing into tofu. Of course it was easy!

The Golden Horned Beast's soul was attacked!

And Luo Feng's soul was revitalized, becoming invincible. While his own flesh and consciousness had crumbled and he had nowhere to return to. That's why...at the spur of the moment, he immediately began using the 'Possession' technique, breaking apart the golden horned beast's soul into pieces and devouring them. However fast the devouring speed, it still took more than a day.

Also!

Just like the storage space ring, the Cloud Contact Vine relies on the spirit imprint to remember its owner, Babata this AI, was also linked to Luo Feng via a spirit connection. The soul was the foundation! Several treasures in the universe, normally all rely on the soul imprints (Spirit imprint) to recognize their owners, that's why when Luo Feng's soul left his body, he naturally managed to reconnect with Babata again.

"Luo Feng, you've taken over its consciousness. However, your fusion level with your soul and its body is still very low, you need to take it slow."

"The moment the possession started, at most you can't even walk properly, that's normal."

"Come, just start trying to move your eyelids, slowly."

"Relax, I've already cut off all signals around here. Mankind would never be able to discover the Devouring Monster's life force here." Babata was extremely excited. My god. Possessing a space beast? It was simply a dream!

Just discussing bloodlines in the universe, the space beasts' were the unquestionable leading and elites.

The golden horned beast, was one of the ones at the peak.

"Babata, how can I regain my human body?" Luo Feng asked.

“Damn, do you need to even think about your human body?” Babata said, “With this body, even if you want to become a sector lord, all you need to do is wait! Also…I’ve heard, the space beasts all have inherited memories, the higher the level of space beast, the more the memories.”

“Knowledge, knowledge is power!”

“Your teacher had only 60 million years of life, his amassed knowledge was only how much? While his secret techniques are powerful, in the vast universe, there were still those stronger than him.”

“And space beasts, especially the elite space beasts, generations and generations of inherited memories, almost up to the point where the universe first began.”

“When you have totally melded 100% with it’s body, all these bloodline inherited memories will fully meld into your soul!” Babata was extremely excited.

Become the great Golden Horned Beast?

Travel and rule the universe?

“As for returning to your human body, it’s not too difficult. The dumbest way is to repossess a human again. The best way, is to acquire the legendary spirit readers’ technique <Soul split>. You

can split some of your soul into this body and another part into the human body. However this technique <Soul Split>, even your teacher had only heard of it before." Babata said, "Don't think about it, at least you are still alive."

"Right."

Luo Feng's mind shook.

At least, I'm still alive! Where there's life, there's hope!

There's hope of seeing his family, seeing his children get born...

Luo Feng began to work harder to control his body.

Blinking? Moving a claw? Waving his tail? Gently moving those scaled wings?

One step after another!

Luo Feng worked hard, after using 16 days of time...

"I've succeeded."

At the bottom of the pacific ocean, a large Golden Horned Beast that had brought disaster and gave humanity a nightmare before, was gently swimming around, its cold dark golden pupils surveyed

its surroundings, the surrounding Emperor class monsters, and also the Grand Emperor was so scared, it lay there respectfully.

“Luo Feng, congratulations.” Babata too was extremely excited.

“Hm?”

When he had fully melded, it was almost like his own body, suddenly, an immensely large amount of memories flooded into Luo Feng’s soul, extremely vast, ancient, generation after generation of golden horned beast’s inherited memories were appearing in his mind, the amount of memories, caused Luo Feng’s consciousness to go into shock and stop thinking altogether!

It was too, too huge!

Volume 8: *Universe Adventurer*

Chapter 1 – Inherited Memories

The dark seabed, countless sea creatures had filled the surroundings, every one of them were looking respectfully at the distant Swallowing Beast, the pupils of that beast were shut, as though it was asleep.

However, a formless wave of pressure was pressing down on this area's peace.

Closing it's huge eyes, Luo Feng felt his entire self drowning in memories, mysterious and powerful special techniques, techniques that were totally compatible with the golden horned beast's form and study, they were extremely numerous and vast. Picture filled memories continuously flushed through, almost like in the movies, whoosh, a large amount of information rushed into his mind.

Vast and endless!

Luo Feng felt a headache, obviously the speed of accepting the memories had reached his soul's limit of acceptance.

"Just how much information?" Luo Feng couldn't believe it, "This, this has been going on for more than an hour."

One hour, two hours, three hours!

These memories were like the never ending rush of the ocean, seeping and drowning in, never ceasing! Different and various

kinds of memories flashed past, melding totally into Luo Feng's soul, Luo Feng only had enough time to remember some of the Golden Horned Beast's training pictures and others, before getting once again drowned in the other memories.

Half a day!

One day! Two days! Three days!

The Golden Horned Beast, this terrifying space beast was sprawled on the sea bed without moving, almost as though it was in a deep sleep.

Sixteen days later!

Within the deep ocean, mud and gravel filled the sea bed, the dark black Golden Horned Beast was sprawled there, finally, its dark golden pupils opened, they naturally had a sense of cold, killing intent, which spawned from its bones.

"Phew, god." Luo Feng finally felt some relief.

The inherited memories had rushed and melded into his soul for the past sixteen days, pushing his soul to its limit. Under such pressure, Luo Feng didn't even have the ability to think about anything else.

"This, this is so much information." Luo Feng exclaimed.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng!” An excited voice shouted within Luo Feng’s mind.

“Babata.” Luo Feng shouted back.

“You’ve fully received all the inherited memories? It’s so crazy, with your current soul’s capability, you should be able to accept tons of information every second. Within these sixteen days, you must have received a lot of information.” Babata was obviously very excited, “Let’s see, what kind of information is there? What powerful skills are there?”

“Let me first take a look.” Luo Feng said curiously.

Even though he himself had become the Golden Horned Beast, however, he had no idea about the Golden Horned Beast’s capabilities at all.

“Babata, there’s trouble.” Luo Feng was checking through the memories, feeling a little helpless.

“What’s wrong?” Babata asked.

“Even though the information is in my mind, I still have to learn them one by one by myself. Just how long will it take me to learn them?” The inherited memories, was a form of information transfer, information from the first generation of golden horned beast passed on through the generations, however to fully grasp

the information, one still had to seriously study through them.

"That's not weird!" Babata said, "These inherited memories are huge, mostly because of the techniques, one type of technique alone could be filled with lots and lots of words. Just like master's <Soul Seal> technique, if it were to be written into a book, even a hundred books, tens of millions of Chinese characters would not finish it, that's very normal."

"Luo Feng."

Babata said excitedly, "You should now arrange your inherited memories, no need to look in detail over the techniques and their information, just knowing their names and what they briefly speak about is enough. Categorize them. It should be very fast. You really are something! In the universe, countless strong races and warriors spend countless amounts of wealth to buy these secrets, you actually complain that it's too much, it really leaves people speechless."

Luo Feng laughed, "Let me arrange for a bit."

He arranged them by the titles and summaries.

Golden Horned Beast's training knowledge, 18 special techniques he could train, 3199 normal techniques.

The space beast and some other information, humans and their many races, Controllers, Illusionists, Beastmasters, Puppet

masters, Hunters, Fighters...blood-flesh creatures, other than humans and space beast, there were still demons, worms, others. Every race had a large amount of information.

Other than the blood and flesh races.

There were the Metal races, Automaton races and others, there were also the Rock races, Soul races, Plant races ...

At the same time, there also other rarely seen races, just like the Space beasts, they too had immense power, but were extremely small in population ...

Just explaining about the humans and their many races, culture etc. If one were to use Chinese characters to write, a hundred million words would still by far not be enough.

And the Human race, was but one of the leading races in the vast universe.

Another month and three days passed, Luo Feng had finally organized the inherited memories! In the future, when he would require any bit of information, he could swiftly access and search for it in that enormous library of memories. As for learning?

My god!

Any one golden horned beast, could never be able to learn and go through all these information even once. Just the 18 secret

techniques alone, 3199 normal techniques, looking through their contents just once would require how many years.

"Luo Feng, you've struck big, you've struck it big!!! My god, you actually have so much information in your memories?" Babata had combed through Luo Feng's organized information, he was totally dumbstruck, "So the universe actually had so many races, and even races that are as small and as rarely seen as the space beasts.

"No doubt about the space beasts, powerful, impressive." Babata was extremely excited, "Even your teacher, 60 million years of life could never amass as much information as you have."

"There's no comparison." Babata was still in shock, "The space beast's generation after generation of memory inheritance, this kind of inside information...even in the human and its many races, I'm afraid only the Qian Wu universe, this level of universe information storage will have as much information as the inherited memories of the space beasts, it's incredibly impressive."

After Luo Feng had organized everything and scanned through once, he too was deeply impressed.

A high quality bloodline had many different positive sides.

The body's natural talent, that was the hardware, these amounts of information, that was the software!

"Babata, among the space beasts, the elite twelve bloodlines, only

these can pass down this much memories from generations before.” Luo Feng explained.

“Twelve different bloodlines?” Babata was shocked.

“Yes, among the space beasts, those able to grow to the sector lord, the elite bloodlines, there are twelve types. Back when you were talking about the Flaming Star Beast, that was one of the twelve too!” After Luo Feng sorted out the information, these basic information became clear to him, “The amount of inherited memories from these twelve bloodlines are the most informative. Also, every generation can add on to it with its memories.”

Luo Feng was now very clear, how the Golden Horned Beast passed down.

The Golden Horned Beast, if it wanted leave behind offspring, there was only one way. Put all it’s life energy and gather it into an egg and spit it out. The original golden horned beast would die in a few short years. When the egg hatches, an infant golden horned beast would come out and begin a new cycle.

“Hehe, Luo Feng, hurry and look. How long will it take you to reach the sector lord level.” Babata asked.

“Let me see.”

Luo Feng flipped through the pages, scanning through in just a few short seconds. He couldn’t help but get shocked.

“If the Golden Horned Beast hatches and doesn’t feed on the egg shell, and only eats normal metal, it requires 10 years to reach the Star level 1. However, if it eats the egg shell, and eat large amounts of metal, 1 year is enough.” Luo Feng said.

“One Year? This bastard that got possessed by you is only one year old?” Babata was speechless.

Luo Feng too sighed incessantly.

Bringing about such calamity to the whole world and so much trouble to deal with, this Swallowing Beast was only a one year old Golden Horned Beast infant?

“Normal evolution speed, the Star level 1 to the Universe level 1 requires 100 years.”

“Universe level 1 to Domain Lord 1, requires 1000 years.”

“Domain Lord 1 to Sector Lord, requires 10,000 years.” Luo Feng said directly,” This is the slowest speed, if we use some special methods, we can speed it up even more. Using some special metal alloys, is beneficial to the growth of the internal world, my strength will rise even faster!”

“This is like a gift from heaven!” Babata couldn’t help but say, “Your teacher prepared so much for you, training plans etc. Every method prepared for you was the best and most optimum, and

even so, you would still require 100 thousand years or more to ‘maybe’ reach the Sector Lord level!”

“If you didn’t have your teacher’s precise planning, endless wealth and treasures to train and cultivate, to reach the Universe level within your entire life span would be good already. But now... normal evolution speed, 10,000 years is enough?” Babata didn’t have much understanding of the golden horned beast before, now he had first hand knowledge and access.

“Not that long, that’s the slowest speed.” Luo Feng said, “If we had endless wealth to spend, it would speed up the growth of the internal world. The speed could increase by a few folds, to even much much more.”

“However, 18 secret techniques, 3199 normal techniques, I don’t know which to learn.” Luo Feng said, “These techniques have been passed down by the previous generations of Golden Horned Beasts, only Golden Horned Beasts can study them. Following the inherited memories’ advice: don’t bite off more than I can chew. I can at most learn a couple of the special techniques, not more than six of the normal techniques. Any more and I wouldn’t have enough mental or physical capacity to study. The lesser the better!”

“Oh?” Babata said, “You can first talk about the 18 special techniques and the 3199 normal techniques and their overall effectiveness and training requirements to me, I’ll help you choose, see if we can come up with the optimum combination.”

The power in choosing and making such decisions, Luo Feng

definitely couldn't compare to Babata.

"Ok."

Luo Feng began to explain the various techniques and their overall effects and training methods etc to Babata. As for the skills themselves? They were just too many, even if Luo Feng used his thoughts to explain, even a few years wouldn't be enough.

Eight hours later.

The introduction of the 18 special techniques and 3199 normal techniques and summaries had all been given to Babata, then he began to go through his AI system to quickly analyze the combinations.

"Luo Feng, this Golden Horned Beast should have its own natural moves. I've seen its speed explode before." Babata said, "Pass on these natural talents and gifts to me to, I'll make the best combination."

"Talents? Hold on."

Luo Feng retrieved more information from his memories, the Golden Horned Beast had a total of three talents, as for the detailed explanation...as long as his soul entered the internal world, he would naturally understand everything.

There was no need to learn the talents, he naturally could just

perform them.

Chapter 2 – Earth's Change

When Luo Feng was in the Pacific ocean receiving and organizing the large amounts of inherited memories, the people of Earth were going through a whole bunch of quick changes.

The swallowing monster event, back when the Golden Horned Beast was first killed, caused the Thunder Dragon Emperor to be terrified, so much so that it retreated. As for the later awakening of the Golden Horned Beast, it didn't order any of the other monsters to attack the human society, so the Thunder Dragon Emperor and the other sea monsters of course wouldn't initiate an attack.

Their intellect was very high!

If even the powerful swallowing monster almost died, who would dare attack?

Since that battle, technically each country's losses weren't too bad, it was only the loss of the eight heroes.

Hong, Thunder God, Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi, Sokolov and Luo Feng, these eight would be called humanity's most elite eight. Six of them had died, only Hong and Thunder God were still in a coma with no brain activity. The Dojo of Limits and the Thunder Dojo were two large powers in the world, who wouldn't envy them?

These two powers, they were even more powerful than the five countries!

With Hong and Thunder God around, they were of course able to keep things in check.

But now...

The floodgates were immediately opened!

Hong Ning headquarter city.

Within the enormous ship headquarters, the three guards and five investigators had gathered in the meeting room.

“Right now the virtual space has crumbled, every Star traveller warrior and Wargod has formed their own groups, without the two heads direction and leadership, the loose organization Palace of Wargods has crumbled. What should we do next?” A white robed black man said nervously.

“Every Wargod has a consciousness sensor helmet.” Allure, wearing a mask said anxiously, “their subconscious minds are still willing to enter the Palace of Wargods. However, the head is currently in a coma, so the AI has automatically closed the virtual space, which means that no one can enter the Palace of Wargods. The most pressing issue right now is to immediately rebuild the virtual space!”

It was as though...

If Luo Feng had died, Babata wouldn't bother serving humanity.

In the same way, Hong was currently in a coma not knowing whether he'd awake or die, so the AI System which only responds to Hong's orders wouldn't bother wasting any energy to maintain the Palace of Wargods' existence.

Palace of Wargods, the link between the Star traveller warriors and the Wargods was broken.

The form of the entire world was becoming even more chaotic!

Just power levels alone!

There were still several people out there stronger than the eight people in the Dojo of Limits. For the eight of them to fully control the Dojo of Limits, to bring it back to its former glory and authority, was extremely difficult. And the scariest thing was...if the eight of them didn't work in harmony, it would be even more troublesome.

Yang Zhou city, Ming Yue district, living room on the first floor of Luo Feng's home.

Luo Hua was sitting opposite a golden haired man.

"Mr. Luo Hua." The golden haired man sighed, "I was very good friends with your older brother, truthfully, it's with great regret, however truthfully, I really respect him. I believe countless people

from the other countries all really respect him and remember him. However...the threat humanity faces still isn't gone. We don't know when the sea creatures might begin yet another attack."

Luo Hua nodded.

"That's why, the proper usage of resources is very important." The golden haired man looked at Luo Hua, "I wish...to buy a few items from Mr. Luo Hua."

"Oh, what do you want to buy?" Luo Hua maintained his smile.

As the CEO of an investment company, Luo Hua was much more mature than before.

"Mu Ya crystals, liquid silver robots etc." The golden haired man emphasized, "Our HR Alliance, will definitely pay a high price, high enough to repay you." Saying so, the golden haired man took out picture filled book from his chest pocket, "This is the special items our HR Alliance has, there's also some company stocks, housing and land etc. It's definitely a bargain."

"Mr. Luo Hua, you can easily become a district's economic dictator!" The golden haired man smiled.

Luo Hua received the book and flipped through.

It was indeed very alluring.

Back when Luo Feng had disregarded his survival, along with the five other people heading to the pacific ocean, he had given his family ample preparation and a back road. Luo Hua just had to take out a little from his possessions to easily control a district's economy! This HR Alliance, was prepared to give several foundations to Luo Hua.

"Five days ago, my country's leaders came over here, their prices too were exceptional." Luo Hua looked at the golden haired man.

"Before you came earlier, I had just received a call, it was a mercenary group."

Luo Hua shook his head, "However representative Wei Nuo! I'll tell you, no deal! Other than selling a little to my own country, I won't sell anything to any other group!"

The golden haired man's expression changed.

He was a Star traveller who had personally come to talk to Luo Hua, that was enough respect given itself...the main thing was Luo Feng's influence was too huge, if he dared to use force, the entire world would reproach him! After the calamity had passed, humanity had already immortalized the eight heroes, raising them as gods.

To the countries however, dead people posed no threat.

That was why, no matter how high they were placed, it didn't really matter. As for Hong and Thunder God, they were already way up there before.

"Mr Luo Hua, calm down." Wei Nuo said solemnly, "Your brother's shining glory may protect you now, but...the flame will die off someday."

What was most terrifying was a doll carrying a golden brick, it would get robbed sooner or later.

"Thanks for your concern."

Luo Hua laughed, "Let me introduce you. No. 3!"

Sou!

A black silhouette appeared within the living room, giving representative Wei Nuo a shock. What appeared in the room was a huge black metal robot.

"This was something my brother left in the house, a robot to protect my family, it was obtained from ancient ruin no.12." Luo Hua looked at Wei Nuo, "The Luo family, doesn't need any other outside forces to protect us, we have our own power! I also know, many people around the world are just itching right now, but our Luo family has no intention to get mixed up in any of it."

"When my brother left, he told me." Luo Hua smiled, "Whoever

dares to touch the Luo Family, just kill them!”

Representative Wei Nuo’s expression changed.

“Also, I thought I’d mention that this robot, was one that even my brother wasn’t a match for.” Luo Hua said.

That was the truth!

This metal robot was made from black yttrium, even Luo Feng using the hybrid copper essence shard couldn’t hurt it. One of the robots was damaged by the Golden Horned Beast’s golden horn. Only an attack like that could damage its internal control system. And on earth, no human was capable of such an attack.

That meant to say...Hong, Luo Feng and Thunder God, even if they were here and alive, facing such an impregnable metal, wouldn’t be able to do anything.

Watching the representative leave, Luo Hua stood at the window watching, he squinted: “Hmph, after my brother left, they are coming one by one like hungry wolves, eyeing what my brother left behind. Right, the total number of Mu Ya crystals left behind by my brother is 60! You all wish to get them? Hmph, in such chaos, whoever dares to cross the line... I’ll use him to set an example to the rest!”

In a space that was distant from earth.

The quiet space, an ancient existence.

Suddenly...

The space begin to warp like waves, at the same time a disc shaped silver grey ship flew out, the waves in the space began to dissipate, this ship was floating in that space.

“Captain, captain, we’ve escaped, we’ve escaped!”

“Haha, we’ve escaped. Haha.”

A few humans within the ship were shouting excitedly, speaking one of the countless human universe languages.

The control room of the ship.

Eight crew members were extremely excited, standing in front of the main controls, wearing silver grey battle uniforms, heights at an average of 1.9m, tall and handsome, their ears were pointy at the tips. One with red pupils shining, a handsome middle aged man, he was the scout ship’s captain.

“I’d never expect there’d be a wormhole here.” The captain revealed a demonic smile, “When the ship’s B grade power crystal was depleted, it shouldn’t have been able to travel in the universe anymore. In a last ditch attempt, it managed to dive into an asteroid field, and, and within it actually dove into a wormhole. Haha, this wormhole portal, who knows how many light years

away. Unless that bunch of assholes, within that vast asteroid field managed to enter the same area, otherwise, they would never be able to catch up to us."

"Atuka." The captain shouted.

"Captain." A small child figure appeared on the control screen, shouting back sharp and crisp.

"Hurry and record the location of the wormhole, our star maps totally missed that marker. Obviously, the entire Black Dragon Mountain Empire doesn't know of this wormhole." The captain was excited, "After that, determine our current location and immediately inform the clan."

"Yes."

The child figure on the screen shouted loudly.

"Oh!!!" A sudden sharp voice shouted, "Captain, this is the void district of the milky way!!!"

"What?" the captain was shocked.

"The void district, through the universe travel, the one with no way to make a marker, no way to enter, the void district." The AI system child shouted.

“Haha, haha…We’ve struck gold, we’ve struck gold with this.”

The captain was extremely excited, “Depart, let us depart.”

A very very long time ago, this district was originally controlled by the Silverblue Empire. However, ever since it was taken over by an incredibly strong warrior, that warrior even went into the ‘dark universe’ and buried this star field’s space marker. There was absolutely no way to enter this star field.

30,000 years ago, there were stories of how this warrior had fallen, this void district thus became a leaderless place.

But the Silverblue Empire, along with the mighty Black Dragon Mountain Empire, none of them could find this marker and enter this starfield.

Who would have expected…

That this, they would actually find a new wormhole and enter this star field.

Earth, deep in the pacific ocean.

“Who would have thought the three natural techniques were like that.”

“I can return, I can see Xu Xin, I can see my future children.” Luo

Feng was extremely excited.

Roar!

Under the sea, that dark black Golden Horned Beast raised its head and let out a low roar, the roar created waves that rushed out and dispersed, rippling into the surrounding sea creatures, causing many of the creatures to get shocked and explode.

“Luo Feng, according to your natural talents, I’ve already determined your training route.” Babata said, “You should focus on the special technique <Deity of the World> and the normal technique <Absolute Space>, these two techniques are compatible with your natural talents, so they’ll be extremely powerful.”

Chapter 3 – Inherited Techniques

After Luo Feng learned about the three inherited kinds of techniques and the fact that he was able to return, he was in an extremely good mood.

"《Deity of the World》 and 《Absolute Space》?" Luo Feng immediately thought of the effects and requirements for two techniques he read about.

"《Absolute Space》, is an extremely messed up technique, the kind of technique that people around the universe would go crazy for. The only thing about it is that only Golden Horned Beasts can directly practice them.

The technique was split into three stages!

The first stage, is called 'Arc of Light'.

The second stage, is called 'Ever-changing'.

The third stage, is called 'Teleportation'.

The main requirement to learn this technique is——a crazy level of comprehension and practice! You need to practice it a lot to get used to it. And only after you practice it enough…… can you have a chance to comprehend it.

This technique is mainly about bursts of speed!

According to the technique's theory——"even if we say someone who steps into the Universe level one stage can fly at a speed of at most 500 km/s, that speed is reached only after the fighter accelerates over a long enough distance. As for that fighter's instantaneous burst of speed, it is way, way lower than 500 km/s"

"In a battle, bursts of speed is more important than your overall speed! To be able to instantly charge forward, change directions, stop, and go backwards!"

Luo Feng understood this principle too.

Just like a race car on the highway. Maybe it can accelerate to 300 km/h, but how fast can it accelerate in 0.1 seconds? It takes time to reach its maximum speed!

Humans accelerate faster than race cars.

But in terms of bursts of speed, it doesn't even come close to their maximum flying speed.

"Teleportation man, teleportation! LUO FENG, TELEPORTATION!" Babata was extremely excited, "Even your teacher, who was an Undying fighter, wasn't able to teleport!"

"So....." Luo Feng said helplessly, "This《Absolute Space》is hard to learn!".

Even someone as powerful as the master of Yun Mo planet couldn't teleport. It isn't hard to imagine how hard it would be to teleport.

And even the technique's description says it.....

For the first level, if you work hard and long enough, you might have hope in learning it.

For the second level, even though Golden Horned Beasts live ten times longer than human Sector Lords, most of the Golden Horned Beasts that try to learn the second stage of《Absolute Space》end up stuck on a certain step. Very, very few manage to complete most of the second stage's 'Ever-changing'.

As for the third level,'Teleportation'?

That's basically a legend! Extraordinarily difficult! Hard work, comprehension, luck, etc. are all required.

"Luo Feng! You don't understand how valuable it is!" said Babata in a hurry, "What kind of technique is this? Just a simple burst of speed? NO! This is a technique that lets you comprehend the essence of the laws of space itself! Your teacher didn't have such a technique and had to work bitterly by himself. If he had this technique, he might've attained the incredible technique of Teleportation"

“And once someone has the ability to teleport, damn, it would be extremely difficult to kill that guy. If your teacher was able to teleport, he wouldn’t have died” continued Babata.

Luo Feng smiled: “I said it is hard to learn, not that I wouldn’t learn it”

“Oh, HAHA.....”

Babata laughed loudly, “Luo Feng, this technique not only improves your body technique, it even increases your flying speed! And—— once you merge it with《Deity of the World》, oh,《Deity of the World》is even more messed up than《Absolute Space》, even more messed up!”.

It indeed was messed up!

Luo Feng was clear on the requirements and effects of《Deity of the World》. This technique was one of the 18 special techniques in the inherited memory. In terms of value, effectiveness, efficiency, it is indeed better than《Absolute Space》. But these 18 ‘special techniques’ aren’t necessarily..... better than the regular techniques!

The only thing special about them was how harsh the training methods of these 18 special techniques are. How were they harsh?

One, there were extremely complicated training requirements. If you don’t meet some of the requirements, then it doesn’t matter

how much hard work you put in.

Two, there are shortcuts! But the requirements for these shortcuts are extraordinarily strict!

Three, only Golden Horned Beasts can learn them!

The 3,199 regular techniques were created by the generations of Golden Horned Beasts or inspired by the techniques of humans, automatons, and the other vast number of species. Only ‘Golden Horned Beasts’ can learn these techniques, but the techniques themselves came from other races. Other races also have similar techniques. Even though they might differ in some ways, the difference isn’t too great.

However!

These 18 special techniques are purely for ‘Golden Horned Beasts’! Even if you spread them around, other races won’t be able to change or learn them.

《Deity of the World》, is also split into three stages!

The first stage counts as ‘beginner’. The second stage counts as ‘advanced’, and the third stage is ‘ultimate’.

Basically, 《Deity of the World》 is a special technique that allows the Golden Horned Beast to change its body size! Being able to ‘shrink’ and ‘enlarge’, is an extremely scary ability. For example, if

a ‘Golden Horned Beast’ is 180 meters long, its weight won’t change even after it shrinks. This means its density increases greatly!

The density of its bones increase! The density of its muscles increase! Its claws, horn, etc. become much sharper and tougher!

A punch with 100 kg of force.

Compared to a piercing needle with 100 kg of force. The difference of power between them is like the sky and the earth!

So.....

After shrinking, the Golden Horned Beast’s claws become even more horrifying, and the piercing power of its horn become even more shocking!

That’s the shrinking part, so what about the enlarging part?

Becoming bigger won’t increase your battle ability, however..... if a giant that is 10,000 meters tall randomly takes a step, then no matter how hard a regular human of equivalent strength tries, he won’t be able to catch up.

The advantage of becoming big is——

You can fly faster!

After a 180 meter long Golden Horned Beast becomes 1,800 meters, then the beast is practically a floating island. Its scaly wings are 10 times bigger than before! One flap from its wings can increase its speed much more than before!

In the first stage of《Deity of the World》, your body can enlarge or shrink by a factor of three. Your strength can reach at most three times more than what it was before.

In the second stage, it becomes factor of nine! And your strength can also multiply by a factor of nine!

In the third stage? You can already become as big or as small as you want. However, your strength can at most go up by a factor of 36! Shrinking by a factor of 36 times, 100 times, 1,000 times, will all be the same..... because multiplying your strength by a factor of 36 via body size is already a limit. When you shrink even more, the power of your body starts to lower too, so your battle ability won't go up.

Of course, even though we say you can become as big or as small as you want, you can't become infinitely big or infinitely small. The legendary limit is 10,000 times! Which is to say, a 10 km long Golden Horned Beast can shrink to one meter. And it can enlarge to a length of 10,000 km!

Of course.....

The third stage of《Deity of the World》is way harder than the

third stage of《Absolute Space》! According to the records in the inherited memory, only the Golden Horned Beast that created this technique was able to reach the third stage. As for the others, after countless years and generations of Golden Horned Beasts, none of them were able to reach the third stage.

Most of the Golden Horned Beasts in the past stayed at the first stage.

It was rare for Golden Horned Beasts to even reach the second stage!

Because, this technique was just seriously messed up!

For example, powerful Sector Lord level nine stage fighters have reached the limits of their battle capabilities and don't differ from each other by much. Only an extreme few are able to stand out.

However,《Deity of the World》allows the Golden Horned Beast to multiply its strength even more from what it originally has! How can people not be jealous of that!

Since.....

Golden Horned Beasts are already born with a talent, 'Enhance'!

"Luo Feng, the three talents you are born with is the training talent, 'Swallow', the second is the battle talent, 'Enhance', and the third is the life saving talent 'Clone'" said Babata. Back when

the Golden Horned Beast was heavily injured by the ‘b6 laser cannon’, it used its ‘Enhance’ technique to increase its speed! The attack power of its golden horn also increased!

Since it was born with this talent, its effectiveness won’t change!

“Your enhancing talent combined with the shrinking from《Deity of the World》can cause your battle ability to be amplified multiple times!”

“Your enhancing talent combined with the enlarging from《Deity of the World》can cause your speed to be amplified multiple times!”

Babata continued, “And《Absolute Space》is your dodging and escaping technique. In the beginning,《Absolute Space》only helps your dodging abilities. However, after that, it increases your comprehension of the laws of space itself. As long as you continue to learn, your flying speed will increase even more! The projectiles launched from the golden horn will also increase in power”

“So, the enhancing talent and these two techniques can assist each other, therefore maximizing their effects” said Babata.

“Damn, that is just…” Babata couldn’t help but to sigh, “way too messed up”

Luo Feng laughed.

Indeed, but that also meant that these two techniques were extremely hard to learn. 《Absolute Space》 is acceptable. Even though it is hard to learn, many Golden Horned Beasts in the past were able to enter the second stage. But tons of Golden Horned Beasts were stuck on the first stage of 《Deity of the World》.

However, Luo Feng was clear.

Having such good techniques is dangerous too! So the number of Golden Horned Beasts is extremely small, even less than the amount of Undying level fighters!

In the universe, there are a total of 12 blood lineages out of the space beasts comparable to the Golden Horned Beast! And out of the countless number of races, some special lifeforms have special techniques that can rival the techniques of the Golden Horned Beast! The large number of humans also have plenty of techniques.

Even Luo Feng's teacher, 'Master of Yun Mo planet', has the super powerful technique 《Soul Seal》, which can transform fighters into servants!

You're talented?

Okay, I'll implant the 'soul seal' into your soul when you're weak and transform you into an extremely loyal servant! No matter how talented you are, you're only going to be my servant and bodyguard.

So.....

Luo Feng was clear, you cannot underestimate any powerful fighter.

As for the Golden Horned Beasts three talents, the training talent ‘Swallow’ can absorb large amounts of metal into its ‘inner world’ and can even directly swallow lifeforms weaker than it. However, the inner world will automatically stop absorbing things when threatened. For example, just like when Hong released large amounts of metal and bombs.

The battle talent ‘Enhance’ causes speed and battle ability to soar up. Of course, this comes with a price.

The life saving talent ‘Clone’. In the Star traveler level, you can have one clone. In the Universe level, you can have your second clone. In the Sector Lord level, you can have your third clone. In other words..... Golden Horned Beasts can only have three clones in total. And each of these clones is an individual existence that can train themselves.

The universe is fair. This extremely rare race that is about to go extinct has been granted a life saving talent!

As for the ‘Ice Mountain Beast’ in the 12 lineages, their life saving talent is ‘transformation’, where they can change their appearance to anything they want.

Chapter 4 – Nurturing, Birth

The natural survival technique, creating a second body, is not as simple as just creating a puppet. It required going through the internal world and nurturing the body, just like a woman being pregnant with children, just like the legends say an egg gave birth to the creator Pangu. One theory, through the nurturing of the internal world, gradually allowing the form to evolve into an embryo…one step at a time, until it finally matures.

The Golden Horned Beast in its life could have up to three bodies, one during the Star traveller stage, the second one during the Universe stage and the third one during the Sector Lord stage.

As the created bodies can also gradually train, there was no question about it, the first body was definitely the most important!

That was why, choosing the race and bloodline too was important.

As the Golden Horned Beast's first body, they would normally choose very good races and bloodlines. This was because the conditions to create the embryo were very low…just a strand of hair or a drop of blood would do, as long as it contained a trace of the genes and such materials, they would suffice.

"Luo Feng, you are sure, to make your first body as a human from earth?" Babata couldn't help but ask, "Just a strand of hair can be used to begin the nurturing, later on, you will definitely be able to find powerful races of humans, like the Manka people etc.

Possessing them would be hard, but finding their hair would be very easy, with some surgery, they can be made to look like your old self, it would be very easy to do."

"I'm sure!"

"My first body will be a human from Earth." Luo Feng said, "And, I'll be using my own body to begin the nurturing!"

The nurturing stage was extremely demanding.

This was because, the body that will eventually be nurtured, had to be placed within the Golden Horned Beast's internal world and worked on from scratch. And the entity that goes in would be killed immediately! Unless, it had reached the Sector Lord level, where the internal world was exactly similar to the physical world, only that way could a living entity enter the internal world.

Earlier, the Golden Horned Beast could have decided that Earth's humans and creatures weren't worth one of its bodies, hence it hadn't begun nurturing anything.

And Luo Feng, he began immediately.

Within the Golden Horned Beast's body.

With a diameter of over 20cm, filled with countless complex golden engravings around the glowing crystal, this crystal ball, was the core, or also known as the Space core, World core, Spirit

core. This core contained the Golden Horned Beast's core existence!

Even if its head was blown off, its body destroyed, as long as the core and the spirit was ok, it wouldn't die.

Within the core.

It was as vast as space, at a particular spot, there was a dazzling glow of light, a sphere glowing like a star, gently rotating on its own. This...was formed from Luo Feng's accepted soul imprint from his teacher and the Swallowing Beast's soul put together!

This was a star shaped into a sphere, it was also the Soul core.

This meant...Luo Feng's spirit reader level and reached the Star level 1! As for the Golden Horned Beast's original power, they were all gathered in the horn on it's forehead! The golden horn, was the Golden Horned Beast's most sturdy location, it's also where its power is stored. That was why when its natural techniques were unleashed, its golden horn was the first to light up!

"The internal world." Luo Feng could feel it after his soul had melded 100% with his new body...

Within the vast space inside the core, there seemed to be a formless connection joined to another world.

The internal world.

This was a vast land, one that had an area of 10 square km, and up in the air in that area was a golden fog, surrounding it too was an endless golden fog. The land itself was golden, there were also hills, mountains that were all made from metal.

It was a metal world!

Luo Feng controlled this world!

“Babata, release my previous body.” Luo Feng thread of thought was linked to Babata outside, and using the swallowing natural ability, he immediately ingested his own body in.

Hu!

On one of the hills in the metal land, a body appeared in mid air, it was Luo Feng’s body! As a Star Traveller level 3 warrior, only a couple of months didn’t have that much effect on his body, it was just rigid and freezing cold. As for the items on his body, they were taken off long ago, the cloud contact vine? As it was unable to enter the storage space, it had been in the outside world guarding since.

“Natural ability, ‘Nurture’!”

Luo Feng’s thoughts moved.

Rumble...

The entire metal continent began to vibrate, Luo Feng's old body began to be moved by a formless energy, floating high up in the sky of the metal world. This was a move the Golden Horned Beast could only do three times in its life. Only when its internal world had reached the Universe level would he be able to do it the second time. Now, Luo Feng had already used his first natural ability, beginning the nurturing stage!

"Chi..." Energy vaporized.

Floating up high in the sky, Luo Feng's body immediately vaporized.

"Huhu," what originally was up high in the sky of the metal continent, the large amount of golden fog was madly rushing towards the center, forming the genetic remains from Luo Feng's vaporized body into a round golden egg.

"Begin!"

Ever since Luo Feng came to know of his natural ability, plus information concerning his skills, he found out about the amount of time required for the nurturing which was directly linked to his own power! The stronger the internal world, the faster its nurturing. And the lower the level of the genetic remains, the easier the nurturing! With Luo Feng's current Star level 1 internal world, the nurturing speed was definitely not fast.

A few high level bloodlines, powerful races, may even require a few hundred years to 1000 years to nurture.

Why so long?

This was because nurturing was akin to giving birth to an infant. For example a Sector Lord Golden Horned Beast, obtaining a Sector Lord human hair, producing a body...it was producing a Sector Lord level warrior body!

Its genetic makeup was completely duplicated! Its body was completely duplicated!

To train and reach the level of a sector lord requires tens of thousands of years, to produce one within a few hundred years was already impressive. The catch for nurturing however was...it couldn't produce something stronger than itself! The most it could do was one with comparable strength.

One day later.

"Hm, looking at the speed, I estimate a couple of years for the nurturing to complete." Luo Feng understood, when that time came, he would have a body with similar strength before, with a genetic makeup of 99.9999% similar to before.

The only thing...

A very small difference, this was a body nurtured from the

internal world, hence its genetic makeup had a few extremely small changes, however, even with a DNA test, it wouldn't even be discovered, the differences between the original and the latter.

In a space in the universe, a large star was like a fireball, constantly burning.

A grey universe ship was swiftly flying past an asteroid with a diameter of 5km.

Within the ship.

A resting room, a handsome middle aged man was sitting in a chair with his eyes closed, his watch communicator's light was glowing, obviously...this captain's consciousness had entered the universe's virtual network, this space was an extremely important existence.

The universe was incomparably vast.

However, using the universe virtual network, even if the distance was tens of millions away, one could meet and discuss within the network. It was 100% virtual.

"Ding." The communicator's light dimmed out.

The handsome middle aged man opened his eyes.

“Even though we’ve spent quite a bit of money, we have managed to buy a star map of the milky way from a few hundred years ago, this void district.” The handsome man was very excited, “Within a 1000 light year area, this is only a millionth of the Silverblue Empire’s territory, luckily, this area has two planets with life.”

“Two planets with life? We’ve really struck it this time.”

“Hmm, the closest planet is, going by the ship’s inferior light speed, requires two years and eight months to get there. The other planet with life, however requires 136 years.” The handsome man was somewhat unsatisfied, even though his life had reached over ten thousand years, wasting up to 100 years was too much.

However, to earn two planets with life, this was hitting a goldmine!

“Two years eight months!”

“Let’s hope there’s some worthy goods there, selling to the slave merchants too can get us big money. If there’s nothing good, then, we can just sell the entire planet.” The handsome man was thinking, his eyes lit with excitement.

A planet with life, that was extremely valuable!

Time passed.

The internal world was nurturing the body, Luo Feng had begun

his studies on the <Absolute Space> and <Deity of the World>, also using his claws and swallowing large amounts of metal. Actually, the swallowing relied on the core to activate, that was why, whether it was using the claws, mouth, or tail, they all could activate the Swallowing ability.

It was just the Golden Horned Beast preferred to use its mouth.

And Luo Feng, he felt using his claws was enough.

That scout ship, flying in the universe, was quickly heading towards Earth's star field.

On Earth.

Year 2060, September 12th.

"Attention all, our Jiang Nan's no.1 hospital is currently housing one of our proud eight heroes from Yang Zhou, Luo Feng's wife Xu Xin. From what we know, the ward she's staying is the most luxurious ward in the hospital, just the fees alone from the ward requires 2 million Hua Xia dollars."

"Every month's fee goes up to as high as 12 million dollars, if you add the costs of the doctors, staff and others etc, I estimate the cost of the ward Xu Xin is staying at every month to be worth more than tens of millions! According to the news, Jiang Nan's number one hospital's head said, Luo Feng's wife Xu Xin's cost for staying at this hospital has been discounted to the lowest, a full 30%

discount!”

“Dear viewers, our reporter has already reached Jiang Nan’s no.1 hospital, according to news, Xu Xin’s delivery might occur within the next few days. And according to our sources, who managed to talk to the doctors in charge of the case, acquiring secret information…Xu Xin has twins in her belly, the previous news of the triplets were only rumors.”

Year 2060, September 15, Morning 8:15am.

Xu Xin was wheeled into the delivery room.

The number of news reporters and paparazzi outside Jiang Nan’s no. 1 hospital was shocking, to a point that even reporters from other countries were there too. One must know…out of the eight heroes before, only Luo Feng’s wife Xu Xin was pregnant, and with Luo Feng’s sacrifice, now that the children were being born, it garnered the attention of the entire world.

Countless citizens from all over the world, even normal old men and women were all guessing…

Luo Feng was already a prodigy and genius of such a level, what about his children? What would they be like in the future?

Even though they had yet to be born, Luo Feng’s children had already become a focal point!

The Golden Horned Beast which had reached a body length of 230m, became a beam of light leaving a golden trail, swiftly flashing about in the deep sea, he was practicing the <Absolute Space>.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng.” Babata shouted anxiously.

“What’s the matter?” Luo Feng stopped.

His enormous dark golden pupils filled with curiosity.

“Happy occasion, big happy occasion. Xu Xin has just given birth to two children, both children and mother are safe! Your big son weighs 3.7kg, your second son weighs 3.03kg.” Babata said excitedly.

Chapter 5 – Safety Amulet

After becoming the Swallowing Beast, his power rose very quickly, however…after getting completely used to his new body, Luo Feng's soul was unable to fully avoid the Swallowing Beast's natural brutality, savagery, and ice cold demeanor. Having spent a good half year of loneliness, the natural brutality in his bloodline had seeped in…

This made Luo Feng much more cold and savage than before.

But after hearing this news, Luo Feng felt warm blood rushing through his entire body again: "I have children now, I have children now!" That sense of excitement nourished his soul.

"Soon, soon, just another eight more months. My body's nurturing will be complete. When that time comes, I'll be able to return and see them."

Far away at the bottom of the Pacific ocean, Luo Feng who had taken over the body of the Golden Horned Beast was extremely emotional. At that time, the entire world's media were all reporting on the new born children.

One, Luo Feng's family now had descendants, wealth comparable to that of countries.

Two, the two children's genetic makeup were definitely very good, their futures were limitless.

Three, with the eight heroes' sacrifice, the birth of two new children made the whole atmosphere more special.

……

Year 2060 November 22, morning.

"Ping Ping and Little Hai, be good." Xu Xin, who was donned in a white cotton dress, gently kissed the two babies in her bosom. The two babies' eyes shined brightly as they looked at their mother, laughing, their tiny hands waving randomly.

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan laughed as they received the two babies.

"Xu Xin ah, we'll take Ping Ping and Little Hai for a little walk in the district." Gong Xin Lan laughed.

"Alright mother." Xu Xin nodded.

Watching as the grandparents of her children took them away, Xu Xin lightly closed the door of the room, walking towards the ward's balcony. On the balcony lay a desk that held a notebook computer. Xu Xin sat in the chair, the warm winter sunshine shining on her body, it was very comforting. Xu Xin was smiling, moving the chair closer to the desk.

She took out a pen from the drawer.

“Since I was young till now, with my family’s teachings, I’ve always held myself to the highest of expectations. Also, in the end, I’ve also enjoyed opening my own business with some workers and conquering the business world.”

“However, constantly working for my own company too is tiring.”

“Luckily, I had Luo Feng.”

“Beside Luo Feng, I didn’t feel any stress, he helped shelter me from the elements, allowing me to give my all into the business. I really enjoyed those days, I also wished we could have continued living those days forever…only, I never thought…I don’t blame anybody. However, honestly, in this world, I don’t have any reason to live.”

“What’s the reason for us living?”

“Love? Family? Career?”

“I don’t know!”

“Without Luo Feng here, love has forever left me, career? The business’s troubles, I have no one to complain to, even with success, there’s no one to enjoy it with. Without him by my side, even if the business is a success, it’s all for naught, there’s no more

color.”

“Whenever I dream at night, I often cry.”

“Finally, I’ve made my decision.”

“I feel very relaxed, so relaxed, my spirit feels a sense of calm I’ve never felt before.”

“Dad, mom, brother, grandmother and father, don’t be hurt, because right now I’m very happy.”

As she finished writing, she put down the pen, Xu Xin looked up through the window into the little district, Luo Hong Guo and his wife were hugging the babies, the babies were laughing happily.

“Little Hai, Ping Ping,” Xu Xin said softly, “You are only two months old, you don’t know much about anything, I believe when you grow older, you probably won’t remember much from this time.”

Xu Xin opened the notebook computer and picked a tune.

It was an old song from before the great nirvana.

“The seconds and minutes tick by on one’s heart.

My eyes glimmer and shine emptily.

My heart jumps and beats with the motion.

I ask myself just how much and how deep you love me.

……”

That mellow and soothing sound, with a sense of bashfulness, resounded within the room, this was an sold song from before the great nirvana…Wang Fei’s <I’ll Marry You Tomorrow >.

“I’ll Marry You Tomorrow…”

“I’ll Marry You Tomorrow…”

The music resounded in the room, Xu Xin gently crooned with the music, walking to a side dresser and retrieving a wedding dress…

Putting on makeup.

Wearing the wedding gown.

Xu Xin gently sang along to the song, her smile sweet and pure.

From young, she had grown up in a big family with constant

competition and pressure, until she met Luo Feng, where she was finally relieved from the competitive pressure. Luo Feng was just like a mountain, a large tree, sheltering her from the elements. Xu Xin didn't like her home from before, it was filled with materialistic desires, power, wealth and competition.

She enjoyed living with Luo Feng...doing her own business and enjoying it with the ones she loved.

Sharing pain and suffering with the ones she loved.

Sharing happiness with the ones she loved.

Those were the good days... and now, with Luo Feng gone, she felt the world had gone black and white, without any other colors. What's the point of carrying on? What's the point of working hard? Victory without anyone to celebrate with, pain and suffering with no one to complain with.

.....

Dressed up as a new bride, wearing the wedding gown, Xu Xin smiled, quietly sitting on the bed.

"....."

"Disturbing all of my dreams."

“I’ll marry you tomorrow.”

“I’ll marry you tomorrow.”

……

The sweet music seeped into one’s spirit, Xu Xin took out a porcelain bottle from the side, pouring out a couple of pills from within, smiling as she gently ate them, drinking some water to swallow them.

Closing her eyes.

Xu Xin, dressed in the wedding gown quietly lay down, he fingers gently massaging the nameless ring on her finger…steel ring.

“I’ll marry you tomorrow.”

“I’ll marry you tomorrow.”

“……”

The music continued resounding in the room.

On her neck, she wore the safety amulet Luo Feng had given her, that silver amulet surface’s engravings began to glow lightly, gradually getting brighter, the silver amulet began to gently float

up, emanating a dreamy white light below, enveloping Xu Xin's body.

Dressed in the white wedding gown with a white light enveloping her entire body, Xu Xin looked just like an angel.

Suddenly...

The silver safety amulet slowly began to crack open, for a brief moment, the white light became extra thick, without a sound or trace, it completely vaporized into nothing, the thick white light seeped into Xu Xin's body. Her skin suddenly became sparkling and translucent, more shiny and glossy than before, beautiful and alluring.

It was an extremely beautiful, earth shaking beauty.

All of the cascading white light slowly got absorbed by Xu Xin, the appearance of her body seemed to have a layer of light surrounding it.

This scene lasted 26 minutes.

The glowing light was all absorbed into her body and everything returned to normal!

The entire room!

Was extremely silent! Xu Xin remained quietly lying down in the bed, as though nothing had happened before.

Suddenly...

Her eyebrows moved, she opened her eyes.

Deep under the pacific ocean.

A large amount of metal remains were placed under the sea, a 280m long golden horned beast was just beside this heap of metal, its large dark golden pupils were filled with ice cold savagery, it extended its claw, a formless space rippled around the surroundings, immediately, the large heap of metal remains vanished into nothing.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng.” Babata’s clear crisp voice sounded, he seemed extremely anxious.

“What’s the matter?” Luo Feng asked.

“It’s Xu Xin, Xu Xin committed suicide!” Babata shouted.

“What!”

Luo Feng felt his mind go blank, blood rushing to his head.

Deep underwater, the golden horned beast's golden pupils were suddenly dazzling, rage and anxiety were mixed in them, "This is not something to joke about!"

"I'm not joking, it's real." Babata said.

"You bastard, didn't you say...Xu Xin would never do something like that? I initially said we could use the internet, making you imitate my voice and speaking with her, putting her heart at ease. What did you say? You said Xu Xin wouldn't believe and would only think I left an AI to do so after I died. Without seeing me in person, she wouldn't believe. Alright, I admit what you said had logic!"

"However, you promised me, Xu Xin would never do something like that. Now..." Luo Feng's mind felt like it was about to explode as he spoke.

"Don't worry." Babata, after seeing Luo Feng's rage, knew the joke had gone too far, "I haven't finished, she isn't dead, not dead at all."

Luo Feng was startled.

"What's going on?" Luo Feng was getting angrier.

"It's like this: Xu Xin indeed committed suicide, destroying her body completely, her soul was also almost vaporized. However, the couple amulet I gave you before actually saved her. I don't know

what she actually did, whether it's bad luck or fortune. This lovers' amulet's real name is 'Eternal Love'. Babata said.

"Eternal love?" Luo Feng had acquired quite a bit of inherited memories, but he didn't know what this eternal love was.

"You don't know what Eternal love is, but you at least know about the eternal body right?" Babata said.

"Yes." Luo Feng said.

Man's life, a Star traveller's life span was a little more than 1000 years, a Star level's span is one era, a Universe level would be ten eras, a Domain Lord would be one hundred eras and a Sector Lord would be 1000 eras! Only an Undying being would never ever die.

From the Student level 9 to the Star traveller level, there's a jump in the life span.

From the Star traveller level to the Star level, there's also another jump.

Every critical point, there would be a jump in the life span.

And within the same categories, for example a Star traveller level 1 to a Star traveller level 9, the power difference is in the hundreds of times, but their life levels and spans are the same.

During the life level jumps…one's entire body will go through a total reform.

This was an evolution of the body!

Man's soul can live very very long, normally, they can live for 1000 eras. On the other hand, their bodies' have limits, even with treatment and all, they will all still die of old age at a certain point.

A Star traveller body can maintain itself for about 1000 years or more, a Star level can go up to one era, only until the Sector Lord level, they have their own internal world, with that they can absorb outside energy sources, constantly reenergizing their physical body, never aging. When that occurs, then it's all up to the soul.

The soul's limit is 1000 eras.

That's why…

A Sector Lord's life span is 1000 eras.

Only after surpassing the Sector Lord, reaching the level jump for the soul! Will one be eternal!

Star traveller, Star, Universe, Domain Lord, Sector Lord, each life level jump is the critical point.

As for the Domain Lord to Undying.

The jump is for the soul!

……

In the vast universe, there are some special races, naturally born with ‘eternal bodies’; their bodies never age, only when their souls age and die, will they die. Their bodies are known as the eternal bodies.

Chapter 6 – Half a Year Later

“The universe is fair.”

“Granting them eternal bodies, but also making them unable to get much stronger through training. If they wanted to train, the only way for them is to leave their original bodies and steal someone else’s.” Babata said, “Even though they are unable to train, think of the lure of eternity, Luo Feng, you’ll understand. Just like the children of Undying beings, they are at the Universe level, but their life spans are only ten eras. They would of course be willing to put their own children’s souls in the eternal bodies.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Without a way to raise their powers, they can live to 1,000 eras, which equates to 10,081,000 years, it was indeed a very attractive thing.

“The Undying beings in the universe or even some of the great empires, through research on the various races of eternal bodies have acquired some unique and special apparatus. After, through storing these items in the frozen silver, they became these little amulets, which became what is known through the universe as Eternal Love. It takes one eternal body to make one of these.” Babata said.

Luo Feng immediately understood…

The naturally born races with eternal bodies, were in fact very

pitiful in the universe.

"In the universe, the ones with power and rank were many."

"Countless people chase after longer life spans."

"Repossession is one kind of technique, but one, that technique is extremely rare, and two it is really hard to train. Luo Feng you too relied on your teacher's soul imprint, only with that supporting you were you able to use the skill." Babata said, "to actually acquire the manual and technique, it's definitely not easier than buying an Eternal Love amulet."

"To possess another body, normally that body has to first be weaker than the original." Babata said.

"The most important thing is, repossession has risks, one might end up self destructing."

"Those with Eternal Love are set, just one amulet and your body transforms into the eternal body. Of course, after becoming an eternal body, one would be unable to train anymore." Babata said, "If one wanted to train, one has to throw away the eternal body and enter another."

"These unique items, can only be obtained from the ones born with the eternal bodies. Someone like Xu Xin who acquired her body from the change, we can never get such items from her." Babata said.

Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

Otherwise, a person who acquired the eternal body and lived for 10 million years can just allow another person to get the items from his body again? That was simply just a dream.

“You are saying, Xu Xin now has a lifespan of 1000 eras?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

“Right, also, her body is undying. In order to kill her, you’d have to destroy her soul.” Babata said, while the Eternal Love is extremely precious, with your teacher’s status, storing a few of them wasn’t difficult. For you to wear an Eternal Love was something he had planned long ago.”

“Even if the flesh body is destroyed, with the Eternal Love reconstructing your body, it’ll naturally reform. This was the ultimate life saving trump card.”

“However, I was worried with you wearing the Eternal Love, not feeling any sense of danger and thus not training hard enough. That’s why I haven’t told you its effects.”

“I never thought you’d actually sacrifice your own body and use your soul to attack! Even the Eternal Love could not save you.”

Luo Feng laughed and relaxed.

That's good too, it was some good from a misfortune. Afterall, Luo Feng was very clear...Xu Xin would never become a fighter, even with the spirits of nature, Mu Ya Crystals etc, countless treasures and they could probably force her into the Star traveller stage, but that was it. And now, even though she would be unable to train, she had an eternal body.

Yang Zhou city Ming Yue district, Luo Feng's house.

Xu Xin was sitting at the desk, shocked.

"What's wrong?" Xu Xin's mind was in a whirl.

Suddenly, the opened notebook's screen had a new message alert. What was weird was...the message automatically opened.

"Xu Xin, I am Luo Feng."

The words at the top of the message shocked Xu Xin, her eyebrows creased...She was very clear that the elites of the world had AIs, even Luo Feng had them! A few emails, calls, footages etc were not enough for her to believe, because her brother Xu Gang used to do this sort of thing.

"I know you are suspicious, however, when you just tried to commit suicide, the amulet I gave you before worked, that's why presently you are still alive. And that amulet should have

disappeared.”

Xu Xin was shocked, immediately rubbing her chest and looking down to see...

Indeed, the safety amulet was gone, all that was left was the chain. This made Xu Xin shocked, and pleasantly surprised!

She knew she had just killed herself, and yet now she was still alive, was this really Luo Feng? Luo Feng wasn’t dead?

“I know you are suspicious, however, in six months, in six months I will return home, the most I’d take will be seven months.”

“Alright, remember, don’t do silly things.”

“Luo Feng.”

Finishing up the message, Xu Xin felt her exhausted heart once again fill up with life, the originally black and white world was once again filled with color, her life once again filled with hope!

“Maybe it’s real, maybe it’s real.” To be resurrected after dying, this obviously made Xu Xin believe more, “six months, the most seven months?”

“I must tell father and mother, Luo Hua too, about this good

news.” Xu Xin was extremely excited.

……

That day, after Luo Feng’s family saw the message, even though they were shocked by Xu Xin’s attempt to commit suicide and reprimand her….. This filled everyone with hope again. While they suspected whether it was the doing of an AI, they would still patiently wait for another half a year.

Year 2061, March 9th. Night.

Night had fallen, Luo Feng’s family were having dinner, laughing.

“Father, mother, don’t push. It’s hard enough that I get to come home and have dinner with you all. Alright, I’ll tell you, this summer vacation, Zhen Nan and I will go register our marriage.” Luo Hua laughed, Luo Hua had just acquired another house in the Ming Yue district, after all his sister in law lived here, him living here too would be too crowded.

With his status, buying another house was simple, what’s more, he too was a fighter.

“That’s right.”

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan laughed, the two babies in the crib beside were climbing around, laughing and having fun.

“Why hasn’t Xu Xin returned?” Gong Xin Lan couldn’t help but gaze outside anxiously.

“Right now, Little Xin has dived into her work, it’s also a good thing.” Luo Hong Guo laughed, Gong Xin Lan nodded, right…if she tried to commit suicide again that would be bad.

Suddenly…

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan’s vision immediately blurred, Pu tong! Pu Tong! Pu Tong! The group of body guards outside the yard all collapsed. The two nannies within the house too collapsed, Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan had collapsed on the table, no movement.

Silence!

All that could be heard was the sound of the two babies.

“Who!” Luo Hua looked coldly outside.

“Mr Luo, how are you.”

Two men dressed in black western suits smiled as they walked in, as though they were returning home. One of them was a white man while the other resembled more of a southern Asian. The southern Asian man smiled, “Relax, they’ve only been put to sleep,

I haven't killed them."

"Two representatives making such a grand appearance, I wonder what's the matter?" Luo Hua said solemnly.

"Nothing, just taking a few things that belong to Star travellers, and things that normal people have no right to keep." The southern Asian man smiled, "Relax, I won't kill anybody, however...I hope you stay calm, the moment you order those metal robots out, I will immediately, to these people..."

"Boom!" He made an exaggerated expression, "Cause their souls to explode."

"Sago Nehru, you are the only Star traveller spirit reader in the world right now, do you have to do such things?" Luo Hua said solemnly, he knew, no matter how fast the robots were, they weren't as fast as a Spirit reader's thoughts.

Sago Nehru.

India's genius spirit reader, ever since Luo Feng and Eastbourne had fallen, Nehru, who had recently just broken through, was the only Star traveller level spirit reader left.

"There's a need, of course there is." Sago Nehru smiled, "Mr. Luo, I believe you know a bit about the current state of affairs of the world. Do you think...the treasures that Luo Feng left behind in your family will be left alone? Also, just leaving them in your

Luo family is a waste.”

“Hm, Mu Ya crystal?” Sago Nehru smiled, “they are actually hidden in a room underground?”

“Wow, 18 Mu Ya Crystals? And quite a few spirits of nature? What a big haul, Luo Feng’s haul was really big.” Sago Nehru was extremely surprised.

Luo Hua’s expression turned ashen.

He understood, the enemy was using his spirit energy to search.

“How do you control those metal robots?” Sago Nehru looked at Luo Hua.

“No one can control them.” Luo Hua shook his head, “Even I cannot, my brother left them an order to protect our family. They’ll always follow only his command.”

“Oh.”

Sago Nehru nodded, he understood.

Suddenly...

The underground door automatically opened, a briefcase floated

up, he extended his arm to grab it.

"Thanks."

Sago Nehru smiled, "I'll give you some advice, only with great power can you own such great treasures. Otherwise...Hehe, as for those robots, they are powerful. But they are after all just robots. Oh, even with a distance of a few hundred meters, I still can instantly destroy the souls of your family."

"So, don't do anything stupid."

"Wei Nuo, let's go." Sago Nehru turned and left, Representative Wei Nuo followed behind.

Luo Hua watched as they left, not daring to make a move.

The disc shaped battleship flew at least 300m away, even on the battleship, Sago Nehru's spirit attack could easily instantly kill all of the Luo Family.

"Bastard!"

Standing at the window, watching as the battleship left, Luo Hua's expression was ugly.

Luckily, he had split the 60 Mu Ya Crystals into several portions, storing them in different locations. These 18 crystals, were already

very shocking to the two representatives. Afterall, Hong and Thunder God had only acquired a total of about 10 crystals.

“What happened, what happened earlier?”

“What’s wrong with me?”

Bodyguards, nannies, Luo Hong Guo and others awoke, Luo Hua was helping them and the others, not telling what exactly happened.

There was no way…

Luo Hua could only admit, against fighters, the metal robots could still quickly resist! However, against a spirit reader and their spiritual attacks, the metal robots had no way to defend.

When the incident occurred, all of the conversation etc, were all heard by the metal robots and transmitted to Babata, naturally Luo Feng too knew of it!

“Wei Nuo? Sago Nehru?”

The golden horned monster which was over 300m long, deep in the ferocious ocean, its dark golden pupils were raging, “Babata, you said that they are now working with the fifth chairman Atkin, that cowardly turtle, keeping a low profile, even during the swallowing monster incident, he didn’t even show his face. Now he’s showing his ambition! I’ve always despised him, now…”

“Atkin! Sago Nehru!”

Luo Feng was extremely angry.

Being unable to visit his loved ones before, he was already very regretful. To think that Atkin and a few others, because of their greed actually dared play with their lives.

No matter his rage, Luo Feng had to endure! Even though the days of holding in his rage seemed like years.

Finally...

The first nurturing had succeeded, year 2061, June 2nd. That was the day Luo Feng would break out from his shell!

Chapter 7 – Luo Feng's Return

The golden fog engulfed a large hill, this was a hill totally made from metal.

In the air above the hill.

An oval shaped egg was floating.

"Ka, Ka." The egg shell began to crack open, an arm raised out from within, finally the egg fully split open. A completely nude, fit man with short black hair was floating in mid air, his eyes serene, whatever his gaze fell upon, seemed to be filled with a sense of fear.

At a height of 1.78m, even though he was on the thin side, his body seemed just like a well forged high grade well tempered steel, giving off a sense of immense power!

The man with the short black hair surveyed the golden land.

"This is my internal world?" The man's eyes were filled with wonder and curiosity.

Shua!

Everything suddenly vanished, at the same time...

Rumble!

The golden horned beast, covered completely in black scales, with a body length of 320 m suddenly appeared in the land.

Deep in the pacific ocean, the ferocious sea and undercurrent raged.

The golden horned beast suddenly vanished, at the same time, a completely nude man with black short hair appeared.

“Finally, I’ve finally reverted back.” Luo Feng’s eyes were filled with excitement that was hard to contain, “Core!” With a thought, he sensed within his body, clearly seeing his own heart through his chest, in between his lungs, right in the middle at the solar plexus spot, the core was spinning in place, filled with complex golden engravings, emitting a golden light.

This core was very very small.

Before, the Golden Horned Beast was 180m, this core’s diameter was only about 20cm or so. Now that Luo Feng had reverted to his human body, the core was barely a few millimeters.

“Genetic energy! Spiritual force!”

Luo Feng’s thoughts moved.

Rumble...

A large amount of golden fog flew into Luo Feng's body from within his internal world, swiftly gathering in his abdomen's center, swirling and gathering. With the large amount of metal characteristic fog from his internal world, one, two and finally three mini planets formed around his dan tian!

Star Traveller level 3!

Now, Luo Feng's body could only take so much, any more required him to first strengthen his body, raising his dan tian's ability to hold the energy.

"Rumble..."

At the same time, within the core, Luo Feng's soul which had reached the level 3 Star traveller level was madly absorbing the universe's energy. The moment it was received into the core, it was immediately sent to be refined, however it was only simple refining, reaching to the Star traveller level 5 and quickly leaving the core, flowing through his head and consciousness.

The ferocious wave of spirit energy continued to gather, change had began to happen, forming another spirit planet.

After spending a good half an hour, it finally stopped.

Within his consciousness...

A blood red planet, with five other planets orbiting around it, constantly rotating.

Star traveller 6!

“Luo Feng, your body is at the Star traveller level 4, however, your special ability before was the golden body, that’s why, your body’s sturdiness is comparable to a Star traveller level 4 fighter. It’s able to bear the power of a Star traveller level 6 Spirit reader, that’s his limit.” Babata said.

“Understood.”

Luo Feng smiled as he opened his eyes, beside him a liquid silver guard flew out, from that guard he received his storage ring, his spirit energy created a protective barrier in the sea, from within he retrieved a set of clothes to wear.

“Cloud contact.” Luo Feng looked far away.

Thousands of meters away in the sea, a blood red Cloud Contact Vine, even though it had shrunk smaller, it immediately flew towards Luo Feng! After recognizing its owner, the cloud contact vine...would follow him for life, the moment Luo Feng’s soul was destroyed, it too would die.

Shua!

The Cloud Contact Vine shrank and entered into Luo Feng's skin, vanishing. A wave of thoughts and emotions from the Cloud Contact Vine transmitted over: "Happy, happy..."

"Looks like, I'm the same as before." Luo Feng sighed, "However in essence, my soul's core is the core of the internal world.

His body was nurtured from the internal world.

So, Luo Feng's current body was similar to the Golden Horned Beast's body, their weakness was...the core carrying the soul and the internal world! Right now, even if Luo Feng's human head was blown off, he wouldn't die, all he needed was to expend energy and it would regrow, just like the Golden Horned Beast.

"Luo Feng, I gave you the choice of the other races and you had to choose a human."

"The Golden Horned Heast's body and evolution speed, will far exceed your Earth human body's evolution speed!"

"Even though the internal world has metal universe characteristics to provide, your body's genetics are too weak, even with a large amount of power, if it cannot withstand it, what happens then?" Babata was obviously still unsatisfied.

Luo Feng laughed.

He understood the logic, the Golden Horned Beast's growth

relied on the internal world, every time the internal world grew one level, the Golden Horned Beast would immediately absorb large amounts of energy, swiftly growing in a level too. That way... the Golden Horned Beast would always maintain the same speed with its internal world.

However, Luo Feng's body genetics, compared to the Golden Horned Beast, was far too inferior! It could not evolve at the same speed.

"It's ok, I can't be too greedy." Luo Feng laughed, "At least, I'm currently a Star traveller level 6 spirit reader!"

In his Earth human body, he was a Star traveller level 6 spirit reader.

The moment he switches to the Golden Horned Beast body, he becomes a Star level 3 Golden Horned Beast!

After more than a year, from a Star level 1 to a Star level 3. It was pretty fast, it would become slower as he grew, especially the critical point of breaking into the Universe level, that would take more time.

"Rumble!"

Luo Feng stepped on the soaring shuttle, swiftly breaking out of the ocean.

High up in the air.

Luo Feng was on the soaring shuttle, heading towards Europe, his expression cold.

“Luo Feng, after the incident with the Swallowing Beast, Earth’s strongest and elite have all fallen, the Palace of Wargods has shut down. The warriors have no leader, no one like Hong, Thunder God or you, who hold a sense of absolute power among the strong. That’s why, everything is in a mess currently.”

“And back then the fifth chairman Atkin has thus become the current strongest.”

“Atkin, Yan Hai, they were originally representatives from the HR Alliance, but ever since the European’s strongest, which was the HR’s strongest Eastbourne fell, Atkin was the biggest, he joined forces with Yan Hai and led a group of representatives. Be it blackmail, threatening or just using force, they quickly took over the HR Alliance.”

“Also, Atkin and Yan Hai have gotten Sago Nehru in. And Sago Nehru, as India’s genius, was naturally accepted into the Thunder Dojo and is currently one of their investigators.”

“According to my research, this is my report.”

“This power, Atkin was originally the fifth chairman, Yan Hai initially challenged this but failed, but his power is comparable to

Jia Yi. These two are very strong. Sago Nehru, is currently Earth's only Star traveller level spirit reader, he's also the genius I mentioned before that was beneath you."

Luo Feng's expression was cold.

"Regarding the organization that Atkin, Yan Hai and Sago Nehru are leading, they've become powerful! Under them are some other level 1 and 2 Star Traveller representatives. They are currently the Earth's leading powers.

"Under them is the Dojo of Limits! The Dojo of Limits has the most loyal three guards, who are very united!"

"Then there's the five great countries."

"Finally, the Thunder Dojo! Ever since Thunder God was comatosed, with Sago Nehru joining the dojo, the Thunder Dojo has had internal struggles and the situation is pretty serious."

Luo Feng was surprised with this news,

To control the HR Alliance while also influencing the Thunder Dojo, this power was indeed frightening!

"Relying on blackmail, force, murder or stealing of treasures, this power has established its powerful foundation! The countries all do not dare to offend them." Babata said.

Atkin was the most powerful fighter. Nehru was the most powerful spirit reader.

Also, Yan Hai who was closer to Atkin.

“Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi, Sokolov, their relatives haven’t suffered?” Luo Feng definitely did not forget, the five heroes who went along with him to battle the Golden Horned Beast.

“More or less, they haven’t been much better off, however, nobody dares to bully the families of the eight heroes! Only Mo Henderson’s family has had it worse, one died. According to media, they said it was a car accident.” Babata said.

Luo Feng’s expression became even colder.

The power struggle was extremely brutal. While it may seem peaceful on the surface, many have died behind the shadows with new people replacing them.

“The days have gotten better without new dangers and this new pile of garbage rises!” Luo Feng’s killing intent rose, from the influence of the Golden Horned Beast’s lineage and bloodline, the current Luo Feng was much more savage, “Back then we didn’t see them in times of crisis, now they’ve jumped out and taken over. Even the families of the heroes they’ve dared to threaten, taking away their treasures.”

“They deserve to die!”

“They deserve to die!!!” Luo Feng’s gaze was god, “Without a tiger in the mountain, the monkeys take over. Atkin? Yan Hai? Sago Nehru? All of you will die!”

At Star traveller level 3, Luo Feng had already surpassed the old heroes by killing the Grand Emperor monster and was on par with Hong and Thunder God.

And now, at Star traveller level 6...

Killing those people would be like stepping on ants!

Europe, Paris headquarter city, dawn.

Dressed in a western suit, with his all white hair neatly trimmed, Yan Hai was in a good mood as held a wine glass and sat on his villa’s 3rd level balcony.

“Hehe.”

Sniffing, Yan Hai seemed to enjoy the smell, closing his eyes and taking a sip.

“Exhilarating.” Yan Hai remarked as he enjoyed.

He enjoyed his current life, back during the Grand Nirvana period, he regarded the end of the world and that situation as the best life for the strong, he could live like an emperor. He had assembled beside him a group of savage and brutal helpers like him, however, Jia Yi that asshole, his sense of justice was too strong!

The two were huge rivals.

As two great warriors from China, their powers were extremely close. Finally, he was cornered by Jia Yi and finally forced to leave China, hiding in the far away European continent. Decades passed with him not daring to step foot in China! And now, whenever he felt like going, he'd just do it, he did whatever he felt like!

Jia Yi was dead! The fourth chairman had also died! Luo Feng, that sick bastard too was dead!

All that was left was the fifth chairman Atkin, and he was his good friend, he was the same as himself!

"Good wine, good wine." Yan Hai smiled end to end, pouring for himself to enjoy.

The oppressive days from before were gone, and now, he was living it up!

"Hm?" Yan Hai was startled, slowly turning around to look, his

heart filled with fear, “How can this be, how can this be? With the Mu Ya crystals, I’ve already stepped into the star traveller level 3! Even Atkin who is stronger than me by a bit, cannot get behind me without me noticing! On this Earth, there shouldn’t be anyone like that, it can’t be!!!”

His heart roared.

However, Yan Hai continued to slowly turn around, his gaze concentrated, staring hard at that spot, he wanted to know...just who it was!

Wearing long army pants, with a simple sleeveless on top, black short hair, his entire being seemed extremely malevolent and ferocious, his gaze incomparably cold.

“You, you...”

Yan Hai’s eyes were wide open.

“No, no...”His face became flushed red, as though he had seen a ghost, “It can’t be! You...”

“Don’t look as though you’ve seen a ghost, only the guilty fear the dead, I am indeed Luo Feng, and I’ve come to reap your life!” A cold voice resounded.

Rumble!

Yan Hai felt his soul get ripped apart, after his soul had scattered, his entire body collapsed on the floor.

“Hmph.” Luo Feng looked with his icy cold gaze, “You are the first.”

Sou!

He had already flown far into the sky.

Chapter 8 – He Has Arrived

“Master, it’s time to leave.” A voice filled with respect resounded from the stairs beneath the balcony.

“Master?”

“Master?” A few repeated shouts, the suspicious butler ran up, looking around, seeing the collapsed invincible warrior Yan Hai without a movement on the floor. His expression immediately changed: “Master, what’s wrong? What’s wrong with you?” He ran over and squatted beside to check for breath and pulse.

“Dead?”

The butler opened his eyes wide, extremely terrified, “How could the master have died? The recent health checkup by the doctor said his body was very very healthy, much healthier than even young people, how could…” A Star traveller fighter’s life span was more than 1000 years, this point, several of the elite researchers who studied the ancient ruins knew, this butler however didn’t.

In a moment!

Yan Hai’s several family heart specialists were beside his body.

“His body is completely fine, no damage whatsoever.” The doctor beside, using the apparatus deducted, shaking his head, “This shouldn’t be, this body is completely healthy, he shouldn’t be

dead.”

From a medical standpoint.

If there aren’t any physical problems, then he shouldn’t have just died. However, they had no way to check the soul.

******

North America, Washington headquarter city.

A black luxury car was slowly driving along the streets, sitting within was Earth’s current number one person, Atkin. With unmatchable strength, he forced the entire HR Alliance to re-elect himself, replacing Isadora and becoming the first chairman! He held the highest authority in the HR Alliance. Even the nine great core families, none of them dared to fight them!

And during the Swallowing beast incident, he was the Palace of Wargod’s fifth chairman!

Atkin, was extremely lean.

He sported a beard below his mouth. His gaze seemed as if he was daydreaming, but sometimes it seemed to chill one’s heart! This one person, during the swallowing beast episode, kept an extremely low profile, even Hong and Thunder God had never realized this person’s crazy ambitions. And when the strongest of the time fell one after another, he finally revealed his wild

ambitions!

"Hello." Atkin took out his handphone.

"Chairman, Mr Yan Hai was discovered dead 15 minutes ago, right on his house's balcony. As to the specific time of death, we are unable to determine." An obviously nervous voice sounded.

"What!"

Atkin's expression changed, his heart was in a flurry, how did Yan Hai die? Who on this earth had the ability to so easily kill Yan Hai?

"How did he die?" Atkin asked.

"No clue, no one in his entire house heard any commotion. No one knows just how he died, or even when!"

Atkin creased his eyebrows and said solemnly, "The cause of death, unable to determine?"

"Yes, Mr Yan Hai's body is undamaged, his body is extremely healthy, he shouldn't be dead." The moment he finished, Atkin's expression changed immediately.

Pa!

Shutting the phone, Atkin's eyes squinted, his gaze cold: "It's a spirit reader attack on his soul! Only with one's soul destroyed would one die this way! However....on this Earth, there's only one Star traveller Spirit reader...Sago Nehru! And Sago Nehru is only a level 1 Star Traveller, he doesn't have the power to kill Yan Hai."

"Just who is it?"

"Who?"

Two silhouettes swiftly flashed through Atkin's mind, people he had suppressed in his memories over the years, Eastbourne! And the genius, even stronger than Eastbourne, Luo Feng!

"But they are dead! Eastbourne's body, I saw it personally. Luo Feng's life force too had weakened till it vanished, it was broadcasted all over the world." Atkin's expression changed greatly, "Not right, Luo Feng...Luo Feng..."

He remembered Hong and Thunder God who were deep in their coma, back then their life force signals too had vanished, and while they didn't have any mental signals, they were living dead. But still, they weren't dead!

That swallowing beast too had gone through rebirth.

"No one saw Luo Feng's body!"

"From the start to end, no one had seen Luo Feng's body. Don't

tell me...he, he's still alive?" Atkin's expression was ugly. Back then, with extreme ease, Luo Feng had killed the eight tentacle grand emperor, he was not something Atkin could deal with! Against the eight tentacle grand emperor, he would be easily killed. And back then Luo Feng handled it with such ease.

Luo Feng, that young but invincible abnormality, was on par with Hong and Thunder God.

Atkin?

He needed to respect Luo Feng!

If Luo Feng had truly returned, knowing he had sent Sago Nehru and Wei Nuo to take away his Mu Ya Crystals by force, then...

"No, No!" Atkin shook his head, extremely nervous and worried.

If it was Luo Feng, he was screwed.

Even if it wasn't Luo Feng, to be able to kill Yan Hai without so much of a sound, he was afraid he too wouldn't stand a chance!

"Hello." Atkin quickly made a call, "Sago Nehru, it's me, Atkin, I suspect Luo Feng isn't dead and has just killed Yan Hai. You need to be careful, perhaps it would be best to immediately leave your home!"

******

Asia, India, New Delhi headquarter city.

Because of the time difference, it was dawn in Europe but mid afternoon in New Delhi, the ferocious sun of Fall was shining on the land, and in the headquarter city's East district, there was a large castle, it was India's ancient household of power, owned by the powerful Nehru family.

The Nehru family, was originally the strongest only in the political world, however since one of its children, Sago Nehru had swiftly risen, becoming the world's only Star Traveller spirit reader, the family's power grew by leaps and bounds!

"Ever since Mr. Sago Nehru agreed to accept spirit reader disciples, the number of visitors have been increasing everyday."

"Spirit readers, it's something that's not easy to train. Sago Nehru is the entire world's most powerful spirit reader, also, he's still so young. Even compared to Hua Xia's Luo Feng, their ages are similar! Mr. Sago Nehru is India's pride, a definite spirit reader genius, I believe he'll be just like Mr Luo Feng, becoming incredibly powerful and invincible."

"Yes, the entire world says that Sago Nehru is the second Luo Feng."

On top of the castle, two guards looked down on a luxurious car

which had stopped in the parking lot outside, beginning a discussion quietly.

Within the castle.

In the living room, gathered two groups of visitors.

“Please wait a moment, Sago Nehru is currently meditating, once he’s finished, he will attend to you all.” A man dressed in a light silk clothing smiled as he said.

“Alright, I’m in no rush.”

The two groups had a total of eight people, and among them were two young spirit readers. It was clear that they awakened recently!

……

Nehru castle, in the sky above, a silhouette appeared.

The weird thing was, no one saw this silhouette.

“Babata, your camouflage system is not bad.” Luo Feng praised.

“This is nothing!” A clear crisp voice sounded, “It’s just twisting the surrounding light, causing whoever’s below to miss the light and not see anything. It’s too simple! In the universe, with better

technology, the ships, interstellar transporters, even if they stopped above your cities, if they didn't want you to see them, you all wouldn't be able to!"

Luo Feng didn't suspect that at all.

Ever since he had become the Golden Horned Beast deep underwater, with Babata's signal scrambler, all of earth's apparatus have been unable to sense his life force signal at all.

"These are all little children's science! To a fighter, closing in on him, even if he doesn't use his sight, he should still be able to feel the presence." Babata said.

"Right."

Luo Feng surveyed below, extremely gently, his spirit energy swept past, no sound or trace as it flowed through the castle. It could be deemed gentle and totally noiseless, no one had realized Luo Feng's sensing, including the new Star Traveller spirit reader Sago Nehru.

"He's a Star Traveller level 1, I'm a 6, just by levels, I'm stronger than him by 32 times. Not to mention I've trained in <Control> and <Illusion>. In terms of controlling power alone, including all the techniques, I'm countless time stronger." Luo Feng shook his head, through Yun Mo Planet's structured training, he could clearly feel...

In spiritual force, he was much stronger than his enemy.

Sou!

Luo Feng rushed downwards!

******

In the castle.

Dressed in a luxurious black robe, a youth was lying on a sofa. His leg was resting on a glass table, his hand was holding a goblet, within it he swirled the exquisite red wine.

“Wu.”

Sago Nehru gently took a sip, “Fight with me? That old man, he’s already so old. I’m still so young, just with power alone how can he compare with me? Right now…the moment I’m willing to accept disciples, countless powerful families are sending their children over to be my disciple. I, am the earth’s only Star Traveller level spirit reader!”

“With the big powers on my side, also with big brother Atkin helping out, plus I’m from the Nehru family, the family with power in India…”

“The position of head in the Thunder Dojo is definitely mine!”

Sago gently raised his head, revealing a condescending smile, “Wu, and people dare say I’m the next Luo Feng, I’ve heard too much of these words!”

Ever since he broke through into the Star Traveller level, everybody praised him, saying how he would be just like Luo Feng in many aspects.

In the beginning, Sago Nehru was very proud and happy.

But after hearing much of such sayings, he began to get annoyed.

“Hmph, my age is similar to Luo Feng’s, I will one day reach the skies, become even stronger. Just like Hong and Thunder God! When that time comes, I will make others say...Luo Feng, you are Sago Nehru number two! Haha...” Enjoying success at such a young age, Sago Nehru was extremely content and arrogant, suddenly his phone rang.

“Hello.” Sago Nehru answered.

“Sago Nehru, it’s me, Atkin, I suspect Luo Feng isn’t dead and has just killed Yan Hai. You need to be careful, perhaps it would be best to immediately leave your home!” Atkin’s voice transmitted from the phone.

Sago Nehru was so shocked he stood upright immediately.

However, the moment he stood up, he realized there was someone standing at the door behind him, he was wearing long army pants, a simple sleeveless top. The man had yellow skin and black short hair. His gaze was piercing like knives through his soul, causing Sago Nehru to tremble!

Sago Nehru's eyes opened wide!

This appearance....99% of the entire world recognized!

"He, he..." Sago Nehru's face had gone pale.

Extreme fear!

Before he had felt he himself was very strong, but now with this person standing right in front of him, with just a gaze, he felt an overwhelming sense of fear! And he had once gone to that person's family's house to steal the treasures 'left behind'.

"Sago Nehru, say something? Why aren't you saying anything?" Atkin's nervous voice resounded.

"He, he has already arrived!"

Chapter 9 – Earthshaking

Sweat started to appear from Sago Nehru's forehead, facing that terrifying killing gaze from his enemy, those piercing cold eyes that made people tremble in fear, it was simply, simply just like the world broadcast from before! Just like the gaze of the one that terrified the entire world, that of the Golden Horned Beast!

Sago Nehru squeezed out a smile, "Mr Luo, Mr Luo Feng, you are actually still alive, this is just..."

"There are quite a few scum in this world, but for someone to sink to such a level..." Luo Feng's gaze was cold, suddenly a mental attack, one undetectable by the naked eye, pierced through Sago Nehru's consciousness like a sharp needle, the mini planet within was pierced through just like tofu, crumbling!

Rumble!

Sago Nehru's eyes opened wide, they were filled with fear before he collapsed on the floor.

Overlooking Sago Nehru's body from above, Luo Feng's body vanished out the door straight after.

Up high in the sky.

Luo Feng stepped on the soaring shuttle, becoming a beam of light and heading towards America.

From birth till now, Luo Feng had never been some saint, or some impregnable hero! The only thing was...he had his own limits within his heart! There were many scum in the world, but Luo Feng would never lash out at them or go punish every single one of them. After all, where there's light, there will be darkness.

However, Atkin, Sago Nehru and Yan Hai, these three top powers had done one thing that truly enraged Luo Feng...to threaten or directly rob the relatives of the deceased heroes.

"Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi, Sokolov, you all died with honor."

"And these three bastards, actually disturbed your peace. I definitely won't allow it!"

Luo Feng's fixed his gaze on the oceans in the direction of America, following Babata's tracking signals that he had acquired from hacking into the internet, Atkin was currently in the Washington base!

.....

Washington headquarter city, because of the time difference, it was currently late at night here.

A luxurious car stopped in the street.

“He’s arrived!” a voice transmitted from the phone, Atkin’s eyes widened from within the car.

“Not good, Luo Feng is really not dead, he has really returned!” Atkin’s forehead had beads of cold sweat, at the same time, a thought swiftly flashed in his mind, without question, Luo Feng had killed Yan Hai first, he was definitely heading to kill Sago Nehru now, and the next would probably be himself.

“What can I do, what can I do?”

“This Luo Feng is ruthless, and his power is too strong!” Atkin was getting more worried the more he thought about it, he was so nervous his forehead and back was sweating like crazy.

Panic!

No matter how he thought about it, he would end up dead!

“Rush over to Luo Feng’s house and hold his family hostage? Not possible, they have metal robots capable of stopping me. Also, from America to China, the distance is too far, my speed cannot match Luo Feng’s, so I’ll definitely be intercepted!” Atkin thought of many possible solutions, swiftly striking them down one after another.

“I’m trapped in a hopeless situation, cornered. The Earth is so big, but with Luo Feng’s power, I have nowhere to run!!!”

Atkin grit his teeth, “I can only do this!”

He immediately grabbed his hand phone, swiftly making a call: “Help me quickly this instant, with the greatest speed gather all the important media and reporters in Washington, also, inform the rest of the world’s media via the HR alliance...”

This night, was not going to be a peaceful one.

The Earth’s number one person, the HR Alliance’s chairman Atkin had begun his struggle to live!

.....

In the biggest plaza in the Washington headquarter city, late at night, vehicle after vehicle of media people arrived, with their high frequency broadcasting noises, they awoke the surrounding community of American people. Seeing the plaza all lit up, filled with large numbers of vehicles, the scene attracted many citizens to gather around.

“The chairman of the HR Alliance, will deliver a piece of shocking news to the world.”

“This next scene, will definitely shake the Earth.”

“Yes, no doubt about it, the chairman of the HR Alliance, the strongest man on the Earth now! He will officially deliver big news.”

“……”

The media people began their individual reports.

And with the big screen in the plaza, the footage of Hong and Thunder God back then fighting the swallowing monster appeared, also scenes of the six heroes entering the ocean along with a detailed explanation of the eight heroes.

“Why is the screen displaying the incident of the eight heroes, perhaps the announcement has something to do with the eight heroes?”

“Perhaps, the two vegetables Hong and Thunder God have awoken?”

First, the surrounding houses which were filled with citizens emptied, and all of them approached the plaza.

……

Asia, Australia, North America, South America, Africa, wherever the HR Alliance had any influence over, they had direct control of the media coverage. And today, Atkin had, in a last ditch attempt, forked out money to other broadcasting media, causing the entire world’s media to be focused on this place!

On the internet, many websites had pop ups.

It was still night in America!

However, in Europe, it was morning. In China and India, it was the hottest time of day.

Coverage on television, internet live broadcast, these led to the entire world all immediately coming to know of the scene.

“What’s up, what’s the big news?”

“It’s actually the HR Alliance’s Chairman personally making an announcement?”

The entire world, through the internet or television found out almost immediately, even those busy with work, or asleep were all notified by their friends.

It was obvious, it was big news that was about to be announced!”

Washington headquarter city, Plaza.

“Let me invite our HR Alliance Chairman Atkin!”

Under the huge spotlights, the media’s many cameras, wearing a white shirt with a black suit, seemingly very proper, Atkin walked

up, the aura of one that controlled the universe surrounded him, this made everyone go silent. It was obviously a being that exceeded the wargod level, a being that normal people looked up to.

“Attention all, to everyone watching this live broadcast, my friends.”

Atkin’s face had an expression that was hard to control, “Today, let me first introduce a person!”

“He is, talented beyond his years, the youngest spirit reader who exceeds the wargods!”

“He, once single handedly killed tens of Emperor level monsters, including a Grand Emperor.”

“He, in a final battle with the Swallowing Beast, killed that monster, saving humanity from that calamity!”

“Who is he?” Atkin was extremely emotional.

At the same time on the screen behind him, what was initially showing all eight heroes displayed Luo Feng’s data! Luo Feng’s individual achievements at different times, large amounts of pictures, words and footage appeared on the screen.

“Yes, it is Luo Feng!”

“Our Earth’s greatest genius, most honorable genius.” Atkin’s voice was passionate.

Before the television and internet live broadcast.

Countless people all over the world seemed to be reliving the time more than a year ago, the time where they were all living in fear, fear that the end of humanity had come. Towards the eight heroes, in their hearts, these eight were the saviors of the world. And among them, the youngest and the one who dealt the killing blow, Luo Feng, was worshipped and respected more by countless people.

“I admire and respect him. I am saddened by his loss, I am filled with regret for his loss...Humanity lost a great genius from this generation!”

Atkin suddenly spoke mysteriously: “However, no one has noticed, from the beginning to the end, no one ever found Luo Feng’s body! The warriors that entered the ocean after the battle only saw the Swallowing Beast’s body, no one ever saw Luo Feng’s corpse!”

Silence!

Everyone in the plaza had gone silent, what erupted after was pure elation, emotional and excited discussion that was hard to suppress!

“Yes! Your guesses are not wrong!”

Atkin’s voice resounded loudly, “The news I’m about to announce today is…Earth’s most honorable genius Luo Feng, he’s still alive!!! Yes, he’s still alive!!!”

Rumble!

The entire plaza erupted!

Rumble!

All the countries around the world, countless citizens in front of the televisions all jumped up! Even the ones in front of their computers!

At this time!

The entire world had erupted with glee!

China, Luo Feng’s house level 1 living room.

Beside was the baby’s cot, Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan and the nanny were all watching the television.

“Earth’s most noble genius Luo Feng, he’s still alive!!! Yes, he’s

still alive!!!” From the television, that emotional booming voice along with the celebration noises from the plaza seemed to almost blow up the television, the living room people who held their breaths couldn’t help but shout out emotionally.

“Quickly, tell Little Xin to return.”

“Contact Little Hua.”

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan excitedly dialed their handphones, the two children inside the cots beside them were quiet as they pulled on the sheets, watching the television screen wide eyed, “Dada, da...” One of them pointed at Luo Feng’s picture as it appeared on the screen, making noise at it.”

.....

Luo Hua was in his company’s office, sitting in front of his computer. Xu Xin too was at her company’s computer.

They both watched their own screens.

.....

Wei Wen, who was napping in the afternoon due to the heat was also dragged by his girlfriend to a computer.

“What.”

Wei Wen was so excited his mouth dropped wide open!

The Dojo of Limits, Luo Feng's earlier teacher Jiang Fang too was in front a computer.

……

The girl who once chased after him, Janet, was with a suitor, stopped in a street, raising her head to watch the big screen.

……

Countless people around the world were watching this scene, the eight heroes were legendary in their saving of the world before. The media and reports after, made them almost godlike! And right now, the youngest and most genius amongst them was still alive? This was relayed personally by the HR Alliance's Chairman, broadcasting to the rest of the world.

"I know this news is so exciting that it's hard to go back to bed! That's why, I couldn't resist, I had to immediately relay this good news to everyone!"

"He's a hero I truly respect!"

"Incomparable respect!"

Atkin acted as though he was extremely emotional from his respect of the heroes and that one had returned, on television, computers, screens in the streets, this caused countless people to get even more emotional! They didn't suspect that he was just acting. From their point of view, respecting these eight heroes was normal.

Suddenly...

Above the plaza, a beam of light swiftly descended, stopping gently. The entire plaza, including Atkin had gone silent.

The entire world, everyone in front of their computers or television had gone silent.

The entire world was silent.

Everyone looked at that silhouette!

He, dressed in long army pants, simple sleeveless top, black short hair, his gaze deep as the ocean. From mid air, he descended slowly, that formless aura seemed to permeate even people watching through their screens.

Chapter 10 – Near Light Speed

All the media people in the plaza, including the large number of normal citizens couldn't help but stare wide eyed at the human silhouette descending from above.

Right, they weren't mistaken!

It was him! The man that was repeatedly shown on the television!

"It's Luo Feng." Thousands of voices resounded.

"Luo Feng!"

"It's Luo Feng." "Luo Feng! Luo Feng!"

The entire plaza had erupted.

My god!

Luo Feng of the eight heroes, the man who transcended his generation, gathering countless of worshippers, the genius of his age was still alive! At this time, who knew how many citizens were getting extremely emotional, the various countries elites and leaders were all startled, a few greedy families, power hungry individuals too were in a frenzy. For a powerful warrior like Luo Feng, there was no need for an army, just one person alone would

be invincible!

Back then, Hong and Thunder God were ranked above the countries.

After the loss of the eight heroes, the positions of the five countries rose by quite a bit. Even though Atkin's power was larger, his authority still wasn't like Hong or Thunder God, that undeniable unshakable absolute power.

"Big brother!"

Luo Hua was extremely emotional.

……

"Little Feng, little Feng." Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan were watching the silhouette as he appeared on the screen, tears rolling down their faces, overjoyed.

……

In front of an office desk.

Xu Xin was watching the live broadcast from her computer, that silhouette that she had only dreamt about holding on to, appeared on screen, she couldn't help but get excited, rubbing the steel ring, extremely elated.

At this time, Xu Xin felt as though she had ascended to heaven.

The entire world's citizens were in an uproar, and within the Washington headquarter city's plaza, the HR Alliance Chairman Atkin was extremely excited: "Mr Luo Feng, when I found out about you being alive, I was extremely excited, I couldn't wait to let the rest of the world hear the news. However...now that I've seen you with my own eyes, I'm truly, emotional."

"I Atkin, hate myself for not having done anything during the Swallowing Beast incident!"

"And right now, even though that incident has passed, the threat of the sea creatures still remain. And Hong and Thunder God aren't around, without a leader, the entire world's warriors are just like scattered sand. Now that Mr Luo Feng has returned, this is great. I hope Mr Luo Feng can lead us and continue to protect humanity against the sea creatures."

"I am willing to follow Mr Luo Feng into battle, to fight for humanity!"

Atkin looked earnestly at Luo Feng, his voice going through the microphone, resounding throughout the plaza, throughout every television screen, every computer screen.

Luo Feng looked at Atkin.

He secretly laughed coldly, this Atkin, if he thought about escaping, with Babata's tracing through the satellites and his own speed, there was nowhere for him to run at all. And now, he actually created such a scene...obviously he wanted the billions of people on earth to witness and know, how much he respected and worshipped Luo Feng.

Saying he wanted to follow Luo Feng and fight for humanity!

"Mr Luo Feng." Atkin controlled the energy around, cutting off the surrounding sound from the outside of his barrier, his face filled with regret and embarrassment, "I admit, in my greed before I've made a mistake. However, I plead for Mr Luo Feng to give me a chance. The Mu Ya Crystals, spirits of nature that Sago Nehru took from you family, I will return. I only hope, you give me one more chance. Now that you've returned, even if given the opportunity, I would never dare to do such a thing again."

Atkin's posture was lowered.

However, deep within, he thought: "The only escape route is to fight desperately in the face of death! With the entire world witnessing, hundreds of millions of people watching, with the media reporting, Luo Feng's image is undeniably brilliant, perfect! The people's hero! And I am showing so much respect, worshipping him, how can he do anything to me?"

"If he attacks me, that would destroy his perfect image."

"Attacking me, will raise countless people's suspicion towards

him.”

“Atkin.” Luo Feng spoke.

“Mr Luo Feng.” Atkin bowed, displaying high respect, even his gaze towards Luo Feng seemed to be filled with respect and worship!

Hu!

A knife blade became a beam of light, in the short distance, it cut into Atkin’s forehead, even the black skin that appeared…the black god set was instantly sliced through, straight into his brain, his consciousness and spirit destroyed, the knife blade returning swiftly through the same route through the wound.

The speed was extremely fast, so fast nobody on scene could see it clearly.

“Eh…” Atkin opened his eyes wide, as though he couldn’t believe Luo Feng would kill him in such a situation.

Rumble!

His entire body collapsed on the floor, blood trickling out from the wound on his forehead.

“He was killed!”

“He’s dead!”

Chaos erupted in the plaza, the entire world’s televisions and internet broadcasts had captured everything, the countless citizens all over were shocked, the broadcasts rewinded the footage and slowed down the scene, most televisions had a limit to how much they could slow it down…100 times, they could barely make out the shadow of the blade piercing through Gold Arthur’s head and swiftly returning.

“Mr Luo Feng, you, why did you kill Chairman Atkin!” The reporters said after having quickly confirmed the murderer after watching the slowed down video.

“Mr Luo Feng!”

“Is it Mr Luo Feng?”

“How can this be?”

“If it’s not Mr Luo Feng, who else could so easily kill chairman Atki?”

The plaza was in a mess.

“Mr Luo Feng, explain why you killed him!” A blonde female reporter didn’t seemed to believe that the hero she worshipped

was capable of such an act.

Luo Feng's cold gaze surveyed his surrounding.

His formless spirit aura placed pressure on everybody, causing everyone to go silent.

"He." Luo Feng gazed down upon Atkin's body, "is scum, and deserved to die!"

Whoosh!

He flew into the sky, swiftly vanishing from the broadcast.

The group of reporters were left dumbfounded, before jumping to their sense.

"Viewers and friends in front of your televisions, Mr Luo Feng suddenly killed the HR Alliance's Chairman Atkin, after which, he only said, "He is scum, and he deserved to die", there was no detailed explanation. As to the specifics of the situation, this station will investigate and report!" a blonde pretty lady said towards the camera.

"Oh, my god! It's real, you are not mistaken, Mr Luo Feng just killed Atkin. He only said 'scum, he deserved to die.' While Mr Luo Feng's actions were violent, however, I, Black Jack, am an undying loyal supporter of Mr Luo Feng, I believe, Atkin must have done some very despicable acts. The details are still a big secret but I

Black Jack will definitely get it out for everybody."

……

Ever since Luo Feng disappeared from the screen, the various television stations or websites all began to debate about the details of the incident!

Luo Feng stepped on the soaring shuttle and flew high in the sky.

Surveying the endless ocean, a rare smile appeared on his face.

"You still have the mood to smile? Luo Feng, you just killed Atkin, that has destroyed your perfect image. You must know, as a hero, a man known as an unsurpassed genius, among the humans on earth, 100% of all the discussions on the internet were all in favour of you, they worshipped you. Your image was of absolute perfection. Right now, that's all gone. What a pity." Babata said.

"Perfect? I was never perfect."

Luo Feng gave an indifferent smile, "And I've never thought of being a perfect person, whoever deserves to die, I'll kill him!"

Babata couldn't help but think: "Hm, this Luo Feng repossession has definitely been influenced by the Golden Horned Beast, his brutality and killing intent is much greater than before! However…Hehe, I like it."

……

The hot blistering sun of June, had no effect or way of diminishing man's passion.

Yang Zhou City, Ming Yue district, many citizens had gathered here, their heads all raised as they waited …waiting for Luo Feng's appearance! Even the communities of Ming Yue were all excited and awaiting Luo Feng's return.

Maybe in other countries, there were people who were suspicious about Luo Feng's murder of Atkin.

However, as the pride of China, Luo Feng was undeniably and upright, almost everybody stood on his side!

"Luo Feng!" A youth looking through binoculars shouted out.

Immediately, the countless citizens that had clogged up the district, even to the point where some were standing on cars, they all erupted in cheers.

A silhouette was swiftly flying over, landing in a grass patch in Ming Yue district. Luo Feng glanced over towards the district, smiling, before heading directly to his house. This smile caused countless of worshippers to cheer in complete excitement.

……

At his house door.

His father Luo Hong Guo, mother Gong Xin Lan, wife Xu Xin, Little brother Luo Hua were all present, including the now able to stand twin children.

Luo Feng walked over step by step.

His family's eyes were all wet and tearing.

"Call out to your dad…" Xu Xin held the hands of the two children who looked extremely alike. The two of them looked over and opened their mouths: "Dad, daddy, daddy…"

Luo Feng was so excited and emotional he cried.

Since Luo Feng's return in June, the violent undercurrents around the world suddenly halted, the greedy families didn't are make any moves! Thunder Dojo and the Dojo of Limits returned to their original activities, the entire world seemed, for an instant, to be extremely united, no one dared to disturb that peace.

This was Luo Feng's influence!

When Luo Feng returned home, he first went to pay his respects to the five good friends that sacrificed themselves… Mo

Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi and Solokov! Then, he went over to the Dojo of Limits headquarters, visiting Hong and Thunder God who were still in their comas.

After.

Luo Feng organized a wedding with Xu Xin!

All was at peace, under the influence of Luo feng this super power, peace prevailed over the entire world.

Year 2061 Winter.

“Good Ping Ping, come, eat another mouthful. Hm, good good!” Luo Feng carried a small bowl, going to feed his other son. “Little Hai, come, good, right, eat another mouthful. Don’t be mischievous, your older brother has eaten three mouthfuls. You’ve only eaten one. Come.” Luo Feng looked lovingly at his son, coaxing him, feeding the children.

On the sofa beside him, Xu Xin was personally knitting a sweater, smiling as she looked over.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng.” Babata’s voice resounded in his consciousness.

Luo Feng, carrying the bowl in his hand was startled: “What’s up?”

“That black dragon ship, except for a few assisting functions aside, everything else is ready. Even though it still cannot travel through universes, but, it can at least reach sub light speed...100 000 km per second!” Babata said, “in my storage space now, I’m currently fixing the assisting functions systems, but the black dragon ship itself is ready for use.”

“Didn’t you say, the metal gathered on earth was too little, there was no way to engage in the Golden Horned Beast’s training? Especially the “Deity of the World”, there was no way to train at all.”

“With the black dragon mountain ship, even though it hasn’t exactly reached the speed of light, with one hour’s time, it can reach Mars.”

“You can totally eat breakfast in the morning, head to Mars, return in the night and have dinner!” Babata said.

Chapter 11 – Arrival on Mars

With such an explanation, Luo Feng was more than anxious to go.

That night, Luo Feng informed his family.

Year 2061, December 3rd, Morning.

After the family had breakfast together, Xu Xin drove to her office, Luo Feng informed his family: “Dad, mum, I won’t be here until the afternoon, I’ll be back at night for dinner. Ping Ping, Little Hai, listen to your grandparents at home…” He bent down to kiss his two sons goodbye, leaving the house. His body became a blur within the yard before vanishing altogether.

High in the sky.

Luo Feng flew swiftly in the air, past the clouds, continuously heading higher, the sun above the clouds was getting increasingly glaring.

Within one breath, he flew to 8000m above sea level, floating in mid air.

“Babata, get the Black Dragon ship out. Right, first initiate the cloaking, don’t get detected by the satellites.” Luo Feng’s thoughts spoke.

“Relax, the number one ship in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, if it was detected by Earth... that’s what I’d call a big joke!” Babata said, at the same time, beside Luo Feng up high in the sky, a huge black disc shaped ship appeared, its diameter was 100m, on it’s wing, a huge dragon was imprinted.

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

While a diameter of 100m didn’t seem too big, up close, it was still shocking. In comparison, it was even bigger than some high school soccer fields.

“Du!”

The cabin door automatically opened, Luo Feng flew into the laser pathway, then the inner gate also opened.

Within the control room of the Black Dragon ship.

“Luo Feng, demon Babata is at your service!” A crisp clear voice sounded, resounding throughout the control room, and on the screen above the control board, an image of Babata’s head appeared.

Luo Feng let out a laugh: “Let’s depart!”

“Alright.” Babata laughed.

Hum!

A very soft humming sound, within the ship, even for someone of Luo Feng's level, one could only barely feel a slight vibration. This was definitely much much more comfortable than the normal cars of Earth.

"Do I need to activate the scenic simulator?" Babata asked, "it can simulate from 10% to 100%, no problem."

"Scenic simulator?" Luo Feng was startled.

"As the ship's body is entirely made from thick metal, one cannot look out normally with eyes to see the outside, that is why we require the scenic simulator. It's similar to your Earth's 3D projectors, however, it's much more detailed and powerful than that." Babata explained.

"Activate, 100%." Luo Feng said directly.

Shua!

The entire control room's control board, chairs and floor totally vanished.

The surroundings became that of the hazy ozone layer.

"The Black Dragon ship is currently flying within the ozone

layer, it'll quickly, totally leave Earth. It has left!" Babata's voice resounded throughout the surroundings, with one glance, Luo Feng could see the endless space, the vast space.

Luo Feng turned to look behind him.

A large sky blue planet appeared in his sight.

"Earth!" Luo Feng couldn't help but hold his breath.

It was extremely, extremely beautiful!

Even though this scene could be seen all over the internet or television, when one personally sat on a ship leaving the Earth and saw this scene, that tremendous and moving scene...permeated all the way to one's soul.

The sky blue planet was getting smaller and smaller!

The Black Dragon ship and the sky blue planet were slowly getting further away from each other.

"Earth, the Sun." Luo Feng's gaze drifted behind Earth. Far away, there was a star that seemed to be on fire, the Sun.

"The ship has already reached 100,000 km per second, it's currently stabilizing its speed, heading towards Mars." Babata's voice sounded.

Luo Feng turned around again, looking in the other direction.

“It’s just like a dream!” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to exclaim.

“Oh, Babata, over there.” Luo Feng pointed to the left, far in the distance, a huge gaseous body covered in ice blocks was floating, the Black Dragon ship easily flew past it.

“That’s what you earthlings call a comet.” Babata said.

Luo Feng surveyed his surroundings.

In the mysterious and endless space, in the distance, once in awhile a planet would appear, even several small asteroids, star dust etc.

“It’s too beautiful.” Luo Feng exclaimed.

“It is indeed very beautiful, however after seeing enough of it, you too would find it dull and uninteresting.” Babata said.

“10% simulation.” Luo Feng said.

Shua!

The surrounding stars suddenly became weak and translucent, as

though there was a layer covering them, however, one could still see Earth behind, the Sun, just that they were much weaker than before. And the floor, chairs, control board, lights etc that were in the room all reappeared.

"This 100% simulation, is like one is totally in space, if I didn't use my spirit energy to check, didn't use my hands to feel, didn't sit on the chair and floated, it would be just like the control room didn't exist." Luo Feng couldn't help but compliment it, 100% simulation was absolutely stunning.

"Of course it's good, the 100% simulation, this is something only the B grade ships or higher have!" Babata said, "If it's a low level A grade ship, being able to simulate 50% would be extremely good already. Unless one personally installs a good scenic simulator, but that would be a very extravagant luxury to spend on.

Luo Feng couldn't help but to ask, "What's with the grading of the ships?"

Even with the inherited memories, the Golden Horned Beast's inherited memories didn't have anything to do with the humans and their ship grades.

"A grade, can deal with Star Travellers."

"B grade, can deal with Star levels. C grade, can deal with Universe levels...E grade, can deal with Sector Lords, F grade, can deal with Undying beings."

“A lot of items are sorted this way by their levels.”

“Just like the laser cannon from before, it was a B6 grade laser cannon. Just like the mother ship we discovered in number 12 archeological ruin, it was a B grade mother ship. Also, this Black Dragon Mountain x81 ship, is a C5 grade ship. Because it’s a C5 grade ship, Universe level warriors would have to expend a lot of energy to destroy it.”

“Also, talking about crystals, power crystals are the same, sorted into A grade, B grade, C grade…the higher the grade of power crystal, the rarer and more expensive.”

Luo Feng nodded.

It was a very simple system, one could understand it from one look. It was very clear, the laser cannon, the power crystals, the ships, they all belonged to which level.

“Babata, what about the list of required metals that I gave you, are those sorted too?” Luo Feng said when he realized.

“Yes.”

“The metal list that Golden Horned Beast requires, can be clearly sorted into five grades. A grade metal, suitable for the Star Traveller level Golden Horned Beast, B grade, for the Star level…E grade, for the Sector Lord Golden Horned Beast.” Babata said.

Luo Feng nodded.

The Golden Horned Beast's growth, was based on the growth of its internal world, and for its internal world to grow, it required swallowing metal!

Swallowing metal, was sorted into three main components.

First, swallowing some alloys, ship remains etc, or even low-level pure metal ores, their efficiency was the lowest. This was also the slowest method of evolution for the Golden Horned Beast, from the Star level to the Universe level required 100 years.

Second, swallowing special pure metal ores! For example, right now Luo Feng was a Star level 3 Golden Horned Beast, hence he could go swallow B grade metals with almost 100% purity! If Luo Feng reached the Universe level, he would require swallowing C grade metals. This method could double his evolution speed!

From the Star level 1 to the Universe level 1, fifty years would be enough. The only price was the large amounts of appropriate metal ores!

Third, metal groupings; just like how humans ate different types of dishes to ingest different vitamins and nutrients, that was the same logic! Swallowing a mixture of different metals may just create miracles for the internal world's growth! The evolution speed could be doubled or even sped up to ten times or more.

For a Star level Golden Horned Beast, the most optimum metal grouping... was 325 B grade 100% purity metal ores! Also, these 325 pure metal ores, must be precise in their portions.

That way, with just one swallow!

The evolution multiplier would be raised to 89 times!

“Right now on Earth, there was nothing but normal or crude metal, even what you all call gold is nothing but an A3 grade metal! Even what you all discovered on the moon, that blue gold metal, is but a A6 grade metal.” Babata said, “there are no B grade metals at all.”

Luo Feng nodded.

This was also the reason for the Golden Horned Beast’s swallowing of bases, when it first reached the Star level 1, it couldn’t find any B grade metals, so it randomly ate some normal metal.

Ship remains and metals, these categories of metals had the lowest efficiency, it was no different from eating normal metals, maybe just the volume was a little smaller.

“The Golden Horned Beast’s evolution, relying on the metal groupings, was the fastest way. However, even with normal metals, one could still train. However, the <Deity of the World>...” Luo Feng was extremely helpless, of the two secret techniques of

the Golden Horned Beast he had picked to train...<Deity of the World> and <Absolute Space>, the <Absolute Space> relied on large amounts of training and comprehension.

But the <Deity of the World's> requirements were much more demanding.

<Deity of the World>, allowed the Golden Horned Beast's physical form to enlarge or shrink! That's why, its training required the consumption of several metal groupings. After eating them, by relying on the complex groupings, they would be absorbed by the body and therefore change the Golden Horned Beast's body structure and genetics. As a result, it can control its overall body size!

It could be said...

The main component for the training of <Deity of the World> relied on the consumption of metal groupings, and it's direct swallowing straight into the stomach. Not swallowing into the internal world.

The many complex groupings for <Deity of the World>, was even harder, more complex than the groupings for the evolution of the Golden Horned Beast!

.....

"Luo Feng, we've almost reached Mars, the ship will begin to

decrease its speed.” Babata’s voice sounded.

Luo Feng looked over.

The scenic simulation was at 10%, which allowed Luo Feng to see in the distance a red planet! It was red with a sense of tangerine yellow, appearance wise, it didn’t look better than Earth.

Hu!

The ship swiftly pierced through into Mars’ atmosphere, obviously Mars’ ozone was much thinner than Earth’s.

“Babata, get ready to open the cabin door.”

Luo Feng immediately ran out from the ship’s middle level cabin, while running, the cloud contact vine armor began to extend, quickly covering his entire body, even up to his head, revealing only his eyes.

The black disc-shaped ship slowly descended, while descending, the cabin door opened.

Sou!

A human silhouette flew out, his entire body covered in a red armor, a pair of cold eyes surveyed below.

“Hm? The gravity on Mars is really low.” Luo Feng could feel immediately the difference between Earth’s and Mars’ gravity pull, he immediately adjusted the magnetic field within his body generated from his miniature planets to suit the gravity pull of Mars.

“This is…”

Surveying below him, Luo Feng could immediately see in the vast sand dunes and plains, standing tall far away, what seemed like a degraded enormous building…pyramid! One pyramid, two, three…

Chapter 12 – Mineral Resources

Luo Feng was shocked to see the pyramids, while they were degraded on the surface, their overall structures were still almost perfect.

There were a total of nine pyramids, there seemed to be no rule to their arrangement, however their construction was definitely uniform! Together, from a glance, they seemed to form one enormous pyramid!

“Pyramids, and below them are…” Luo Feng was extremely shocked, “Cities, Cities?”

Below the pyramids, was the silhouette of an old city, one could almost see where the transport roads and pathways used to be along with the construction of several buildings. It was clear however, it was abandoned many years ago.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew directly towards it before swiftly descending, landing in the sand filled surface of Mars.

“It’s been abandoned for a very long time.” Luo Feng looked at the crumbling fences and dilapidated walls, all the more filled with surprise and suspicions. “Babata, what’s going on here?”

“Why are you surprised.” Babata said, “It’s a normal

occurrence.”

“Normal?”

“Of course it’s normal. This is a starfield, before being governed by its owner, it belonged to the Silverblue Empire’s territory.” Babata said, “And Earth, is but one of two planets with life within a 1000 light year radius!”

“There is another?” Luo Feng was curious.

“The other planet with life, is about 100 light years away from Earth. Even at light speed, it would still require almost 100 years to reach there.” Babata said, “Only by reaching light speed and passing through the universe directly! Can one swiftly reach it.”

Luo Feng nodded.

“Earth, as a planet of life, is but a low level planet in the Silverblue Empire, naturally it’s filled with many humans.” Babata said, “It’s original use was...a livestock planet, used to collect and breed powerful different kinds of monsters, selling them out for money after taming them. The population of humans was estimated to be a few million, they were all for raising and taming the livestock.”

Luo Feng knew too.

A planet with life was categorized into; one with a large density

of humans living, a holiday sight-seeing planet, livestock planet, forestry planet, agriculture planet, industrial planet, etc. For example, some large powers in the universe would use a whole planet to build a whole industry on.

"Earth's breeding, had many valuable monsters, it was one of the Silverblue Empire's more important assets, that's why it arranged for a interstellar fleet to be stationed there." Babata said, "Of course, they also relied on the interstellar transport ships to transport large amounts of mining apparatus to the nearby mineral planets to dig and mine."

Babata said: "Back then, there were a lot of miners here on Mars working. As a result, they built this mining base."

"Later, the owner of the interstellar fleet was killed in one blow."

"No interstellar transport ships could come, the miners on Mars couldn't receive any resources, even if they created their own resources, they couldn't maintain it for long. That's why, it's all gone now." Babata said.

Luo Feng was shocked.

So that was the story, this was a mining base?

"These pyramids are energy towers." Babata said, "These type of energy towers, are based on the automaton race's more low level models of energy sources, their quality-price ratio is higher. With

the use of these pyramids, the human races will never catch up to the automaton races."

"The automaton race is very advanced in their technology." Babata couldn't help but say, "The human races have no way to compete with them, for example, humans can only rely on evolution to step into the Undying level, but the machinery races, actually belong to the AI lifeforms, while they don't have souls, they can still possess the battle ability of the Undying."

Luo Feng was shocked within.

AI lifeforms, while they have human emotions etc, they were still AIs, without souls. Just like Babata!

The automaton race had no souls, and yet they were capable of producing Undying fighters.

Scientifically speaking, they were indeed very strong.

Hu...hu...

A strong wind blew past, rustling up a large amount of sand.

Luo Feng stood on the ground.

"Babata, scan for minerals." Luo Feng said.

“Activating mineral scan.”

The Black Dragon ship which was floating in mid air immediately initiated its mineral scan function, a short time passed!

“Luo Feng, Mars has wealthy deposits of Black iron mineral resources.” Babata said.

“Black iron?”

“Right, translated into Chinese, you can call it Black iron.” Babata said, “Black iron, is an A8 grade metal, it’s extremely sturdy, it’s one the best sellers in the universe.”

“No B grade metals?” Luo Feng’s eyebrows creased.

His current self, was a Star level Golden Horned Beast, swallowing B grade metals would have a higher efficiency.

“No!” Babata said excitedly, “But the amount of black iron is large! Within them there should be quite a bit of Black iron essence.”

Luo Feng’s heart skipped a beat.

The Black iron was A8 grade, the Black iron spirit would be B8 grade, and the incredibly rare Black iron essence, would be C8 grade!

Just like the Yun Mo Planet ship, almost all of the ship's body was made from the Hybrid copper essence. This Hybrid copper by itself was a D9 grade metal, the spirit would be a E9 grade and the essence was a F9 grade!

A large Black iron mineral, having one Black iron spirit out of 10,000 normal Black iron would be not bad already. A Black iron essence, out of 10,000 Black iron spirit would be not bad.

The examples are extremely exaggerated!

The Black iron itself is very valuable. The Yun Mo Planet ship which was built mostly from the Hybrid copper essence must have been crazily expensive! One Hybrid copper essence alone would make a Domain Lord go crazy for it. However, the materials needed for the ship's repair, even in the vast territory of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, couldn't be found.

"Luo Feng, these nine energy towers have a scan blocking function. They envelop a certain area, making it unable to be scanned."

"However, below the energy towers, there's an Iron city. I can barely scan a small portion of the Iron city." Babata said.

"Iron city?"

Luo Feng was shocked, underground lay an Iron city?"

“However, the few 100m that I’ve scanned doesn’t have any life. Let’s go, follow the left 12 km long tunnel to enter, you’ll be able to reach the underground Iron city.”

Mars’ surface had a particular route, what seemed like a naturally collapsed enormous tunnel with a diameter of a few hundred meters.

Sou!

Luo Feng immediately rushed into the tunnel, heading deeper underground.

“Iron city?” Luo Feng expanded his spirit energy, as a Star Traveller level 6 spirit reader, expanding his spirit energy allowed him to cover more than a 6000m area.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng landed on the ground, in front of him, was a blurry mess of mud and dust, he could barely make out a black metal. Using his spirit energy, Luo Feng had noticed early on...behind all the mud was an enormous city door.

“Number one, push it open.” Luo Feng’s thoughts moved, while he himself floated up and created a big distance between him and the door.

A black metal robot appeared out of thin air.

In strength, Luo Feng couldn't match up to this black metal robot.

"Rumble..." The black metal robot's strong arms were fiercely pushing against the enormous metal door, using its strength, the metal door rumbled and slowly opened, large amounts of mud falling from it, dust and sand filled the air.

"Xiu! Xiu Xiu!"

Dazzling beams of white light shot out, almost enveloping the entire metal door's surroundings. 7 to 8 dazzling beams of light shot straight onto the metal robot's body, knocking its entire body and slamming it into the tunnel walls, causing a large amount of mud to crumble, Luo Feng was however far away from the collapse.

"Damn, this Iron city is still operating?" Luo Feng was shocked, "The scanning from my spiritual force showed that there isn't a single person in there; all that's left is dust."

"The 9 energy towers are still operating normally, hence the Iron city is still able to operate. Even with the humans all dead, the Iron city's work and power still hasn't vanished." Babata said, "Luo Feng, enter. These kinds of urgently built Iron cities, their defense can't be that strong. Also right now, the Cloud Contact Vine is a Star Traveller level 9, almost breaking into the Star level."

Back when Luo Feng was battling the Golden Horned Beast, the Cloud Contact Vine was already a Star Traveller level 7.

When Luo Feng was nurturing his body for a little more than a year before, the Cloud Contact Vine was deep in the ocean and Babata was constantly feeding it Mu Ya Crystals. Before the year was up, it had grown to a Star Traveller level 9. The only thing was that it was trapped at the threshold, not crossing over into the Star level yet. This speed, for such a specially cultivated Cloud Contact Vine, was not at all fast.

“Iron city.” Luo Feng moved in front of the metal robot, flying deep underground into the iron city, resisting a single laser beam and rushing in.

The dark city.

With Luo Feng’s spirit energy scan, he realized the density of clusters of buildings within the city was extremely high.

“Luo Feng, almost the entire city is made from Black iron.” Babata said, “Quickly, follow what I said, first cut off the power supply, preventing some of this Iron city’s important structures from being damaged.”

“Ok.”

Luo Feng was very clear on the importance of cutting off the power supply.

“Left side.”

“Make the curve, right side, yes.” Babata was directing, very quickly bringing Luo Feng to a place where a large amount of metal pipes were densely gathered.

“Use the Hybrid copper essence, cut them, all of them.” Babata said.

Clad in the red Cloud Contact Vine armor, Luo Feng looked at the pipes 100m in front of him, his thoughts moved.

Xiu!

A blood red shard silhouette brushed past the pipes one after another, with Luo Feng being a level 6 Star Traveller spirit reader plus his Star level 3 soul’s strength, a total of 32 strong as steel threads of spirit energy surrounded the Hybrid copper essence shard, “Cha! Cha! Cha!” The ear piercing sound of the iron being slashed reverberated around.

A large amount of sparks flew, “Rumble…” an explosion from the metal beside.

“There’s still 8 more energy towers.” Babata said.

“Babata, lead the way.” Luo Feng swiftly flew.

This was a mineral base.

Since the destruction of the Interstellar Transport ship and the depletion of resources, along with the environmental impact, the miners were forced underground, relying on the large amounts of machinery to quickly build crude constructs for the Iron city. The most abundant material, the Black iron was used for most of the city. After so many years, the energy towers were still running and the city was still functional, it definitely deserved praise.

A few minutes passed.

All of the energy supplies to the Iron city were cut by Luo Feng.

“Haha, it’s settled. Luo Feng, if my guess isn’t wrong, all of the Black Iron essence dug out by the miners later should have been stored carefully somewhere. Let’s begin our excavation, whatever we deem valuable, we’ll take it all.” Babata said.

Luo Feng immediately flew within the underground iron city, and began his big excavation!

Chapter 13 – Plunder

Mars, Underground Iron city.

“This underground iron city is pretty huge.” Luo Feng, clad in his blood red armor, used his spirit energy to sweep his surroundings, beginning his search in the ancient underground city.

“Luo Feng, head to the warehouse!” Babata said, “the black iron dug out by the miners back then should all be safely stored in an important warehouse.”

“Ok.”

Luo Feng’s spirit energy expanded to a 6000m area, spreading over several pathways, constructs etc within the underground city. There were words all over these places! The words were in the universe language. With these wordings, within an instant, Luo Feng easily found the most important place in that iron city…the black iron ore and material warehouse!

When Luo Feng descended upon the large warehouse, he couldn’t help but get shocked and cursed quietly as a result.

This was going to be troublesome!

The warehouse in front of him had huge amounts of black iron, almost like a little mountain. It wasn’t just the internal part of the warehouse that was packed full, even the outside courtyard was

littered in black iron.

“Haha, back when the miners were trapped on Mars, even with large amounts of black iron they had no way to transport them out. The black iron thus became the least valuable of everything. The entire iron city is made from black iron, of course they would just casually dump it here.” Babata said, “Luo Feng, search carefully, see if you can find any black iron spirits!”

Luo Feng looked at the little mountain in front of him and felt helpless.

Using force to rush in?

How would that work? The A8 grade black iron, just its sturdiness was difficult for a star traveller level 8 fighter to destroy. Luo Feng, using the soaring shuttle, would still find it difficult to break through! Breaking through earth and mud was extremely easy, but using his body to break through a little mountain of black iron? It was just like an ordinary person trying to break through the earth…extremely difficult!

“Collect! Collect! Collect!” Luo Feng’s thoughts moved.

Hu! A large amount of black iron vanished, another pile vanished…

Using the storage space ring, Luo Feng swiftly collected a large amount of the black iron.

“Babata, My storage ring isn’t big enough, help me collect them” Luo Feng said, his own storage ring was only about 600m long, 500m wide, 100m tall. The space, was a little more than 30 million cubic meters, if he cramped everything in, it might still be possible.

However, Babata had his own storage space, why not make use of it!

“Sly Luo Feng! No problem, I’ll take care of it.” Babata said easily.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

He watched with his naked eyes as the mountain of black iron swiftly vanished pile after pile. Within an instant, the outside of the warehouse, including the huge courtyard, which was littered with a little mountain of black iron, was cleared with everything being stored into Babata’s storage space.

“Hm, a total of 1.18 hundred million tons, too little, too little. It can barely build a small interstellar battleship.” Babata said.

Luo Feng laughed, striding towards the warehouse.

With the black iron obstruction out of the way, the appearance of the warehouse was now visible. It was huge and rectangular, it’s big doors shut tight.

“Break!”

Luo Feng stared at the huge thick black iron door, the hybrid copper essence shard became a beam of light and violently slammed into the door, slicing through to the inside.

“It’s really thick.” Luo Feng could clearly feel the big usage of spirit energy. The hybrid copper essence could easily slice through the black iron, but because of the thickness, he still needed to expend quite a bit of spirit energy.

Using half a minute, he finally managed to cut a hole big enough for a person to go through.

Within the warehouse.

The same old method was used, letting Babata store the huge amount of black iron into his storage space.

“Hm, dark red color?” Luo Feng’s attention was brought to the distant little pile of dark red metal, from his huge amount of inherited memories, scanning through the black iron data, he deducted that the metal in front of him was…black iron spirit!

“Finally found it!” Luo Feng was excited.

The golden horned beast’s internal world, currently required

swallowing B grade metals for its growth speed to increase!

"Babata, check it out, how much black iron spirits are there?" Luo Feng walked up to the black iron spirits, shua! A liquid silver guard appeared out of thin air, it stared at the black iron spirits, its pupils glowing with light, it was obviously collecting information on the black iron spirits.

"It's volume is about 35 cubic meters. About a total of 1200 tons." Babata said.

"Oh?" Luo Feng was about to commend him, "1200 tons? Right now the swallowing beast can swallow about 100 tons of B8 grade metal everyday, which means, this is enough for about 10 days?"

Key information.

If the star level 3 golden horned beast were to swallow the grades of metal from earth, it could swallow up to a 100 million tons of metal! For example the bases, they exceeded 500m long and wide, these enormous iron bases, each one of them was about 10 million tons of metal. When it was at the star level 1, it required swallowing a few bases for it to be full.

Now at the star level 3, it's capacity has increased, requiring even more swallowing.

A8 grade metal, it required tens of thousands of tons a day. The B8 grade however, close to a hundred tons was about enough.

“Too little, too little.” Luo Feng shook his head.

After collecting all the other black iron from the warehouse, he still didn’t find any more black iron spirit.

“Babata, the black iron spirit here is so little?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

“It’s not little, it’s the golden horned beast that swallows too much. 1200 tons too little?” Babata said, “Of the elite bloodlines among the space beasts, everyone of them is extremely powerful! The flame beast swallows stars, you, as a golden horned beast may not swallow stars, but your requirements are still extremely steep. When you reach the sector lord level, you’ll be swallowing E grade metals, swallowing that much…even your teacher, the master of Yun Mo Planet, would go broke from feeding you!”

Luo Feng forced a laugh.

That was right, as he grew, he required higher level metals. Unless Luo Feng was willing to grow at the slowest speed, that would save a lot of money.

However to grow fast, just buying the pure metals would require a large amount of money.

“Let’s continue searching, let’s see if there’s anymore black iron spirits in this iron city!”

……

They plundered the huge area!

The entire city was made of black iron. However, the living quarters and some other places weren't. Over the long period of time, a lot of them had degraded.

Plundering over the huge area, Luo Feng would occasionally find small pieces of black iron spirits within the degraded living quarters, they were obviously kept by the miners. Each time, the portions would be small, but the amount and quantity added up, it actually added up to more than 1000 tons!

32 minutes later.

"Rumble!"

Luo Feng kicked in a basement door of a dirty and degraded mansion, the dust flew off the door, revealing the door's original color, dark red.

"A black iron spirit door? If even the door is made from black iron spirit, what else would be in this basement?" Luo Feng was excited, "Collect!" immediately storing the heavy black iron door that was at least a few tons into his storage ring. After, he walked into the basement that had been deserted for more than a 100 000 years.

The basement was extremely huge.

“My god!”

Luo Feng stared, within the enormous basement, large amounts of degraded weapons were neatly organized! What took up the most space was the pile of densely packed dark red metal, in size alone, it far exceeded what Luo Feng had collected from the warehouse before! Also, in the center of the dark red metals, there was one piece of blood red metal!

“Black iron spirits, so many black iron spirits! In the center, is that the black iron essence?” Luo Feng was stunned, “there’s actually more stored here than in the warehouse?”

Babata, hurry and calculate, just how much there is.” Luo Feng said.

Because of the effects from the pyramids, Babata could only use the liquid silver guards, through their eyes, gathering the data and calculating.

“There’s about 12300 tons of black iron spirits, the c8 grade black iron essence, is about 360kg.” Babata said.

“It’s much more than the warehouse.” Luo Feng was very shocked.

The warehouse's black iron spirits was about 1000 tons in total, there wasn't any black iron essence at all.

"Luo Feng, I suggest heading over now to the underground iron city main monitoring office, connecting to the control AI system and checking up on the history of this place." Babata said, "I suspect... this underground iron city, because of the miners being trapped for an extended amount of time, the internal political system may have changed. The black iron spirits and the places they are stored in may have changed too."

"Alright." Luo Feng agreed with what Babata said.

5 minutes later.

The black metal robot was working, directly linking into the iron city's main monitoring system, because it had the support of the energy towers, its monitoring systems were totally functional until the point Luo Feng cut off the power.

Very quickly, they hacked in.

"I've found the data."

"Back then, the master destroyed the interstellar fleet with one move. There were a total of about 3.2 million miners trapped here on Mars. Through the Universe network, they asked for assistance, even offering a reward for their rescue. However, after retreating underground and not receiving any assistance for a long time, the

political system began to change!”

“Among the miners, the ratio of men to women was 20:1.”

“It’s just like on earth when the warlords fought for control, these 3.2 million people began an internal conflict. Afterall resources were limited, women were limited, beautiful women were even more limited.”

“A few valuable black iron spirits, and the even more valuable black iron essence, were thus taken and stored by some powerful people in their own homes.”

“However, the resources on Mars were limited, collecting resources and creating food became increasingly difficult. This iron city, did not have the data required for building a universe ship, that’s why they’ve always been researching building ships. Over a few thousand years, they finally painstakingly managed to build 3 small ships, sending some of their elites out from the planet to gather some hope for survival. Then, the remaining thousands of different races of people died in their sleep. This iron city has been maintained for over 3000 years, before it finally perished.” Babata explained.

Luo Feng sighed.

Over 3 million lives, constantly struggling. Mars had such a deficiency in resources and with no replenishment, there was no hope at all.

“Luo Feng, let’s go, I have the map to the leaders and those with power. Their houses are all here, let’s go to all their ‘nests’ and check it out.” Babata said.

“Ok.” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up.

They searched a total of 12 houses, from among them there were 8 ‘nests’ that were totally empty, they were obviously powers that were attacked and eventually failed.

The other 4 places, the rewards were all larger than the warehouse.

Henceforth!

The entire underground iron city, Luo Feng totally cleaned out all of the black iron spirits and black iron essences.

In particular, the total amount of black iron spirits had reached about 33600 tons, the black iron essence had reached about 2.34 tons.

“Over 30 thousand tons of black iron spirits, it’s just about enough for 1 year of swallowing.” Luo Feng stood at the iron city entrance, looking back on the black city, his mind was somewhat troubled. To make the golden horned beast grow faster, the price was extremely huge. “When it reached the universe level, a universe level golden horned beast, its swallowing power would be even crazier. These black iron essence wouldn’t even be enough for

1 day’s worth of swallowing by then!”

Chapter 14 – Luo Feng's Assets

After sweeping through the entire underground iron city, Luo Feng flew out through the entrance.

"Luo Feng, wait a minute." Babata shouted.

"Why, Babata?" Luo Feng was curious, "Does the iron city still hold more treasures?"

"Stupid! The entire iron city is valuable, not the black iron essence or even the black iron spirits! But...almost the entire city is made from black iron!" Babata couldn't help but say.

Luo Feng was shocked.

"Luo Feng, haven't you realized that right now you are extremely poor?" Babata smiled evilly.

"Very poor?"

"Do you have any money? I'm talking about the currency that will allow you to function in the universe, not the money of Earth. Do you have any?" Babata asked.

Luo Feng's eyebrows creased.

On Earth, money had no meaning for him, however in the vast

universe, he was indeed extremely poor. First, he had zero money on hand, second, he had zero money in his universe bank account.

“Your teacher has indeed prepared three back accounts for you, but that’s for when you actually reach the star level, the universe level, and the sector lord level. Only then can you access these accounts.” Babata said, “Before his demise, he made these three accounts through the universe virtual network He also requested that you to personally retrieve them with your own power.”

“While your golden horned beast’s body has reached the star level, however, would you take your golden horned beast’s body to the bank?” Babata asked.

Only after reaching the star level would he be able to accept the first bank account’s treasures!

However, he didn’t dare show his golden horned beast’s body around and his human body wasn’t at a sufficient level yet!

“That’s why, Luo Feng, your current amount of cash is zero, so the bank accounts are as good as nothing.”

“You do have many treasures, the Yun Mo Planet ship alone is a priceless treasure! The black dragon ship too is extremely valuable! However, if you take out the Yun Mo Planet ship now, there’d be no question, even the sector lords will come and fight for it, even the undying fighters will come snatch it! It would be suicide! And the black dragon ship, you need for yourself.

“The cloud contact vine, already recognized it’s owner.”

The soaring shuttle or the arc cutter blade, you require for yourself.”

“The only things that you can sell are, the liquid silver guards and the Mu Ya crystals, power crystals in my possession.” Babata said. “And the Mu Ya crystals, the cloud contact vine requires to grow! The power crystals? The black dragon ship too requires energy maintenance. In the future, we’ll frequently use the black dragon ship and my storage of energy may not even be enough, we’d still need to buy more next time!”

Luo Feng was dumbfounded.

He was a disciple of the Yun Mo Planet, and yet, he was completely broke! Treasures? Black dragon ship, spirit reader weapons, Mu Ya crystals, and energy crystals were all necessities.

“So right now Luo Feng, before your human body reaches the star level, you are very poor.” Babata said helplessly.

“Don’t we have the ship remains?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

“Those are remains, deemed as rubbish, even smelting them again would be too troublesome.” Babata said, “How much can they sell for? One Mu Ya crystal alone would be able to exchange for countless remains.”

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

He who gave no thought to far-flung problems soon found suffering nearby. Luo Feng was very clear that he would venture into the universe in the future. However the metal required for <Deity of the World's> training could only be bought. If he searched for them by himself in the universe, how long would he have to search for? In the vast universe, even the undying beings recognize the worth of money.

Of course, it was the universe's currency! Not just like Earth's currency which was limited to just one planet.

How would he function without any money?

Without money, he wouldn't even be able to open a universe virtual network account.

"Luo Feng, I'll strike a deal with you!" Babata said, "The energy crystals I have in my storage, if you frequently use the black dragon ship, they'll be depleted in about 10 years."

"The Mu Ya crystals, are enough to let you reach the star level 1 along with the cloud contact vine reaching star level 5 or 6. Babata said, "Nothing else. I'll let you decide how to deal with the energy crystals and the Mu Ya crystals."

Luo Feng began to consider carefully!

His wealth was separated into three levels.

The highest level: The Yun Mo Planet ship, the undying corpses etc, were sources of extreme wealth! It was pity the moment he took out these treasures, it would be akin to suicide!

The second level: the three bank accounts left behind by his teacher, he required power to retrieve money from them.

The third level: the items he was currently using: the black dragon ship, soaring shuttle, arc cutter blade, liquid silver guards...and the Mu Ya crystals and energy crystals with Babata.

“I can’t bear to, can’t bear to at all.” Luo Feng shook his head.

“That’s why, your largest source of money, has to be this black iron!” Babata shouted excitedly, “These are all black iron materials! Not those worthless remains! The ship remains are the most useless in pricing, but these original materials can be used to build tools, weapons, etc, they are still quite valuable.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Just like Earth’s iron mining and their worth, in the universe, while the number of places to actually acquire and dig out these metals are plenty, there were still costs for these things!

“Black iron, is an A8 grade metal and priced cheaply. However with such a quantity.” Babata shouted, “Back then they specially used an interstellar fleet to transport millions of miners here to dig,”

“Looks like this is my first monetary reward.” Luo Feng looked at the iron city, his gaze burning.

“You are in charge of breaking it down, I’ll be in charge of storing!” Babata shouted.

“No problem!”

……

Rumble…

A rumbling noise rang out from the iron city, under the combination of Luo Feng’s dismantling and Babata’s storing, the efficiency was extremely high. With an area of about 10km, large chunks of black iron material were being stored in Babata’s storage space, some black iron that were aggregated to pillars were also kept.

After roughly eight hours, the entire iron city had vanished, all that was left were some degraded remains.

“Luo Feng, other than those remains, we’ll have collected a total of 92.8 hundred million tons of black iron material.” Babata said

excitedly, “Haha, just with these, Luo Feng, you have your first source of capital.”

Luo Feng flew out from underground.

From high above, he surveyed Mars’ surface.

“It’s a pity, there are still many veins of ore underground, but extracting them would be too difficult.” Babata said helplessly, “even with strength, one person cannot possibly extract all of the ores. Unless it’s those kinds of pure metal ores.”

“Don’t be too greedy.” Luo Feng was very clear.

This place, was the hard work of over three million miners along with their machinery.

Earth, China, Jiang Nan headquarter city Yang Zhou city.

In the evening, the red burning sun was slowly setting in the west. A huge black disc-shaped ship was in the air thousands of meters above Yang Zhou. However, none of the countries in the world had noticed this ship. The cabin door opened, a youth wearing simple casual clothing leapt out.

The ship suddenly vanished.

The youth rushed downwards.

“I’m back! How mystical, going to Mars in the morning and returning to Earth in the evening.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but praise out, “Also striking quite a sum of money!”

Over three million miners’ hard labor of digging.

This 92.8 hundred million tons of black iron, was even more valuable than the two tons of black iron essence. After all, the quantity was much more!

“Dad, daddy!”

In the courtyard, two running little children, one of them shouting excitedly. The other also raised his head.

Indeed, their father Luo Feng was flying down from the sky.

“Ping Ping, Little Hai, come, give me a kiss.” Luo Feng knelt down and hugged his two sons, smiling.

“Du, du…”

A car’s horn sounded.

Luo Feng turned to see, Xu Xin was driving her car into the garage, purposely pressing the horn, causing the two children to shout, “Mom, mommy.”

“Dinner will be ready soon, Little Feng, you and Xu Xin have arrived at a good time. What a coincidence.” Gong Xin Lan laughed as she said.

……

Luo Feng led a very comfortable life.

The golden horned beast was deep within the internal world, engaged in the <Absolute Space> training, the internal world was receiving and absorbing close to 100 tons of black iron spirits everyday.

Two birds with one stone, to Luo Feng, dividing his attention like this was extremely simple!

Just like an undying being, a soul’s functions and operation speed was no weaker than a living AI, every second it was capable of operating on billions of things! Luo Feng’s soul was already at the star level 3, if he divided his attention and controlled multiple things, he could control up to several hundred or thousand items to orbit individually with ease.

Even if he gave every one of them full power, with the consciousness of a star level 3, he could control up to 32 threads of spiritual force!

This meant to say, Luo Feng could do up to thirty two things at a

time! Every one of them with maximum results!

……

Indeed!

Thirty two!

Back when Luo Feng was at the star traveller 3, his consciousness could control up to nineteen threads of spiritual force! And right now at the star level 3 consciousness, he could do thirty two threads of spiritual force!

Luo Feng frequently sat on the ship leaving Earth, visiting the other planets in the solar system.

No one detected it, after all Luo Feng returned too quickly. Even the furthest planet in the solar system, using the black dragon ship, took a total of the most 2 days to go and return.

……

Earth was in a state of peace.

……

Hong Ning headquarter city.

Year 2062, Spring, in the Dojo of Limits headquarters...within the enormous ship, in one particular spacious room with two separate beds there were large amounts of apparatus beside them, all used to maintain the lives of two powerful warriors.

On the left lay Thunder God clad in a white robe, on the right lay Hong clad in black.

“Head.”

Outside the room, two people were staring in through the glass window, their eyes filled with sadness and pain.

“Ice Mountain, when will the Head awaken?” Allure couldn’t help but ask softly.

“No idea. But I’ll wait, I’ll continue to wait on.” The ice cold man beside said.

“Okay.” Allure gently nodded.

Suddenly, “di...di...di...” an ear piercing warning sound rang from outside.

Rumble!

A group of doctors suddenly rushed in from outside, the two

royal guards Allure and Ice Mountain witnessed this scene with their eyes opened wide. The ward door immediately opened, two doctors went in, the rest were stuck outside.

“The mental capacity detector has detected some brain waves.” An old white haired doctor shouted excitedly.

“Both Heads’ have brainwaves, also, they are increasing in strength!” Another doctor shouted excitedly.

The brainwaves displayed on the apparatus.

Both Heads’ brainwaves began to fluctuate, almost as though the two were in contest with each other, one stronger than the other. Both were becoming stronger!

Suddenly, the black clothed Hong’s eyelids fluttered, and after, he slowly opened his eyes.

Chapter 15 – Earth's Three Fighters

Nightfall.

Luo Feng was with his wife Xu Xin, each hugging a child watching television.

"Hm?" Luo Feng picked up the telephone, looking at the number displayed on the phone, shocked.

"What's wrong?" Xu Xin asked curiously.

"It's the Head, Hong's number." Luo Feng suspiciously creased his eyebrows, ever since the swallowing beast incident, Hong and Thunder God have been in a coma.

Xu Xin too was shocked, "Who dares to use Hong's phone?"

"Hello." Luo Feng answered the call.

"Luo Feng!" That resounding energetic voice sounded.

"Head?" Luo Feng was extremely shocked, even Xu Xin who was beside him looked on wide eyed.

Hong has awoken?

After being in a coma for two years, he's awoken? This was definitely earth shaking news.

"I've just awoken, Thunder God has woken up too. I just came to know of the things that have happened since we were comatose. Thanks for saving both of our lives, and also for saving the entire human race." Hong's voice was filled with deep happiness, "If you're free, come over here to Hong Ning headquarter city for a bit."

"Alright, I'll head over immediately." Luo Feng nodded.

"Alright, I'll be here with Thunder God." Hong laughed.

Hanging up the phone, Xu Xin couldn't help but exclaim: "Hong is back up?"

"Thunder God too." Luo Feng laughed, "I'm going over now for a bit, I'll probably be back late tonight."

"Ok." Xu Xin nodded.

Luo Feng stepped on the soaring shuttle, swiftly leaving the Jiang Nan headquarter city, heading to the Dojo of Limits headquarters with his fastest speed.

.....

Dojo of Limits headquarters exterior, filled with battleships, was extremely bustling.

“Investigator Luo.” The guard at the headquarters paid their respects.

Luo Feng swiftly entered the base, under the direction of the base’s personnel, he headed directly towards a particular room.

Within that room were Hong and Thunder God.

“Luo Feng.”

Two men, one in black and one in white, stood up and approached as they saw Luo Feng.

“Haha, Luo Feng, you’ve really made a name for yourself.” Thunder God laughed loudly as he bumped Luo Feng’s chest, “I’ll let this matter go on the account you saved my life, Haha.”

“Second brother’s skin is really thick, don’t lower yourself to his level.” Hong said to Luo Feng, Thunder God stared back: “You…”

“Yep, I can tolerate this kind of behavior, I won’t lower myself that much.” Lou Feng said firmly.

“Damn, you two!”

Thunder God stared angrily, Hong and Luo Feng couldn't help but laugh out loud as they saw this.

"Sit."

"Let's all sit."

Under Hong's instructions, the three sat down, these three were the three strongest fighters on Earth!

"Luo Feng," Thunder God wasn't joking like before, he said seriously, "This incident, after knowing about it from Big Brother, we were really afraid of humanity's destruction! Thanks."

"Hm, we shall dispense with the ceremonies, and celebrate with wine." Hong personally poured three glasses of wine, "Come!"

All three lifted their glasses.

"Cheers!"

They downed their drinks.

"Luo Feng." Hong laughed, "Your previous actions of dealing with Atkin and those other scum, thank you. If you had left those people to run amok, who knows what else they would have done."

“Especially my Thunder Dojo! Hmph, Sago Nehru wanted to take the Head position? Hmph, to be shameless enough to lay hands on the families of the heroes who sacrificed themselves for humanity, those kinds of people...really deserved death!” Thunder God couldn’t help but scold, after learning of the news after waking up, he was really enraged.

Luo Feng laughed: “These are small matters, dealing with those black sheep immediately helped stabilize the countries and bring about peace.”

“Let them be used as examples.” Hong nodded.” The matters on Earth are but small, after Thunder God and I woke up, we discussed about it and came to a decision.”

“Decision?” Luo Feng looked suspiciously at Thunder God and Hong.

These two had been in a coma for two years, what decision did they make right after waking up?

“Luo Feng,” Thunder God said seriously, “Hong and I both acquired information and history from the ancient ruins and can even make translation software. You should be able to see that we both know a lot about the universe! In the vast universe, there exist so many, too many strong planets and systems, our milky way is also a part of the Silverblue Empire!”

“Also, for planets like ours without a master, the moment we are discovered, that would be a nightmare!” Thunder God’s expression

grew serious.

Hong nodded: “Right, a nightmare! If we are lucky, our Earth may become the territory of a powerful fighter. However, the bigger possibility would be…all of the humans on Earth may become slaves and get sold off, and after, the entire planet may be sold to yet another powerful being.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Regarding this matter, Luo Feng was very clear. Status and position in the universe were differentiated, slavery and other existences, etc. In short, there were countless human races and clans in the universe, everything was based on competition, based on filtering out the strongest! These strongest could attain high status, high ranks and salaries, while the weak would be subjected to pitiful lives.

“The Swallowing Beast may have been powerful, but since it was alone, we could defend against it.” Hong’s expression was extremely serious, “However, the great powers from the universe can easily deploy an interstellar fleet, we wouldn’t even have the power to resist.”

Thunder God nodded: “The only thing we can do is…make ourselves stronger! Only that way can we protect our home!”

Luo Feng’s heart was very heavy.

He knew even more than Hong and Thunder God. In the universe, the fates of several aboriginal planets were extremely tragic! These things had become the norm. In the universe... occasionally these aboriginal planets may have a powerful fighter, able to fight for his planet, protecting his planet's races and home!

"Luo Feng, I'm sure you don't want to see Earth meet such a fate do you." Hong looked at Luo Feng.

"Do you even have to ask?" Luo Feng replied.

"That's why, Luo Feng, come and train with us in the future. On Earth, not to brag, only me and Hong are geniuses in terms of fighter capabilities. As for a genius in spirit reader capabilities, that's of course you, Luo Feng!" Thunder God looked at Luo Feng, "The three of us are the strongest in the world, we must be united."

Hong also looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng laughed, nodding!

"Haha!"

"Hahaha!"

The three laughed together.

The heroes from before all said, the higher one climbed, the lonelier it got! After being invincible, there would be no other comparable warriors, one naturally grew lonely. Just like before when Hong and Thunder God were in their coma, Luo Feng was the invincible being on Earth. Truthfully...during that time, Luo Feng did feel a sense of loneliness.

And for both of them to awaken, Luo Feng was sincerely happy.

Finally he had some companions for the future!

“Luo Feng, from today, you’ll be the third brother!” Hong said happily.

“Little three, little three.” Thunder God laughed weirdly, “The emperor is tired, return to the palace we shall.”

“Little two, hurry up and pour the wine, your master will spare you some change.” Luo Feng joined in on the banter as he looked at Thunder God.

.....

The path of training will be very difficult. We will improve much faster when we help and spar with each other.” Hong said.

Thunder God nodded.

“Their comprehension levels are very high, but Earth’s human genetics are really just average.” Babata shouted, “Also, they have no teacher! They are purely just like the blind leading the blind! Without a teacher, without the proper genetics...all they have is comprehension. I can bet! The two of them will take 10 to 20 years to maybe just reach the Star Traveller level 9! However, for the star traveller level 9 to breakthrough to the Star level 1, that’s hard, very hard, very very hard! The minimum would be at least 50 to 60 years.”

“Luo Feng, your internal world is already at the Star level 3, that’s why, your human body can continuously evolve, even though it is limited to your Earth human body’s limitations and slowed down. But it’s still much faster than them.” Babata said.

Luo Feng’s thoughts moved: “Babata, doesn’t our Yun Mo Planet have techniques and skills for fighters? Pass it on to Hong and Thunder God.”

Without a teacher, even with natural talent and genius, the path would still be extremely difficult!

As fellow Earth humans, fellow warriors, the three strongest in the world, Luo Feng hoped for Hong and Thunder God to be able to keep up with his growth.

“How is that possible, those are secrets from the Yun Mo Planet!” Babata denied it, “Divulging the secrets is punishable by death.”

“Our Yun Mo Planet mostly looks for spirit readers.” Luo Feng

laughed, “Even the teacher was a spirit reader, the secret techniques he created, like <Soul Seal> <Six Blades> <Tower of the Void> are all for spirit readers. Those fighter secret techniques, are probably just things the teacher collected from others.”

“Well...but they were still painstakingly collected by your teacher.” Babata said, “No divulging, those who are not disciples of Yun Mo are not allowed access to them.”

Luo Feng’s thoughts continued to bounce back and forth with Babata.

However, Babata just stubbornly refused...Luo Feng finally realized, the moment a living AI insists on one thing, there was no way to coax it.

“How about this, accept Hong and Thunder God as Yun Mo disciples, how about that?” Luo Feng asked.

“Huh?” Babata looked wide eyed, nodding, “That’s possible.”

“Hm...”

Luo Feng was stunned, “That was too simple.”

“Accept them as disciples. Luo Feng, hurry up and do it. These are definitely the best potential disciples! Star travellers who have their own domains! Back then I even shed a tear for them when I thought they had fallen, luckily they’ve awoken. This kind of

genius, two geniuses, people would fight over them all over the universe." Babata said, even though the master of Yun Mo Planet was a spirit reader.

However one big power, couldn't be totally made of spirit readers. Just the undying beings and underlings of the Yun Mo Planet master were mostly made of undying fighters!

In the room.

"What has made you so serious?" Thunder God looked wide eyed at Luo Feng, Hong too listened intently.

"It's this way, I once inherited a set of secret techniques, among them were spirit reader training methods, and also fighter training methods." Luo Feng said seriously, beside him, Hong and Thunder God immediately burst out in excitement, Luo Feng continued, "However, the sect I'm in inhibits external divulging of techniques, and I cannot oppose it. That's why, I would like to ask, if you two would be willing to join my sect and train?

"What organization is it?" Hong asked, "What are the conditions?"

"What sect?" Thunder God too asked, "What kind of rules are there?"

"Right now, there's only me left in the sect." Luo Feng said.

“Damn!” Thunder God looked wide eyed, “Why didn’t you say earlier that there’s only you left in. I originally thought joining the sect would make us underlings, cannon fodder! A sect with just you in it, we’d definitely join!”

“Right, join.” Hong too laughed, “Right, what sect is it?”

“This sect is called Yun Mo Planet.” Luo Feng laughed, “In the future when we leave, don’t tell others we are from the Yun Mo Planet sect, afterall, the entire sect was destroyed by an enemy. That’s why, revealing the name would be suicide.”

Thunder God and Hong looked at each other.

The entire sect was destroyed?

That was a good thing!

“That’s a good thing.” Thunder God laughed as he commended, “This means we have no restrictions.”

Hong too smiled.

“Bastards, these two bastards. To not respect the master, they deserved to be punished!” Within the virtual space, Babata raged helplessly.

Chapter 16 – Training by Force Feeding

Late night, in the living room.

Hong and Thunder God seemed to be possessed for a bit, both were staring at their wrist communicator's screen, carefully reading the Yun Mo Fighter manuals that Luo Feng had just sent over.

"My god, so that's how one uses one's energy." Thunder God muttered to himself, "It's wrong, my <Nine Stage Thunder Blade> seriously pales in comparison to it."

"So you can actually do it like this!" Hong's eyes too had lit up, lost deep in reading the secret manuals.

Luo Feng said from the side: "Training the foundation is the most important, if you want the starting speed to be greatly increased. Without it, you will meet barriers later because your foundations are lacking, the Star Traveller level 9 to the star level, the star level to the universe level will become very hard to achieve. Your foundations must be solid! Eh, are you guys even listening?"

This was something Babata ensured Luo Feng said.

"Alright, alright third brother. Even before the Great Nirvana, I was already practicing martial arts. I obviously know the foundations are extremely important." Thunder God waved his hands, "This secret manuals are seriously too, too impressive. Stop distracting me from reading them."

“This bastard…” Luo Feng forced a smile.

“It’s indeed an impressive manual.” Hong looked up at Luo Feng, his expression excited, “Luo Feng, this is definitely the most in depth, well versed and clearly explained, even to the point where several things which have to be naturally realized, unable to be explained things have been written very clearly. It’s extremely impressive.”

Luo Feng laughed.

Of course it was impressive, just who did they think it was that provided them these manuals! It was the Yun Mo Planet! Firstly, the Yun Mo Planet master had nine undying beings! Just these nine undying beings alone would have been able to contribute already impressive manuals. Much less the master who had spent so many years collecting such manuals.

Even in the universe, these were top notch manuals!

To the blindly progressing, self-training and creating Hong and Thunder God, the techniques they had created…couldn’t hold a candle to the techniques of the Yun Mo Planet!

For example, force exertions.

<Nine Stage Thunder Blade> expands energy up to a maximum of seven times, the defensive capabilities have no way to keep up with

the offensive.

In comparison!

The physical body's limit for expanding energy is 100 times! Only at this level, can one be said to be using his maximum body's explosive energy!

Which means to say, the brute force of the average fighter on Earth, were only using about 1% of their physical body's capabilities, even the highest levels of the <Nine Stage Thunder Blade> uses only up to 7%. To unleash a 100%, meaning one had to hit the theoretical limit...expanding energy up to a 100 times! It was hard, very hard.

Even the sector lords had difficulty doing it!

Just like the one's brain vigor, it's just how much one's mind has been opened. Luo Feng's previous brain vigor was 22, meaning he was using just 22% of his brain. For the average human being, just reaching 1% was already not bad. To expand one's mind to 60%, (brain vigor 60), 70%, (brain vigor 70), was as hard as reaching the heavens.

"Haha, you both continue reading. But remember, you can't pass these to other people." Luo Feng emphasized.

"When we swore into the Yun Mo Planet sect, didn't we already take an oath? Relax." Thunder God laughed, Hong nodded too.

Within the personal virtual space, a blood red castle, within the training room.

Dressed in a black robe, Babata sat on the desk, one hand holding an apple, shooting Luo Feng a glance. “Hey Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God’s comprehension are very high, even without the manuals, they have their own domains. Their force exertions have also reached six to seven times, now with the manuals, there’s going to be a huge leap in improvement in the near future!”

“I know.” Luo Feng held onto the <Soul Seal> book, reading it without even looking up.

“Damn, don’t you feel any pressure?” Babata’s blood red eyes were opened wide, he revealed his fangs.

“Pa!”

Luo Feng closed the book, looking at Babata: “Say what you want to say.”

“Not interesting at all.” Babata curled his lips, “Very simple, do you remember…when you first came here, what I told you? I’ll give you a hint, it’s in regards to the foundations.”

“Of course I remember, you said…I need to use a total of 50 years to train to the Star level.” Luo Feng laughed, “That’s just to ensure my foundations are solid, if I really forced it and madly rose in

levels, without care about the foundations, within three years I would have reached the star level 1! But the price would be that I'd never be able to ever reach the universe level."

"Right." Babata raised his head slightly, "However, the times have changed!"

"Hm?" Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

"From the Star Traveller level 9 to the Star level 1, from the Star level 9 to the Universe level 1, from the Universe level 9 to the Domain Lord one and finally breaking through to the sector Lord level! Every phase, every bottleneck, is a life altering and evolutionary stage. It is extremely extremely difficult." Babata smiled as he looked at Luo Feng, "That's why the basics are so crucial, however, things have changed."

"Changed?" Luo Feng suddenly understood.

"Right now your core, is your internal world!" Babata said, "With the internal world's growth, your physical body's growth has no such bottleneck."

"I know."

Luo Feng nodded, "The internal world requires swallowing large amounts of metal to grow!"

The internal world was currently a Star level 3, so...Luo Feng's

bodies, the Golden Horned Beast's body and the human body, both bodies and soul, could reach only reach the Star level 3.

Oppositely, if the internal world were to grow to the Universe level 1, then Luo Feng's soul and two bodies will have no such bottleneck, they could grow constantly! When that time came, it boiled down to aptitude, if the Golden Horned Beast's internal world grew, then it's physical body too would grow. But Luo Feng's human body, even without the bottle neck, will constantly grow too.

Even though the road was straight, it was still much faster than the Earth human's natural evolution speed.

"Because your core is in the internal world, as long as the internal world grows, your physical body and soul will not be bottlenecked, or stuck."

"That's why, you can totally do the force feeding mad evolution way now." Babata said. "With the greatest speed, greatest efficiency to increase your body's strength!"

"Hm?" Luo Feng's eyes lit up.

The only thing holding his own power back, was his body's limitations.

"From today, your evolution, will not rely on your internal world's metal universe properties." Babata said, "While that

universe is not bad, it cannot compare to the Mu Ya crystals, The crystals have a large life force, in aiding the evolution of life, it's efficiency is extremely high."

Luo Feng definitely knew.

He personally witnessed a Horde Leader monster evolving into an Emperor Level monster after eating the Mu Ya Crystal.

"Oh, definitely <Mixed>, <Control>, <Illusion> must still be trained." Babata said, "This concerns your battle techniques and control ability."

"Understood." Luo Feng nodded.

Even if his power was strong, he still needed to be able to use them.

"From today, for the battle strategies, we'll increase your controlling ability training by six times, force feeding and mad training, jumping four times! This way, we can roughly guarantee your battle skills can keep up with your sudden increase in power!" Babata made the decision.

"Ok."

Luo Feng too was anticipating.

Force feeding to evolve?

Since then, Luo Feng had been consciously training in the Yun Mo Planet's secret techniques, battle controlling abilities, also the force feeding techniques, all to make his body evolve! As for his other times...he would spar with Hong and Thunder God occasionally, improving on his battle experiences.

.....

Year 2062, Burning summer.

The vast pacific ocean, the ocean was sparkling under the rays of light from the sun, it was colorful and gorgeous.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Three human silhouettes broke out from the ocean into the air, laughter was heard: "Luo Feng, you've really stolen my limelight this time. Originally, I was prepared to simply use one slash to kill that Thunder Dragon Emperor. You? I hadn't even flown over when you controlled the soaring shuttle from afar to kill it. The Eight Tentacle Emperor and the Thunder Dragon Emperor were all stolen away by you."

"Well, who told you to move so slowly." Luo Feng said in jest.

"Damn, bragging after gaining an advantage! Come, receive my blow." Thunder God shouted.

Rumble...

The surroundings were filled with roaming electric snakes, and within the domain Thunder God was holding a violet black battle saber, and wrapped around it were more electric snakes, almost like a spirit weapon. And when Thunder God's body itself moved, a blur of a shadow moved along with it, and the purplish black blade in hand produced a clap of thunder!

"You think I'll be afraid of you?" Luo Feng laughed.

Thirty two knives immediately flew out, without any regulations, they flew directly to engulf him.

Qiang! Qiang! Qiang!

Blade after blade clashed with the violet black battle saber, almost as though a highly skilled commander was controlling each and every knife, knocking, slashing, parry, surround...various methods, swiftly reducing the strength of the violet black battle saber. Luo Feng just waved his hand and the thirty two knives moved, as though they were on threads, surrounding his body, before increasing in speed, engulfing Thunder God!

"Damn."

Thunder God felt as though he was fighting thirty two highly skilled opponents, facing their perfectly coordinated attacks.

“Thunder Movement!” Thunder God raged, his expression somewhat malevolent, his veins protruding.

Rumble!

The purplish black blade in his hand exploded loudly and fiercely, becoming an enormous thunder saber, quickly knocking the thirty two knives into disarray, the knives were knocked into all directions.

“We’re playing for real?” Luo Feng stared, his body’s movement became a blur, at the same time he said softly, “Soaring Shuttle Swordfish Formation!”

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Two of the thirty to knives flew towards Luo Feng’s soaring shuttle beneath his feet. The remaining thirty knives distanced themselves from each other, thirty knives floating in mid air, suddenly took the shape of a swordfish, with a mouth, a fish tail, it looked totally lifelike, very strange.

“Chi chi...” the thirty two knives simultaneously glowed with a golden light.

The golden threads linked together.

Immediately becoming a golden swordfish! Just like a fish, it wiggled it's tail, moving strangely. And it's mouth was extremely sharp.

"Stop!!!" Thunder God shouted.

"Why are we stopping?" Luo Feng floated in mid air, a golden swordfish floating beside him.

"After getting hit by you the last time, you think I'll let it happen again?" Thunder God muttered. "It's disgusting, I'm already a Star Traveller level 9 with my own domain, and I can't beat you. Big brother is stronger than me, now even the third brother is stronger than me. It's frustrating, it pisses me off!"

Luo Feng laughed.

Using the secret manuals, Thunder God and Hong have improved by quite a bit.

Thunder God was a level 9 Star Traveller fighter with a one layer domain.

Hong was a level 8 Star Traveller fighter with a two layer domain.

Relying on the force feeding mad growth method, Luo Feng, over the course of half a year had his body grow from a level 3 Star Traveller to a level 5. His spirit reading side too naturally grew by

two levels.

Luo Feng was a level 8 Star Traveller Spirit Reader, his brain vigor was at 32, he could already use the technique, the soaring shuttle's swordfish formation. Using this swordfish formation, he was ahead of Thunder God and comparable to Hong.

The Soaring shuttle had a total of three formations.

The first, being able to control twelve external items.

The second, being able to control thirty external items.

The third, the final formation, required reaching the universe level, having one's own domain and being able to control forty eight external items.

With Luo Feng's brain vigor at thirty two, through hard work and training, he finally reached the soaring shuttle's second formation and made some progress with the swordfish formation. Be it flexibility, power, etc, the second swordfish formation was much stronger than the first Mountain Drill.

It was extremely powerful!

It's training process too was much more difficult! Unlike the first formation which he succeeded after first attempting it, Luo Feng had met the requirements for the second formation much earlier but was only able to execute it a few days ago.

Chapter 17 – Dragon Star

“Second brother, now you know the difference?” Hong joked, “Then hurry up and go train! Be it adding a layer to your domain, or breaking through from the Star Traveller Level 9 to the Star level 1, whichever. Once accomplished, you will be able to surpass me and Luo Feng.

The boundaries were separated into four main levels.

Foundations, Conception, Domain, World, above that, is the Undying Being.

Every level was detailed and tedious.

The domain alone had nine layers.

Several Universe level or Sector Lord level warriors struggled on the nine layers of domain, every layer required a lot more work and had more difficulty.

“From the Star Traveller level 9 to breakthrough to the Star level, the difficulty wasn’t easier than going from level 1 to 9 itself. Not to mention the even more complicated domains.” Thunder God rubbed his chin, “Brother Hong, you’ve always suppressed me, third brother is even more abnormal. At such a young age he’s caught up from far behind, this old face of mine is almost totally worthless now.”

Luo Feng and Hong laughed.

“Hm?” Hong’s tactical communications watch suddenly vibrated, he checked it, “Something came up at the Dojo, let’s disperse for today.”

“The Thunder Dragon Emperor has been killed, let’s go home.” Thunder God waved and flew away immediately.

Luo Feng and Hong too separated, each returning to their homes.

Flying above the continent of China, Luo Feng surveyed below. He saw the degraded and destroyed cities, along with the scavenging and surviving monsters, and several fighters carefully training within the city. Seeing these fighters, Luo Feng felt as though he was looking at his old self.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng.” Babata shouted excitedly.

“What’s the matter, why so happy?” Luo Feng’s thoughts questioned.

“I’ve settled the auxiliary system, from now, the black dragon x81 ship is in perfect condition. I just need one more day to install the auxiliary system in, then…you will be able to take the black dragon ship and travel through the universe, roam about in the vast universe and witness the countless races and clans!” Babata was extremely excited.

It had been too long.

It had been trapped underground for too long, he longed to travel and venture in the universe again.

“We can travel through the universe and roam about in the universe?” Luo Feng was shocked, stopping mid flight, floating in mid air.

“Right right right.” Babata said very excitedly.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but feel hot blood rushing through his veins.

A normal Earthling would be so excited at just the thought of reaching the moon that he or she would probably lose sleep that night. Much less...Luo Feng now had the hopes of travelling and roaming about in the universe, visiting the countless human races in the universe. This feeling of excitement was something that was hard to suppress.

Towards his home planet Earth, he definitely would miss it.

But to occasionally visit the other planets in the universe, was something that was exhilarating.

“Luo Feng! The moment your Earth is discovered by the scout ships or other empires, that would mean trouble. That’s why, you need to quickly enter the universe. Only that way, will you be able

to ensure Earth's future survival." Babata was thinking of ways to coax Luo Feng to quickly enter the universe to venture.

"Entering the universe, the most important thing is...you need to open an account with the universe network, that way you can enter the universe virtual network and communicate with the countless races." Babata said.

To a living AI like Babata.

The lure of entering the universe network couldn't compare to the real feeling of venturing into the universe.

"As long as you can reach a planet, open an account, you can return home right after that." Babata seemed anxious as he tried to coax him.

"Relax!"

Luo Feng grinned, "I'm definitely going! I'm so anxious I almost want to leave immediately, however I just thought about it...my internal world, probably has about a month or so to transform. When that happens, the power of the Golden Horned beast would increase greatly. It's better to wait till after the transformation before leaving!"

"One month? Oh, ok." Babata was somewhat helpless, but he still agreed.

“Universe?”

Luo Feng stood high in the sky above the wilderness, gazing over the vast territory, his mind however had long ventured into the mysterious and vast space.

Within the space in the universe, the milky way’s renowned void district.

Sou!

Maintaining a shocking speed, flying through the milky way, a disc shaped ship was constantly heading towards Earth and closing in.

Within the ship.

Wearing a silver grey battle uniform, a middle aged handsome man stood at the control board. At his side, a fit, tall and sturdy man, with some black facial hair, almost like a black gorilla with a height of about 2.2m stood worried: “Captain, right now the captain’s family and fleet have already reached the void district. When the time comes…won’t there be a struggle within the family for the gains? Leaving only a small reward for the captain?”

“Hmph.”

The handsome middle aged man snorted: “Even though my relationship with my grandfather is rather rigid, he isn’t that kind

of person."

"But this is a life planet." The black gorilla man said, "Without seeing this planet, we cannot determine its worth. But it is afterall a planet that an invincible fighter used to own, it's worth is definitely more than a normal life planet. In front of such big rewards, even the closest blood brothers would begin killing each other, captain, you need to be careful."

The handsome middle aged man looked at the black gorilla man, turning around to survey his other crew, revealing a smile: "Attention all, no matter what, the rewards our squad will gain won't be small, after all, you are all buddies who been through life and death with me!"

The crew all smiled.

"The moment we reach the life planet, we'll immediately begin sampling, gathering data. Just doing this would probably take a few days." The middle aged man said, "When that time comes, I can immediately enter the universe virtual network and look for a buyer! The family definitely won't be faster than me."

"Everything is within our hands." The middle aged man smiled, "The more benefits the family gives me, the more I will return the favor. My dear brothers, our earnings will definitely not be small!"

Immediately, there was cheering and laughter.

“Atuka, how much further do we have before we arrive at the life planet?” The handsome middle aged man asked.

A child’s image appeared on the screen, his clear voice sounded, “Captain, 91 days before we arrive.”

“Very good!”

The handsome middle aged man smiled.

……

A silver grey scout ship was heading towards earth!

The end of September, China country, Jiang Nan headquarter city, in the air 8000m up, a black huge ship floated.

The ship, mid level in the study room.

Luo Feng stood quietly in the room, a wave of his hand, a small pile of dark red metal appeared on the floor surface, this was exactly ninety two tons of black iron spirit metal.

“Ninety two tons! After daily swallowing ninety two tons of black iron spirit, the black iron spirits he had obtained in the winter the year before, were almost gone.” Luo Feng felt stressed, his internal world was just like a bottomless pit, while he didn’t eat much everyday, but he still required daily swallowing, the millions of

tons of black iron spirits were almost gone.

A year hadn't gone by and it was almost all gone.

"Today, is the day of the transformation." Luo Feng extended his right hand, the space around warped, engulfing ninety two tons of black iron spirit.

Shua!

The black iron spirit vanished.

In the internal world, the surroundings were filled with gold fog, even in the air gold fog was all over.

In mid air, a fierce silhouette stopped suddenly, it was an enormous black scaled Golden Horned Beast, the beast looked at the pile of black iron spirit metal that appeared in the internal world, its huge dark golden pupils had a hint of glee.

"Hu hu..."

The pile of black iron spirit, seemed like it vaporized into a thick golden fog, it's mass shrinking gradually, the surrounding golden fog got thicker and thicker. In about 5 minutes or so, the ninety two tons of black iron spirit had completely vanished.

"Rumble..."

The internal world had massive tremors.

The golden fog which had engulfed both land and air covered everything, shrouding the entire internal world, a large amount of the fog swiftly solidified, becoming another part of the land, making the land grow bigger and bigger.

An indefinite amount of time passed.

Everything stopped!

The golden fog which had covered everything flowed in the wind, floating to outside the internal world, floating to high up in the air above the land! All that was left some of the golden fog which entered the Golden Horned Beast's body. The Golden Horned Beast's body was crackling and growing gradually, until it finally stopped, it's body had reached a total of 420m!

The area of the internal world had reached 40km! It's height was 40km, only 40km and above was there golden fog.

.....

The black dragon ship, within the study.

"The Golden Horned Beast has reached the Star level 4." Luo Feng opened his eyes, they had a hint of glee, "Using the black iron

spirits may have been a great expense, but the speed was much faster!”

During the growth of his internal world, the first three levels are the fastest. The middle three levels have a greater difficulty and the last three levels are the hardest! Finally the breakthrough from level 9, and entering the new level altogether...the amount of time needed, is the combination of all the levels before.

From Star level 1 to 3, normal evolution, one year is enough.

Level 3 to 6, normal evolution, requires six years (every level requires about two years)!

Level 6 to 9, requires thirty six years (Every level requires about twelve years)!

And from the Star level 9 to the Universe level 1, required more than 50 years!

It was obvious; the final step was the hardest of all! And this is the Golden Horned Beast, if it was other races, the difficulty was hard to imagine.

Night time.

Luo Feng sat in the living room, watching television, accompanying his wife and sons.

“Luo Feng, why aren’t you training today, have you come to accompany me and watch television?” Xu Xin was hugging the smaller son on her lap, smiling.

“I’m keeping you company. Tomorrow I’ll be getting ready to leave and deal with some business. I’ll probably be gone a while this time.” Luo Feng said.

“Deal with business, how long?” Xu Xin couldn’t help but ask.

“Probably about a month.” Luo Feng said.

“That long?” Xu Xin was shocked, right now on Earth, what matter could take up so much of Luo Feng’s time.

Luo Feng clearly remembered what Babata had said to him before.

His destination this time, was 320,000 light years away from Earth, it was a bustling strong planet...the Dragon Star! It was a super planet that was hundreds and thousands of times more bustling than the Silverblue Empire, it was a place for warriors to gather. It was also a place within the universe, where the upper echelons of people with status liked to visit, that kind of place... had a lesser number brutal and uncivilized incidents, a much safer place.

Of course, the prerequisite was money and status! Otherwise, one

didn’t even have the right to even enter.

“Dragon Star!” Luo Feng pondered.

“Luo Feng, leaving for a month, where are you going?” Xu Xin couldn’t help but ask.

Chapter 18 – Arrival on Dragon Star

His sudden departure caused his wife and parents to question him, which gave Luo Feng quite the headache. Since he didn't want his family to worry about him, he told them he was going to a secret place to "train".

Dawn of the second day.

Luo Feng and his family members were eating breakfast. After finishing this meal, Luo Feng had to leave Earth, leave the milky way, and head towards a planet far away from the milky way—— Dragon Star.

"Bro!" Luo Hua walked in from outside, "I heard you're leaving for a month? And you didn't even tell me. If it wasn't for mom and dad, I wouldn't even know"

"I was going to tell you before I left." said Luo Feng as he drank his porridge.

Nothing he could do!

Luo Feng wasn't even planning on directly contacting his brother and his two other brothers 'Hong' and 'Thunder God'. Since..... it would be quite a pain to explain. With Luo Feng's current speed, it wouldn't even take a day to go around the entire world. So what is he doing for an entire month?

If he says he's training.

He could trick his family, but he can't trick Hong and Thunder God.

"Xiao Hai, Ping Ping" Luo Feng held his two children.

"Daddy, kiss" the elder son Luo Ping stretched his little face over and kissed Luo Feng. Xiao Hai on the side also stretched his face out and kissed.

However, his wife Xu Xin, his parents, and his brother were filled with worry.

"Don't worry, as of now, no location on this planet can threaten me. It's just that my training this time is really important, so I can't let anyone distract me. It is also very strict on the type of environment I am in, so I must go out" Luo Feng comforted his family, "Xin, when I'm not here, take care of mom and dad. If Hong or Thunder God call, just tell them I'm training and cannot be disturbed"

"Okay" Xu Xin nodded.

"Then I'm off"

Luo Feng set his two children on the floor and smiled as he headed out.

The whole family, including his two children, walked into the lawn.

“Bye bye daddy”

The two kids yelled crisply.

“Bye” Luo Feng smiled as he waved his hand and slowly hovered into the air.

The family members watched Luo Feng continuously ascend until he disappeared from their field of view.

In the sky.

A gigantic black disc shaped plane appeared. The hatch opened and Luo Feng swiftly flew inside, and then the hatch closed.

After that, it quickly shot towards outer space.

.....

Inside the Black Dragon spaceship, control room.

Luo Feng, who was in a blood red battle uniform set, stood in front of the control display. Demon Babata’s little face appeared on

the display. Babata revealed his little fangs with pride as he grinned: “Luo Feng, the spaceship has left Earth”

“Scenic view, 100% simulation” said Luo Feng.

Whoosh!

The entire control room disappeared. Thankfully, he was standing on the floor and could still feel the floor’s existence. His naked eye couldn’t see the floor.

Around him.....

was the vast, infinite space. He turned and looked behind him where the huge blue planet was——earth!

“Babata, leaving Earth for the first time and heading towards another planet with life, I feel like..... I can’t calm down” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to say.

“Just like when you were taking your high school exams, this is called being nervous!” on the display, Babata was chewing on an apple as he snickered, “Not weird at all, since you’re just like a kid from the countryside about to enter an urban city for the first time! Of course you’ll be nervous when going to a powerful, developed planet like Dragon Star from Earth!”

Luo Feng slightly nodded.

However, the important part was..... a place like Dragon Star, according to what Babata said, was over one hundred times more prosperous than the capital of the low level civilized nation 'Silverblue Empire'! Luo Feng hasn't even been to the Silverblue Empire before, so how could he not be nervous by going to Dragon Star all of a sudden?

Thankfully, as a spirit reader, his will was extremely powerful and was able to quickly adjust his emotions.

"Babata, the spaceship hasn't reached the speed of light yet?" Luo Feng couldn't help but to ask.

"If this was the Yun Mo Planet ship, then of course we would accelerate to lightspeed quickly. However, this is just a C5 grade spaceship after all." on the display, Babata shook his head in disdain, and then snickered, "But of course, a C5 spaceship in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire counts as a high quality spaceship. Some universe level fighters can only pilot spaceships like these"

"The Black Dragon spaceship has decent acceleration. If it was a common spaceship from some starfleet, then the acceleration would be horrendously slow!"

"And some low quality trashy ships accelerate too sharply so that the passengers even have to enter the 'safety room'. Otherwise, the passengers would lose their lives" said Babata.

Luo Feng suddenly realized.

Exactly, acceleration!

Accelerating to lightspeed. Even if the acceleration is 500 km per second, that's still 50,000 the force of Earth's gravity! But he doesn't feel anything at all in the spaceship.

"This is the good part about high quality spaceships. The spaceship has an automatically adjusting gravity field system where it can maintain the gravity inside the ship at a certain level. The gravity inside the spaceship right now is 1x earth's gravity" said Babata.

"Yeah"

Luo Feng came to be. He was walking inside the spaceship just like how he walked on earth; there was no difference in the gravity. If Babata didn't say anything, he wouldn't have realized it. Now that Babata said it, Luo Feng just realized..... in space, the spaceship was maintaining a gravity level equal to Earth's, which was quite important.

"Haha, I've been on Earth for too long so I've gotten used to this level of gravity. I didn't even realize it" smiled Luo Feng.

"STILL TWELVE MORE SECONDS UNTIL WE REACH THE SPEED OF LIGHT." yelled Babata.

"10!"

“9!”

On the display, Babata’s little face was extremely serious as he counted down.

“8!”

“7!”

.....

Luo Feng looked outside. His naked eye could no longer discern the planets in space. The surrounding space was all blurry, and slowly started to become black.

“How peculiar” Luo Feng held his breath.

“3..... 2..... 1.....!” yelled Babata.

A black spaceship that was already becoming blurry in the vast universe. Suddenly——

Space itself slightly rippled.

The ship disappeared!

It’s not that it ‘disappeared’ to the naked eye because it reached the speed of light, but it actually disappeared from the universe!

BOOM!

Luo Feng felt the spaceship shake a bit. It shook for about 10 seconds. The surroundings were completely dark. Slowly, the ship stabilized.

“Successfully passed through the universe and entered ‘Dark Space'” yelled Babata on the display, “Turning off scenic simulation.”

“Dark space?” Luo Feng was quite curious, “Babata, what does dark space look like?”

“We can’t capture the view around us because the ship is flying at the speed of light” said Babata, “we have to slow down to capture the images. However..... decelerating and accelerating uses up a lot of energy. Luo Feng, I’ll directly simulate a few scenes from dark space for you.”

A display appeared in front of Luo Feng’s eyes.

A brilliant scene appeared on the display. This was a vast area with many bright spots emitting light like fireflies. This was a sea of ‘bright spots’. Other than the beautiful spots of light, there was nothing else in this vast space. Oh..... there were also spaceships!

“The coordinates in dark space match the ones in the ‘origin space’ we live in.”

“However, if you travel for a distance of like ’30 light seconds’ in dark space and then pass through back into origin space, you’ll discover that you’ve moved forward by a distance of ’30 light seconds times 10.081 million” said Babata, “The ratio between dark space and origin space is 1: 10.081 million.”

Luo Feng was shocked.

If you fly at the speed of light in dark space for just a year, that’ll simply be one light year. However, if you pass through space and return to origin space, you’ll have covered a distance of 10.081 million light years.

“In origin space, matter cannot pass the speed of light. Once it reaches the speed of light, it’ll pass through space and arrive in dark space. In dark space, you can go past the speed of light” said Babata, “Right now, the spaceship is slowly accelerating. The maximum speed of this Black Dragon ship is 1.5x the speed of light, but keeping our energy reserves in mind, 1.2x the speed of light is just right.” said Babata.

“I estimate that it’ll take almost 10 days to arrive at Dragon Star. Luo Feng, you can use this time to rest well or to train”

.....

The days of flying through dark space were quite boring.

Nine days later.

“Luo Feng, 20 more minutes and we’ll pass through space and arrive at Dragon Star” said Babata.

“Oh yeah, Babata, if you need to reach the speed of light to go from origin space to dark space, how do you return? How do you pass through space from dark space to origin space?” Luo Feng was quite curious. This vast universe was too mysterious. How could people on Earth ever guess what would happen after reaching the speed of light?

As for the theory where time would reverse after reaching the speed of light, Luo Feng never agreed with that.

“If people on Earth see a planet that is one million light years away from Earth, then they are seeing the planet in its state from one million years ago. According to some people, surpassing the speed of light as you fly towards this planet..... means you’ll be able to see the planet go back in time and see the planet how it was before.

But from Luo Feng’s point of view.....

Bullshit!

The planet ‘going back in time’ is simply what our naked eye

perceives. In reality, that planet is still becoming older and older!

“Easy, just decelerate, decelerate until you stop! Then, you’ll pass through space and return to origin space” said Babata, “In dark space, motionless objects do not exist”

“Oh?” Luo Feng was quite shocked.

The spaceship slowly decelerated, from 1.2x the speed of light until——it became motionless!

Luo Feng felt the floor beneath his feet shake a bit. The shaking lasted for around 10 seconds until everything calmed down.

“Successfully passed through the universe and returned to origin space” said Babata.

“Scenic simulation, 100%” said Luo Feng.

Whoosh!

Luo Feng immediately saw the vast space. The most unique thing was..... he saw a planet far away that seemed to be shining. This planet seemed to have two natural satellites.

“That planet, is Dragon Star” said Babata, “Luo Feng, after we enter Dragon Star, act according to our plan.”

“Babata, you said we need money to enter the planet, but I don’t have any” said Luo Feng.

No matter how rich he is on Earth, how could the Silver Blue Empire and the Black Dragon Mountain Empire accept the currency used on Earth? Over here, they’re just useless ‘paper drawings’.

“YOU DON’T, BUT I DO” yelled Babata, “However, there’s no point in giving you master’s credit card, since it’s bound by a spiritual mark. However, master did leave some coins behind, the coins that the master brings with him at all times. Sometimes, some physical currency is a bit useful.”

“Coins?” Luo Feng froze.

“Yeah, I looked through the entire storage space and found 932 Ganwu coins” said Babata.

“932 coins?” Luo Feng blinked twice.

So poor.

“These are Ganwu coins, not Black Dragon coins, and definitely not the cheap Silver Blue coins” yelled Babata, “It’s enough for your stay on Dragon Star!”

Chapter 19 – My Name is Gao Sheng

“In managed areas, Ganwu currency can be changed to Black Dragon currency, and the Black Dragon currency can be changed to Silverblue currency.” Babata explained. “However conversely... the Silverblue currency, through the government, cannot be changed to Black Dragon currency. The Black Dragon currency too cannot be changed for Ganwu currency.”

Luo Feng nodded.

He understood this logic.

If Earth joined the universe’s big family, with goods coming in from the universe, some of the upper echelons would definitely be interested in buying them. However, using American dollars, Chinese dollars to exchange for universe goods? Would the universe countries be willing?

“Of course, the reverse exchange is possible in the black market.” Babata said.

In conversation.

The black dragon ship had begun to gain speed, heading towards the distant Dragon Star.

Luo Feng stood within the black dragon ship’s control room, before him was the external image simulator, he clearly saw that

the ship was nearing Dragon Star. They were almost within the atmosphere, the planet's atmosphere was really unique, it was easily visible with the naked eye...various colors of gases were flowing about, causing the entire planet to look extremely gorgeous from outside.

"Di!"

"We've received the tractor signal." Babata said, "Luo Feng, the ship will follow the tractor signal to the planet's docking bay."

Luo Feng nodded.

He's also heard from Babata before, reaching a planet, one definitely couldn't fly his ship around randomly. They had to enter the docking bays! Of course...if one was as powerful as the master of Yun Mo Planet, he/she could force his way in. For high level planets like Dragon Star, only Domain Lords and above could ignore the tractor signals and fly directly in.

Of course, Sector Lords normally still respected Dragon Star's rules!

Afterall...

The owner of this planet was a Sector Lord himself!

.....

The black dragon ship broke through into the atmosphere. Through the external image simulator, Luo Feng could see a large silver city below him, there was an extremely huge docking bay, and within it he could see blurry images of large numbers of ships docked there. There were big and small ships, the small ones were tens of meters long, even to the point of just 10 meters.

The larger ships, normally interstellar transport ships or such, were above tens of thousands of meters.

“We’ve received the signal, we are going to the C grade region! Babata reported from the control board’s screen.

“The A grade region, houses mostly normal ships, battleships etc. The B grade region houses B grade ships, battle ships. The C grade region houses the C grade ships and battleships. Above that is the D grade region.” Babata introduced.

The large docking bay.

It was segregated into several large regions, in the C grade region, every ship and battleship was incomparably valuable.

“Hu!”

The black dragon ship slowly descended, finally landing.

The cabin door opened.

“This planet’s gravity pull is about three times that of Earth’s.” Luo Feng flew out from the cabin door, immediately feeling the difference in the gravity.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng turned to look, a man dressed in a grey uniform, height about 2.8m, 2 horns on his head, green skin, flew over, landing in front of Luo Feng. He was humble and respectful,, with a smile on his face, using fluent universe language he spoke, “Respectable sir, welcome to Dragon Star, your black dragon x81 ship, annual docking fee here is priced at 600 black dragon dollars! Less than a year, we’ll still collect 600 black dragon dollars, this is your docking card.” Following that, with both hands, he handed over a silver translucent card to Luo Feng, on it a C logo was imprinted.

“Luo Feng, remember what I told you before.” Babata had carefully explained in detail about the things one would meet and experience in Dragon Star and how one should react.

“Understood.”

Luo Feng smiled, with a flip of his hand, one coin appeared, and he tossed it over.

“Ganwu currency.” The green skinned man’s eyes lit up.

At the Black Dragon Empire government remittance, 1 Ganwu dollar could exchange for 1000 Black Dragon dollars, however, 1000 Black Dragon dollars was unable to exchange backwards for Ganwu dollars! If one went through the black market...it was possible, however normally, it required over 1000, close to 2000 Black Dragon dollars to exchange for 1 Ganwu dollar. And ordinary citizens didn't even know where the black market was.

Ganwu dollars, that was mark of status!

"Riding a x81, such a luxury good, owning Ganwu dollars, his status and background must be huge." The green skinned man was extremely envious.

He, a Star Traveller level 9 fighter.

On Dragon Star, even the most ordinary citizens, if they were able to breakthrough to the star level, their status would immediately be raised. However...even a Star Level warrior, meeting someone who rode a C5 grade pure metal luxury ship, shelling out Ganwu dollars, would feel dejected!

No questions asked!

This must be someone from a big family, or has a large background and status.

"No need for change." Luo Feng said casually.

“Thank you sir.” The green skinned man was extremely respectful, this sort of large family descendant, could easily command up to tens of thousands of Star Traveller level 9 warriors under him.

At this time...

A ship completely dyed in black and white with an odd design, descended onto the land less than 100m away from Luo Feng. Similarly, another worker in grey uniform flew over, the cabin door had begun opening from when it was descending. A fat and stout, black haired youth flew out, his face had two purple stripes, and his eyes were squinted, making his overall appearance adorable.

His height was similar to Luo Feng’s.

“Wa!”

The fat youth flew out, behind him immediately were four gorilla sized strong looking men.

“Of the four behind, three Star level 3, one Star level 8. The fat youth is a Star Traveller level 3.” Babata immediately informed Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was shocked.

The fat youth actually had four Star level bodyguards, it was

extremely vexing! Coming to this place, that was even more bustling and powerful than the Silverblue Empire's galaxy...Luo Feng had finally witnessed a real member of a big family.

"Damn, damn damn!"

The fat youth flew over to Luo Feng's black dragon ship, touching its body, eye's lit, screaming out, "Man, this is an old model from more than a million years ago, the black dragon mountain x81. Those with this ship have all already died! And it's even made from black yttrium such a luxurious metal, I actually got to see such a ship today!"

"Hi, brother." The fat youth struggled and rushed over to Luo feng, a face full of smiles, "Your x81 ship, when you don't want it anymore, how about passing it to me? Ten more years and I'll be able to afford it."

"Oh, let me first introduce myself, my name is Gao Sheng Wei Di! Just call me Gao Sheng." A fluent universe language came out.

"Gao Sheng, this black dragon ship, I had to make various changes and repairs to get it fully up and running again. I can't bear to sell it now." Luo Feng followed Babata's earlier warnings and said casually.

"Oh, an old model from more than a million years ago, after more than million years, much of it would have degraded, repairing it must have been no easier than actually buying a new one. Brother is indeed of the same level as I." Gao Sheng

complemented, “This kind of pure metal luxurious goods, riding it out, that’s what I call class!”

Luo Feng smiled.

Truth be told, the black dragon ship was at the sea bed of Earth within that mothership wreckage and had not been used for over a million years, hence its degradation was light.

“Brother, you still haven’t introduced yourself.” The fat youth laughed happily.

“My name is Luo Feng.” Luo Feng smiled.

“Brother Luo Feng you are on your own? No bodyguards? From here to Dragon City, there’s still a few thousand kilometers of distance. And on Dragon Star, one is only protected within the city. There’s no protection outside the city, on the way over, there might even be robbers.” The fat youth said.

Luo Feng smiled.

Shua!

Beside him, two liquid silver guards wearing black clothing appeared.

“Damn, liquid silver guards?” Gao Sheng nodded his head

profusely, “two liquid silver guards, one for protection, another to wrap around the enemy. After they have enlarged themselves, they can easily surround and trap up to a hundred enemies easily. Even if the enemies break free, the other liquid silver guard can come and grab onto them. Two liquid silver guards taking turns, extremely safe.”

Luo Feng laughed.

Back then, the liquid silver guards successfully wrapped themselves around the enormous Golden Horned Beast, as for human races, they would indeed trap up to a hundred in the blink of an eye.

“If brother Luo Feng doesn’t mind, we can go together, with my four bodyguards, no one would dare come stir up trouble.” Gao Shen laughed happily.

“Take his offer, going with him would mean less trouble.” Babata said.

“Let’s go together.” Luo Feng smiled as he nodded.

Sou! Sou!

Luo Feng and Gao Sheng floated up, the 4 bodyguards followed behind.

While rising, the four bodyguards’ armors simultaneously

appeared on their bodies, the cloud contact armor also appeared on Luo Feng's body.

……

The group of six flew in the sky.

"Luo Feng, how much did you spend on buying that black dragon ship?" Gao Sheng couldn't help but ask, obviously as a ship hobbyist, he was obsessed on that ship.

"Babata?" Luo Feng shouted within his thoughts.

He had no clue how much he should reply.

"Tell him, nine billion Black Dragon dollars, the repairs and changes cost 2 billion Black Dragon dollars." Babata said.

"That much?" Luo Feng was shocked within.

At the government remittance, 1 Black Dragon dollar could change for 1000 Silverblue dollars, meaning this ship was priced at 9 trillion silver blue dollars.

"It's not much at all, this is pure black yttrium, the whole ship's weight is about 2 million tons. Every ton of black yttrium is priced at 3000 Black Dragon dollars, about 3 million Silverblue dollars, just the black yttrium metal alone, would have cost 6 trillion

Silverblue dollars." Babata said, "Luo Feng, don't use your standards from earth to view the universe! A ton of black yttrium metal is worth 3000 Black Dragon dollars! A ton of B grade black iron spirit, is only worth 9 Black Dragon dollars. A grade black iron, was even more valuable."

Luo Feng realized.

It was indeed not expensive; a ton of black iron spirit was only 9 dollars. 1 ton of the black yttrium metal was worth 3000 dollars. It was not expensive!

"This is pure metal, if it was alloys then it'd be cheaper, after all, alloys were sturdier, their efficiency was higher. The same C5 grade ship, using alloys, would only be 10% of the price, maybe even lesser! So...using pure metals to build a ship, was classified as a luxurious thing to do. Just like on Earth, you people use gold to build cars and stuff."

Luo Feng secretly sighed.

No wonder Gao Sheng was so shocked...the pure metal was indeed luxurious.

One had to be extremely wealthy, not to be messed with!

"This Black Dragon ship, back then I spent 9 billion Black Dragon dollars to buy, the repairs and upgrades took about 2 billion." Luo Feng said.

“Wu!”

Gao Sheng nodded, “Brother you’ve earned a little, this kind of old models, are extremely hard to get nowadays. In another 10 years, my dad promised to move an entire planet under my name. The planet has 11 billion people, a rough estimate, if every person can earn me 100 Kalor dollars a year, which is 0.06 Black Dragon dollars, then a year’s worth of income would be more than 600 million Black Dragon dollars. 20 billion dollars from a single planet isn’t hard to get.”

Luo Feng smiled, but he was shocked in his heart.

My god?

A whole planet shifted to under his name? 11 billion people to earn money for him?

Luo Feng finally understood, the difference between the extremely wealthy people of earth compared to the extremely wealthy of the universe. Wealth of earth equated to maybe a few houses and land. The extremely wealthy on earth talked about buying entire planets!

Extremely wealthy!

At the same time, Luo Feng understood...

The owner of the black dragon ship that was under the sea on Earth was a man of prominence and background! He had no choice when he was swiped down by the master of the Yun Mo Planet, destroying the entire interstellar fleet and killing everyone! Within an area of 1000 light years, the star field around earth was all owned by the master, even one of such stature as the dead owner of the ship...obviously couldn't and wouldn't dare deal with an undying being.

That's why, he died in silence.

Chapter 20 – Citizens of the Empire

“It’s so beautiful.”

Luo Feng looked up at the sky, up above, it seemed as though there was a purple gauze covering the sky. And in the distance, it had become blue!

“The color of Dragon Star’s sky is indeed special.” Gao Sheng laughed as he complimented, “Some of the regions have blue skies, others are purple, or green, or red, etc, and they frequently change too! Especially when the sun shines through that layer of gases and onto the ocean, that’s extremely beautiful!”

“Dragon Star, because of it’s beauty, has enticed many powerful warriors to live here, gradually, it became increasingly bustling.” Gao Sheng praised.

Among this group of people, the slowest flyer was Gao Sheng.

However, Gao Sheng was riding on a sleek bizarre looking board, his speed could also reach up to 2000m per second. During their conversation, they had easily flown over hundreds of kilometers.

“Wow.” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up, looking at the distant city.

This was a beautifully built city, similar to one of Earth’s.

“Brother Luo Feng, you seem to envy that place?” Haha, that is a living quarters that’s considered extravagant even on Dragon Star, it is a castle with an area of 9.8km. To be able to afford such a place to live, one must be of extreme wealth and status.” Gao Sheng’s eyes were lit, “Damn, I don’t know when I’d be able to afford this.”

“Castle?” Luo Feng was stunned within.

“Luo Feng, that’s real estate, extravagant real estate. They are similar to Earth’s villas.” Babata said, “The universe is vast, there are countless planets, hence the upper echelons of people in the universe are used to living in extremely huge places! Just like your teacher, an entire planet was what he used to live in. For a bustling city such as Dragon Star, the land is more expensive, that’s why, an area of 9.8km for a castle is considered pretty extravagant already. If it were a normal planet, it wouldn’t even be considered much.”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but silently curse.

This isn’t even on the same level anymore!

Just a living space, and it’s a castle with an area of 9.8km!

Hm?

While Luo Feng was flying, he spotted another castle in the distance, and another after.

With the beautiful weather and the scenic views of Dragon Star, having one's own castle was indeed luxurious.

……

After flying for another 10 minutes.

Luo Feng surveyed below, he spotted a more densely built district, with 'little castles' filling up the place.

"This is Dragon Star's cheapest living quarters district, these have an area of 1km. If it were our Kalor Empire, even on the main planet, a place like this would go for a billion Black Dragon dollars, and that's pretty impressive." Gao Sheng cursed under his breath, "but here on Dragon Star, this cheapest little place, is also worth more than a billion Black Dragon dollars!"

Luo Feng blinked hard.

Over a billion Black Dragon dollars?"

"Luo Feng, do you own any property here?" Gao Sheng asked.

"No, I'm still too young." Luo Feng said.

"Right, me too." Gao Sheng nodded, "My father has been strictly controlling my allowance, even only giving me my own planet only after 10 years, after my coming of age ceremony." Gao Sheng

seemed dissatisfied, “otherwise I too will be able to buy such a place here on Dragon Star, relaxing and enjoying my stay here. Then, I’ll be a resident of Dragon Star! On Dragon Star, that would be living it!”

Luo Feng nodded.

Before arriving here, Babata had told him. The moment one becomes a citizen of Dragon Star, one would get special privileges!

However…

According to the price of the property here, to be able to just buy the small piece of land or even the more expensive castles, only the royalty of the higher level countries in the universe or some heirs from the big families could afford it. The most basic would be those who owned their own planets, the leaders of these groups.

Even if one owned one planet, they may or may not be able to buy a piece of property here.

……

After flying for half an hour.

Luo Feng finally spotted an enormous city, the entire city walls were black as ink. They seemed to extend forever out of sight, one glance wasn’t enough to their ends! And above the walls, there was a transparent glass sort of decoration, exquisite and beautiful glass

dragons occupied the top.

When Luo Feng drew closer, he realized even on the black as ink walls, there were complex engravings, they were carvings of single horned dragons.

“What a big city.” Luo Feng and Gao Sheng descended, raising their heads to look at the huge wall, hearts racing.

Just the black wall’s height alone was 120m, including the huge glass dragon statues above the wall, that alone was a few 100 meters. Also…The entire city, stretched far beyond what one could see. This kind of vastness, ancient flavor, shook one to the core.

“Dragon City, has an area of 6000 km, this city’s history is already more than 3 million years old.” Gao Sheng commented.

“It’s exactly what Babata told me.”

Luo Feng realized…

Even though Babata had been on Earth for 50 thousand years, but, even after all that time, the changes in the universe were very very small! Be it science, empires, groups, etc, nothing major had changed. Obviously to existences like empires that have been around for hundreds and millions of years, 50 thousand years was no big difference.

The enormous city doors were close to 1 km wide.

People were weaving in and out.

Luo Feng, Gao Sheng and the others stepped into through the doors.

“We’ve received the signal, Luo Feng, in the Dragon City, your communication number is 19287342325.” Babata said.

The communication number, was similar to that of a phone number.

No matter how advanced one’s communication system was, they couldn’t communicate past that of a few light years of distance. Hence, several civilized planets naturally gave every visitor with AI aids and communication numbers. On this planet, one could then use these numbers and devices to communicate.

And when on different planets, the only way to communicate was one...entering the virtual universe network and chatting within there.

“Luo Feng, what’s your communication number?” Gao Sheng looked towards Luo Feng, “Mine is 19287342463.”

“Mine is 19287342325.” Luo Feng answered.

“Alright.” Gao Sheng laughed, “The first thing I need to do in

this city is to visit a few elders. Let's separate here. When night comes, I'll inform you then. I'll act as a host and we can eat dinner together." Gao Sheng was influenced by his father's upbringing, he enjoyed making new friends and treating them well, a new friend meant new possibilities."

From his point of view, Luo Feng seemed like one of status and background.

"Alright, then let's separate here." Luo Feng smiled.

.....

After Gao Sheng and his bodyguards had left, Luo Feng began to walk about in the extremely huge city, basking in it's magnificence.

The surrounding constructs, had their own unique styles.

Several constructs were so beautiful they made people's hearts race.

"It's too interesting."

"Three eyes, oh, this person's mouth and teeth are too interesting." Luo Feng was walking along the district, the many people travelling back and forth. At the same time, about a 100 meters above in the air, there was a large number of people flying and rushing. Saying 'people', but each and everyone of their

appearances were strange. Within a short 5 minutes, Luo Feng had witnessed among the ‘people’ the tallest going close to 10m, and the shortest close to that of an infant from Earth.

Their skin colors were also strange.

Even to the point where there were some with their heads long and weird looking.

However, most of them still had two eyes, a nose and mouth. Only their faces, be it more facial hair or had strange stripes etc.

“That man, is oddly similar to the ancient stories of Buddha, his entire body is gold, his hair is even more interesting.”

Luo Feng felt like a grandmother entering a scenic garden, he couldn’t get enough of the sights.

“Star Traveller level 6, Star Traveller level 9, Star level 3, Star Traveller level 1, Star level 5…” Luo Feng, relying on Babata, realized many of these people had power. On the streets of Dragon Star, blurred images of endless people moving, almost everyone was at least a Star Traveller, there were even many Star levels.

Randomly picking any and throwing him onto Earth, he or she would be an existence surpassing the wargod level.”

Just looking around, one could easily spot warriors stronger than Earth’s strongest, Hong and Thunder God.

“Luo Feng, I’ve already dialed through to the planet’s support service and asked, the Black Dragon Mountain Empire administrative office here is about 200 or more kilometers away from where we are now.” Babata said, “According to our plan, the first thing we should do here is...join the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, acquiring the citizenship.”

“Let’s go.”

Luo Feng immediately floated up, up to about a 100m away from the ground. The flying people were all flying at this height.

.....

“Star level 7, 8, 9. I’ve seen a bunch. How come I haven’t seen one Universe level?” Luo Feng asked.

“Star levels are already considered people with status. On smaller planets, they are hardly seen. However on Dragon Star, this sort of bustling planet, the Star levels are more commonly spotted. As for the Universe levels...out of the entire Silverblue empire there are only so few? There’s definitely a few here on this planet, however spotting them would require quite a bit of luck.”

During the conversation.

Luo Feng spotted an enormous black dragon engraving construct occupying a large mountain!

This, was the Black Dragon Mountain Empire's station of affairs on Dragon Star.

At the entrance of the huge building, there were two bronze skinned strong sturdy guards with heights up to 6m.

"Oh? Liquid silver guards!"

"They're really liquid silver guards."

The two huge guards immediately stood at attention, wide smiles on their faces, as Luo Feng walked to the entrance, they even enthusiastically opened the door for him: "Sir, please enter."

"Babata's words were indeed true, in the universe, power, status and position are very important." Luo Feng smiled as he walked in to the large hall, behind him were the two liquid silver guards dressed in black uniforms. He glanced at the layout of the hall and it's several levels, before quickly finding the level that he needed to head to.

"Level 32?" Luo Feng immediately stepped into the round sofa beside, sitting down, the liquid silver guards stood by his side. At that time, Luo Feng said: "32!"

Di!

The tray below the round sofa began to emit a white light.

Sou!

It immediately rushed upwards, Without a trace of swaying, it came to a stop, it had already reached the 32nd level.

“Sir, how do you do?” A lady with rabbit ears, beautiful like the spirits in stories, gently bowed and smiled, “How can I help you today?”

“I would like to apply to become a Black Dragon Mountain Empire national.” Luo Feng smiled.

Having a citizenship was necessary for doing many things in the universe.

Luckily he had Babata’s directions, Luo Feng could very easily and smoothly accomplish many things. If it were Hong or Thunder God, blindly entering into another planet, he was afraid they wouldn’t know anything at all.

“Nationality?” The lady seemed shocked.

At this age, who didn’t have a nationality?

Chapter 21 – The Five Great Leviathans

“Sir, please head towards your left, the second innermost room.” said the receptionist lady.

“Thanks!”

Luo Feng smiled as he turned to walk with the two liquid silver guards following behind him. The eyes of the lady lit up, she thought: “He actually said thanks to a receptionist such as myself, wow, now this is really the upbringing of a big family with proper manners. Even though he has two liquid silver guards, he isn’t prideful at all!”

……

Luo Feng surveyed the room door, on it were some words.

“Knock, knock, knock.” Luo Feng knocked on the door.

“Please enter.” From within, a strong voice resounded.

Luo Feng pushed open the door and entered, it was a spacious room within. There were two workers, black skinned and very thin, their pupils blood red. One of the two casually lifted his head to take a glance. However, after spotting the two liquid silver guards behind Luo Feng, an enthusiastic smile immediately appeared on his face: “Sir, what can we do to help you?”

“I would like to join the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.” Luo Feng smiled.

The low leveled civilizations of the universe had the weakest nationality.

And the middle leveled civilizations like the Black Dragon Mountain Empire weren’t too bad. At least when he was still weak, Luo Feng had no intentions of leaving the Black Dragon Mountain Empire’s star field boundaries. Once he becomes a Universe level fighter or even greater, it doesn’t really matter what his nationality is.

“Oh, what nationality did you have before? Is there any reason for dropping the previous one?” One of the black man with red eyes smiled.

“I didn’t have any.” Luo Feng said.

“No nationality?”

The back man with red pupils seemed slightly shocked, carefully examining Luo Feng with both eyes, looking once again at the two liquid silver guards behind him.

Ordinary folk from any planet, are unable to acquire a citizenship until they reach the star traveller level. To acquire one, the conditions are...one has to reach the Star Traveller level. This was also the reason why during the calamity on Earth, Luo Feng said

that even if they left earth, his wife and children would have to live on the ship for decades, since they had to reach the Star Traveller level to be able to enter other planets.

Without a citizenship, the empire won't protect you when you enter certain planets.

For normal people who reach the Star Traveller level, the first thing they do is register for a nationality!

However...

The man before them, has two liquid silver guards as bodyguards. Could someone like this be a normal person?

"He's probably an elite trained by some big organization and just entered the universe." The black men with the red pupils thought.

"Sir, please stand here and stay still." The black man smiled.

"Alright." Luo Feng was very clear on what they were doing.

The black man with red pupils pushed a button on a machine in his hand, beep, a dreamy light shone on Luo Feng.

"Di di!"

The machine made several noises, the black man with red pupils lowered his head to look at the screen, on it were universe language words... “No prior information.”

“Since you’ve never actually joined any other nation, we can bypass many steps and directly begin.” The black man with the red pupils smiled, “Sir, you just need to pay the administrative fees of 50 Black Dragon dollars, and everything will be settled.”

“On Dragon Star, a lot of places use Black Dragon dollars huh.” Luo Feng flipped his hand and tossed out 1 Ganwu dollar, “Help me convert it”.

“Ganwu dollar.”

The black man with red pupils was secretly delighted, swiftly retrieving from his pocket thin delicate special currency notes, a small stack of notes passed on to Luo Feng, “Sir, this is 950 Black Dragon dollars.” At the same time, he placed the Ganwu dollar into his pocket, retrieving from the same pocket 50 Black Dragon dollars and placing them into the deposit section of machine beside, allowing it to swallow the money in.

“Haha, Big brother, you are treating tonight.” Beside him, the other black man with slightly bigger eyes shouted out.

“No problem.” The black man with red pupils was extremely happy, smiling enthusiastically at Luo Feng, “Sir, please follow me, I’ll help you settle all the paperwork. It’ll be very quick.”

These type of people working within the government office had many connections.

To change a Ganwu dollar to Black Dragon dollars, the total exchange would be 1.45k, meaning, just exchanging it would mean he would have made a few hundred black dragon dollars (several hundreds of thousands of Silverblue dollars)! Even if he had a good job, this was still about one or two months of extra pay.

After about 20 minutes, Luo Feng had acquired his identification card, from then on, Luo Feng was officially a citizen of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, leaving his name and information in their records.

“This card’s material is interesting.” Luo Feng complimented.

“This card material is extremely durable and sturdy. On Earth, the basic level wargod has to use his full strength before he can actually tear it. This material, usually lasts two to three thousand years, only after that will it begin degrading.” Babata explained.

“Oh.” Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng was in a good mood.

With the Black Dragon Mountain Empire citizenship, he could do a lot more things. As once said…The path is harder for one without an identity.

“Babata, where do we go to open an account for the Virtual Universe Network?” Luo Feng was highly anticipating this.

Virtual Universe Network!

Just from the name itself, within that Virtual Universe Network, all of the human races from the universe gathered, the Ganwu universe, and other universe countries, their population all frequented the virtual network. If one were to count numbers... indeed, it would be uncountable! It was just too many, too much!

“It’s about 100km away from here.” Babata began to explain the route in detail.

Luo Feng floated into the sky.

The entire air space within the Dragon City, was vast and spacious, thus traffic wasn’t too dense. Luo Feng also managed to maintain a rather fast speed.

“Babata, just how does the Virtual Universe Network work, it can actually work from wherever in the universe, communicating through the network?” Luo Feng was very shocked and curious by it, the universe was vast beyond compare, even travelling between universes, there were some places that required hundreds to thousands of sub universe travel.

However, this Virtual Universe Network, is actually capable of letting people meet and communicate.

What technology is it?

Just what technology does this network use?

“This is something even I don’t know.” Babata said, “This type of technology, even the Ganwu Empire has yet to grasp, only the Virtual Universe Network company owns it! Within the big empires within the universe, they all have a department from the Virtual Universe Network company.”

“This company must be really awesome.” Luo Feng exclaimed.

His own teacher, the Yun Mo Planet master ‘Hu Yan Bo’ may have gotten respects from the Ganwu empire, but against a universe country, this sort of enormously huge presence of a high level civilization, even Hu Yan Bo couldn’t casually go up against them! Rather…the various large universe countries have been unable to grasp the technology that the Virtual Universe network company has.

It’s no wonder the company has survived so well!

“That’s a given!”

“Luo Feng, even though the Ganwu Empire, and the other universe countries are all high level civilizations within the universe, and their powers and presences are extremely huge, in the universe…the biggest and strongest are hardly the countries.”

Babata said, “These are actually the seemingly disordered, but actually much more powerful entities around.”

“What powers?” Luo Feng was curious.

“The Universe Galaxy Bank, the Universe First Bank, the Battle-axe Coliseum, the Universe Mercenary Alliance, the Universe Virtual Network company. These are the universe’s five Great Leviathans!” Babata said, “They have absolute monopoly and position.”

“The two big banks do business with only the wealthy, even the undying beings mostly store their money and treasures with them.” Babata said, “Your teacher’s treasures are stored in the Universe Galaxy Bank, all three accounts are within that bank.”

Luo Feng nodded.

“The Big Axe Battle Ground, is the most fair battle ground. As for how huge and powerful it is, you’ll find out in the future.”

“The Universe Mercenary Alliance, is a loose organization. More than 99% of fighters, spirit readers will join the alliance! Your teacher, back then was also a part of it.” This in particular shocked Luo Feng, more than 99% of fighters and spirit readers will join? This, this, who could fight that?

Luckily, it was a loose organization.

“The Universe Virtual Network company, the virtual universe has already been named as man’s ‘Second World’. Owning this company, the various big universe countries are all unable to shake or even touch it, how strong do you think it is?” Babata exclaimed.

Luo Feng understood.

In the universe, universe countries like the Ganwu Empire and some others were already the strongest country wise.

However, those organizations that were deep rooted into every country, they were the real strongest.

“Other than the Five Great Leviathans, below that are the universe countries. Of course, there are some secret powers that are comparable to them,” Babata said, “Of course, in the Ganwu Empire range, it is still very powerful, the most they’d have to do is pay some respects to the Five Great Leviathans.”

Luo Feng nodded.

In the vast universe, looking at it now, his own teacher was powerful back then, however…it was obvious he couldn’t even pick a fight with the Ganwu Empire, much less the Five Great Leviathans.

……

Dragon City, Virtual Universe Network company.

“Sir, how can I help you today?” A beautiful lady with a furry tail, dressed in red bowed slightly and smiled.

“Open an account.” Luo Feng said directly.

“Opening an account, how much will you pay upfront for the amount of usage? There are three categories to choose from, namely 100 years, 1000 years, and 10000 years. Every year, the price for the network usage is 10 Black Dragon dollars or 0.008 Ganwu dollars.” The service lady said very fluidly.

Luo Feng listened.

That’s crazy!

10 Black Dragon dollars? That equates to tens of thousands of Silverblue dollars. Only the very few elites on the planet could afford it, and those that use it are normally Star Traveller and above.

“You have the consciousness transmitting helmet here right.” Luo Feng said.

On Earth, the humans built their own helmets but they are unable to enter the Universe Virtual Network. However for a living AI such as Babata, it was simple for him to enter.

“The consciousness transmitter helmet, one is 10 Black Dragon dollars.” The service lady’s eye’s seemed a little shocked, right now, those with status use auxiliary rays, or the even high level AI rays, who would still use the primitive consciousness transmitter helmets.

“They don’t trace the owner and his account?” Luo Feng asked.

In the universe, a few planet owners bought several consciousness transmitting helmets to give to their planet’s inhabitants. Most of them do not track the accounts. However, those that do not track...usually only work for about a 100 years. When the time expires, one would have to buy a new account.

This form of untracking, made it impossible to determine who the user was.

Meaning to say, everybody uses them, for the time limit of a 100 years.

“The untracking account has a limit of a set 100 years, every account is priced at 2000 Black Dragon dollars, or 1.6 Ganwu dollars.” The service lady smiled.

“Very well.”

Luo Feng nodded, “I require 10 untracking accounts, and 10 consciousness transmitting helmets. Open the accounts...the 100 years will suffice.”

Chapter 22 – Virtual Universe

Having a Black Dragon Mountain Empire citizenship made opening the account easy.

After paying 17 Ganwu dollars, everything was settled.

“Sir, 10 untraceable accounts along with 10 consciousness sensor helmets, this is your change, thanks for your purchase.” The service lady smiled. Luo Feng casually placed the 10 helmets into his storage ring space, following Babata’s instructions from before...it was okay from him to reveal his storage ring on Dragon Star

However, he had to pretend as though his storage space was only 10m wide and tall. He should absolutely never try storing anything bigger than that in it.

Afterall...

Storage space equipment was categorized into levels. To be able to ride a black dragon ship, with liquid silver guards as bodyguards, having a small storage space was normal. Of course, Luo Feng’s storage space which was more than 600m long, 500m wide and over 100m tall, that was definitely an extravagant item, if discovered, he could easily lose his life.

On Luo Feng, the Yun Mo Planet ship, the corpses of the Undying Beings and their weapons were invaluable treasures, the hybrid copper essence shard and the storage ring were extremely

expensive.

And even the little leg hairs on the master of Yun Mo Planet were stronger than Dragon Star's Domain Lord leader!

However, for Luo Feng, the disciple of the Yun Mo Planet, if he ever dared to reveal his treasures, the consequences would be fatal.

Dragon City, within a relaxed restaurant, while the style of the restaurant was unique, there were many things similar to those on Earth.

Even on different planets, humans still had many similarities. For example, respect for privacy, gaining respect, etc, the older restaurants on Earth had private rooms, even the newer urban restaurants had private rooms! And this incredibly advanced place on Dragon Star, had the similarly high level private room.

Of course...the price was on another level.

"Alright, you can leave." Luo Feng ordered a glass of special fruit juice, asking the waiter to leave.

"Sir, if you need anything, just press the button." The waiter smiled as he left, closing the door behind him.

Ka!

Luo Feng immediately closed the door from within the private room, ordering both liquid silver guards to protect him.

“Babata, enter the virtual universe.” Luo Feng ordered.

“Haha, I’ve long been awaiting this day.” Babata was extremely excited, wanting to enter ever since they opened the account. However once he entered the network, his consciousness would be in the network itself. While he was able to multitask, he didn’t have the ability to split his consciousness. Hence he needed to find a safe spot.

“Virtual universe accessing...”

A low-pitched loud voice resounded within his consciousness.

Luo Feng’s consciousness went all black.

.....

This was an ancient city, on the streets were huge chunks of carved up rocks everywhere, the people of the streets looked peculiar, different heights, different races. Most of them however were dressed in simple grey clothes, and on all their shoulders was a little spirit.

Shua!

A man suddenly appeared amidst everyone on the street, it was Luo Feng. He was wearing simple grey clothes, on his shoulder sat a little spirit the size of a fist, the demon Babata, he too was wearing the same clothing, only green. He looked adorable, like a little spirit.

“This, this is the Virtual Universe Network?”

Luo Feng stood in the streets, looking at the traffic as it passed by, stunned.

“Of course.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng, “We are currently in the Ganwu continent of the virtual universe, on the border, a little island of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.”

“Island?” Luo Feng blinked his eyes.

“All of those under the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, when entered into the Virtual Universe Network, will appear on Black Dragon Mountain Island.” Babata explained, “Even though in name it’s an island, but the star field of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire has over 8000 galaxies, and countless planets have large numbers of humans online. That’s why, the appearance of this island, is actually larger than any of the planets in the universe.”

Luo Feng was dumbfounded.

“Anyone who enters the virtual universe will have an assistant.” Babata said, “Which is the little spirit on everyone’s shoulders.”

“The assistant’s intellect level, is directly linked to the online person’s usage of the consciousness sensor helmet, the quantum computer, AI, or the living AI. The little spirit for the helmets, cannot think on their own, they can only answer simple questions and orders. Whatever you order, they will react.” Babata explained.

Luo Feng nodded.

“In the universe, you can chat with your good friends far away. You can even spend money to convey that you want to meet somewhere in the virtual universe.” Babata explained. ‘Also, things such as stocks and bonds, finance, business and such can all be done in the virtual universe.”

“You can settle the bank accounts from here.”

“You can learn and practice martial arts from here!”

“You can trade or buy and sell stuff here.”

“You can play virtual games. These are 100% simulated virtual games, as lifelike as reality. There are many kinds of games too... you can say, as long as you can think of it, the game companies will definitely be able to make them.”

“Games, delicious food, beautiful women, banking, deals, duels, learning...everything is here!” Babata said. “The virtual universe,

is a market that's bigger than any planet. All the universe's elites are gathered here, whatever is impossible in reality can happen here."

"There are some who even treat the virtual games as reality, playing for hundreds to thousands of years. Even getting married and having children in the game. The main condition is...you have the money to play! Afterall, most of those playing are those who pay money. Only an extreme few earn money from the games".

Luo Feng was extremely shocked.

It was too vast!

Compared to the physical universe, the virtual universe was more advanced and alluring!

"However, the virtual is still the virtual." Babata said seriously, "No matter how long you stay in this virtual universe, you cannot train your physical body! To the strong, this network is only a convenient pathway. You can through it meet and communicate with fellow strong fighters."

"You can buy and sell things that you'd never be able to buy in reality."

"And if you dive into the virtual universe and spend all your time in the virtual games, unless one is without stress or ambition and owns large amounts of wealth, most usually end in tragedy!"

Babata emphasized.

He was very clear on the allure of the games, hence he needed to remind Luo Feng.

“Of course, if you play some of the group training games, or single player training games, they are similar to Earth’s training simulators, that’s fine.” Babata added.

“Training simulators?” Luo Feng was speechless.

That’s called a game too?

It was pure training.

“Babata, check for me, the metal groups that the Golden Horned Beast requires, and the metal groups needed to train <Deity of the World>.” Luo Feng asked. In the virtual universe, it was still safe to communicate with Babata through the exchange of their thoughts. The virtual universe company was guaranteed never to divulge anyone’s personal messages or their personal information.

The two absolutes, these were the foundation of the Virtual Universe Network company.

“Luo Feng, the Star level Golden Horned Beast, the optimum metal groupings to swallow would be 325 B grade pure metal groupings, they can increase the internal world’s growth speed by 89 times...hm, I’ve already collected information on these 325

types of metals, they are available in the universe!" Babata had very swiftly scanned through all the news and data online.

"How about it, how much money do we need?" Luo Feng asked.

Eighty nine times!

From the Star level 1 to the Universe level, the slowest would be 100 years. The moment he began swallowing the metal groupings, a little more than a year and he could step into the Universe level.

The Universe level, even on a planet like Dragon Star, was someone of status.

In the milky way, it was even more sacred, almost like an emperor.

"One year's worth, requires more than 60 billion Black Dragon dollars." Babata said.

"Why so much? A ton of B grade black iron spirits, wasn't it just 9 Black Dragon dollars? Even though they are metal groupings, eating them would be even better. But one hundred thousand tons for one year was the max! How was it still over 60 billion?" Luo Feng couldn't help but ask. One hundred thousand tons of black iron spirits, were only worth a few million Black Dragon dollars.

"Luo Feng, your thinking is wrong!"

“Even though A grade and B grade metals are cheaper, the B grades are cheaper than the C grade, the C grades are cheaper than the D grades…these are the normal situations. However, there are still some very special metals.” Babata said, “For example, the C grade liquid silver, which is used to build the liquid silver guards!”

“One liquid silver guard, approximate uses about one ton of liquid silver.”

“One ton of C grade black yttrium, is only about 3000 Black Dragon dollars.”

“However one liquid silver guard, do you know how much they cost?” Babata questioned.

Luo Feng was stunned.

Right, even the high leveled government officials and personnel reacted differently when they saw the liquid silver guards… obviously the liquid silver guards were extremely expensive! Otherwise, they wouldn’t even care.

“One liquid silver guard is priced at 280 million Black Dragon dollars! One ton of liquid silver is priced at 160 million Black Dragon dollars. Compared to the similar C grade black yttrium metal, it’s much much more expensive.” Babata said. “It’s because the liquid silver is a special metal, very rarely seen, hence it’s extremely expensive! It’s more expensive than many D grade metals.”

“And your internal world’s growth, requires 325 types of B grade metals grouped together. Three of them are space type metals, they are the materials used to make the space storage items. Hence they are more pricey, plus you require large amounts.” Babata explained.

Luo Feng could only helplessly force a smile.

Those were materials used to create the space ring and other items, how could they be cheap?

And he required swallowing up to a 100 tons every day, he was going to continue for a year?

60 billion Black Dragon dollars, wasn’t expensive!

But he didn’t have any money!

900 Ganwu dollars, only equates to 900 000 Black Dragon dollars. Facing the 60 billion dollar sum, it was too huge a difference.

“Of course, there are other metal groupings which are much cheaper. However, you still can’t afford them.” Babata said. “For example, there’s a type of metal grouping, you’d spend about 10 billion every year, increasing your training speed by 39 times. An another that uses about 3 billion Black Dragon dollars every year, the training speed will increase by 20 times. And another that uses one hundred million, raising your speed by 5 times.”

Finding metals for the Golden Horned Beast was troublesome.

But as a human, finding these metals were a lot easier. Buying in virtual universe, what couldn't be bought?"

However...

It still required money!

"The Golden Horned Beast eats too much, eating ton after ton every day." Luo Feng was feeling the pinch.

"As for <Deity of the World> and the required metal groupings, that was even more expensive...You should just drop that for now." Babata said directly.

After Luo Feng shook off these thoughts, he asked the second important question, "Babata, if I wanted to place the Earth under my name, I can become the planet's leader! What are the conditions?" Stopping other people from other planets from buying the planet and enslaving the people of Earth...the best way was to become the leader himself!

Gaining the recognition from the empire and coming under its rule! There would be no one who would dare to fight against a planet with a leader!

“Becoming Earth’s leader? Let me check…” Babata blinked.

Chapter 23 – Spirit Weapon

“I’ve found it.” Babata’s search speed was extremely fast.

“What are the conditions?” Luo Feng’s eyes were lit.

“For a scouting unit in the universe to discover a new planet, or discover a planet without a leader in the law books, there are three choices.” Babata said.

“The first is to tell the empire and acquire their reward. The Black Dragon Mountain Empire will, according to the different planets, reward the lowest 10 billion Black Dragon dollars to the highest 100 billion Black Dragon dollars.”

“This way, of course, you won’t be able to become Earth’s leader.”

“The second choice is to immediately buy the planet. As it was discovered by you, hence the initial price for buying the planet will be low. According to the planet’s grade, buying the planet would require, the lowest 300 billion Black Dragon dollars and the highest 3 trillion Black Dragon dollars.”

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

That was too expensive!!!

However Luo Feng was clear that a planet's sale, the amount of money required was too extravagant. Afterall, owning a planet with life was akin to having one's own gold mine! The life span of a planet with life was usually very very long, lasting up to hundreds of millions of years, it could totally be a family heirloom or inheritance. This is because humans have a limited life span.

Hence, a planet's sale price would normally be in the trillions.

"The third choice, is to jointly govern the planet with the empire. You just need to pay administrative fees of 100 billion, the highest 1 trillion Black Dragon dollars." Babata said, "This joint governance, the empire will not interfere with any of the planet's actual affairs. All they'll do is monitor and tax the entries and exits from the planet. They won't bother about anything else!"

"The second and the third options both allow you to be the planet's owner."

Luo Feng listened and nodded.

A planet's main source of income was the entry and exit, for planet's within the universe, if one didn't have any interaction with the rest of the universe, how would one earn universe currency?

"I don't care much about the tariff, I can work with the Black Dragon mountain. But I don't have any money." Luo Feng was helpless.

“Not just the money, you don’t have the ability to actually request them to let you be Earth’s leader.” Babata said.

“Why?” Luo Feng was suspicious.

“How will you declare? Back then your teacher Hu Yan Bo used nothing but his flesh body to travel between universes, entering dark space, through special space techniques, enshrouded Earth and the surrounding 1000 light years in his cover, making it lost from the universe locators and maps. The other ships had no way to find this marker anymore, hence, they naturally cannot rely on passing through the universe to find Earth.” Babata said, “Normal ships can only rely on flying close within a 1000 light years, continuous flying for close to 1000 years before being able to reach Earth.”

“Don’t tell me that when you apply to be Earth’s leader, you’ll say…you flew almost 1000 years and discovered Earth?”

“Planets that are discovered after such a long flight, firstly have no value! No one would be willing to spend so much time!”

“Secondly, as long as they are not stupid, they might suspect… you are the disciple of Yun Mo Planet!”

“Unless…there is someone who was able to break through your teacher’s space technique. Another way would be, a new wormhole was discovered in the star field around, otherwise Earth is currently still very safe.”

Dragon Star, a restaurant's private room.

His consciousness returned to reality.

"At least right now Earth is still safe!" Luo Feng smiled, picking up the glass of fruit juice from the side, sipping on it, hm?" Luo Feng squinted, creasing his eyebrows, "This taste..."

It was a peculiar taste.

After drinking it down, all his goosebumps stood up, after carefully tasting it, it was indeed a very unique taste, something that was totally new to him.

"Wow, earthling's first taste of this drink, another sip." Luo Feng laughed.

"Weng weng..."

The wrist communicator started to vibrate, on this planet, only Gao Sheng had his number

"Haha, Luo Feng, I've settled my matters! Let's go eat together." Gao Sheng shouted.

"Where?" Luo Feng laughed.

“Dragon City north district, not far from the slave market, there’s a place that’s not bad, called One Hundred Flavors Restaurant.” Gao Sheng said.

“Alright, within a half hour.” Luo Feng ended the call, raising his head to finish the fruit juice that he had just tasted for the first time. With two large gulps he headed out.

The milky way, Earth.

The sun was resplendent, shining down on the ocean and its waves, and in the air above the ocean, two human silhouettes were flying together, heading towards the Sahara desert.

It was Hong and Thunder God.

“This third brother actually told us nothing and slipped away.” Thunder God was frustrated to the point he was gritting his teeth.

“Third brother has to leave for a month, it probably is something really important.” Hong said calmly, “Everyone has their own little secrets, when he returns and is willing, he’ll fill us in.”

“Hmph, I’ll definitely lash out at him when that time comes.” Thunder God bit down hard.

Hong and Thunder God were flying and chatting along the way.

The days on Earth were indeed relaxed and carefree!

Ever since the swallowing beast incident, Hong, Thunder God and Luo Feng, the three warriors had helped strengthen Earth by leaps and bounds. And the sea creatures, the two grand emperors were gone too, lowering the threats to the lowest ever.

It was peace on Earth.

These sort of days had already been maintained for over two years.

……

What the earth people didn’t know, was that in a star field not too far away from earth.

A universe scout ship was constantly approaching with shocking speed!

320 000 light years away on Dragon Star.

Dragon City north district, One Hundred Flavors Restaurant second floor.

“This way this way.” A voice sounded.

Luo Feng turned to look, Gao Sheng was standing and waving his hand, Luo Feng immediately smiled and walked over.

“Brother Gao Sheng, you seem to be in a good mood.” Luo Feng sat.

“I have good news, of course my mood will be good.” Gao Sheng’s eyes were lit, laughing contently, “Oh, I’ll tell you in a bit, let me first order. This One Hundred Flavors restaurant has a few very renowned dishes.” Following that, Gao Sheng waved his hand, a beautiful alluring lady with jade hair walked over.

Luo Feng looked over.

“Hm?” Luo Feng was shocked

This jade haired lady, was indeed beautiful, the most shocking thing was…her power wasn’t even in the Star Traveller level!

On Dragon Star the norm on the streets was Star Travellers, with small numbers of Star levels.

“The restaurant I visited before for fruit juice, the waiter was an ordinary person. I didn’t expect this restaurant to be the same! However…The Virtual Universe Network company, along with the government personnel, are all Star Traveller level.” Luo Feng pondered, understanding immediately…the ordinary people’s wages were much cheaper.

Maybe they didn't even require a wage.

"Luo Feng, that lady before looks pretty decent right, the women from the Dream Shell clan are all beautiful." Gao Sheng winked, "If you like, just take her away, you just have to let the boss know."

"Take her away?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"For a beautiful lady who isn't even a Star Traveller, her fate is usually tragic." Gao Sheng sighed, "They are not even citizens, they have no protection by the law. Anybody with a little bit of power can kill them if they wanted to, take them away if they wanted to! Just taking them away and they can be sold as slaves! If she were to follow someone like you, it'd be her good luck!"

Luo Feng was shocked within.

Killing them as they pleased, taking them away as they pleased? Slaves?

Even though Babata had said before, those who are not at least Star Traveller level in the universe have tragic fates and lives, normal folk mostly live on their home planet, not even having the right to buy a ticket for ships. However...actually hearing it from Gao Sheng and seeing the beautiful lady from the Dream Shell clan, caused his feelings to burn even more after hearing her fate.

"Look, she's actually glancing over to look at Brother Luo Feng." Gao Sheng mocked.

Luo Feng glanced over.

Immediately, he saw the lady from the Dream Shell clan in the corner of the restaurant sneakily glancing over, she could obviously hear Gao Sheng's voice, hence she looked over...being discovered by Luo Feng, she blushed and ran into the kitchen.

.....

Exquisite dishes began to come out one by one.

They were indeed delicious, incomparably delicious!

"Today, I paid a visit to my Elder, haha, he really gave me too much respect. He actually agreed to let me follow him and learn for a few years." Gao Sheng was smiling with delight, "That Elder of mine, he's a big shot in the energy business. Following behind him, one, I get experience, two I can start to build my network."

Luo Feng was shocked.

Energy business?

In the universe, whenever planet's trade among each other, they all rely on the ships, interstellar transport, etc. And the ships, battleships all require energy to function! Even the Undying Beings require energy! Be it Earth, or the universe, the energy business

has always been a very profitable and hard to get in kind of business, much harder than the slave market.

Without any connections or friends, even with money, one can't get in!

"This Gao Sheng, doesn't have an ordinary background." Luo Feng thought.

When the son matures, he gets a planet.

Now Gao Sheng is even beginning to step into the energy business world...

"Luo Feng, when are you leaving? Looks like I'll be here on Dragon Star for a few years." Gao Sheng said.

"I'll be leaving soon. Maybe even later today." Luo Feng said.

The purpose of coming to Dragon Star and the tasks have all been almost finished, according to Babata, there was only one thing left, to go to the Ganwu Dojo to sign up. After that, he could leave Dragon Star already.

"That fast?" Gao Sheng seemed disappointed, "What's your virtual universe number, when you return, we brothers can spend some time together playing some games."

“Alright.”

Luckily he had just opened the account, Luo Feng passed his virtual universe number to Gao Sheng, and vice versa!

In the future, even if the two were tens of millions of light years apart, they could still communicate through the virtual universe.

……

In the restaurant, Luo Feng was chatting with Gao Sheng.

Suddenly, three youths walked up from the stairs, all of their heights were close to 2m, their silver hair swaying, their pupils were a very moving blue color. The three were all wearing black special uniforms, the one in the middle even had a colorful medal on the left side of his chest.

“Luo Feng, look, these three are disciples at the Ganwu Dojo. The middle one is even a citizen of Dragon Star, he owns his own place here in this planet.” Gao Sheng said softly.

“Oh?” Luo Feng looked over.

The black special uniform was the standard training uniform for the Ganwu Dojo.

That medal was the identification proof of a citizen of Dragon

Star, with it, on Dragon Star, that was the safest form of protection.

"Wei Lin, just lend me your spirit weapon for half a day to play with." The disciple on the left said amongst the three.

"I bought it myself!" The center disciple with the medal flipped his hand, in it appeared an axe like metal disk, on the disk itself were some unique engravings. "This is a level two spirit weapon of the highest quality, I actually begged my family for a long time before getting the bank card. If I'm unable to reach the Universe level, this spirit weapon will follow me for life! Six billion Black Dragon dollars, I could have easily bought several C grade ships, a swipe of the card, even I felt the pinch!"

The disciple deliberately shouted every word, drawing the attention of everybody else.

Six billion Black Dragon dollars? Level 2 highest quality spirit weapon?

"High quality spirit weapon." The two other disciples at the side were staring with their eyes gleaming, "We can't even think about it for the rest of our lives!"

A spirit reader was only capable of using his maximum battle prowess with a proper spirit weapon.

Also, since the construction of a spirit weapon was extremely

complex, hence their prices too were very expensive. Much less the level 2 high quality spirit weapon.

"Hehe." The disciple called Wei Lin, as if massaging a woman's skin, gently caressing the spirit weapon in his hand, his gaze passionate.

A table in the distance, Luo Feng and Gao Sheng both looked over.

"Spirit weapon?"

Luo Feng stared blankly for a bit, before asking, "Babata, my soaring shuttle and arc cutter blade, what level spirit weapons are they?"

Chapter 24 – Wei Di Family

“Luo Feng, the spirit weapons are separated into average, level 1, level 2, level 3, level 4 and 5!”

The average ones have almost no amplitude effects, hence their prices are cheap.”

“A level 1 spirit weapon is able to expand a Star Traveller spirit reader’s maximum battle potential. The level 2 spirit weapon does that for the Star level…level 5 does that for the Sector Lord.” Babata said, “Your arc cutter blade and soaring shuttle can both be used till the Universe level, hence they are level 3 spirit weapons!”

“Level 3?” Luo Feng was surprised but delighted.

The youths that appeared on the second floor of the restaurant, his level 2 spirit weapon alone was that expensive! Luo Feng estimated that his own 2 weapons were much more valuable.

“One weapon, the easier it’s usage, the higher its price!” Babata said, “For example, your soaring shuttle second form, requires a battle ability amplifier of 30 to be able to use. It’s because of your Golden Horned Beast’s body, hence your consciousness is so strong. Usually, only a star level 5 or 6 is capable of reaching that level.”

“Especially the third form, it’s even more messed up, a battle ability amplifier of 48, Universe level, and a domain, the three big conditions!” Babata said.

Luo Feng was shocked.

“A similar level 2 spirit weapon, if it’s requirement is a multiplier of 30 to be able to use, one with a requirement of 20 to expand the same amount of power, which do you think would be more expensive?” Babata questioned.

“Oh.” Luo Feng nodded.

“That’s why, the weapon of this youth called Wei Lin has been deemed a level 2 high quality weapon because it is easy to use.”

“Your soaring shuttle’s requirements are too high, hence it’s only a level 3 low quality weapon. Your arc cutter knife has slightly lower requirements, belonging to the level 3 medium quality weapon. If you were to buy the soaring shuttle at a weapon store, it would cost about 5 billion Black Dragon dollars. The arc cutter knife, about 20 billion dollars.” Babata explained.

“Such a big difference?” Luo Feng was stunned.

From his experience, he felt that the power difference between the two wasn’t that different.

The price difference however was shocking.

“Of course the difference is huge! One weapon can be used the

moment one reaches the Universe level, and yours can only be used after reaching the Universe level 7 or 8. How can they be the same?" Babata questioned.

Luo Feng understood better now.

"A level 3 higher quality weapon would cost about 100 billion dollars. A level 3 highest quality weapon, would be about 500 billion." Babata said casually, "for the Universe level warriors, spending hundreds of billions on weapons is a very normal thing. To the strong...the most important things are weapons, armor, techniques and after that a ship!"

Universe level warriors, joining an empire, can easily acquire tens of planets as their territory.

Such levels of warriors would indeed not be bothered by hundreds of billions of dollars.

The restaurant's second floor.

Many of the customers had focused their attention on the two youths due to his earlier bragging, 6 billion! For a star level warrior, that as a huge sum of money!

"As long as my multiplier reaches 18, I can release the powers of its second stage." Wei Lin, the youth said proudly as he waved his special golden disc, hu, the golden disc immediately floated up, flying about in the walkways of the restaurant's second floor, he

was extremely satisfied!

Hu!

The golden disc brushed past the waitress, shocking her and the others to jump.

“Haha, haha, don’t be afraid, my controlling skills are exceptional.” Wei Lin was extremely satisfied and proud.

“What exceptional control” The two other disciples flattered him.

“Ah!”

Walking out from the kitchen with a dish full of food, a jade haired waitress was shocked by the golden light sweeping past her, her hands faltered causing the dish to spill over. A plate of vegetables and meat with thick sauce spilled over onto the special revolving golden disc, causing it to get dirty and soiled.

“My spirit weapon!” Wei Lin’s expression changed drastically, screaming out.

Hu!

The golden disc landed beside him as he looked at the black sauce staining it, he was trembling with rage.

Just like on Earth, if a newly bought car of a car enthusiast had been stained by food and vegetables, this was a similar situation! This spirit weapon was something that was much much more expensive than a car, costing 6 billion Black Dragon dollars, in Wei Lin's heart, this weapon was even more important than his girlfriend!

It actually got dirty on the first day!

"Bastard!" Wei Lin's gaze swept past the pale jade haired waitress, gritting his teeth, "Slut, go to hell!"

Rumble!

The golden disc became a beam of golden light, rushing straight towards the waitress.

"No."

The waitress's expression was stricken with fear, she had no time to evade or dodge at all.

"Hu!"

A formless powerful thread of spirit energy, almost like a concentrated collection of vines swiftly wrapped itself around the golden disc, forcing the golden light to swerve and crash into the

wall beside. “Rumble…” An attack with the force of a star level warrior caused a dent in the wall, but the windows around all shattered immediately, glass flying everywhere. One particular window frame brushed the arm of another waitress, immediately slicing her arm, blood flowing and staining the floor.

“Sir, stop!” A silhouette suddenly appeared on the side, it was the restaurant’s manager.

“Who! Who stands in my way!”

Wei Lin was roaring with rage, spinning around.

“Sir.” The manager shouted.

“Who are you!” Wei Lin pointed at the restaurant manager, “Didn’t you see, your worker has soiled my spirit weapon? Do you know what weapon this is, how much it’s worth? 6 billion Black Dragon dollars! Even after selling the entire restaurant you’d still not be able to afford it, you actually dare to dirty my spirit weapon.”

The already Star level manager’s expression changed after hearing the 6 billion number.

“My apologies, sir.”

The manager turned his head, his gaze cold as he swept past the workers, not caring at all about the waitress with the sliced arm,

“Who, who dirtied the customer’s weapon?”

Being stared down by the manager…

The jade haired waitress was extremely terrified, she was very clear on the manager’s power! In her hometown, a Star level warrior was already an existence of that of a demon king, invincible and high up in power. And in such a place where there were powerful warriors all about on Dragon Star, her restaurant manager was a star level fighter!

“It’s her!” Wei Lin pointed at the jade hair waitress.

“Sir, now she’s yours, you can handle this situation however you want.” The restaurant manager smiled looking at Wei Lin, “All the costs from today will be complimentary.”

“Who interfered just now!”

Wei Lin’s gaze swept past every customer around, “Which spirit reader? What’s wrong, you have to guts to save a beauty and now you’re too scared to admit it? Scum, come out! Come out now!” As a resident of Dragon Star, he had the safest form of protection, even Universe level warriors wouldn’t dare offend or kill a resident of Dragon Star.

This was the special privilege of a resident of Dragon Star.

That’s why Wei Lin could act so unscrupulously.

“Who? Too scared to admit it?” Wei Lin looked at everyone.

“Scum, what are you shouting about?” An indifferent voice sounded.

Wei Lin turned fiercely to look.

The one who spoke was none other than the calm and collected young man with black hair with two liquid silver guards behind him.

The entire restaurant was silent.

One look and one could tell it was two big family heirs fighting, normal people maintained their silence.

“Oh, who are you?” Wei Lin carefully examined Luo Feng.

Luo Feng couldn’t be bothered about Wei Lin’s background, “What’s the use of having such a big background, I’ll be leaving here and returning back to Earth soon! Earth’s dark space marker is covered in his teacher’s secret technique, even undying beings will have a hard time breaking through. Once I return to Earth, even if you were the prince of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, you couldn’t do anything to me.”

“Haha, brother, I did say you fancied that lady before no?” Beside

him, Gao Sheng laughed.

“No, I just couldn’t watch blood get spilled here.” Luo Feng laughed too.

Wei Lin grew more enraged as the two engaged in their own conversation, not even looking over to him. Beside him, the Star level restaurant manager was in a difficult position...on normal planets, a Star level was already an invincible warrior. Over here however, where fish and dragons are mixed together, he had to be extremely cautious.

Didn’t he see that this side uses a 6 billion dollar spirit weapon?

Didn’t he see that on the other side, there were four Star level bodyguards along with two liquid silver guards?

Both sides were not to be trifled with!

“I say brother.” Gao Sheng gave Wei Lin a look, “Is there a need to bother with a poor lady who isn’t even a Star Traveller, what a disgrace!”

“And who are you?” Wei Lin said to Gao Sheng.

“Gao Sheng Wei Di!” Gao Sheng said casually.

“Wei Di?”

Wei Lin's eyebrows creased, turning to look at Luo Feng, "You still haven't told me who you are."

"Just a spirit reader, that's all." Luo Feng waved.

Hu!

Hu!

Two golden lights revolved around the surroundings, this scene led to the manager to break out in cold sweat: "Damn, two spirit weapons?" Some of the restaurant's second level guests' eyes lit up, to them, Dragon Star was a place that was more refined and bustling than any other planet, they were here to holiday and enjoy the scenes.

Coming to Dragon Star...it was indeed an eye opener!

"Hm?" Wei Lin's pupils shrank, his gaze could easily easy, these two spirit weapons were no weaker than his.

"Wei Di, Wei Di? Don't tell me...it is the legendary Wei Di Family?"

Wei Lin clenched his teeth. Without muttering a sound and not even leaving a remark, he just turned and left.

The other two disciples too followed him and left!

“Haha, interesting, very interesting.” Gao Sheng laughed. “I never thought I’d encounter such matters on my first time to Dragon Star, hehe…”

“Did my actions bring brother Gao Sheng any troubles?” Luo Feng felt apologetic, he could easily just return to Earth, but Gao Sheng had mentioned he intended to stay here for a few years.

“No problem, just a tiny brat.”

Gao Sheng laughed, “On Dragon Star, there isn’t anyone that I cannot mess with!”

“Damn.” Luo Feng laughed involuntarily.

This level of speech was absolutely daring!

But Luo Feng didn’t know…an heir of a big family, to receive a planet at his coming of age ceremony, this sort of treatment was shocking itself! If he truly realized, he would have understood the magnitude of Gao Sheng’s family and background.

“Manager.” Gao Sheng shouted.

“Sir.” The restaurant manager ran over, he actually heard the words from before, there was no one of Dragon Star he couldn’t

mess with, who would dare say such words? Even the Emperor of the Silverblue Empire wouldn't dare to say such words! Unless it was the Black Dragon Mountain Empire's Emperor that came over, or an even bigger presence!

"I'll be taking that waitress with me." Gao Sheng said.

"Yes sir." The manager smiled, "It's her honor."

"Hm."

Gao Sheng nodded.

The restaurant manager left to go downstairs, Luo Feng smiled as he looked at Gao Sheng, "You fancy her now?"

"No." Gao Sheng's fat little face was all smiles, "After this matter, this restaurant would definitely not dare to keep her, she would be sent to the slave market! When that happens, her fate would be extremely tragic. I am the type of person who cannot bear to see a beautiful lady suffer. Afterall I need some helpers on Dragon Star, so I just conveniently took her. Right...If you like her, you can take her."

Luo Feng smiled, "I tend to travel and wander a lot, she'd be better off with you."

"Travel and wander? Are you training or what? Hm, take it that I never asked! Right, we've finished eating, let's...go talk a walk at

the slave market, how about it? Getting a few slaves as helpers or bodyguards is not bad.” Gao Sheng suggested.

“Slave market?”

Luo Feng nodded, “Alright!”

Chapter 25 – Slave Market

Two Star Traveller youths, four Star level bodyguards, 2 liquid silver guards, and finally a Dream Shell Clan female servant.

This was the group Luo Feng was currently in.

“Even though Star levels are considered powerful already, the Universe levels are the true emperors! The rulers of an entire galaxy!” Luo Feng thought as he walked, “Only when my Golden Horned Beast reaches the Universe level! Would that be considered having enough power! However, the amount of metals needed for the Golden Horned Beast to swallow requires so much money to buy!”

“Money, money money!”

“How about, I sell off the arc cutter blade?” Luo Feng considered.

Having both the soaring shuttle and the arc cutter blade, usually in battle, all he needed and used was one of them. What’s more, he had his trump card, the hybrid copper essence shard!

“To sell or not to sell the arc cutter blade?” Luo Feng was struggling with the decision.

“Luo Feng, there’s a treasure shop right in front, there are various kinds of treasures within, whatever scraps and weird things are all sold there. The one common thing is that, they are all

treasures! That's why they are all expensive, let's go take a look, afterall we are not far from the slave market here." Gao Sheng smiled as he shouted out.

"Treasure shop?"

Luo Feng was curious as he followed Gao Sheng into the treasure shop.

This treasure shop's interior was vast, comparable to the huge plazas on earth. Within, according to the categories and districts, there were armors, tamed beasts, spirit weapons, special fruits, robots, etc. It was a big collection of almost everything. All of them had image simulators and pictures, their prices incomparably expensive.

"This treasure shop cannot compare to several specialist spirit weapon shops or robot shops, etc. But it's specialty lies in it's complexity." Gao Shen complimented, "Take a look around brother, I too will go have a look."

Luo Feng looked at the various images on the screens, before looking at their prices...

Expensive!

Too expensive!

"They even have cloud contact seeds? Amethyst fruits, that's

sick!” Luo Feng was calm on the outside, but his emotions were raging within.

Even selling the Earth wouldn’t give him enough money to buy several items in the shop.

“This is...”

Luo Feng suddenly saw a small piece of metal, from his inherited memories regarding the <Deity of the World> training, it was an extremely crucial piece of metal that he required. “This is it!”

<Deity of the World> first level, this was the most crucial metal!

“The price, converted to Earth measures, 1g was 200 Black Dragon dollars?” Luo Feng stared hard, “grams as the measurement?”

“With the Golden Horned Beast’s body, it eats the metals in tons!” Luo Feng felt a sense of helplessness.

In the universe, this sort of metal was sold in grams!

Just like on Earth, gold is sold in grams! Suddenly a beast that eats gold in tons comes along, even the wealthy on Earth would be stunned.

The same idea.

“One gram for 200 Black Dragon dollars! One ton, that would be 200 million Black Dragon dollars?” Luo Feng blinked hard, “The Golden Horned Beast’s training of <Deity of the World>, requires about a ton everyday, so in a year...” the numbers were astronomical, a large amount of numbers appeared in his head, it was hard to blame him!

It was no wonder that even after generations of Golden Horned Beasts, <Deity of the World> was usually only trained up to the first level.

“Brother Luo Feng, what are you looking at?” Gao Sheng walked over and looked, “Memory type metals? These sort of metals are good stuff, infusing them into your weapons and sorts would allow them to regenerate and recover automatically!”

There were many types of memory type metals.

They were all sold in grams!

They were extremely expensive!

“I’m going out to get some air.” Luo Feng grew angrier and more helpless the more he looked.

There were many treasures in the vast universe.

Things to increase one's power, one's soul, there were many items!

There was no lack of treasures, just the lack of money!

With enough wealth, buying a planet was incredibly easy, making hundreds of millions of people as your slaves too was easy!

"I won't look anymore either, I have no money. Let's go, let's head to the slave market." Gao Sheng said helplessly.

The slave market, had an area of over 300km. If it were put on earth, it would an enormous city.

But here on Dragon Star, it was only a small portion of the Dragon City.

The slave market was packed full of people, it was the biggest slave market in the closest one hundred galaxies.

"These Tieluo people are all very strong, even though they are rather stupid and can't be trained that well, but each of them is comparable to a Student level 9 fighter! Each only costs 20 Black Dragon dollars, buying in bulk even adds a discount!" Outside each of the huge slave stores, there were people outside attracting customers and enthusiastically introducing their goods.

Luo Feng was speechless.

Student level 9? Isn't that the equivalent of Earth's advanced level wargods?

Only 20 Black Dragon dollars?

Spending just one hundred million, wouldn't one be able to buy 50 million advanced level wargods?

"People below the Star Traveller level cannot become citizens, hence their prices are very low." Gao Sheng said as he walked, "Under the Star Traveller level, unless they are absolute beauties, or have special properties, most of them are normally about 10 Black Dragon dollars. Look, over there, they are all beautiful women!"

In the distance, a group of absolute flawless beauties of different races and clans, some had white pale skins while some had bushy tails, some had cat ears while some were very similar to Earth's humans...any one of them would be capable of devastating an entire country on Earth.

"They cost 5000 Black Dragon dollars each, they are all first class women, buying in bulk even gets you a discount." A beautiful lady was shouting out from the side.

"Hm?"

Luo Feng looked at another huge space, it had a huge aura from

fighters expanding their energies, Star Traveller levels 6, 7, even 8 and 9 fighters, spirit readers all stood there. There were barely any Star Traveller levels 3 and 4. Amongst them, many of them had auras and energies that were no weaker than Hong's or Thunder God's.

"5000? 8000? That Star Traveller level 8 is worth 20 thousand? A star traveller level 9 spirit reader is worth 100 thousand?" Luo Feng was looking at their individual prices.

100 thousand Black Dragon dollars and one could buy a Star Traveller level 9 spirit reader!

Place him on Earth, and he'd be an invincible being!

Beside Luo Feng, Gao Sheng said casually, "Star Travellers can at the most be hired thugs, servants, they don't have much use! In the universe, only Star levels can be considered body guards, high class servants. However below Star Traveller level, the cost is about 10 Black Dragon dollars. The Star Travellers about 10 thousand, the Star levels however are 100 million."

Under Gao Sheng's leadership, they quickly arrived an emptier but bigger and more vast plaza, in it stood a total of 18 warriors all fighters and spirit readers.

They were Star levels 1, 2, 3...9, fighters and spirit readers! All of them had their own prices.

Eighteen Star level slaves, all automatically expanded their energies, displaying their strengths! Especially the Star levels 8 and 9, those were even stronger than the Golden Horned Beast back then. The aura gathered together from these warriors...caused Luo Feng to tremble involuntarily.

"So powerful!" Gao Sheng muttered beside, "It's making my legs shiver involuntarily!"

"Indeed, very powerful."

Luo Feng held his breath.

The breakthrough from the different levels, was a leap of evolution of life every time! The further one grew, the bigger the jump! If one could say that the jump from a student level 9 to the star traveller level 1 was a few times stronger, than the Star Traveller level 9 to a Star level 1 was definitely more than 10 times, and the Star level 9 to the Universe level 1 was even more so.

The further one grew, the bigger the distance between the levels!

This was also why, back then, the level 7 and 8 Hong and Thunder God, with their own domains and soul immolation, couldn't even break through the Golden Horned Beast's scales initially! It was Hong's final expansion of power that broke through. One, the Golden Horned Beast was too strong, two, the distance between a Star Traveller and Star level was too huge, too far away.

These 18 slaves, all of their auras were much stronger than Luo Feng's.

Take a Star Traveller level 7 or 8.

One could definitely dominate the entire Earth! One finger would be enough to crush Luo Feng!

"A Star level 1 fighter is really cheap, only 1 million. A Star level 4 fighter is 20 million? A Star level 7 fighter is expensive, actually 500 million! Star level 8 fighter is 2 billion and a Star level 9 fighter is 5 billion." Luo Feng was looking at the prices, as for spirit readers, the same level was actually 3 times more than the fighters!

"The prices are reasonable." Gao Sheng evaluated.

"Sir, do you have any interest in these Star level slaves?" Suddenly, the person in charge of this plaza ran over, obviously spotting Luo Feng and Gao Sheng's slaves, guessing they were big clients with spending power!

"I've already got the Star levels." Gao Sheng looked at the person in charge, smiling, "I heard before on Dragon Star, that there are Universe level slaves?"

Luo Feng was shocked.

Universe level slaves?

A normal galaxy's evolution usually only produces one universe level warrior! A Universe level, that was the true tyrant and emperor.

Universe level slaves?

However, with regards to information on slaves, Luo Feng had learnt from Babata, their brains were implanted with microchips, which fuse with their brains, unable to ever be separated. With these, they were a 100% loyal to their masters! To destroy the chips, their brains had to be destroyed! And human warrior's souls were within their consciousness, where their brains were!

That's why, destroying their brains meant death.

Unless...one became a Domain Lord!

Domain Lord's souls could leave their brains! So they are able to destroy the chips in their brains.

That's why...

Theoretically speaking, with the implant of the living microchip, the strongest a slave could ever grow to was the Universe level 9! Of course, if it was the Yun Mo Planet's secret technique <Soul Imprint>, that was something that could control even an Undying Being! However those techniques...in the vast universe, were techniques that were never shared outside their own circles!

“Universe slaves? If you wish to purchase one, that’s possible, our boss above can arrange it.” The person in charge smiled as he said.

“I’m just asking, I can’t afford it.” Gao Sheng laughed.

“Universe slaves are expensive! No way around it, to capture a Universe level warrior alive is hard enough, plus having to implant the microchip is even harder. A Universe level is priced in the billions. They are more expensive than a planet.” The person in charge shook his head, “From my point of view, with that money, why don’t you buy 10 to 20 Star level 9s instead, if you are lucky, one of the slaves may break through to the Universe level. When that happens, you can sell him, wouldn’t that be a fortune made?”

“Are you trying to swindle me!” Gao Sheng stared, “Star level 9 breaking through to the Universe level? Are the chances even 1 out of 100,000?”

“I’m just saying.” The person in charge laughed.

Luo Feng looked at the slaves with envy.

Star level 8 and 9, they were thousands of times stronger than the fighters on Earth! Even if the Star level 4 Golden Horned Beast risked it all, it still wasn’t a match. Without meeting a Universe level...this level of slaves would enable one to walk parallel with the universe. And the slaves with microchips implanted were the most loyal and obedient.

Countless years, there haven't been an example or case of a slave betraying a master.

"It's just too expensive!"

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, "To strengthen the Golden Horned Beast required money! <Deity of the World>'s training required money! To become the leader of a planet also required money! Getting some powerful underlings also required money!"

"It's useless!"

Luo Feng bit down, "I'm not using the arc cutter blade much, and I still have my trump card the hybrid copper essence shard, so I'll just sell the arc cutter blade! Then I'd have the money for training and even buying some slaves!"

Chapter 26 – Coldness in the Heart

His mind was currently in a state of indecisiveness!

The arc cutter blade didn't add much to his current powers, but the moment it's sold, it would be of great benefit!

"Look, there's more Dream Shell Clan people there." Gao Sheng's eyes lit up, pointing in the distance shouting, "Shasha, they're the same type of people as you right!"

Luo Feng too followed the direction of where Gao Sheng was pointing, beautiful jade haired young women were lined up, some were alluring while others seemed innocent and young, all of them were extremely beautiful. At the side were several jade haired handsome men, all made up to look dashing and heroic.

"xxxx..." The group of Dream Shell Clan slaves saw Sasha, one of them shouted out in a language that was foreign to the ears.

"Xxx..." The servant young lady behind Gao Sheng shouted back in the same language, her eyes red with tears flowing down.

"Why, you recognize them?" Gao Sheng said shocked.

The Dream Shell Clan slaves were pretty renowned in the slave market. Their prices were all in the hundreds of millions. Who would've thought that the female servant from the restaurant would recognize this group of slaves.

“Yes, I recognize them.” Sasha said, “Master, they all came here with me from the same hometown, we were all captured by the leader of the planet at the same time and sold to the slave trafficker.

“Captured by the leader?” Luo Feng’s eyebrows creased beside.

Not only did the planet’s leader not protect his own citizens, he captured and sold them?

“Yes.”

Sasha bit down and said hatefully, “Our hometown is an extremely beautiful planet! Our leader is the strongest warrior there, he dominates the entire planet! Under him are two other demon kings, all Star level warriors! Star level, in our hometown, that’s already invincible. Our ordinary folk have at most a few Star Traveller levels, no match for even the demon kings!”

“The two demon kings command an army, taking away a large number of matured young ladies and men, selling them directly to the slave traffickers.” Sasha continued to tear as she spoke, “Our race of people from the planet continue to reproduce and get sold, this, is our fate. Something we can never change!”

The story chilled Luo Feng’s heart!

My god!

There are actually warriors who specially own a planet to cultivate slaves? It was just like cultivating vegetables, selling one crop and cultivating another!

"To peddle slaves is an extremely lucrative industry." Gao Sheng said as he shook his head, "A planet with a population of hundreds of millions can reproduce that amount in a few decades. Selling a few hundreds of millions would mean enormous wealth! However, these sorts of things are extremely disgusting, the moment that race produces any powerful warriors, that planet's leader would be done for, hence these people usually only do such things to the weaker races. And the ones that dare to do so are leaders with extremely big backgrounds."

"There are countless human races, some weaker races, that are still weak even after maturing. To even produce a Star Traveller level is extremely difficult. These races, for them to be sold as slaves, is a very common thing." Gao Sheng said.

Ice cold!

Coldness that pierced to the bones!

The universe was too raw and brutal.

"If, if Earth were to ever be discovered..." Luo Feng trembled within.

Earth’s humans were far too weak!

Even reaching the Star Traveller level 1, was extremely difficult! This sort of race, if it were to be discovered by some big power in the universe, would immediately be deemed a slave race, reproducing generation after generation and being sold as slaves.

Generations would pass, the people would get poorer and poorer, it was a bottomless pit!

Like the Dream Shell Clan…

“No, no!!!” Luo Feng felt a sense of rage within.

Rage!

He couldn’t resign himself to that!

He could never allow it!

Coming to Dragon Star and seeing the Star level warriors that could squash him with a finger, even just the restaurant manager, the more important slaves, the bodyguards…Luo Feng understood! This was why Babata wanted him to act as a big family’s heir! Act as someone who had a huge background!

As it turns out…

The universe was this level of raw and brutal! If one was weak, he would be stepped on! No one would care about it!

If your race was weak, then, the entire race would be stepped on, even enslaved!

No one would help you! One had to rely totally on himself!

“Big family’s heir? Liquid silver guards? Black dragon ship? I’m definitely not some big family’s heir. The disciple of Yun Mo Planet? It has already been destroyed! I’m just an Earthling, a weak human from Earth. I can only rely on acting and appearances to gather some form of respect here on Dragon Star. Otherwise, who would actually respect a Star Traveller level little man from an aboriginal planet?” Luo Feng was looking at the slave Shasha.

Looking at the group of Dream Shell Clan slaves.

The female slaves were weak, while some of the male slaves had already reached the Star Traveller level! Obviously, when it came to power, the Dream Shell Clan was even stronger than people from Earth!

“Dream Shell Clan people, humans from earth...” Luo Feng muttered to himself.

“I definitely won’t allow it, I won’t allow Earth to follow in the Dream Shell Clan’s footsteps! Never!” Luo Feng muttered to himself.

A raging fire was burning within him!

Seeing the Dream Shell Clan, Luo Feng's mind was totally clear now.

In the vast universe, there were millions and billions of human races! The stronger race bloodlines, like the Manka, reach the Domain Lord level when they mature! And the weakest are even weaker than Earth! The weaker ones compared to those on Earth, the matured people's powers can't even reach the student level 1, they were simply too weak!

Why were the Manka so strong? It was due to the hardwork from their ancestors, that they managed to evolve the genetics of their descendants!

For any race to want to rise up, a hero is required to hack open a road for the others!

"Since we do not have any powerful ancestors, then, let me be the one to open a path!"

"I cannot rely on anybody else, only on myself!"

Walking through the slave market with Gao Sheng and looking at the groups of slaves, many of the slaves were grouped according to their race and sold, even orders up to the thousands and tens of thousands were easily handled! This chilled Luo Feng's heart even

more...If there was ever a day, where Earth humans were sold in the thousands and tens of thousands, amongst them were his fellow men, family and descendants.

That would be a nightmare!

“Brother Gao Sheng, I still have some matters to attend to, let’s separate here.”

At the exit of the slave market, Luo Feng said goodbye to Gao Sheng.

“No problem! Luo Feng, if any matters pop up, you can contact me through the Virtual Universe Network. I’ll be here on Dragon Star for the next few years.” Gao Sheng said enthusiastically.

“Definitely.”

At that time, the two split up.

Watching as Luo Feng left with the two liquid silver guards, Gao Sheng muttered softly to himself: “Training for a sect? Or a test from a big family?” He shook his head, leaving with his bodyguards. He could never have imagined...This youth who seemed to have such a big background, was actually the strongest warrior from an aboriginal planet, and even though he was the strongest, he was still only a Star Traveller level.

“I have to increase my strength as fast as possible now, increasing

Earth's power." Luo feng walked along the streets of Dragon Star.

There were two routes to increasing his strength.

One was to increase his human body's strength.

Two was to increase the Golden Horned Beast's strength.

"The Golden Horned Beast has the strongest battle power!" Luo Feng thought, "However, to enable the Golden Horned Beast to reach the Universe level within a couple of years, even after selling the arc cutter blade, the money would still be insufficient! There's only one way to do this..."

"Increasing my human body's power, swiftly reaching the Star level."

"After that, heading to the Universe Galaxy Bank, acquiring the first account my teacher left for me."

"Relying on this account's money, to make the Golden Horned Beast's body swiftly reaching the Universe level!"

Luo Feng easily formulated a plan for himself.

With the power of the Yun Mo Planet's master, even a random leg hair would have been stronger than the Dragon Star leader's Domain Lord! He believed the amount of money in the first

account would not disappoint him.

“Babata, I want to sell the arc cutter blade, where would be the best place to do it?” Luo Feng asked.

“You really want to sell it?” Babata couldn’t help but ask.

“Yes!”

Luo Feng was firm on his decision.

Having the Undying corpses, hybrid copper essence weapon, and the even more expensive eternal love, etc, taking them out would mean suicide! With these, why did he still have to work so hard? The hybrid copper essence shard and eternal love would all drive the Domain Lords mad. And the Yun Mo Planet ship, made even the Undying Beings crazy.

Luo Feng didn’t dare to take them out!

“If you want to sell, go to that treasure shop from before!” Babata said.

“Treasure shop?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Yup, the treasure shop’s goods cannot compare to the spirit weapon specialist shops, they will give you a better price.” Babata explained.

……

Luo Feng rushed over to the treasure shop.

A while later.

“Oh, it’s the customer from before. You’ve actually returned, you must have decided to buy something.” The helper within the store recognized Luo Feng, inviting him enthusiastically.

“Respected sir, what can I help you with.” The helper smiled.

“I want to sell a spirit weapon.” Luo Feng looked at him, this made the helper very shocked, Luo Feng continued, “A level 3 one!”

“Please, please wait a moment.” The helper seemed like he was trembling.

The spirit weapon was originally a luxury good.

Every rise in level had price leaps that were extremely shocking.

A level 3 spirit weapon’s lowest price was still in the billions, and the highest quality ones could reach even trillions!

“Sir, please come inside to discuss.” Very quickly, the helper ran back out, respectfully leading Luo Feng to a guest room within.

Within the guest room.

The originally sitting old man with two red and blue stripes across his face, a height of about 2.6m smiled and stood up, slightly bowing, “Respected customer, I heard you want to sell a level 3 spirit weapon?” This was a Star level 6 warrior, on ordinary planets, he was an invincible being.

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“May I know what spirit weapon it is?” The old man asked.

Luo Feng flipped his hand, brandishing the arc cutter blade!

The old man’s eyes lit up.

“This is the arc cutter blade, a weapon sold in spirit weapon shops in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire. The arc cutter blade’s quoted price is 21 billion Black Dragon dollars.” Luo Feng said.

With careful study of spirit weapons, one could easily create imitations of them.

Of course, regular level 3 spirit weapons, only Sector Lords could maybe try and imitate them. They went as far as requiring

Undying Beings to make them. Peddling weapons has always been a very lucrative industry, things like the soaring shuttle was made by Hu Yan Bo, but the arc cutter blade wasn't. Hence the number of soaring shuttles in the universe was much lower.

The arc cutter blade actually belongs to the more commonly seen level 3 spirit weapons, this treasure shop was bound to have information on its usage and methods,

"Di!"

A green light covered the arc cutter blade.

"Oh, it's an authentic arc cutter blade, its materials are not bad, it's also in perfect condition." The old man smiled and looked at Luo Feng, "I can give you 16 billion Black Dragon dollars, closing price."

"18 billion, I won't go any lower." Luo Feng shook his head.

This 18 billion was what Babata had instructed him to say.

"18 billion? This..." The old man looked at Luo Feng, this youth before him seemed to understand well about their business and profits, for them to actually carry such weapons, the first step alone was hard. It required time to wait for the goods, spirit weapons were after all things that only Sector Lords could build and create. With all these, it would take more than 18 billion just to acquire one arc cutter knife.

“Deal!” The old man looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng finally revealed a smile: “Let’s draw up the contract!”

Chapter 27 – The Purchase Before Departure

Both parties agreed on the contract and deal.

As Luo Feng didn't have a bank card, hence...he made special request. He had to get a new bank card from the Universe Galaxy Bank, thereafter, the two completed their deal.

The arc cutter blade now belonged to the treasure shop.

And the huge sum of 18 billion Black Dragon dollars now belonged to Luo Feng!

"This credit card is truly special, it's actually fused with one's consciousness, only the original owner can use the card. Even if it was stolen, it couldn't be used." Luo Feng was singing its praises, this was definitely an absolute safe method, safer than any password, after all...everyone's spiritual mark was different.

Universe Galaxy Bank, it was one of the super banks of the universe!

In the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, it only dealt with clients and deals exceeding 100 million Black Dragon dollars, it wouldn't even bother handling anything lower.

"18 billion, this is also considered a pretty big amount. For people

like Gao Sheng, and the Wei Lin from the restaurant, they too wouldn't be able to produce such cash instantly." Luo Feng's spiritual force felt the 18 billion within his storage space ring, feeling extremely excited.

"What are you excited about? One hybrid copper essence shard alone is much more valuable, and the Yun Mo Planet ship, which is made from countless hybrid copper essence, would make the Undying Beings even more green with envy. That's the true wealth!" Babata couldn't help but say, he obviously couldn't stand Luo Feng's current expression.

"No matter how valuable, I can't even take it out, where's the use in that?" Luo Feng retorted.

Babata was speechless.

The Yun Mo Planet ship, would probably entice the entire Black Dragon Mountain Empire to risk it all and battle for it.

How could Luo Feng dare to bring it out?

Even after reaching the Universe level, Domain lord level, he still wouldn't dare to bring it out!

Along with the old man, the two walked out from the Universe Galaxy Bank and returned to the treasure shop.

"Since I currently do not have enough money to make the Golden

Horned Beast quickly reach the Universe level...I just have to swiftly increase my human body's power." Luo Feng was very clear, in the vast universe, huge amounts of wealth represented a great power! He needed to as quickly as possible gain access to the first bank account his teacher left behind for him!

Hence, he needed to quickly raise his human body's power.

Only that way would his spirit swiftly increase in power too!

After all, the Golden Horned Beast's soul was a Star level 4, his human body didn't have any restrictions to breakthrough.

"Luo Feng, the Mu Ya crystals have life force in them, to the human soul and body, they have a positive effect on its evolution. They don't have any side effects too. So...The crystals can make a higher wargod breakthrough to the star traveller level 1, it can also help the monsters evolve." Babata said, "Of course right now you don't need your physical body or soul to strengthen...just your body!"

Luo Feng's body was the main reason for his power currently.

"Strengthening your body, with your current wealth, the best would be the Jade Marrow." Babata explained, "The Jade Marrow is a treasure that's best for the Star Traveller level."

At different levels, different treasures had different effects.

Just like America's 'Elixir of Life', it allowed normal people to regrow lost limbs.

The spirits of nature allowed wargods' powers to increase quickly. A few special spirits of nature could even help treat and heal Star Travellers. However...they had no ability to increase or strengthen a Star Traveller warrior.

At that time, they required even better treasures!

.....

"Mr. Luo Feng," The old man from the treasure shop smiled, "This is a member card for our treasure shop, you enjoy a 9.8% discount. We don't normally hand out member cards this easily."

"I understand." Luo Feng smiled.

This old man obviously knew Luo Feng had 18 billion Black Dragon dollars, of course he'd hope for Luo Feng to make a few more purchases.

"Do you have Jade Marrows here?" Luo Feng asked, he couldn't care less to look at the other treasures, this 18 billion, he needed to use it to the best of his ability, raising his body's power! He definitely couldn't waste it some useless items.

"We do."

This Star level 6 old man personally serviced Luo Feng, smiling as he brought Luo Feng to a corner of the treasure shop, there, several floating virtual images of Jade Marrows were on display. The Jade Marrows were a special and unique green color with hints of shiny mercury liquid around, beside it, it's price was displayed.

"Jade Marrow, 1 gram for 9000 dollars?" Luo Feng nodded, "I need 30 kg!"

"30kg?" The old man nodded and smiled.

This caused the recently entered customers to turn and stare at Luo Feng.

The Jade Marrow, an expensive plaything?

Buying 30kg in one go?

"After adding the discount, that would be 264.6 million Black Dragon dollars." The old man smiled, "Does Mr. Luo Feng require anything else?"

"Not at the moment. Thanks." Luo Feng didn't even look at any other treasures.

The old man was a little disappointed but he still swiftly finished

cashing the goods out, retrieving from a secret warehouse behind 30kg of Jade Marrow. It was only on Dragon Star, a shop in the core of hundreds of galaxies, would one be able to retrieve instantly such huge amount of goods. The lesser planets definitely couldn't produce such amounts!

"This is the Jade Marrow, please keep it well sir." The old man handed over a translucent glass bottle, in it, was a shiny green with bright sparkling silver of sorts liquid.

Just this bottle of liquid.

Who knew how many people died to collect this amount of this liquid! If converted to advanced level wargod fighters, it could buy over 10 million of them!

"Ok." Luo Feng received the large translucent bottle, shua, it vanished.

This caused several other customers to be shocked into discussion after they witnessed the exchange.

Obviously...

This youth had a space storage ring!

"With the 30kg of Jade Marrow, I can help my human body quickly reach the Star Traveller level 7, the spirit reader side to reach Star level 1. Then, I'd be able to access the first bank account

my teacher left for me." Luo Feng was high in anticipation, "The remaining Jade Marrow, I can use to help Hong and Thunder God."

30kg of Jade Marrow, Luo Feng definitely bought an adequate amount.

"Please take your time sir, we welcome you to shop here anytime." The old man smiled, watching Luo Feng leave.

Luo Feng once again reached the slave market that wasn't far from the treasure shop.

Within the slave market, it was still as crowded as ever!

The extremely beautiful female slaves capable of disrupting entire kingdoms only costed a total of several thousand Black Dragon dollars. A Student level 9 (advanced level wargod) fighter, was worth only about 20 Black Dragon dollars! Luo Feng could see tourists and travellers easily buying a few slaves all over the market.

"I need time to increase my own power!"

"And in the future, I would need more helping hands, I'll be frequently leaving Earth too, there needs to be some servants in the house." Luo Feng quickly made up his mind to buy a few slaves to bring back.

Very quickly, Luo Feng came to a rather powerful slave owner ‘s shopping center within the district.

Within the shopping center.

“Respectable sir, what slaves do you require? Be it beautiful or powerful, we have everything you would ever need.” A man as skinny as a monkey, with a pointy and huge nose, came up and easily recognized that Luo Feng was a client with buying power.

“Oh, I require some Star level slaves.” Luo Feng said.

“Ah!”

The man in charge became happy, smiling, “Please come over here, we have a large number of virtual images of slaves for you to slowly pick from! The prices are definitely reasonable and if you buy in bulk, we can even give you a better discount!” The Star level slave prices are more expensive, hence his happiness.

In the spacious guestroom.

A large virtual image appeared in front of Luo Feng, large numbers of physical appearances, body measurements and data, power and strength details, races and information all appeared, including price!

A Star level 5 fighter is worth 80 million, a Star level 7 fighter is worth 500 hundred million, level 8 is 2 billion, 9 is 5 billion. The

spirit readers' of the same level are 3 times that of the fighters. These are the standard pricings, unless one has a special ability, their price would thus be higher naturally!

For example, a Star level 9 spirit reader who was also a level 9 fighter!

"I want three of the Star level 5 spirit readers!" Luo Feng pointed at the screen, " The Black Meng race."

"Alright." The man in charge happily recorded.

Each of them were worth 240 million black dragon dollars, the total was 720 million black dragon dollars.

It was big business!

His eye for customers wasn't wrong, this youth was indeed a big client!

"The Black Meng star level 7 spirit readers, 3 of them!" Luo Feng continued.

The Black Meng race, their bodies were strong and sturdy, and they usually had more spirit readers.

According to Babata, the Black Meng slaves quality were not bad.

“Star level 7 spirit readers?” The man in charge was shocked, looking at Luo Feng, “Three?”

Every one of them was worth 1.5 billion black dragon dollars!

Three of them would mean 4.5 billion black dragon dollars!

Even the big families of the Dragon Star, it had be some kind of very important or big figure to be able to take out so much cash instantly. And heirs of big families hardly ever had so much cash on hand.

“Have you recorded it down?” Luo Feng looked over.

“Yes, I’ve recorded.” The man in charge was extremely excited, if he managed to close this deal, his reward would be plenty.

“Hm.”

Luo Feng nodded his head, “Can you give me a big discount?”

“9.5%! It’s definitely the biggest discount.” The man in charge’s sharp nose was shining.

“Alright, I would like a complimentary gift of ten level 1 Star levels, five fighters and five spirit readers, along with another one thousand Star Traveller level 9 spirit readers.” Luo Feng said.

“Sir!”

The man in charge made a face as if his parents just died. He immediately widened his eyes, “I can’t give you that much! You, you are simply asking for my life.”

Ten Star level 1 half fighters and spirit readers, would cost a total of 20 million Black Dragon dollars. One thousand Star Traveller level 9 spirit readers too would be worth one hundred million!

“One price.” Luo Feng looked at the man, “5 billion black dragon dollars, plus the little ‘extras’ I mentioned earlier.”

The man in charge was perspiring profusely, water beaded down from his pointy nose.

Calculations were going through his mind like crazy as if he was a calculator.

“Deal!” The man in charge gritted his teeth.

This deal still allotted a hefty amount of earnings for himself. The rest of the earnings would be split by the upper levels themselves!

“That’s good.”

Luo Feng nodded, “Black Meng Star level 5, Star level 7 spirit

readers, three of each, along with five Star level 1 fighters, five Star level 1 spirit readers. Along with one thousand Star Traveller level 9 spirit readers! From the races, you can pick from the thirteen different races I've allotted."

"No problem." The man in charge nodded.

"I'll place a deposit of 100 million Black Dragon dollars first! Later on, I'll inform you to transport all the slaves to the planet's docking bay. When that time comes, we'll finish the deal there." Luo Feng said.

"But of course." The man in charge was all smiles.

Over a one thousand slaves, most of them would be delivered at the docking bay..

Luo Feng nodded...

There were a total of more than one thousand slaves, Earth's aircraft carriers would easily hold up to a thousand, the black dragon ship had a total of three levels, a ship with a diameter of 100m, if they squeezed in, just one level could hold up to a thousand.

"After signing up at the Ganwu Dojo, I'll leave Dragon Star with the slaves." Luo Feng suddenly thought of the scene of him bringing such a big group of people back to Earth and couldn't help but to reveal a weird smile!

Chapter 28 – Ganwu Dojo

Leaving the slave market, Luo Feng swiftly headed towards his final destination on Dragon Star…the Ganwu dojo!

“Babata insists that I sign up at the Ganwu dojo.”

Luo Feng stood in front of a huge door over a city lake!

Yes!

This was a city within the city, the Ganwu Dojo on Dragon Star was the largest one within the surrounding one hundred galaxies, its level was also the highest. Many students gathered here. The entire territory of the dojo was an area of 280 squared km, one could only imagine it’s size!

“A golden leaf?” Luo Feng raised his head to look at the door of the dojo.

On the door, a flamboyant cursive writing of the words Ganwu Dojo was written with universe common language, also surrounding these words, there were golden leaf engravings.

At the door, students of the dojo were entering and leaving, there was no guard at all. Luo Feng followed a few others and entered the dojo.

“So many!”

“So huge!”

With a look, one could see the expanse of the huge plaza, blurred images or at least tens of thousands of students were sparring, engaging in group training. It was like a sea of people, giving off a strong visual sight to anyone looking, and there wasn’t one student who was below the star traveller level!

“It’s indeed the best Ganwu Dojo within a hundred galaxies.” Luo Feng complimented.

Within the Ganwu Dojo, before arriving, Babata had told Luo feng in detail!

This was a school for fighters and spirit readers from the Ganwu Empire, it attracts a large number of fighters and spirit readers! Also, the Ganwu Empire had, within its vast starfield and hundreds of millions of galaxies, restricted any other dojo from teaching!

The Ganwu Empire had only one Ganwu Dojo!

Of course if any Domain or Sector Lord was to teach his own disciples on his own planet, the Ganwu Empire wouldn’t bother!

However!

Domain Lords, Sector Lords and even Undying Beings! They were all restricted from building dojos on many of the planets, accepting disciples in bulk.

“This Ganwu Dojo, actually has three figures to represent them!” Luo Feng was looking at the three statues at the door!

They were three powerful human fighters!

The three humans were dressed in dark purple battle robes, and on their sleeves a golden leaf was embroidered.

One leaf Ganwu warrior!

“A Ganwu Dojo on a planet usually has three universe level teachers. The Ganwu Dojos in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire area usually have stronger teachers. If the Ganwu Empire, with its hundreds of millions of dojos were to come together...” Luo Feng exclaimed, “This Ganwu Dojo’s power is truly scary.”

Ganwu Dojo.

Star Traveller levels were normal students.

Star levels were deemed elite students, with the rights to actually apply to be instructors. On a few normal planets, these instructors ran the dojos.

The Universe level, would be deemed as Ganwu warriors, with a rank of 1 leaf!

The Domain Lords, a 2 leaf Ganwu warrior!

The Sector Lords, 3 leaf Ganwu warrior!

Hence in the Ganwu Dojo, to be able to gain the name of a Ganwu warrior, wearing an embroidered leaf on one's sleeve, that was a huge honor itself.

"Your teacher's biggest problem back then, was he was too solitary!"

"This was something even he admitted before his death, if he had joined a big power, like the Ganwu Empire, he could have mixed with the undying community in the Ganwu Empire. With that, the assassins wouldn't have dared to attack him so directly."

"Your teacher instructed!"

"Without sufficient power, mixing with a community is still better. One warrior would have three others to assist. What's more in the Ganwu Empire's territory, joining the dojo would make a lot of things very convenient in the future, plus...the dojo doesn't have too many restrictions on its warriors. Sigh, your master back then...he was much too solitary...no friends, no community!"

Babata's voice was forlorn and grieving.

Luo Feng sighed.

According to Babata's depiction, his teacher was too reclusive.

Dragon Star, within the Ganwu dojo, an administrative office.

"Knock, knock, knock." Luo Feng knocked on the door.

"Enter." A forceful old voice sounded, the door automatically opened.

In the room sat a man with a head full of white, green skin and with eyebrows that stretched all the way down to his waist, the old man looked over, Luo Feng smiled, "I'm here to sign up."

"Sign up?" The old man took a look.

"Di."

Beside, the screen immediately displayed a list of information, Luo Feng's name, nationality, power, etc.

"Your name is Luo Feng?" The old man nodded, "Star Traveller level 8 spirit reader? Black Dragon Mountain Empire citizen? Ok, registration fee is 800 Black Dragon dollars, in the future, you have

to pay an annual fee of 10 Black Dragon dollars to continue receiving our Ganwu Dojo's various student services."

"Understood." Luo Feng nodded.

The Ganwu Dojo's biggest site was actually within the virtual universe.

However, the virtual universe did have its own unavoidable detriments.

"This is 1000 Black Dragon dollars." Luo Feng took out a big note of currency, "800 for the registration and another 20 years of usage."

"Ok."

The old man nodded, swiftly finishing the documents for Luo Feng.

The Ganwu Dojo was an important pathway for attracting countless numbers of warriors in the universe, hence, once you reach the most basic star traveller level, registration would go without any hitches! No tests or anything else...of course, if you weren't a citizen from the Ganwu Empire, it would be more troublesome.

"Thanks." Luo Feng smiled and left.

The information was already keyed in.

From that moment, Luo Feng had acquired the status of a student of the Ganwu Dojo. Doing certain things in the future naturally became easier and more convenient.

“Dragon Star’s Ganwu Dojo?” Luo Feng walked out of the entrance, looking back and smiling, “I’m afraid I may not have the chance to ever return here ever again.” Glancing at the tens of thousands of students who were engaged in group training, with regards to their techniques and methods, Luo Feng couldn’t care less about their teachings.

He had the secret techniques from Yun Mo Planet!

Maybe the Ganwu Dojo’s core secret techniques could surpass the Yun Mo Planet’s, however… even the Sector Lords within the dojo probably wouldn’t have access to such valuable information.

“Oh?” Outside the main entrance, a student looked suspiciously at the back silhouette of Luo Feng.

“What’s up, Wei Lin?” The other two asked curiously.

“That man before, resembles the punk with two spirit weapons we met at the restaurant.” Wei Lin squinted a little.

“Are you sure?” The other two said shocked.

“Yes definitely!”

Wei Lin’s mouth curled into a smile, “Hmph, since you’re from the Ganwu Dojo. That’s good, I’ll arrange something down the road, let’s find out more about this little punk! Hmph, you actually dared to humiliate me in that restaurant!”

Luo Feng was in the air in Dragon City, flying alongside others.

“Right.” Luo Feng was currently in contact with the slave owner.

“I’m departing immediately! Right, wait for me, we’ll rendezvous and leave together for the planet’s docking bay.” Luo Feng finished and the communicator on his arm that was controlled by Babata immediately stopped the call. Luo Feng immediately made another call to Gao Sheng’s number: “It’s me Luo Feng! Brother Gao Sheng, I’m leaving Dragon Star, no need, you don’t have to send me off! I’m leaving the city now.”

“Oh, next time then. The next time I come to Dragon Star I’ll definitely look for you.”

“Alright, we’ll meet in the virtual universe next time.”

After the two conversations were completed, Luo Feng swiftly headed to the northern district of the city to the planned rendezvous point with the slave owner!

.....

In a private room of the sixth level of a restaurant 3km away from the northern city entrance.

“Mr. Luo Feng, this is our manager, he handles all the business here on Dragon Star.” The pointy nosed person in charge politely introduced.

Within the private room.

There stood a thin green haired man with ears that were slightly longer than usual, behind him were two bodyguards dressed in black uniforms, their bodies tall and sturdy!

“Luo Feng, those two bodyguards are Star level 9 spirit readers. The green haired man is a Star level 3 spirit reader.”

With Babata’s warning, Luo Feng remained calm and collected.

As the main manager of the business here on Dragon Star who controlled so many slaves, arranging the two strongest slaves to protect himself before the slaves were sold was a very normal thing to do.

“How are you Mr. Luo Feng, let me introduce myself, my name is Wula.” The green haired man smiled.

“Mr. Wula, very nice to meet you. If there aren’t any problems, I would like to leave immediately.” Luo Feng said directly.

“The client’s wish is our command.” The green haired man slightly bowed, smiling as he said, “The ship is already outside the city waiting.

Any ships entering Dragon Star from the universe were to be docked at the docking bay.

However, if a resident were to dock his ship in his own landing yard, or such slave owners with tens of thousands of connections, they could bring their many ships and battleships in without any problems.

A large ship was stopped right outside the city.

“Mr. Luo Feng, please.” The green haired man was very polite.

Following that, the man entered the spacious guest room of the ship along with Luo Feng, sitting opposite him, beautiful women immediately filled the table in front of them with delicacies.

“May I know where Mr. Luo Feng is from?” The green haired man asked curiously.

“My apologies, I do not wish to divulge.” Luo Feng said directly.

“Oh, I was impulsive, I hope Mr. Luo Feng doesn’t mind.” The green haired man expressed his apologies. For him to meet such a client with business reaching 5 billion, it was also a rare and lucky thing. After all the competition in the slave market was very intense, with many slave owners. Meeting such a straightforward big client, he was definitely highly respectful.

The slave owners were cold and brutal towards their slaves.

However to their clients, they were incomparably respectful!

“The ship has already reached the planet’s docking bay!”

A sound erupted within the ship.

Within the guest room, the green haired man immediately stood up, “Mr. Luo Feng, the ship has already arrived. Right now, we can begin the slave transfer! As it is the highest form of master recognition, from now on, we will be unable to ever regain control of these slaves. They will all only be controlled by you, and also, since there are over one thousand of them, the process could take a little longer.”

“Ok.” Luo Feng was anticipating the transfer.

Sixteen Star levels under him.

One thousand Star Traveller level 9 spirit readers, they were all just about to be transferred over.

Chapter 29 – Returning to the Milky Way

“All the slaves are in the big hall in the second level below. Mr Luo Feng, please follow me.” The green haired man led the way.

This ship was even bigger than Luo Feng’s black dragon ship.

Of course, the material used was much weaker, this was a B grade ship. In the second level of the ship below was a very spacious hall with an area of over 100m. Within it stood either tall and sturdy, or grave and stern, and even beautiful and gorgeous slaves. If one didn’t mention anything, no one could tell from the appearances that these were all slaves.

After all, the weakest one was still a star traveller level 9 spirit reader, stronger than Luo Feng himself! How could their auras be weak?

“Mr. Luo Feng, please stand in front.” The green haired middle aged man said, “The entire process is going to take awhile.”

“No problem.”

Luo Feng walked in front of the big hall, looking at the slaves that were all standing at attention. One thousand Star Traveller level 9 slaves all gathered together, and sixteen star level slaves were standing the closest to Luo Feng.

“Di!”

A strange sound resounded.

Immediately, all of the eyes of the slaves lost their focus, and within the corner of the big hall, the green haired man was arranging for his underlings to swiftly manage their apparatuses, with one of them directed straight at Luo Feng, as though it was collecting all of his data. Minutes and seconds passed, slowly and gradually, the slaves' eyes began to light up once again, regaining their focus.

About 12 minutes passed.

"Master!"

The group with over 1000 men and women, coming from different races, all neatly bowed together, respectfully recognizing their owner.

"Mr Luo Feng," the green haired middle aged man brought over a silver case, face full of smiles, "Everything has been settled, within here is the 1016 slave's controls for their microchips. One control for each chip, for each slave! The microchips are connected to the assisting computers and can be ordered and controlled through there."

"The operation methods have been included in a detailed memory card with explanations within the case." The middle aged man explained.

Luo Feng nodded.

With regards to these, Babata had already explained in detail to him long before.

“Mr. Wula, then I’ll immediately transfer the funds.” Luo Feng smiled.

Transferring the remainder of the funds straight into the slave shop’s account, the two had completed their deal.

“Haha.” Receiving the confirmation of the funds transfer, the green haired middle aged man immediately broke into smiles, “Mr. Luo Feng, it’s been a pleasure doing business with you, this is my virtual universe contact number. If you ever need or think of buying slaves again, please look for me. Whatever requests you have regarding the slaves, do mention them and I will definitely give you preferential treatment and discounts.” Finishing up, he passed over his name card.

“Definitely.”

After Luo Feng received it, he turned to look at the 1016 slaves.

“Follow me.” Luo Feng said.

“Yes, master.”

Three Star level 7 Black Mongolian spirit readers followed right behind Luo Feng, behind them were the other thirteen Star levels, finally behind them were the one thousand other slaves. Some of the slaves discussed in hushed voices, “Recognizing an owner once gives such a headache, looks like our new master has a big background and status, I hope our lives will be better.”

While the microchips were low in cost to make, their technology was incredibly advanced.

It was said that it was a piece of technology acquired from the human race battling the automaton race. The moment it melded with a living organism…that organism would be totally controlled. He would still have all his past memories, but a deep sense of loyalty towards his new owner would develop! Any smallest sense of disrespect would result in the microchip reacting adversely.

Hence…

In the vast universe, even after countless years, with the living microchips controlling the slaves, there hasn’t been a case of a slave betraying his owner.

Unless the slave becomes a domain lord, gaining the ability to resist the microchip, the strongest measure the chip can do is to detonate and blow one’s head off…for domain lord warriors, this wouldn’t kill them.

Dragon Star, the planet’s docking bay.

“Respected sir, we welcome you to visit Dragon Star again.” Dressed in a grey uniform, with a height of 2.8m, two horns on his head, green skin, the worker respectfully took Luo Feng’s docking card, watching as the majestic three star level 7 led the rest of the army into the black dragon ship.

The black dragon ship lifted, leaving the docking bay.

“Hu.”

This green skinned young man breathed a sigh of relief as the ship left, “A day hasn’t passed and he’s already leaving with such an army. And there’s even three star level 7 spirit readers!” The green skinned young man looked at his own mini quantum computer and the power assessor, feeling his blood rushing.

Sixteen star levels.

One thousand Star Traveller level 9s, this sort of army could easily conquer a normal planet.

……

Dragon Star space.

Black dragon ship control room.

Three Star level 5 and three star level 7 slaves were respectfully standing behind Luo Feng, and the other ten Star level 1 slaves were managing the one thousand Star Traveller level 9 slaves, the 1010 of them were staying in the lower and middle level of the black dragon ship.

“The ship has already left Dragon Star.”

On the control board’s screen, a small adorable demon head appeared, “Currently increasing speed.”

A moment later.

“There’s another 10 seconds before the ship reaches light speed, travelling through the universe.”

“8……7……6……5……4……3……2……1 ! ”

The ship gently vibrated.

It continued for 10 seconds.

“Travel complete, we’ve entered the dark space.”

It was only then that Luo Feng turned to look at the six Black Meng Star level slaves behind him, among the 1016 slaves that he bought, these were the six Black Meng race that were the most powerful. The other one thousand and ten slaves were picked from

the thirteen races that he specified from, the one similarity from the thirteen other races was…their heights and appearances were close to that of Earth's humans.

"Black Meng race." Luo Feng looked at the six, four men and two women.

The Black Meng men were very handsome, the women too were very pretty, they looked close to that of Earth humans. The only difference was…within their mouths, they had fangs and their eyes were dark red.

"What are your names?" Luo Feng asked.

"Master," One of the Star level 7 Black Mongolian women smiled, "My name translated to universe language is Aibolashadeniennidasina."

"Master, my name is Weitiancikedenishentulade." One of the black Meng men from the star level 7s who was more sturdy said.

"Master…"

The six reported their names one after another.

"My god." Luo Feng was speechless.

The Black Meng names were really long.

“From today, whatever you call yourselves among yourselves doesn’t concern me.” Luo Feng immediately pointed to the sturdy star level 7 man, “I call you Meng one, you’ll be called Meng two and you Meng three.” With one breath, from Meng one to six, Luo Feng passed his order.

Amongst them Meng three and six were women.

“Yes Master.”

The six Black Mongolian humans happily complied, only giving a slight sense of helplessness as they looked at each other.

“You can all return to the cabin to rest.” Luo Feng ordered.

“Yes.” The six left.

Only Luo Feng was left in the control room, it’s large doors automatically closed.

“Babata, connect to the Virtual Universe Network.” Luo Feng ordered through his thoughts.

……

Virtual universe world, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

Large amounts of human traffic filled the posh and bustling streets, suddenly one person popped out, Luo Feng too appeared out of nowhere this way.

On his shoulder sat a large fist-sized little demon.

“Mr Luo Feng, we’ve discovered your Universe Galaxy Bank account, would you like to bind it here?” A voice resounded in his mind, gentle and relaxing.

“Bind it.” Luo Feng said.

The Universe Galaxy Bank account thus received a soul imprint.

This virtual universe, linked up consciousness and soul imprints.

“Babata, act according to the plan.” Luo Feng casually strolled to an old wine bar, ordering a glass of fruit juice and sitting in the corner.

“Luo Feng, I’ve searched, within 30 thousand light years of earth, there are many planets that fit your requirements to be our second base!” Babata said.

“Oh?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

Earth was the homeland, he would definitely work hard to

become its owner, hence Earth was naturally his first base!

However...

Because of the Yun Mo Planet master entering the dark space back then, using his space technique to hide Earth and it's surrounding 1000 light years, the difficulty of finding these hidden markers was extremely high. Even Undying Beings could hardly do it. Thus, besides Babata who was able to easily locate this hidden markers.

Other ships had absolutely no way to reach Earth directly!

They could only slowly fly!

And in the future when Luo Feng purchases more metals, etc, to allow the other party to send them to Earth was impossible. Thus...they needed to find a second base! This second base was the land for Luo Feng to receive the large amounts of metal in the future, an important place for him to meet and communicate with the other people from the universe.

"As close to Earth as possible."

"As cheap as possible."

"As small a population on the planet as possible."

“As big of a warehouse as possible.”

Luo Feng said.

He required a large warehouse! In the universe, there were many such transport and storage services.

Be it unsuitable agriculture, or terrain that was more uninhabitable, these places were usually converted to large warehouses.

“Luo Feng, I’ve found one on the network, it seems not bad. Bai Lan Star, a planet in the milky way, about 1.180 thousand light years from earth. It receives very low temperatures throughout the year, it’s coldest regions reach 120 degrees below zero. The warmest places too are still about 10 degrees below zero. The entire planet’s population is 2.1 billion, because of its low temperatures, they all mostly live in the cities.”

“In Bai Lan Star’s cold regions, there are about 98 km long, 61 km wide warehouse bases. They are just about to give up and sell their business, this warehouse eternal deed is priced at 800 million Silverblue dollars.” Babata said, “After that, every year just requires 600 thousand Silverblue dollars to pay the manager.”

Luo Feng’s eye’s lit up.

98km long, 61km wide, such a big warehouse? It was definitely the place for interstellar shipments, it was huge!

This sort of warehouse was mostly made out of ship remains mixed with things like debris, while it may seem big, the costs for building such a warehouse...definitely wouldn't exceed 100 million Silverblue dollars. Expensive, but only on the land itself. Of course for such extremely cold regions, there was no point in building places and communities for humans to live.

To be sold at this price was not bad.

"Alright, Babata, contact the people in charge on the Bai Lan Star." Luo Feng said immediately.

From then, the discussions lasted more than 3 hours.

Finally, the manager from Bai Lan Star agreed, with 800 thousand Black Dragon dollars, (Government price, 1 Black Dragon dollar = 1000 Silverblue dollars, the worth of the black dragon dollar was actually even higher) the price for buying the eternal deed for the warehouse base, along with deducting 500 years of management fees. The Black Dragon dollar was worth a lot more than the Silverblue dollar, normal citizens of the planet may not even earn 1 Black Dragon dollar in a year.

.....

Days passed.

Nine days later.

“We are just about to arrive at Bai Lan Star marker, 320 seconds later we will travel through universes.” Within the black dragon ship, Babata shouted from the control board’s screen.

Luo Feng was all smiles.

The Bai Lan Star was really close to Earth, only ten thousand light years and a little more, with the black dragon ship’s speed, it only took a day for him to fly to and fro from Earth to the Bai Lan Star.

Chapter 30 – Luo Feng's Future Home

Milky Way, Bai Lan Star.

As one of the millions of life planets in the Silverblue Empire with less than satisfactory conditions for life, the managers sent to this planet to manage definitely were people without any background in the Silverblue Empire.

Bai Lan Star northern district. An extremely cold region.

Buildings of warehouses were scattered all over the ice frozen land, every warehouse was built and designed beautifully. And at that time, in front of one of the bigger warehouses, there was a silver white ship parked there.

"Bureau chief, when will that client arrive, we've been waiting here for half a day already." Within the ship, 10 workers were sitting close together.

"I say, bureau chief. Since the contracts have been signed and the money has been paid, there's no real need for all of us to personally come down to welcome this client, wouldn't letting some of the workers just do it be enough? For our entire department to come out, aren't we giving him too much face?" Another middle aged man said slowly as he lifted his hot drink.

For this whole group of people to take a ship and come out together, on Bai Lan Star this was an excessive oddity, one could just guess how high their positions were on the planet. And this

bureau chief was even one of the planet's biggest bosses.

"What's the hurry?"

The bureau chief with big fat ears grunted angrily, saying seriously after, "You bunch of idiots, to prevent you all from creating trouble for me later, I'll explain to you all now. Do you know...in the Virtual Universe Network, when I signed the deal with this client and the contract went through, do you know which bank his money is coming from?"

"Which bank?"

"Noether Bank?"

"Bula Galaxy bank?"

The other workers reported several other bigger well renowned banks.

"It's the Universe Galaxy Bank!" The bureau chief with big fat ears said seriously.

Silence!

The group of workers who were originally casually sipping on their hot drinks all looked dumbfounded at their chief.

Universe Galaxy Bank!

That was a bank that was dedicated to serving only the upper echelon of people, powerful warriors in the universe, to be able to open an account with that bank, the conditions were...the storage amount had a minimum of 100 million Black Dragon dollars! 100 million Black Dragon dollars, converted to Silverblue dollars, was more than a trillion Silverblue dollars. The richest of the rich of several normal planets was only about that much, and on Bai Lan Star, the richest was only worth a little over 600 hundred million Silverblue dollars.

Hence, the Universe Galaxy Bank usually only operated in the higher and middle level civilizations and empires, places such as the important Dragon Star and several other planets, along with several other branches around in the universe countries.

“Universe Galaxy Bank?”

“My god.”

“Is it real?”

The group of workers exchanged looks, dumbfounded. Even the richest on their planet Bai Lan Star had no rights to reach the bare minimum of the Universe Galaxy Bank! And that richest person already commands enough respect and flattery from the management group’s upper levels. The administrative officials, army officials, no matter how much they worked, they couldn’t even compare to a planet’s richest.

“So all of you better be careful!” The bureau chief ordered.

“Understood.”

“Relax chief, we will definitely make the client extremely satisfied.”

“Definitely no problems.”

The originally casual group seemed to liven up by a hundred times.

“Beep! Chief Ba Te, the client has arrived. The message has come in!” a voice resounded within the ship.

“Alright.”

The fat headed big eared bureau chief immediately stood up, serious and ready.

“Bai Lan Star’s chief Ba Te, how are you, I am Luo Feng,” The message’s voice resounded.

“How do you do, Mr Luo Feng, I am Ba Te, I’m currently outside the warehouse base that you bought”. The chief’s face was all smiles, saying, “Also Mr Luo Feng, you don’t have to stop your ship at the planet’s docking bay, as a guest who owns property here on

the planet, you can fly your ship here directly to the warehouse base."

"I'll be there immediately!"

The message ended.

"Hurry!" The chief looked fiercely at the workers under him, "Leave the ship immediately and welcome Mr Luo."

"Yes, chief!"

Whether they were big bellied, or old and unstable, this group of old men immediately became extremely determined.

.....

On the land outside the warehouse.

Eighteen upper level officials from the planet administration, including the chief bureau, the vice chief and sixteen other important members, in the cold weather, dressed in warm thick clothing, stood looking around in anticipation! One must know that such a desolate place had temperatures of negative 90 degrees.

"Here he comes."

The eighteen men's eye's lit up.

In the distance, a black ship appeared, almost immediately reaching the warehouse and slowly descending.

"This ship's logo is that of a black dragon, could it be a universe ship from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire?" as personnel from the lower planet Bai Lan Star of the Silverblue Empire, to face such a big person from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, they all naturally felt humbled.

"It's a black dragon mountain x series!"

"Pure black? It's from the black dragon mountain x series luxury series?" One of the younger members said shocked, "The black dragon mountain x series cheapest is about 600 million Black Dragon dollars for one ship, the more luxurious ships' prices go up to even 10 billion Black Dragon dollars! Pure black! It's an expensive pure black color!"

This particular ship enthusiast was extremely poor.

But that didn't stop his interest in the different series, expensive and different types of ships.

"10 billion Black Dragon dollars?"

"This ship is worth 10 billion black dragon dollars?" the other members said shocked.

“10 billion? And in Black Dragon dollars?”

The fat headed big eared chief choked on his own saliva!

My god!

Even in the Silverblue Empire’s most wealthy, most advanced and most powerful places…the empire’s main planet! To be able to ride a ship worth 10 billion, only the most upper echelons, the biggest business owners in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire could afford something like that. These sort of people could easily remove the lower planet Bai Lan Star’s poor management staff.

“Du!”

The cabin door opened!

Eighteen Bai Lan Star staff stood at attention, putting on their most enthusiastic smiles and watching the entrance of the ship.

Hu! Hu!

People flew out neatly one after another, powerful warriors continuously streamed out of the ship.

“This, this…”

“They are all Star Traveller level 9 spirit readers.” Lowering their heads and looking at their assisting computer scans, shocked.

A majestic total of one thousand Star Traveller level 9 spirit readers flew out.

“My god.”

“This could easily level our Bai Lan Star.”

The bureau chief and others felt their legs shiver, even their hearts tremble.

Their planet’s strongest was only a Star level 1 fighter. However against one thousand Star Traveller level 9 spirit readers surrounding and attacking, he would definitely die immediately.

“Star level 1, one, two, three of them…”

“Look, Star level 5s.”

Another group of people came out.

Over one thousand of them lined up in two rows, like a group of soldiers, awaiting their master!

After...

Dressed simply, Luo Feng followed out under the close protection of three Star level 7 bodyguards, flying out of the cabin door.

“7, 7, 7, level 7??? Star level 7? And spirit readers?” The staff all lowered their heads and looked at their scanners, feeling their throats go dry. There were a total of three star level 7 spirit readers and body guards...This Star Traveller level 8 youth, just where did he come from?

.....

Luo Feng flew out from the cabin door, looking at the eighteen people welcoming him.

“Which of you is Chief Ba Te?” Luo Feng said.

“That’s me, I am Bai Lan Star’s business administrative bureau chief Ba Te.” The fat headed big eared chief stepped forward with utmost respect.

My god!

To be able to command such a scary force, with a total of three Star level 7 spirit readers! Even the emperor of the Silverblue Empire didn’t have such treatment. The one thousand Star Traveller level 9 didn’t even shake them as much as the three Star level 7s. After all, one Star level 7 spirit reader’s price alone far

exceeded that of the one thousand Star Travellers combined.

“Mr. Luo, let me introduce you to some of the capabilities of the warehouse base.”

“Mr. Luo Feng, please look here, the entire warehouse base is solid and sturdy, they have the defensive capabilities of even a interstellar battleship. Be it earthquakes, etc, they wouldn’t even be scratched.” Chief Ba Te enthusiastically introduced, joking, the base was after all built from using a large amounts of battleship remains.

It was indeed solid and sturdy, definitely not weak at all.

……

A length of 98km, width of 61km, about 6000km area, a huge warehouse! It definitely made people tremble.

In the center area of the warehouse base, there was a residential area, with an area of about 3km.

“This is…” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up.

“This is a residential area, should the warehouse base ever need any workers, or guards. They can live here! This area is very old, Mr. Luo Feng can demolish it and reconstruct it altogether.” The fat headed big eared chief threw a glance behind, from behind a fair blonde youth walked up, pressing his wrist computer.

Di!

A virtual image immediately appeared in mid air, displaying villas one after another.

“Mr. Luo Feng, if you need any villas, you can pick any you want.” Chief Ba Te said enthusiastically, “These villas are easily dismantled, they are solid and can keep one warm, as long as we send the different parts of the villas from far away here, we can assemble one within a short amount of time.”

“Move, dismantle, and assemble?” Luo Feng was interested.

On Earth, there were movable residential areas too.

However, the technology and advancement was far behind compared to a developed planet.

“Are there even bigger living areas?” Luo Feng said as he looked at the virtual image.

“Even bigger?” The chief was taken aback.

Beside him, the fair blonde youth said: “The bigger ones are manors, even castles of sorts. However to send the parts over require things from other planets. They would take more time and are more expensive.”

“This is a manor, it takes up an area of 10 thousand to 100 thousand squares. These are the main construction dimensions, as for the courtyard...it can be however big you want it to be.”

“These are the castles, they can take up from 500 thousand to 5 million squares.”

Looking at the castles, Luo Feng felt more satisfied.

“Oh, give me two of the castles.”

“This ones which take up one million squares and has nine levels, two of them.” Luo Feng said.

Back on Earth, the little villas were obviously insufficient.

Afterall he had over one thousand servants!

And the building process on Earth was simply too slow, this sort of movable, dismantling and assembly type castles, even if he brought it back to Earth, he could rely on his over one thousand servants to swiftly assemble and finish them.

“This Bai Lan Star, is going to be my future hub for contact with the universe, also my second base, I have to have a castle here.”

“Earth is my root, hence I definitely need a castle there too.”

Luo Feng pondered.

Chapter 31 – Returning to Earth

“Two castles?”

The chief and the group of the men cleared their throats, this level of wealth definitely wasn’t something they could imagine. The richest on Bai Lan Star could at most build one castle for themselves. To require buying such a lavish and movable castle, his capital must obviously be extremely high.

“The style of the castle can be picked, the interior design too. And the castle itself, it’s priced according to the materials used.” The fair blonde youth said, Luo Feng was quickly going through the images and picking, within a short time, he had picked the style, interior design and the materials for the castle.

“Two castles at 1.2 billion Silverblue dollars each, a total of 2.4 billion Silverblue dollars. If you use Black Dragon dollars to pay, you can get a 8% discount, at 1.92 million Black Dragon dollars!” The blond fair youth said, his voice quivering slightly.

Such a huge sum.

2.4 billion Silverblue dollars, it was more expensive than the entire warehouse base.

“Okay.” Luo Feng nodded.

These two villas were made from B grade battleship parts,

especially the core master bedroom and some other important rooms, they were built using C grade alloys and mixed metals. They were all accorded for important and respectable guests.

After the business managers all left, Luo Feng returned to the black dragon ship.

After all, the warehouse base's residential area was cold and old and degraded, far from the comfortable interiors of the ship.

"Babata, enter the virtual universe." Luo Feng sat within a comfortable resting room in the black dragon ship.

……

Virtual universe, Ganwu Empire, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

Luo Feng was alone, sitting in the corner of a wine bar, conversing with Babata with his thoughts.

"Babata, begin ordering, buying the metals." Luo Feng ordered.

"Buy which combination?" Babata asked.

"I'm currently relying on the Jade Marrow and Mu Ya crystals to assist me, I believe it'll take the most half a year for my body to reach the Star Traveller level 7! And my spirit reader side to reach Star level 1. I'll be able to access the bank account my teacher left

for me. So...Buy half a year of metals, the price mustn't exceed 10 billion Black Dragon dollars." Luo Feng said in his mind.

The metals used for the Golden Horned Beast's consumption was his greatest expense.

It was only at the Star level now, the most expensive and best metal combinations would take over 60 billion Black Dragon dollars in a year!

<Deity of the World's> training was even more demanding and scary, Luo Feng couldn't even begin to worry it about it at the moment.

"Alright." Babata swiftly searched.

"Luo Feng, I've already determined. There are two sets of metal combinations, for half a year of swallowing, one requires 6.28 billion Black Dragon dollars, increasing your evolution speed by 39 times. The other is 10.22 billion Black Dragon dollars! Increasing your speed by 51 times, the second combination exceeds the 10 billion limit, you decide."

"The second combination." Luo Feng didn't even hesitate.

"Ok, then I'll place the order, the delivery address will be Bai Lan Star?"

"Yes, Bai Lan Star!"

He swiftly settled all his matters.

Back when he sold his level 3 spirit weapon arc cutter knife and received 180 billion Black Dragon dollars, buying slaves used up 5 billion of it, buying the Jade Marrows used up 200 million, and the castles, warehouse bases didn't even really add up to much compared to the others. Now buying so much metals, his remaining total stood at 2.5 billion Black Dragon dollars.

"Babata, buy the purple light drink!" Luo Feng said.

"Really?" Babata couldn't help but ask.

"Right." Luo Feng nodded.

There were many treasures in the universe that were beneficial to the body.

The more beneficial it was, the price too would naturally be more shocking! Just like the Jade Marrow that Luo Feng bought before which is beneficial for the Star Traveller level body, 1gram was 9000 dollars! For the Student level fighters, things similar to the spirits of nature these playthings, these were priced at about a thousandth of the Jade Marrow!

And the purple light drink Luo Feng intended to buy, it's price was cheap, it was a common drink in several wealthy families. It was sold in the kilograms.

1kg was worth 10 Black Dragon dollars!

“Babata are you sure? 15 mg of purple light drink can make a high level student of Earth to evolve to a Student level 1?” Luo Feng asked again.

“Relax, definitely no problem! You are buying something which was meant for high level students, these are people who aren’t even at the Student level 1! Too good a treasure and their bodies won’t be able to absorb it. For their type of bodies, 15 mg of the purple light drink will definitely have amazing results.” Babata said, “You haven’t even made money relying on Earth and now you are spending so much on them.”

“Just buy, buy…100 000 tons of purple light drink!” Luo Feng said.

“So much? You sure?”

“Sure!”

Luo Feng nodded.

The density of the purple light drink was lower than water, 15mm of it was about 10g. One kilogram of purple light drink could make a hundred of the higher level students become fighters! One ton would mean one hundred thousand people! One hundred thousand tons was enough for ten billion people to become

fighters!

“Being strong alone won’t be enough to make the people of Earth rise up, the only way is to make everybody get strong together.”

“However, what I can do is only push and support from the side! The real hard work would still have to be from the countless people on Earth.” Luo Feng thought to himself.

The number of fighters on Earth was too little, far too little!

An ordinary person compared to the number of fighters was about 10000:1, hence, the total number of fighters on Earth was just about 1 million.

The number of higher leveled students were many though.

Even though in a high school there were only about three high level students, the ratio was still about one thousand to one, the dojo higher level students majority were all above 20 years old! On Earth, normal people and dojo higher level students had a ratio of one hundred to one, this was why many give up and feel there’s no hope.

One hundred to one, I want to make every dojo’s higher level students become fighters! This way, of Earth’s 7 billion people, there will be 70 million fighters!”

“With people knowing that reaching a higher level student would

allow them to become fighters, they would definitely work much harder for it."

"Maybe the ratio would get better too, out of 50 people one of them might reach the higher level student!"

Luo Feng anticipated!

The number of fighters on Earth, the moment it reaches the hundreds of millions! One must know, fighters could absorb energy from the universe, when that happens, they will gradually evolve. With such a big group of humans evolving, it would result in the entire human species on Earth undergoing a huge evolution! Maybe in 20 years time, the number of fighters would increase even more, in a few hundred years, everyone on Earth may be fighters!

Reaching maturity would mean reaching the Student level 1 fighter!

This was the first step Luo Feng had envisioned for Earth!

.....

"I've already purchased."

"One hundred thousand tons of purple light drink, because of the large quantity, I've found out of the many dealers one with the biggest discount, 8%! The total is 800 million Black Dragon

dollars!” Babata said.

“Ok.”

Luo Feng nodded.

One hundred thousand tons, it could be used for 10 billion higher level students in the dojos! The total number of people on Earth right now wasn’t even 7 billion, this much of the drink could last for a long time.

That night.

An interstellar transport ship reached Bai Lan Star, delivering two movable castles’ parts, according to Luo Feng’s request. Only one castle was fully assembled, the other was broken down to its parts. After 20 minutes, the nine levels which took up an area of 1km was complete.

……

On the second day of Luo Feng’s arrival on Bai Lan Star, the first order’s ’s big batch of metals was delivered. (Luo Feng’s order of metals was ordered from three different sources.)

……

On the third day of his arrival on Bai Lan Star, one hundred

thousand tons of purple light drink was delivered.

……

As some metals were more expensive and rare, the delivery came from further and more distant places.

On the sixth day, all of the metals were delivered.

And in the process, Luo Feng also took the opportunity to sell some of the 92.8 billion tons of black iron he dug out from Mars before to these metal owners, selling about 90 billion tons. One ton of black iron was priced at 0.0032 Black Dragon dollars, if they were sold in Silverblue dollars, it would fetch about 4 Silverblue dollars. The price was in the tens of billions in Silverblue dollars. Finally, Luo Feng managed to collect over 20 million Black Dragon dollars.

If he hadn’t sold the arc cutter knife.

His initial earnings from that of Mars would indeed have been a huge reward.

After all, 10 Star level 1 fighter slaves was worth only 10 million Black Dragon dollars.

On the seventh day on Bai Lan Star.

“From today on, you’ll be stationed here! If anything pops up, you can contact me through the Virtual Universe Network!” Luo Feng said.

“Yes master!”

A Star level 1, and one hundred Star Traveller level 9 spirit readers complied to the order. This group would thus become Luo Feng’s second base’s guards.

Luo Feng turned around and ordered: “Let’s go!”

Commanding fifteen Star levels and the other nine hundred level 9 Star Travellers , he swiftly boarded the black dragon ship! As for the large amounts of metals, and the other movable castle and it’s large amounts of components, they were all stored in Babata’s storage space.

……

The black dragon ship left Bai Lan Star, travelling through universes and headed straight for Earth.

Eight hours later.

“What’s up, the ship is circling around?”

In the control room, Luo Feng asked.

On the control screen, Babata's head appeared, "We've already reached the dark space where Earth is, however, the marker is currently camouflaged by your teacher's space technique from before. I need to orbit without any errors for about 5 minutes to determine the real universe marker."

Luo Feng nodded.

Space technique?

That was too distant for himself! The secret techniques from Yun Mo Planet that he was studying right now didn't even have any space techniques, obviously it wasn't something he was capable of studying now.

……

Five minutes later.

In the Solar System's vast space, a strange wave rippled in the space, a dark black disc-shaped ship appeared through it just like that.

The universe travel was a success!

"We are back!" Luo Feng looked at the distant green and blue planet in the space, his heart excited.

Without leaving Earth, how would he be able to fully comprehend the feeling of missing home.

This green and blue planet!

That was his real root!

“Earth, I’ve returned.” Luo Feng said passionately.

“Babata, let’s return to Earth.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Right!” Babata shouted back loudly.

The black ship increased its speed in the limitless space, heading towards the green and blue planet swiftly!

Earth, China headquarter city, it was currently nighttime.

A middle aged man with the rank of general was resting on his house’s sofa, accompanying his family as they watched television, suddenly his phone rang.

“Hm?” The general lifted the phone, shocked.

It was Luo Feng!

He was China's current main contact point for Luo Feng.

"How are you Mr. Luo Feng." The general answered the call, swiftly heading to the room beside.

"General Wang, I'd really like for an area of land that's a more than 1km in area within Yangzhou city." Luo Feng's voice resounded from the phone.

"No problem, I'll let you know within half an hour." The general said without hesitation.

"Thanks, also three days from now in the morning at 9am, China's timezone, I would like to gather the upper echelons of every country and headquarter city to Yangzhou to have an important meeting that concerns the evolution of Earth's population." Luo Feng said.

The general was shocked.

He didn't care much that Luo Feng wanted some land, it was only an area of 1km. It didn't mean much to the country. A larger company headquarters alone was that size! Even in China, just like Luo Feng's wife's family the Xu Family, they own that much land.

However...

A meeting?

Every country, every headquarter city's upper echelon to participate?

"Why is Luo Feng doing this? Why do we need such a high leveled important meeting for?" While the general was suspicious, he didn't dare to ask too much.

In the eyes of the entire world currently, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were constantly together, like three good brothers, and they were at the peak of Earth's strength!

"Understood, I'll let the senior official know." The general said.

"Ok."

Luo Feng hung up.

At this time, Luo Feng had just entered Earth's atmosphere, without even reaching home yet, he quickly made that call.

Chapter 32 – Setting the Plan

Earth, China, Jiang-Nan headquarter city Yangzhou city.

Yangzhou City's most posh and bustling little district, was without question the West Lake Courtyard. This courtyard took up a vast space, the appearance of the river flowing was also modeled to pre Great Nirvana period when it was the Shou West Lake, on the sides of this remodeled river, the people had grown lots of trees.

The entire West Lake Courtyard had a total of twelve luxurious villas.

Afterall...

Even in the headquarter city era, status still existed, these twelve houses, if they didn't have any connections with the military, they would just simply have large amounts of wealth, having power and authority in society.

"Immediately!"

"Take all the important items and documents and leave swiftly, after 15 minutes, the entire West Lake Courtyard shouldn't exist."

"Hurry, hurry, hurry!"

“Faster!”

Vehicle after vehicle swiftly transported the families’ important items. In mid air, three disc shaped battle ships were floating above, rushing them! The twelve families previously high in authority and position were a sorry figure as they were forced to leave quickly.

“My god, it’s actually the highest senior official giving the order.”

“While the territory we own here at West Lake Courtyard is big, the main district, the Jiang-Nan Mountain River sector has a bigger piece of land than ours. Why are they forcing us out?” Within the many luxurious cars, the important people from the families were feeling a sense of injustice and dissatisfaction. They however didn’t dare to rebuke, after all, they must have guessed by now...

This order, came straight from China’s highest authority!

.....

When Luo Feng’s ship appeared in the air above the West Lake Courtyard sector, the entire district, except for the army personnel welcoming him, was empty.

“Very high efficiency, my call ended less than half an hour ago! Also, giving me the best place, the West Lake Courtyard...”

Forty five minutes later.

Two cars left Mingyue sector, reaching West Lake Courtyard.

“Daddy, these three words are West Lake Courtyard, right?” In the car, Luo Feng was hugging his two sons on his lap, Luo Hai, the younger son pointed out at the district entrance’s big four words. This year, Ping Ping and Little Hai were 3 years old, under the tutelage of Xu Xin and their grandparents, they had already begun to recognize many Chinese words.

They even memorized many Tang poems and Song characters.

“Right, Little Hai is so clever.” Luo Feng gave him a peck on the cheek.

“Daddy, why are we here?” Ping Ping asked.

“Right, Luo Feng, you haven’t told us why we have come to West Lake Courtyard.” Xu Xin, who was sitting beside asked.

“You’ll find out in a moment.” Luo Feng smiled.

In the car behind were his parents and little brother and his wife, they too were clueless.

Entering West Lake Courtyard, the car followed around the grass

patch, Luo Feng and the rest of his family could clearly see the Shou West river, along with the willow trees on the river sides swaying in the breeze, the scenery here at West Lake Courtyard was indeed beautiful. And in the distance in the tallest grass patches, was what was supposed to be twelve luxurious villas.

And now!

A castle that was up to 60m tall, taking up an area of 1km, it was a castle from the fairytales! The walls were decorated with plants and vines, covering a good half of the walls, as though they had been growing for years.

“This…”His younger brother Luo Hua was shocked.

“When did Yangzhou have this castle built?” His father Luo Hong Guo too was very shocked, “Such a high castle, we should have noticed it when it was in construction.”

“Right, and the surrounding walls are covered in vines that seem to have been growing for a very very long time.” Luo Hua nodded.

“And the twelve villas?” Xu Xin was extremely suspicious, “I even made a call this afternoon to a business partner, he was living here in West Lake Courtyard.”

Luo Feng smiled.

Twelve villas?

They were all directly absorbed into the storage space ring, that was the quickest dismantling option. And this castle! With the help of almost one thousand servants working together, the assembly time was even faster than what the initial description from the seller mentioned, after all, all of the servants, the lowest of them was still at least a star traveller level 9, their combined force was shocking.

They didn't need any machinery, using just their physical strength to move things, carry things, was extremely swift!

And the vines on the walls, these were special popular vine decorations from the universe.

"Open the door." Luo Feng looked at the castle, shouting.

"Rumble!"

The big entrance doors of the castle opened, a large number of neatly dressed uniformed servants swiftly ran out, the vast team of servants shocked Gong Xin Lan, Luo Hong Guo, Luo Hua and Zhen Nan, Xu Xin and finally the two children.

"Hua!"

Close to one thousand warriors neatly lined up, all bowing slightly towards Luo Feng, saying in unison, "Master!"

These slaves didn't know Earth's languages, hence Luo Feng installed a translator in everyone of their microchips, translating universe language to Mandarin, English, French, etc, to the various languages of the world! In the universe, these microchips were very normal.

These slaves' prices were very high, naturally the slave owner prepared them with the best basic microchips.

They could even converse through their thoughts through the microchips.

Whatever they wanted to say made the chips react and speak in Earth languages with a robotic tone.

"This is?"

"This..." Xu Xin and the group of people were stunned.

"These are servants for our family, and also our family's guards." Luo Feng said, "As for details, I'll let you know in awhile. Come, let's go in and take a look. This castle, is also a part of the rewards from my leaving for a month."

This was actually something prepared for the luxurious and extravagant in the universe, just looking at it, be it the old or young, everyone naturally liked this castle.

.....

The second morning, the red burning sun rose from the east, two beams of light flew towards Yangzhou from far away.

“This is the castle the third brother mentioned in the call? It’s like seeing a ghost!” In mid air, the white clothed bald Thunder God saw the imposing enormous castle in Westlake Courtyard, a little dumbfounded.

“Hm?” Dressed in black, Hong surveyed it from above, smiling, “third brother’s rewards from this trip must be pretty good.”

“We must definitely give him a good knocking!” Thunder God rushed first towards the castle.

“Haha.” Hong too followed behind.

The entire castle’s automated defense system was extremely advanced, however Luo Feng had long given Thunder God and Hong access as friends, hence the two could rush in without being attacked.

“Big brother, second brother, quickly come here.”

Luo Feng shouted from one of the castle’s high balconies.

“Whoosh! Whoosh!”

Hong and Thunder God landed on the balcony.

“Third brother, you actually disappeared for a month, you...” Thunder God seemed to have eaten an angry pill or something.

“Dear second brother, if you don’t shut up, I won’t be telling you the information and news from my hazardous and hard first journey into the universe.” Luo Feng mocked.

Thunder God’s expression froze.

Hong too looked shocked.

Entered the universe?

“Third brother, no, dear third brother, I’m in the wrong, I’m in the wrong.” Thunder God’s eyes lit up.

Luo Feng smiled: “Let’s talk inside.”

Inside the castle.

“You two have entered the Yun Mo Planet, you must know that before, I was the only disciple of the Yun Mo Planet. Hence, I naturally acquired my own AI assistant.” Luo Feng said.

“You and big brother both have your own AI support, only I

don’t.” Thunder God muttered.

Hong said: “Continue listening to Luo Feng.”

“In archeological ruin #12, I discovered a black ship, that black ship’s laser pathway…was still completely functional, obviously it’s power supply was still working, without much damage.” Luo Feng emphasized, “So, with the help of the AI support, I’ve repaired it, and can now travel throughout the universe.”

Thunder God and Hong’s eyes lit up.

They too had acquired quite a bit of knowledge from the universe, they knew what travelling through the universe meant.

“After travelling through the universe, I headed for a planet that was 320,000 light years from Earth…Dragon Star.” Luo Feng began to talk about the experience. Except for information regarding the Yun Mo Planet’s master, the treasures he left behind for him, the bank accounts and other special specific information, Luo Feng didn’t hide anything else from the two.

With one breath, he finished the story.

Thunder God and Hong were dumbfounded by the news!

From the wreckages and ruins, the 2 had found out before about how a star level in the universe was an absolute warrior. That was why Hong and Thunder God worked so hard to try and become

star levels, with the power to protect their own planet. However, after hearing what Luo Feng said...

In the vast universe, Star Travellers could barely scrape a meal to eat! Star levels too were only higher leveled exponents!

Didn't they just see Luo Feng easily buying so many slaves?

"So many slaves." Thunder God muttered.

"Sixteen star levels?" Hong could feel it too, as though sixteen mountains were standing right in front of him, "And Star level 7s!"

"Regarding the purple light drink, I thought about it that way, first and second brother, what do you say?" Luo Feng looked at the both of them.

"Luo Feng, you are doing the right thing." Hong nodded, his forehead filled with beads of perspiration, "Hearing you speak like that, I too feel a tremble! Our Earth, is indeed nothing but a drop of water in the vast universe, something too small to be noticed! Just relying on the three of us would be hard, very hard, hence we need to rely on strengthening the entire race."

"Yes." Thunder God nodded profusely.

"The 100,000 tons of this purple light drink, I'll arrange for them to be distributed to the countries' governments once every decade." Luo Feng creased his eyebrows slightly, "However...my

slave and guard situation, should I let the other countries know now? I'm still wondering!"

"This..." Thunder God hesitated.

The slave and guard army that Luo Feng owned was simply too overpowering, especially the three strongest Star level 7 slaves, they were much stronger than even the swallowing beast before! Just any one of them could easily decimate Earth! This invincible enormous power, whether to let the governments of the other countries know...that was indeed a dilemma!

"We cannot say anything at the moment." Hong's expression was serious, emphasizing, "Since you, Luo Feng, have decided to let everybody know the truth of the brutality of the universe and it's true face, also giving them the purple light drink...if you let them feel that there's such a powerful force protecting and guarding them, they won't feel the sense of urgency and danger, the efficiency would be greatly diminished. Only if we let them feel the danger, can we work together to find a way to increase the number of fighters, accelerating Earth's humans' evolution speed!"

"I agree." Thunder God nodded.

"Ok."

Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng was now completely clear on what to do for the world

summit of leaders a day from now.

Chapter 33 – The Universe Scout Ship Has Arrived

China time, Oct 29th, 8.30.

The weather was cool and refreshing this autumn.

The West Lake Courtyard had turned into the center of the entire world this day, armies and soldiers had been standing guard since early in the morning, the security surrounding the entire street was extremely strict. Fighter jets from the various countries and headquarter cities were landing in the Courtyard's grass patch, the leaders of the five great countries had all gathered in this place.

This was all because one of the three strongest in the world, Luo Feng, was holding an important meeting here today.

Luo Feng's strongest servant and guard team however, were all waiting in the west wing of the castle, not coming out at all.

And the persons in charge of welcoming and taking care of the large number of people, were personnel specially arranged by China.

The main floor of the castle, first floor grand meeting room.

The lights were resplendent.

Beside the enormous round table, stood many of the world's countries' and headquarter city's leaders enthusiastically engaging in conversations.

On Earth, there were a total of five great countries plus twenty three headquarter cities.

These headquarter cities mainly came from Asia, South America and Africa. Dark skinned people, light skinned people were all engaged in conversation. And as the owner, Luo Feng, was standing at the entrance of the meeting room beside Hong and Thunder God, welcoming every guest and leader.

9.00am, the meeting was starting.

"Rumble!"

In the air above the center of the round table, mini explosions occurred, shocking the leaders. From the explosions that gradually scattered and dispersed, appeared three virtual screens, depicting images from the vast space.

"Attention all!"

Luo Feng stood up, beside him sat Hong and Thunder God, his gaze sweeping past all the leaders in his surroundings, saying solemnly, "Today's meeting's importance is no less than the Great Nirvana or even the Swallowing Beast incident."

Hua!

There was an uproar from the leaders.

“Everybody look.” Luo Feng was pointing at the space image above the round table, “This is the universe, the vast universe! I believe everyone knows that out there, there are other humans and life. And I believe that many of the people sitting here actually know a lot more.”

“Our Earth, is a planet within the milky way that contains life, one of over 200,000 planets.” Luo Feng said directly, planets swiftly began to appear in the screen, amongst them the Bai Lan Star and some of its images, following that, the planets all shrank in size, a large image of the entire milky way took their place.

“And the milky way, beta galaxy and the other eight great galaxies, form the Silverblue Empire!” Luo Feng’s words shocked everyone in the room.

An empire that governs over eight great galaxies?

How powerful it must be!

It was something that was infinitely bigger than Earth itself.

Luo Feng listened to the leaders who had begun discussing in low voices, emphasizing solemnly: “However...the Silverblue Empire, is incredibly weak and small! It belongs to the lowest level of

Empires, extremely weak and small."

"How can that be?"

"The lowest level?"

"These are the eight great galaxies, one galaxy has about 200,000 life planets, such a huge empire." These leaders, especially the leaders from the headquarter city had very little knowledge about such matters. They were all stunned by the news.

Luo Feng continued, ice cold in his expression, introducing the universe.

An hour and a half later.

There was silence in the meeting room.

"Let me introduce to everyone a race." Luo Feng pointed towards the changing image above the round table a huge planet appeared and in it, human silhouettes were flying about, "This is called the Black Meng race, they are one of the many human races planets about. A large portion of the Black Meng race's population have reached the Star Traveller level, numbering in the millions."

"And among them there are even Star levels!"

"Their Star level fighters and spirit readers are high in numbers,

they're incredibly shocking! There are many Star level 5 and 6 among them! Do you know, what do these Star level 5 and 6 represent? It means that every one of them is able to deal with the Swallowing Beast from back then!"

"The Black Meng race is much more powerful than the Swallowing Beast back then, and much more numerous!"

Luo Feng's introduction perked the curiosity of many of the leaders.

Knowing the universe was vast wasn't enough, now Luo Feng was even introducing for the first time other races...From the leaders' points of view, this should be one of the stronger races in the universe.

"How powerful, their powers can match the Swallowing Beast, and there's so many of them!"

"Beings that surpass the wargods, in the millions? That's crazy!"

"It's too crazy."

"They reach the Star Traveller level so easily? The total number on Earth don't even add up to a hundred."

The various countries' and headquarter city's leaders were looking in envy at the virtual images.

When will it happen…

For Earth to be able to catch up with the Black Meng race?

Right now on Earth, there wasn't even one Star level!

A Star Traveller level 1 on Earth would already be a representative of the wargods! A position even bigger than a country's leader! However the Black Meng race…have too many of them to count. Just the image of their planet alone showed countless flying Star Travellers.

"The Black Meng race, are a race in the universe that have been enslaved." Luo Feng's voice grew more serious.

The entire meeting room's leaders were all dumbfounded.

A race that was thousands and tens of thousands of times stronger than Earth, was a race that was enslaved?

"Their entire race and it's countless citizens have been enslaved! They are slaves, their later generations of children will remain as slaves! Slaves that have been implanted with the living microchips, sold off just like livestock and goods! Their children and grandchildren, generation after generation, have been unable to rise up!" Luo Feng's voice was as chilly as the underworld, causing the leaders to tremble in their seats.

Many of them had perspiration beading from their foreheads.

Children and grandchildren? That was extremely brutal!

They were slaves, slaves that were bought and sold!

“Dare I ask Mr. Luo one question, how do you know all these?” Europe’s female prime minister stood up.

“Because I’ve entered the universe once.” Luo Feng said seriously, “However, I was scared by the brutality and truth of the universe, so much that I returned.”

Hua!

Entered the vast universe?

Luo Feng had been there?

“Attention all.” Luo Feng looked at the leaders, “I’ve invited all of you here to tell you all, I believe everybody understands! As to whether you all believe or not…it’s very simple!”

Luo Feng turned to a door beside: “Bring it here!”

Immediately, a worker brought a black helmet up.

“Consciousness transmitter helmet?”

Some of the leaders reacted.

“This isn’t the type we use here on Earth, but the original source from the universe.” Beside, Hong said, “If the specialists from the various countries can come and take a look, they’ll be clear that this is something from the universe. Many of the materials cannot be made or even found here on Earth.”

“This is something I brought from another planet in the universe.” Luo Feng looked at the leaders, “Through this consciousness transmitter helmet, each country can send one representative to use it, and enter the Virtual Universe Network.”

“Before, I’ve already explained the idea of the Virtual Universe Network.”

Luo Feng’s words caused an uproar once again.

Enter the Virtual Universe Network?

This was Earth, it was the first time ever truly connecting with the universe, they could clearly understand the news and information of just how vast the universe was.

“Luo Feng, how many of these helmets do you have?” The senior official from china was excited.

“For the consciousness transmitter helmets, I can provide six.” Luo Feng looked at the crowd, “Five great countries, twenty three headquarter cities, every headquarter city would have a one day usage period. The details, you can discuss on your own.” These were all prepared and planned himself earlier back when Luo Feng was buying the helmets.

To spur the evolution speed of the entire Earth’s population, he needed to let them gain access to the external universe!

And entering the Virtual Universe Network was the best way, especially since these were untraceable accounts, anybody could use them.

However…

The various countries all didn’t have any universe currency, so even after entering the virtual universe, they could only see the normal news and information etc, they couldn’t purchase anything or do anything else etc.

“Mr. Luo,” The dark skinned prime minister from America seemed excited, “What you are saying is right, the magnitude of this is no lesser than the Great Nirvana, entering the virtual universe, this is the first step for us Earth humans to make contact with the universe, it is also a very crucial step indeed.”

“I still have more important things I’ve yet to say.” Luo Feng said.

Silence.

The leaders in the meeting room had their eyes fixed on Luo Feng, awaiting the important news.

“I have something called purple light drink, a very special liquid. Using just 10g of this, can make a high level student in the dojo evolve into a fighter.” Luo Feng said.

“Huh?”

“That’s it?”

“This can’t be a treasure.”

The leaders, some of them couldn’t help but break into discussions, the rest were staring at Luo Feng.

On Earth, there were other things that were better than the purple light drink, like the spirits of nature, back then, Luo Feng only used one portion of the spirits of nature to help his family members immediately become Student level 2 and 3. Its effectiveness was indeed powerful. However...as they are extremely rare and small in portions, even wargods hardly had them.

The portions were too small, it didn’t have any meaning.

“I have a large amount of it.” Luo Feng said.

A bunch of the leaders were stunned.

“How big of a portion, how many people will get to use it?” A headquarter city leader from Africa couldn’t help but ask.

“The entire world!”

Luo Feng said seriously, “I can provide for the entire world’s dojo’s higher students, so long as there’s any dojo with higher students, using the purple light drink, I can make them become fighters!”

“The entire world?”

“Provide for the entire world?”

“My god.”

“This, this…”

Many people understood this theory, anything that was considered a treasure naturally was small in portions. Indeed, for such an amount of purple light drink, Luo Feng had spent 800 million Black Dragon dollars. Normal planets, like the Bai Lan Star and other planets’ richest could never even reach such figures. It

was indeed not easy to acquire such a huge amount.

"The number of average people to the higher students in dojos, the ratio is about 100:1. Doesn't that mean that earth can produce up to 70 million fighters?"

"70 million?"

"Not just that many, many people give up after thinking there's no hope of becoming fighters. If they knew that just becoming a higher student would lead to an easy breakthrough to a fighter, many more will definitely work even harder! I believe the ratio has a chance of reaching 50:1, then, the number of fighters on Earth would increase by over a hundred million, the humans on Earth will begin to swiftly evolve, tens of millions times faster than the initially calculated evolution figure.

A bunch of leaders were so excited they seemed to have lost it for a moment.

This was something no amount of treasures and wealth could compete with, an excitement far beyond the materialistic gains could ever provide.

"10g for one person, 1 kg would be one hundred people, a ton of purple light drink can provide for one hundred thousand people! Later, I'll go according to the population of each country and the ratio of ten to one, first providing close to seven thousand tons of purple light drink." Luo Feng said.

“Seven thousand tons of purple light drink?”

The entire group of leaders seemed to have been envisioning the great evolution of all the humans of Earth.

That day, Luo Feng went according to the various countries and headquarter cities and distributed set portions of purple light drink! This was the beginning of Earth’s big evolution!

Every country could see the dawn of a new era.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God too were waiting in anticipation.

……

When all the countries and headquarter cities began testing the use of the purple light drink, celebrating from it’s effects, it was China time, 23rd November 9.30am.

The sun was high in the vast sky, a silver grey disc shaped ship was closing in on Earth.

“What a beautiful planet, green and blue, it’s a moving color.”

Within the ship’s control room.

The tall and handsome, dressed in a silver battle uniform, captain looked happy and joyous, looking at the exterior through his virtual image simulator, the green blue planet. “It’s intoxicating, I love it, yes, I love it! Because it can give me status, it can give me money!” Beside him, the crew were all shouting in excitement, totally unlike the captain’s emotive expressions.

Yes!

This planet without a leader, to these scout ships from the universe, was such a beautiful and joyous thing!

Chapter 34 – Arrival

Earth, in the sky above the Atlantic Ocean.

Hua Hua…

The dark and endless ocean rippled.

It was China time 9.30am, far in the distance, it was still dark, in the air above the raging sea, a silver grey ship floated. There was no apparatus on earth that detected it's existence.

Within the control room, a group of explorers were extremely excited.

"Captain!"

A childlike figure appeared on the control board's screen, a clear and crisp voice sounded, "According to speculation, this planet has a spherical shape, with a diameter of 6400km. Its surface area is about 5 billion square kilometers, dry land takes up 29.2% of it and 70.8% is all water surfaces. Its gravitational pull is at 0.11 of the universe accurate gravity. Its air make up is nitrogen taking up 78% and oxygen 21%…"

The ship's AI 'Atuka' swiftly reported the simplest and easiest figures.

“Very good.”

The captain’s expression was serious, his eyes filled with a sense of madness, turning to look at the eight other crew members behind who were just as excited as he was. “Attention all, it’s almost time for our hard work to bear fruit. However, it’s most crucial at this time, that all the more we don’t get cocky and careless! After all, this was a planet that an Undying Being once governed, and we have virtually no information about it at all!”

The eight crew members held their breaths.

“Discovering a leaderless planet, we have to be extra cautious and careful! Who knows whether this aboriginal planet has some absolute warriors.” The captain said seriously.

A ship can capsize even without any waves, after all, this sort of thing had happened before.

A few universe scout groups, have occasionally discovered several aboriginal planets, but because of their cockiness and carelessness, they were all killed by the aboriginal planet’s warriors! They died just when they were about to taste victory and success!

“Understood, captain.”

“Captain, you can relax, we won’t get careless.”

“How can this ship capsize so easily, we are not people who’ve been through life and death experiences just once or twice.”

The crew members guaranteed.

The captain nodded satisfied: “We’ll approach everything with the greatest care, safety comes first.”

“If nobody on this planet is stronger than us, then, we will attain an incredible reward.”

“If there are strong warriors here, then, we will have two routes. One is to inform the slave owners, the other is to inform my family.” The captain emphasized, meeting a strong warrior on an aboriginal planet, this sort of thing was common in the history of the universe, the main job of the explorers were to discover the planet.

They didn’t need to fight it out.

The captain looked at the screen: “Atuka, begin full detailed analysis of this planet, with the greatest speed, acquire this planet’s information.”

“Captain, this planet has a news network.” The head figure on the screen seemed excited, “I can hack into the network and swiftly acquire the information.”

“Very good.” The captain’s eyes lit up.

“It even has it’s own network?”

The crew members were shocked as they laughed.

Normally in the history of the universe, newly discovered aboriginal planets were usually not advanced at all.

“Swiftly hack in, from it’s economics, religion, warriors, armies, science and technology, etc, we can understand this entire planet.” The captain ordered, “The most important thing is the data of the fighters! Put that as your priority!”

“Yes, captain!”

Atuka complied, easily and swiftly hacking into earth’s network.

This universe scout ship was incredibly advanced, far exceeding the current technology of earth, comparable to the black dragon ship.

Swiftly and silently, Earth’s history along with much of it’s information was gathered, besides several physical stockpiles or secret data that was hidden offline. Everything else that was freely circulated and easily found were all gathered! No one on Earth realized this at all.

At that time, China’s Jiang-Nan headquarter city, Luo Feng’s

castle's balcony.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were sitting around a table.

"I've long reached the peak of the Star Traveller level 9, why can't I seem to breakthrough?" Thunder God rubbed his bald head unsatisfied, "With third brother's secret manuals, my skills and energy expanse have greatly strengthened. Right now even Brother Hong has reached the Star Traveller level 9, but regarding the physique of the fighter, I've always been stronger than him."

"Arrogance!"

Hong glared at him, "I just stepped into level 9 and you are already at the peak."

"No matter what, little third brother is still improving the fastest!" Thunder God exclaimed loudly.

"Don't call me little third brother!" Luo Feng rubbed his nose.

The three greatest warriors of Earth were relaxing in their free time, oblivious to the fact...that at this time, a scout ship from the universe had already entered Earth, and swiftly gathering data through the online network. The one thing the three had been worried about and afraid of, the thing that they thought would only happen a long time later.

Was currently happening...

……

In the air above the Atlantic Ocean.

Above the dark sea, a silver grey ship was floating motionlessly.

Within the control room.

The captain and the eight crew members were quietly waiting, waiting for the ship's AI to collect all the data.

"Captain, the collection of data about the fighters is complete!" Atuka shouted.

The eyes of the explorers within the ship all lit up.

The fighters' data was what they were most concerned about, if there was a warrior on a planet stronger than them, then their rewards from a planet would greatly diminish! However if the warriors on the planet were weaker than them, then, that planet would be theirs for the taking, and their rewards would be the greatest!

"Speak." The captain ordered.

"Established universe language, systems activated for translating this planet's aboriginal languages."

“This planet, is called ‘Earth’ by their people.”

“Earth has a total of close to 7 billion people, amongst them the number of student level is close to 1 million! And the number of Star Travellers, close to a 100! There are currently no Star levels!” Atuka said directly.

There was silence in the ship.

The captain and the eight crew members were stunned.

“Hahaha…” The captain was the first to laugh excitedly.

“Haha, that’s great.” The black gorilla looking explorer was extremely excited.

“Their Star Traveller count only nears 100, the fighters of this planet are just too weak. Not even one Star level.”

The group of crew members were excited.

On the ship.

The captain’s strength was undoubtedly the strongest, and the other members all had their own skills and techniques, including the captain, there were a total of three star levels! The other six, four of them were Star Traveller level 9 and the other two were

repair and maintenance people of the ship. This amount of strength was sufficient to completely dominate Earth's warriors.

This way, they could do whatever they pleased, plundering and acquiring the greatest profits from the planet.

"Captain, there's more detailed data that you have to see." The ship's AI Atuka reminded.

"What data?" The captain smiled.

When he first entered Earth, he was more cautious and careful, however after hearing the planet didn't even have one Star level, he was much more relaxed. Regarding Luo Feng's powerful army that he bought on Dragon Star, very few on Earth knew, even the various countries didn't know, hence it was untraceable even on the online network.

"Captain, Earth's most renowned and three greatest fighters, are called Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God." The AI Atuka said.

"This is the footage of Luo Feng battling a monster."

Du!

The virtual image in mid air in the control room depicted back when Luo Feng killed the Eight Tentacle grand emperor.

“This Earthling’s flying speed is pretty fast, what is he stepping on?” A green skinned lady said shocked.

“It’s a spirit weapon!”

“To be able to move so fast in this planet, with such a huge air resistance, it’s definitely a spirit weapon.”

“A Star Traveller punk actually has a spirit weapon?”

“Stupid! This was a planet that was controlled by an invincible warrior, he must have left some treasures behind.” The explorers were engaged in discussion.

However in the footage, Luo Feng used the arc cutter blade to kill the Eight Tentacle grand emperor...

“Arc cutter blade!”

“A level 3 spirit weapon arc cutter blade!”

The captain and the black gorilla man were shocked together, the black gorilla man’s eyes lit up, roaring: “Captain, we’ve made it big, made it big!!! This planet definitely has treasures left behind by the invincible warrior from before, there’s no other way an aboriginal planet could have produced a level 3 spirit weapon!”

“Yes.” The captain’s eyes too lit up.

He understood well…

This Earth wasn't like the average aboriginal planets.

"Captain, this second footage, shows the ones called Hong and Thunder God fighting!" The AI Atuka played a second footage from the network that was widely shared.

Hong and Thunder God were combining forces and battling the space beast the golden horned beast.

On the screen…

Hong and Thunder God had unleashed their domains, soul immolating and fighting to the death.

"Damn, these are Star Travellers right, how can they all have domains? Both of them have their own domains?"

"That's sick, Star Travellers with their own domains? And two of them at a go? Even in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, it's unrealistic for two Star Travellers to have their own domains."

"Really sick."

"Look, that black clothed man suddenly made a pile of metal appear before him, it must be a spatial storage item! And the

capacity amount seems pretty big too.”

“Spatial storage item, it’s really a place that was governed by an invincible warrior before.”

“Look at what they are wearing.”

“That black dressed man, his armor seems weird! Definitely not your average battle uniforms.”

The crew members were all shocked.

However the captain’s expression was extremely serious, staring dead on at Hong and Thunder God facing the Golden Horned Beast!

The data on space beasts was extremely rare and little, and there weren’t many who paid special attention to this information! While there were several public pieces of information in the Virtual Universe Network, these were but general introductions to some of the space beasts. As for detailed explanations on the Golden Horned Beasts, there were none.

One must know…

Even the master of the Yun Mo Planet, this Undying Being, knew only basic information about the Golden Horned Beast. The other normal explorers, most of them knew nothing. Only few of them had a rough understanding about them.

“This?”

“This, this is?”

The captain was staring hard at the Golden Horned Beast on the screen, as an heir from the Nuolan Shan family, with exceptional education, and deemed as an exceptional mercenary in the universe, he once saw an introduction to the most terrifying space beasts, one of them was the brutal and savage space beast…the Golden Horned Beast!

“Golden Horned Beast, it actually is the Golden Horned Beast! And from the looks of it, it’s only a Star level 1 Golden Horned Beast? It’s still only an infant Golden Horned Beast.”

“My god!”

“Such a young Golden Horned Beast, if captured alive, it would be worth ten times that of a planet!” The captain went totally breathless, perspiration beading from his forehead, blood boiling from the excitement.

This was wealth beyond anyone’s dreams!

There’s definitely an Undying Being willing to fork out money to buy an infant of the leading bloodline of the space beasts!

Chapter 35 – Nuolan Shan Family

“Look, liquid silver guards. The two liquid silver guards are working together and holding down that beast.”

“There are actually liquid silver guards on Earth!”

“It’s indeed a planet that was governed by an invincible being.”

The crew members were obviously very excited.

From the footage shown earlier, many valuable and expensive treasures were displayed, the message being...after the demise of that invincible warrior, there would still be many treasures left behind on Earth. One must know, this was a warrior that even the Silverblue Empire and the Black Dragon Mountain Empire didn’t dare to interfere with!

“Atuka!” The captain’s eyes were flushed red, excited, “Is that beast still alive?”

“Of the eight heroes of earth, Luo Feng, Mo Henderson, Eastbourne, Tripathi Singh, Jia Yi, Sokolov, these six sacrificed themselves and unleashed a powerful spirit technique that finally killed the Swallowing Beast, saving humanity on Earth.” Atuka swiftly read the report from the network data he had gathered.

“Bastards!!!” The captain couldn’t help but scold.

“Bastards, bullshit, they should just die!” The captain cursed fiercely.

The eight crew members were shocked.

Today was a day that was supposed to be joyous and filled with celebration, why was the captain so angry?

“How can it die!” The captain was extremely furious.

The Golden Horned Beast was destined to become a Sector Lord at its peak!

Because of it’s natural abilities and talents, the moment it reaches the Sector Lord level 9, it would be just like an Undying Being, and invincible existence! The Golden Horned Beast at it’s peak was not one to be trifled with, and even harder to be captured alive. However, there were many ways for these universe explorers to capture a mere Star level 1 Golden Horned Beast infant alive.

It was only at the Star level 1!

As long as a powerful spirit reader ‘illusionist’ was present, he could easily tame the golden horned beast!

The Golden Horned Beast was extremely rare, cautious, etc, to be able to even meet a young Golden Horned Beast was something of utmost difficulty! In the universe, probably any undying being, or Sector Lords would all be willing to spend large amounts of their

wealth just to buy a young Golden Horned Beast.

"Wealth beyond one's wildest dreams!"

"A young Golden Horned Beast's price, I can't even begin to imagine it!" The captain was extremely bitter.

Why, why didn't he get here earlier!

These Earth humans were simply savages, wasting god given gifts!

They actually killed a young space beast of the highest bloodline, one that if ever acquired by someone, with careful training, would make the person a true upper echelon person of the universe! The price of a young Golden Horned Beast, was probably worth more than even his entire Nuolan Shan family, after all, it represented the peak of all Sector Lords!

"Bastards, bastards!" The captain was extremely angry.

"Corpse!"

"Right, the corpse!" The captain's eyes lit up, "An Undying Being's body is extremely valuable, the young Golden Horned Beast's body too must be valuable too. Even if it was dead, it would still more valuable than an entire planet!" Large powers within the universe, or large corporations would all be willing to pay a hefty price to buy the Golden Horned Beast's body to dissect and

research.

“Atuka, where’s that beast’s body!” The captain shouted.

The eight crew members were very curious.

“Captain.” The ship’s AI Atuka replied, “After that Swallowing Beast was killed, humanity once sent a group of Star Traveller fighters underwater, but because of the countless number of sea creatures surrounding, humanity hasn’t obtained the body. Till now…the Swallowing Beast’s body is still a mystery!”

“Three years, three years, the Golden Horned Beast could swallow, so it had an internal world.” The captain was deducing.” It dying, the process of the internal world crumbling, would disperse energy to support the rest of the body, I believe within three years, it’s body shouldn’t have decayed much.”

“The Golden Horned Beast had defensive scales, even after death, it shouldn’t have been eaten by normal beasts.”

The captain was extremely nervous.

At least now…

This Golden Horned Beast’s body was the most eye-catching treasure on earth for him.

The universe scout ship was floating above the atlantic ocean, continuing its gathering of earth's data, as time passed, the data collected got more complete.

China time afternoon 11.42am.

"Captain, the data collection is complete." Atuka said.

"With regards to the planet's technology and army, etc, they still belong to the space civilization initial stages, still very very far from the universe civilizations. As for strength, this planet doesn't have any resisting capabilities at all against our explorer group. The only thing to take note of is...this planet has Mu Ya crystals, Black God battle armor, Cloud Contact Vines, spirit weapons, spatial storage rings, etc and many other treasures that are valuable throughout the universe." Atuka swiftly said.

Back when the incident on Misty Island occurred.

Hong versus the grand emperor beast, he used a cloud contact vine, while the footage was secret, too many people witnessed it, so one was definitely able to search through the secrets online and locate it. And the madness from the collection of the Mu Ya crystals too could be found in pieces here and there online. Things like the Black God set, spirit weapons, space storage rings were even easier to find in scraps.

The captain and the eight crew members were even more excited.

“Cloud contact vine?”

“The cloud contact vine seed if planted, and nurtured into a bud! Every bud, is worth billions of Black Dragon dollars.”

“It’s no question why they are so expensive, as long as you spend time and energy to properly nurture the cloud contact vine, it can basically reach the Universe level with absolute certainty. Why wouldn’t it be expensive?”

The cloud contact vine seeds weren’t considered too expensive.

Because the seeds had to be alive and nurturing them into buds was extremely difficult! And for the buds to grow into universe level wasn’t too hard, for example...as long as they ate enough Mu Ya Crystals, they could reach the Universe level. A Universe level warrior’s price is already unimaginable, but the price for nurturing and training too was extremely high. Hence the price of the cloud contact vine bud was expensive.

“Mu Ya crystals? Taming wild beasts, nurturing plant life and the extreme goods Mu Ya crystals? These are things even the Domain Lords, Sector Lords and even the Undying Beings would buy.”

“The uses of the Mu Ya crystals are extremely broad, useful for humans, monsters, plants, etc, many many kinds of life.”

“This planet Earth actually has Mu Ya crystals.”

The entire ship was extremely excited.

“Captain, I’ve discovered a special kind of drink on this planet too, it’s been called the evolution drink by the people of earth, through examination, this should be the universe purple light drink.” Atuka said, “And according to speculation, the amount of purple light drink on Earth is extremely huge, I estimate in the hundreds of tons.”

Atuka based his calculations on the current number of higher level students on earth, estimating a rough number.

“Earth even has the purple light drink?” The captain was shocked, “That invincible warrior really left a lot of goods for Earth.”

Purple light drink in the hundreds of tons compared to the cloud contact vine, arc cutter knife and Golden Horned Beast’s body was simply far behind. Several planets that produce the purple light drink have it in the thousands and tens of thousands of tons, these hundreds of tons didn’t shock the captain at all.

Within the control room.

The captain and the eight crew members were in discussion, how to obtain the greatest rewards from earth.

“There’s no question, the most valuable things of Earth would be the treasures left behind by that invincible warrior.” The green

skinned lady's eyes lit up, "That was a warrior that could physically enter the dark space and cover the universe marker himself. If we could obtain the treasures he left behind, that would be..."

"Keep dreaming." The black gorilla man shook his head, "I'm not saying whether that fighter actually met his demise here on this planet, but it's still a little...those level of treasures, if we get our hands on it, it would 99% mean certain death."

The discussions among the members carried on.

The captain creased his eyebrows and pondered about his next move.

"Let's move according to the third plan." The captain said suddenly and seriously.

"Captain?" The eight crew members looked over.

"Captain!" The ship's AI Atuka shouted out, "We've received a call request from the family fleet."

"Oh?" The captain's expression slightly changed.

"You all stay here, we'll move later. Let me go deal with this group of arrogant bastards." The captain said, immediately leaving the control room entering his private quarters.

……

Within the captain’s resting room.

The tall and handsome captain sat on a chair, closing his eyes, connect to the virtual universe network.”

The AI computers were usually semi connected to the Virtual Universe Network, however receiving a call from someone else and answering or sending a message would require one’s consciousness to enter the network.

Virtual Universe, Ganwu Empire, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

In a simple average living quarter’s courtyard, the captain suddenly appeared within, on his shoulder sat a little spirit with uneven fists. This living quarters, was the captain’s property within the virtual universe. Without a property in the virtual universe, one would be like Luo Feng, appearing directly in the streets. Only those with property would appear in their houses.

With a property comes many other uses.

Within the home, living room.

“Du!”

A screen appeared on the living room's wall, on it displayed a call request.

"Hmph, now you know to come to me?" The captain laughed coldly at the screen, saying, "Answer."

The screen gently moved.

And on the big screen appeared eight human silhouettes, among these eight, three of them had pointy ears, their pupils shining bright red, exactly like the captain's. The other five looked more unique, obviously they were of a different race from the captain.

"Oh, it's actually the eight heirs calling simultaneously to meet me?" The captain arched his eyebrow.

"Buluo."

A youth leading the eight, with pointy ears and a handsome appearance said coldly, "You should have arrived at the life planet already."

"So what if I've arrived?" The captain laughed coldly, " Pula, I've already stated my conditions before! I told you...This planet's discovery, I, Buluo have the greatest contribution, whether it was discovering the wormhole or reaching the planet, the main thing is I did everything. As for the planet, I can give it to whoever I want to!"

“Hmph.”

Among the eight standing side by side, a dark skinned man snorted coldly.

“What are you snorting at?” the captain stared, “Keluomi, even if you reach the Star level 9, with the status of a blood heir, you are still just an outsider! Me, I’m a true heir of the Nuolan Shan family!”

Within the Nuolan Shan family.

There were many outsiders who swore into the family, only those who reach the Star level 9 had the right to become a blood heir, with special privileges.

“Buluo, we called you not to negotiate, but to inform you. After the elder received news of the dark space, he personally delivered an order! As for the planets once governed by that invincible warrior, he’s extremely interested, that’s why, this planet must go to the family. There must be absolutely no accidents, otherwise…”

“Otherwise my ass!”

The captain stared, “Eight heirs, I heard there were even over thirty Nuolan guards? Wow, added together that’s over forty Star level 9 people, what a fearsome power, killing me would be like killing an ant. I, Buluo…am so scared!” The captain feigned a terrified look, following that, he gave a fierce glare and roared,

“Get lost!”

“If you have the ability, come kill me! Come, COME!” The captain shouted.

The eight heirs’ faces became green from anger.

“Hmph, a bunch of rubbish.” The captain smiled coldly, “You all should recognize the situation well, I’m no longer that weak little runt from before, right now, the family has need of me! That’s why, you better show me more respect. Alright, looking at how you are all so unhappy, we’ll discuss about this planet again in a day.”

Pa!

The call ended.

Chapter 36 – Capturing Luo Feng and the Other Two

Virtual Universe, Black Dragon Mountain Island, a particular residential area.

After the captain hung up the call, he casually walked to another side of the room and poured himself a glass of wine.

“Di, di, di.”

“Captain, the family’s fleet is requesting a call.” The little spirit on the captain’s shoulder Atuka shouted.

“Don’t worry.” The captain smiled as he held the wine glass, sitting casually on the sofa, gently swirling the wine glass, the transparent golden colored wine swirled about, “We have to ignore them, let them understand…that in this whole discussion, just who actually holds the power! Hmph, a bunch of idiots!”

“Captain, the family fleet is requesting a second call.”

“Third request…”

……

Time passed by the minute.

The captain lay on the sofa, lifting the wine glass to eye level, listening to the ninth call request from the family fleet, mumbling, “Pula, this time I’m letting you all know...I Buluo of the the Nuolan Shan family is this generation’s most exceptional. You? Nothing but a pretty flower from the greenhouse!”

“Di!”

“Captain, an anonymous number is requesting a call, the caller has revealed his status, it’s a Universe level warrior.” Atuka shouted from his shoulder.

“Pu!”

Buluo’s online technology allowed him to check one’s power levels! The Virtual Universe Network, through the use of the AI’s and assisting functions could scan a person’s data and deduce one’s power! Usually in the virtual universe, people normally didn’t display their powers.

Only in special times, for example when a special place demands the identity and power level of the person entering, would one be required to display or let us know.

“Put it through!” Buluo Nuolan Shan shouted, before saying, “Wait!”

“Buluo took a deep breath, checked his face, and calmed himself

down before saying, “Put it through.”

“Yes, captain.” The young boy Atuka shouted.

Du!

A screen appeared on the wall of the living room, on it was displayed a pointy eared, red eyed, incredibly handsome middle aged man who resembled Buluo in many ways.

“Old Family head.” Buluo said, respectfully bowing.

Nuolan Shan family, as a new dynasty’s big powerful family, including the current heads, had a total of three heads in the family.

The first was the one who started the Nuolan Shan family.

The three heads had all reached the Universe level before gaining the rights to be heads! This old head...was the second head, when he received the position back then, he was only at the Universe level 1. And now after tens of thousands of years had passed, this head had already reached the Universe level 6.

The head, was Buluo’s grandfather.

And the second head, was actually over 10 ranks above Buluo’s current position!

“Buluo!” The head smiled as he looked at Buluo, “I know very little about the family’s later generations, today, should be the first time we are seeing each other and talking I guess.”

“Yes, Head.” Buluo’s face was flushed red and he was extremely courteous.

Excited!

From the time he was born to the time he left the family, over a thousand years, while he had seen from a distance the head, he never actually got the right to speak to the head, this was the first time!

“Those under the protection of the family usually grow up weak and frail. Someone like you who explores the universe with its dangers, only that can produce a fighter of power and class.” The head complemented, “This Nuolan Shan family has always relied on hard work and power to judge its people! This planet was once governed by an Undying Being before, hence it has a very special position...”

A normal planet with life, didn’t mean much at all to the entire Nuolan Shan family.

This particular special planet was one that was deemed more valuable.

“The family will give you 100 Billion Black Dragon dollars as a reward, and also, give you the title of Eternal Elder in the family.” The Head said directly.

“Eternal Elder?”

Buluo’s eye’s opened very wide.

The position of Elder in the family was extremely high, higher than even the heirs in the family! However…even after becoming an Elder, if one makes a mistake, through the heads and Elder’s judgment, they could still be stripped of their posts. However with the Eternal Elder position, even after making a huge mistake, one would at most receive smaller rewards, but their post would remain forever.

Only one with an extremely huge contribution had the rights to receive such a position!

“My Nuolan Shan family’s pride and honor, is built upon the hard work of the generations of heirs and disciples.” The head said.

“Head, you can relax, I Buluo Nuolan Shan, as an heir to the Nuolan Shan family, am willing to go to battle for the pride of the family!” Buluo stood at attention.

“You are very exceptional.”

The head smiled and nodded, “This planet’s conquering, excavation, you’ll be in charge. The family’s fleet will reach in three months.”

“Understood, Head, you can relax, the strongest warrior here is only a Star Traveller level 9. My team of explorers will be enough to conquer the planet! I’ll definitely prepare everything to receive the family fleet.” Buluo puffed his chest out, saying loudly, the head nodded his head with satisfaction: “On the day you return, I’ll personally present you the title of Eternal Elder!”

Pa!

The call ended.

“Haha!” The captain Buluo Nuolan Shan’s red eyes were shining with emotion, “The price of Earth is indeed huge, but I’m afterall just a Star level, such a big reward, I wouldn’t be able to handle it all properly! And now...haha, I’ve become one of the highest ranks in the family, an Eternal Elder!”

“Earth?”

Buluo’s eyes lit up .

Sou!

His entire person disappeared from the virtual universe.

Earth, in the air above the Atlantic ocean.

The silver grey ship was floating there.

“Follow plan three and act!”

“We’ll head directly to capture the three strongest on Earth…Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God. Once their top three warriors are captured, Earth will not have any form of resistance or courage to face us! Also, through these three, we can easily learn more about the secrets of Earth.” Within the ship’s control room, Buluo was high-spirited.

“Yes, captain.”

The eight crew members behind him shouted loudly in unison.

“Atuka, give me the location of Luo Feng and the others.” Captain Buluo said.

“Hacking into Earth’s satellite network and checking complete, Hong and Thunder God are both flying towards Luo Feng’s living quarters…Earth’s China Jiangnan base, Yangzhou city.” The control screen displayed a boy’s head shouting.

“Let’s head out, target…Yangzhou city!”

Buluo pointed in the distant direction of earth's china.

Sou!

The silver grey universe ship immediately became a beam of light, travelling cross the ocean and headed directly towards asia's china continent.

China, Jiangnan base, one of the eight great cities, Yangzhou city.

The castle by the West Lake Courtyard had already become synonymous with Luo Feng.

Hong's ship construct, Thunder God's Seven Star district and Luo Feng's castle, these were the living quarters of the top three strongest on the planet.

On the balcony of the castle.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were sitting cross legged, calm and at peace!

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng, a universe ship has entered the warning zone!!!" Babata shouted nervously.

"What!"

Luo Feng fiercely opened his eyes, his body trembling from the shock, beads of perspiration streaming from his forehead. A universe ship, one Earth besides his own universe ship, who else could operate one? Unless...from the vast universe, finally someone from another planet, a scout ship had discovered Earth? However, the coordinates of where Earth was located in dark space should have been covered by his teacher's spatial techniques.

"It's a universe ship, and it's a C grade universe ship!" Babata shouted worriedly.

"How could there be a universe ship?" Luo Feng was getting more anxious and angry.

"I don't know, but it's already reached the air above the castle." Babata said.

Beside, Hong and Thunder God obviously felt the originally calm air about getting messier, both opening their eyes at the same time, looking curiously at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng's expression was ashen and cold sweat streamed down.

Babata's warning area was from his center, a 20,000m radius. Back underground on Misty island, Babata relied on this area to scan the surrounding human's strengths. Babata usually maintained this warning area...this was what allowed him to discover the universe ship.

……

The universe ship floated about 3000m above the castle.

“This civilization is indeed backwards, even after our ship stopped right here, they still haven’t even noticed anything.” The green skinned lady said proudly.

“Look, this planet’s greatest three are sitting on the balcony of the castle.”

“Greatest three, hmph, in the universe they could barely get scraps to eat.” The black gorilla man laughed coldly, he was one of the three Star levels of this explorer group.

The captain Buluo Nuolan Shan, through the external image simulator, high-spirited, laughed: “Attention all, after finishing this whole business on Earth, we never have to risk our lives out exploring again. Let’s go, let’s make contact with these aboriginal strongest three. Let the aboriginals understand, just what exponents from the universe are like!”

“Hahaha…”

“Let’s properly play with these aboriginals.”

“Haha.”

The crew was extremely pleased with themselves.

Against an aboriginal planet that hadn't made contact with the universe, they naturally felt a sense of superiority. They regarded...themselves as civilized while what was before them were nothing but aboriginal humans.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

The cabin door opened.

With the captain Buluo leading the group of explorers, except for the two maintenance crew, all of them dived down directly.

"They are coming."

Luo Feng looked up, up in the sky suddenly, there were seven human silhouettes, be it the black gorilla man, or the handsome and suave, or the green skinned...these seven were explorers from the universe, they definitely had their differences from Earth's humans. On their faces, wide smiles, their eyes filled with a sense of superiority over the aboriginals.

"Three aboriginals!"

"Poor aboriginals."

Buluo surveyed the three expressions filled with fear, feeling

exceptionally good about the situation. From his point of view, these Earthlings were adorable...this planet would bring him huge amounts of wealth and an extremely high position! These aboriginals were going to give him everything.

On the balcony, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God looked at their wrist scanners screens.

“One’s a Star level 6, another a Star level 2, another’s a Star level 1. The other four have reached Star Traveller level 9.”

The 3 looked at each other.

“This is big trouble.” Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God had really bad expressions on.

These seven universe explorers didn’t really mean much to Luo Feng and the others, however, the fact that they were here also meant one thing...Earth was no longer safe!

“Earthlings!”

Buluo surveyed below gently saying, the AI system automatically translated his words into Earth language, “From now on, you are the slaves of a powerful fighter from the universe, Buluo.” After the translation, the solemn voice resounded throughout the entire castle, causing the large number of pedestrians on the streets outside the castle to look up in the sky.

In mid air, Buluo Nuolan Shan stood high up in the sky, slightly raising his chin, obviously looking down condescendingly at the three aboriginals on the balcony.

On the balcony.

Luo Feng and the others had gloomy expressions on.

“Guards.” Luo Feng ordered indifferently.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Beam after beam of lightning fast human silhouettes flew out from the walkways, the windows, the balconies and rose up into the sky, blurred images of silhouettes shot up, almost looking as though they were arrows looking to cover the entire air and land. The blurred images filled the skies, immediately surrounding the explorers from the universe who were so filled with their own sense of superiority!

Chapter 37 – Big Trouble

“This, this…” Buluo Nuolan Shan, the black gorilla man, the green skinned woman and the other four explorers were all completely stunned. What was originally a weak and small aboriginal group in their minds, actually produced so many overpowering fighters in a flash!

“Star level 7 spirit readers?”

“Level 7?”

“There are three star level 7 spirit readers!!!”

Buluo and the others looked in fear at their mini computers, the screen displaying the figures for them. My god! The strongest among them was their captain and he was only a star level 6, and only a fighter at that! A Star level 7 spirit reader was more than enough to wipe out their entire team, much less three of them!

“Master.” The blurred human silhouettes bowed respectfully towards Luo Feng on the balcony.

“Master?” The seven explorers looked in fear and shock at the three ‘weak little’ aboriginals on the balcony, and the ‘weak and little’ Luo Feng just looked coldly back at them: “Capture them, anyone who resists, kill them!”

“Yes!”

The slave guard team respectfully complied.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Immediately, the entire guard team covered the skies and surrounded the seven explorers, the green skinned woman was the first to shout loudly in universe language, the computer swiftly translating and speaking on her behalf: “I surrender!”

“I surrender.” The black gorilla man said.

“Surrender.”

“We surrender.”

“Don’t kill us.”

The seven universe explorers, six of them immediately decided to surrender.

Even though these explorers risked their lives constantly, they weren’t stupid, three star level spirit readers leading a close to one thousand strong army, could easily sweep their little team of 10! Resistance would only mean a certain death, hence the six decided to surrender.

“How, how can it be...” Buluo Nuolan Shan’s handsome face was

contorted.

How could it have become like this?

He, Buluo, his beautiful future! How did it become contorted so quickly?

This planet's humans, didn't they almost perish just from facing the Star level 1 Golden Horned Beast? How did they suddenly produce so many Star level warriors? And the most important point was...among these star levels, he could discern straight away they weren't from earth!

"Death, or surrender."

The three Black Meng warriors looked coldly at Buluo Nuolan Shan.

"I..." Buluo bit down and said solemnly, "Surrender."

From that, the seven explorers had all surrendered, without any guts or ability to resist.

Luo Feng and the other two flew up, beside him Hong and Thunder God carefully analyzed these seven...just from appearances, these seven had several very unique appearances. Back when Luo Feng chose his slaves, he chose according to height and appearances that were very similar to Earth's humans. And these seven, looked very different from Earth's humans.

“Meng One, bring a small team and order the universe ship to surrender.” Luo Feng ordered.

“Yes.”

A small team swiftly rushed towards the sky.

The silver grey ship in mid air was just about to escape after seeing the situation, but at that time, a black ship appeared and intercepted the silver grey ship. “This Earthling actually has a ship!” At this moment, all of the explorers grimaced in their suffering, this was something they didn’t know before.

“We surrender.”

“Surrender, don’t kill us.”

The silver grey ship swiftly stopped.

The two ship maintenance personnel were very clear, using a spirit energy attack, the Star level 7 spirit readers could easily kill the two little Star Travellers. And as the ship’s AI only responded to the captain, it couldn’t leave without the captain himself.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God floated in the air above the castle, surrounded by almost a thousand slaves.

Meng One and his team took people into the silver grey universe ship.

“You are called Buluo Nuolan Shan?” Luo Feng looked at the extremely handsome universe explorer captain.

“Yes.” The captain stood at attention, beside him were the escorts Meng Two and Three, his gaze cold, “I never expected, that two to three years ago you all were almost totally annihilated by a Star level 1 space beast, and yet now in a short span of two to three years, you have so many powerful warriors.”

The captain looked at Luo Feng, his gaze confused: “You have a universe ship! Then you’ve definitely visited other planets, these Black Meng warriors, you bought them?”

Buluo wasn’t stupid, of course he could guess what happened.

“Smart.” Luo Feng looked at them.

“It’s laughable that we even thought you all were just aboriginals.” Buluo cursed.

If they had known Earth had such strength and power, they wouldn’t even have shown themselves...and would’ve waited patiently in space for the family fleet. The moment the family fleet arrived, Earth wouldn’t have any way to resist! However, according to the data and information they had gathered on Earth...they believed Earth didn’t have any battle capabilities

above the Star level.

Right, they were very sure!

If there was an absolute power or warrior, how could that Golden Horned Beast still cause so much of a disaster?

If there was an absolute warrior, why hasn't there been any trace or news at all on the network?

Moreover!

There was no debate or question about earth's strongest, they were simply Hong, Thunder God and Luo Feng. And looking at these three, none of them were Star level. With all this information, they naturally assumed Earth didn't have anything of the Star level! However, however...fate played tricks with their lives!!!

"Fate just played us." Buluo cursed angrily.

"How many of you have come to Earth?" Luo Feng asked, "Why have you come to Earth?"

Hope began to grow a little in Buluo's heart.

"These Earthlings don't even know there's a family fleet behind us, if I just bear with it patiently, when the family fleet arrives and

totally destroys them, with any luck there's still hope for survival for me." Buluo was filled with hope for survival.

"We have a total of nine people."

Buluo Nuolan Shan said solemnly, "We unknowingly went through a wormhole and entered the dark space star field. According to the old star maps, we knew there were two life planets in this area, we were extremely excited at the time to discover this one. In the universe, this represented immeasurable amount of wealth, hence our little explorer team headed here."

"Oh, a wormhole?" Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God glanced at each other.

No wonder!

Otherwise, even if you travel at light speed from the borders of the area in dark space, it would still require about a thousand years to get here! Only through a wormhole, these sort of lawless existences, would a universe ship be able to suddenly enter this star field.

"Just the nine of you?" Hong asked.

"Yes." Buluo nodded, "We wouldn't trust anybody else with the news of discovering this planet, why would we tell anybody else."

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God nodded slightly.

What Buluo said made sense.

“Meng Two, spirit hypnotize the six, carefully interrogate them.” Luo Feng was extremely cautious, ordering, and swiftly rushing up into the sky, Hong and Thunder God followed, heading straight for the silver grey ship.

“Hypnosis?”

Buluo’s expression greatly changed, the other six explorers too.

Having faced life and death situations many times before, they were used to being able to chance on any opportunity to escape, from what the captain said earlier, they were very clear on what to do! Relying on the family fleet behind them, they would have a chance of survival! If even that was revealed, Earth’s aboriginals would definitely not spare them.

Without them saying anything, the AI system Atuka, which could communicate through Buluo’s consciousness, with his order, would not divulge this either.

It seemed like a good plan...

Sadly, the enemy had powerful spirit readers who could easily hypnotize Star Travellers and Star levels 1 and 2.

Within the silver grey ship, control room.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God entered the control room.

“Master.”

Meng One and the other guards bowed respectfully, beside, they escorted two maintenance personnel of the explorers.

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded, flipping his hand and producing a microchip.

Chi!

Immediately entering it into the control board’s slot.

“Beginning the hacking, Luo Feng, leave it to me.”

Babata began to hack into the ship’s AI system.

The control screen immediately displayed a boy’s head, shouting, “Stop the hack, immediately stop hacking…”

“Wahaha, it can only be considered an ordinary AI system, its capabilities, can’t even compare to that Black Dragon Mountain x81’s system.” Babata’s head appeared on the screen, he revealed his fangs , apparently very satisfied, swiftly and unrelenting, he

hacked into the system, gaining control over the entire ship.

“Du.”

Luo Feng took out his cellphone from his pocket, checking, it was General Wang, his main contact from the country.

“Mr. Luo Feng, we just received a report saying there’s noises from your castle... ‘From now on, you are all my...the powerful warrior from the universe Buluo Nuolan Shan’s slaves’, what’s going on?” General Wang from the country seemed distressed, “And we’ve discovered a large number of flying warriors, close to a thousand!”

To be able to float and fly in mid air, one at least had to be a Star Traveller.

Close to a thousand star travellers?

Which country in the world wouldn’t be worried?

“Relax, we just met a small team of explorers from the universe, they’ve already been handled by us, no problem.” Luo Feng said casually.

“Hello.”

“Oh, Lady Lari.”

Hong and Thunder God too picked up their phones.

Obviously the scene of close to one thousand warriors appearing around the castle had reached all the countries. There was no way they wouldn't know! Afterall, an important place such as Luo Feng's castle would definitely always have large amounts of media and spectators watching.

"No problem."

"No problem."

Hong and Thunder God said and laughed.

Luo Feng smiled as he spoke into his phone, but his expression suddenly changed. This was due to a large amount of chinese words appearing on the control board's screen, Babata was automatically displaying this.

"This can't be." Luo Feng's face had gone pale white.

Hong and Thunder God looked over in fear, after seeing the details of the chinese words on the screen, their faces too went pale and white.

"No, no..." Hong and Thunder God's eyes were filled with fear and rage.

“Master, master, what the captain said earlier were all lies, their explorer team is only the first wave, behind them is the enormous Nuolan Shan family fleet.” Meng Two who was in charge of the hypnosis interrogation rushed into the ship, shouting worriedly.

Luo Feng’s expression ashen, he had already known!

“Kill them!!!” Thunder God raged beside.

“Don’t kill them, disable them first and slowly torture and interrogate them.” Hong said angrily.

“Right, interrogate! All information concerning the Nuolan Shan Family, interrogate everything out of them.” Luo Feng’s gaze was ice cold.

Earth’s three strongest warriors, were all extremely enraged.

“What’s wrong?”

“What happened?”

“Beloved Hong? What’s the matter?”

Voices resounded from all their phones.

“General Wang, Earth’s humanity is in trouble.” Luo Feng’s face was pale, his eyes fixed on the control board’s screen, on it the large amounts of chinese words were like knives stabbing into his heart.

“There’s big trouble.” Thunder God too said solemnly.

“I suggest, we immediately gather the leaders of the five great countries and twenty three headquarter cities! Hold a meeting in the Wargod palace.” Hong said coldly.

Luo Feng nodded, just the thought of the family fleet behind with its huge amount of power, he couldn’t help but feel terrified!

Chapter 38 – Target, Earth's Treasures

"This, this simply can't be happening." Luo Feng couldn't help but feel flustered.

Hacking into that scout ship's AI System and obtaining the information only to discover...

The Nuolan Shan family's attack on Earth, consisted of this small universe ship leading the pack, and the rest of the family fleet and main powers following behind. They had sent two main fleets which constituted the main attack force, the main person in charge of the whole operation was an heir from one of the family heads themselves, Pula, along with seven other heirs to assist him!

Eight heirs side by side, along with thirty Nuolan Guards!

The head's heir, his position and status was high, one had to reach the Star level 9 before being deemed worthy of the position!

Nuolan Guards, were the brightest and most elite of the Nuolan family soldiers, everyone of them were extremely valuable, their strength's were all at the Star level 9.

Over forty Star level 9 warriors, the rest were at the Star level 8 and 7, etc...two large fleets of Star level warriors, according to Buluo Nuolan Shan's assisting AI system Atuka's data, there were a total of about one thousand warriors! And over ten thousand Star Travellers.

“Star level 9, just one of them could come conquer Earth. And now over forty of them are coming!” Luo Feng’s face was ashen with fear. “It’s indeed very troubling.” Thunder God’s eyes were fierce, saying solemnly, “Over forty star level 9 warriors, commanding an army of about one thousand Star levels and over ten thousand Star Travellers. How can we fight back? There’s no way at all! Unless we have a Universe warrior among us, that’ll give us a chance. However, where are we going to get a Universe warrior?”

Luo Feng bit down hard nervously.

Universe level?

Given a couple of years, his Golden Horned Beast body would be able to reach the Universe level! However the Nuolan Shan family fleet was arriving in three months.

“Three months, there’s only three months of time.” Luo Feng muttered softly.

Hong, who was originally sitting quietly with his eyes closed suddenly opened them.

“Have you found it?” Thunder God looked at Hong.

Luo Feng too looked at Hong.

“Yes.”

Hong nodded, his expression extremely serious, “It’s easy to search for brief information via the Kaluo Empire’s network.”

“Nuolan Shan family, 81066 years ago, founded by the Universe warrior Nuolan Shan, Nuolan Shan was the first head, his name too became the family’s name.”

“Nuolan Shan’s natural aptitude was very high, his comprehension and wits too were very high, after reaching the Universe level, he collected a lot of disciples.”

“Right now, he is currently at the Universe level 9, he has a lot of disciples under him that have been willingly teaching many others, amongst them six of them are Universe level. And of these six, there are two who are also heads in the family. Each of them taking the second head position and the third head.” Hong said solemnly.

“What?” Luo Feng felt even more shocked.

Even though having a teacher increased one’s chances of reaching the Universe level by quite a bit, within the Nuolan Shan Family including the heads and founders, there were actually a total of seven Universe levels!

“How do we fight this?” Thunder God too was flustered.

“The Nuolan Shan family is the Kaluo Empire’s third biggest

family.” Hong explained, “The Kaluo Empire, is a universe low level civilization, one of the over five hundred in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, however, it’s power is ranked in the top three of these five hundred empires. Kaluo Empire’s number one family, is the emperor family Kaluo family, the Kaluo family’s strongest is a Sector lord.”

“The Kaluo empire’s second greatest family is the Wei Di family.”

Luo Feng’s heart skipped a beat, Wei Di family? The good friend he met on Dragon Star...Gao Sheng Wei Di, he even mentioned Kaluo dollars, this Wei Di family is also a part of the Kaluo Empire? However Gao Sheng mentioned before...there wasn’t anyone on Dragon Star that he couldn’t mess with.

To be able to say something like that, this shouldn’t come from just a low level universe empire?

Maybe, Gao Sheng Wei Di was separate from the Wei Di family?

“The Wei Di family is a business family, only the elders are in the Kaluo Empire.” Hong continued, “Currently, most of the Wei Di family’s power is in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, even extending to the Ganwu Empire. It’s entire combined power, is even more terrifying than the Kaluo Empire. However within the Kaluo Empire, only the Elders remain there, leaving only about ten Universe level warriors there.”

“The Kaluo Empire’s third family, is the Nuolan Shan family!”

“To be able to teach and produce six universe levels, Nuolan Shan’s name and reputation is widespread, causing many to bow before him! Along with tens of thousands of years of business, the entire Nuolan Shan family’s owned life planets exceed a thousand, the most elite of the Nuolan Guards are called the eight thousand Nuolan guards, meaning, there are at least eight thousand Star level 9 warriors!”

“The most terrifying is Nuolan Shan himself!”

“Nuolan Shan, is well known within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, his battle prowess is extremely high.”

Luo Feng felt a sense of helplessness, against such a huge force such as the Noulan Mountain family, they had no way to resist at all.

Eight thousand Nuolan guards!

Seven great Universe levels!

“Just what do we do?”

“Within the short three months, my Golden Horned Beast body definitely cannot reach the Universe level in time.” Luo Feng swiftly pondered, “Become Earth’s leader? Then within these three months, my human body must reach the Star level and acquire the bank account left behind by my teacher, only then will I be able to buy Earth.”

Discovering a leaderless planet, there were three options.

1. receive the reward, no other benefits. As for how Earth should be governed, Luo Feng had no way to intervene.
2. pay to become Earth's leader, however, the Black Dragon Mountain Empire owned the tariffs on entry and exits of Earth.
3. directly buying the planet, owning 100% of it.

The first option was definitely something he didn't want, the moment he chose that, he couldn't guarantee the fates of the humans on Earth.

"I can only work on a way, to reach the Star level with the greatest speed." Luo Feng bit down, "The Jade Marrow along with the Mu Ya crystals, within three months, there's...there's still hope."

"Hong and third brother, the leaders from the various countries are just about to reach the wargod palace, let's enter the virtual space."

"Ok."

"Let's enter."

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God entered the study room beside and into the virtual space wargod palace.

After countless years, the humans of Earth had never truly made contact with the universe, and right now there was actually a

universe empire, a powerful family looking to conquer the entire Earth? Especially since it was Luo Feng and his brothers speaking about their strengths, this made Earth's leaders and upper echelon even more worried, afraid, flustered and stunned.

What was there to do?

These upper echelon were Earth's brightest and elites, and they came up with a detailed plan.

……

On the balcony on the castle.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were surveying the land.

"We have no choice." Hong said softly.

"Luo Feng, you aren't bluffing, is there really such an account?" Thunder God looked at Luo Feng.

"Yes, but I need to reach the Star level before being able to gain access to it." Luo Feng looked far into the streets, the continuous stream of people. The news of him acquiring access to the account only after reaching the Star level, this was something he had only told his wife, Hong and Thunder God, no one else.

"Let's risk it all! We can only do that." Thunder God said.

“Let’s do it!” Hong said solemnly.

“Right, let’s do it.” Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng said solemnly, “Within three months, if I can reach the Star level, everything will be ok.”

“If within these three months, I don’t reach the Star level, then… we can only rely on reporting to the Black Dragon Mountain Empire and take the 100 billion Black Dragon dollar reward. All the rights of Earth will belong to the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, but at least the Nuolan Shan family won’t dare steal from them.” Luo Feng muttered, “And for the Black Dragon Mountain Empire to control Earth, even through the wormhole, it’ll still take them two or more years to travel here.”

“Two years is plenty of time, relying on the space ships, I’ll secretly move all the humans on Earth away!”

This was the plan!

A two pronged preparation!

Success, he would become Earth’s leader.

Failure would mean leaving Earth to become nothing but an empty shell, evacuating as much of the humans on Earth within

the two years! Of course this option would be arduous, moving close to 7 billion people was an extremely hard and painful thing to do. Until the last moment, Luo Feng would never choose to do so.

……

That afternoon, about 3pm.

Thunder God's daughter, Hong's son and daughter and Luo Feng's close family all gathered in the castle, many of Earth's upper echelon also gathered here!

"Be careful in the other planets in the universe."

"Earth's countless people's hopes are on you all."

"All the best."

From the group's words and prayers, Luo Feng kissed his wife and children before turning and floating with Hong and Thunder God towards the black dragon ship above.

"Daddy, come home soon."

"Daddy."

The two kids held by Xu Xin shouted loudly.

“Ok!”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God entered the cabin of the black dragon ship at the same time.

Ka!

The cabin door closed and the black dragon ship began to swiftly rise, delivering Earth’s humanity’s hope and leaving Earth! And the entire population of close to 7 billion, many of them didn’t even know…they lived in peace, unknowing to the fact that three people had left earth towards the vast universe to fight for a thread of hope for everybody.

Within the black dragon ship control room, external virtual image simulator was at 100%.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God turned to look at the beautiful green and blue planet.

“Babata.”

Luo Feng’s voice was cold, “Accelerate, prepare for universe travel, the first destination is Bai Lan Star.”

……

The black dragon ship carried Earth's strongest three, beginning it's universe travel!

Previously, only Luo Feng left alone to visit and gain insights, also buying metals for himself.

And this time, there were three, all fighting for some hope for Earth.

Not too far from Earth, within a vast starfield.

Two extremely long and flat grey battleships, one behind the other, similar in appearances and their lengths were a shocking over 6000 meters. At the time, these two were currently two blurred beams of light, swiftly flying in space.

The battleship in front.

Control room.

Similar in appearances to Buluo, a handsome youth sat, beside him sat three other men.

"What's wrong?" The handsome youth creased his eyebrows, "We can't contact them?"

"Yes."

The black skinned man nodded.

The handsome youth's eyes glinted demonically, "This Buluo, the head promised him the position of Eternal Elder after this incident is done. He still really thinks he can stand high above and step on my head. As for the report on the planet, he actually hasn't even told us anything, how vicious!"

"We've requested communication, he doesn't answer." Another handsome youth cursed as he bit down, "Pula, I think we should just..." he waved his hand!

The other two were shocked too.

The handsome youth Pula shook his head, "Don't do anything foolish, the family's matters are the most important, after all there's still three months before we reach this planet. According to the head, there might be huge amounts of treasure on this planet!"

Chapter 39 – Survival Bases

Sitting in the black dragon ship, through the universe travel, they reached the Bai Lan Star which was 11.8 thousand light years away from Earth on the day itself.

Bai Lan Star, the extreme cold area.

Huge warehouses within the base were scattered about the area, a black universe ship slowly descended on a particular warehouse residential area, right in front of a castle.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God swiftly jumped off the ship, behind them followed four black Mongolian bodyguards.

“Master!” The one hundred and one slave guards stationed on Bai Lan Star stood outside the castle, respectfully receiving Luo Feng.

“Big brother, second brother, follow me.” Luo Feng walked towards the castle.

Walking along the winding stairs of the castle.

“Third brother, you really have it good.” Thunder God looked through the windows by the stairs, gazing far out into the snow covered land. This was his first time leaving Earth and heading to

another planet with life in the universe, “This is the first time in my life leaving Earth, and I’ve actually come to...oh, how many light years are we from Earth again?”

“11.8 thousand light years.” Luo Feng was somewhat speechless.

Due to the pressing matter of the Nuolan Shan family, the pressure on himself was enormous, and while this second brother of his was initially nervous himself, it seemed he had totally relaxed now.

“11.8 thousand light years, what a far place.” Thunder God complimented.

“This is a good place to stay for awhile.” Hong nodded.

“Big brother, second brother, aren’t you guys worried at all?” Luo Feng opened the door and entered the living room.

The three sat separately on the sofa.

“Worried? Against danger, your worry has no use at all.” Hong’s gaze was calm, “Be those proficient in the ancient meditation ways of yoga, or in the ancient chinese traditions of meditation, they all have beneficial effects to a person’s state of mind.”

“State of mind?” Luo Feng was curious.

However, from the manuals of the Yun Mo Planet, or the other forms of training he's done, most of them were all about skills and techniques, etc and requirements, this whole realm of training was completely different from state of mind.

With a poor state of mind, evil and mad person can still become a powerful being.

"Don't tell me..."Within the AI space, Babata's blood red eyes lit up, "This is the reason behind Hong and Thunder God achieving their domains in the Star Traveller level? On Earth, most of the strongest come from China or India! And many of them are at the conception level, much higher than the average of the universe."

The realms were mostly separated into basic, conception, domain and world, the four main levels.

Above that lies the Undying level.

"Let's not talk about this now."

Within the living room, Luo Feng's expression was heavy, "Brothers, while the ship was swiftly rushing to Bai Lan Star, I've been thinking...there are some risks with the plan before!"

"Risks?" Hong and Thunder God pondered and nodded their heads.

"If we don't take these risks, what else can we do?" Thunder God

said helplessly.

"We can't be precise to every minute and second, the moment the Nuolan Shan family fleet reaches Earth, I'm afraid they'll immediately capture and control the important people." Luo Feng's gaze was as sharp as a blade, "No matter what, I will definitely not let my family take these risks. I'm sure the same goes for my two brothers."

Hong nodded. "Didn't we leave the other ship on Earth?"

The universe C grade scout ship from the explorers was currently parked behind Luo Feng's castle. It was left there as an escape route for Luo Feng's, Hong's, Thunder God's families and several other important people to take should the time arise.

"No! That ship is too small, only so many people can enter. One thousand? Three thousand if we squeeze them? What about resources and food? The food and drinks?" Luo Feng shook his head, "In the worst case scenario, we can only save the maximum one thousand people, it'll be hard for the many races to reproduce."

"So you are thinking..."

Hong and Thunder God looked at Luo Feng.

"We'll buy survival bases!" Luo Feng said.

“Survival bases?” Hong and Thunder God were suspicious, not exactly clear on what those were.

“Normally, developing planets, or even mineral planets will all build a survival base!” Luo Feng explained, “A survival base, the small ones can hold up to 10 million people, the big ones can hold billions within. They can ensure air is sufficient, water resources, food, etc.”

“Hm?” Hong and Thunder God’s eyes lit up.

“We can go to the Virtual Universe Network and look for a seller of these bases.” Luo Feng smiled.

Even though it was another supposed three months before the Nuolan Shan family fleet would arrive on Earth, it wasn’t, it could be 88 days, or 89 days later, or…whatever the case, the time wasn’t specific enough! To prevent any accidents, it was better to build a strong and solid survival base, this way, it would be much safer.

Virtual universe, Ganwu Empire, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

The Black Dragon Mountain Island, even though it was called an island, it was still about a billion times bigger than the surface area of all of Earth’s surface land put together.

In a particular private room of a restaurant.

“Even though this is the virtual universe, the dishes and food,

etc, are all exactly like reality.” Thunder God complimented, “And the prices are all very cheap.”

“Don’t eat anymore, in a bit, the manager of the Tieluo company will be here.” Hong said.

Luo Feng still had a sense of being troubled from his expression.

The price of a survival base Babata had gathered from checking spoiled his originally good mood from before.

“Knock, knock, knock.” Knocks on the door resounded.

Thunder God automatically got up and opened the door.

The person who walked in was built huge, close to 2.6m, his skin was brown, there were also three scars on his left cheek, this man was from the big Tieluo company from the universe, a second level manager from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire division. He smiled, slightly bowing, “I’m called Luo Di, very nice to meet you three. You three requested to purchase survival bases, the amount of money involved is too large, hence it’s better for us to meet and discuss.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng nodded.

The manager placed a black drawing book onto the table, in it, images of survival bases started to appear.

“Look, there are big and small bases, the prices too are definitely different.”

“This is the cheapest a grade, it only requires a 100 000 Black Dragon dollars to build one with length and width 10km, height of 100m, the survival base is separated into 30 levels, it’s enough to house up to 300 million people, and there are even bigger ones!”

“My three respected customers, if you need stronger defenses, this is the B6 grade, it’s much more expensive, it’s size can be large or small just like the one before, it requires 90 million Black Dragon dollars.”

The manager smiled, filled with assurance and confidence as he spoke.

Hong and Thunder God looked at the various bases and their prices.

“I need a survival base that’s able to withstand a Universe level 1 warrior’s attack.” Luo Feng said directly.

The force of over forty Star level 9 fighters combined match up to just about one Universe level 1.

“Oh? That’s going to be expensive!”

Luo Di's eyes lit up, "This is the C5 grade, able to house 300 million people, requires 98 billion Black Dragon dollars."

Luo Feng's eyebrows creased.

Back when he first sold the arc cutter knife, he had a 180 million remaining, after that, he bought the Jade Marrow, slave guards and the precious and expensive metals required for the Golden Horned Beast, purple light drink, now he had only 1.7 billion Black Dragon dollars left. On a normal planet, this was definitely a top level wealthy person. However to purchase a large survival base able to withstand a Universe level 1 attack, it was far from enough.

"I need a C3 grade." Luo Feng said directly.

"C3 grades are cheap, able to house 300 million, they only require about 51 billion." Luo Di said.

"Smaller." Luo Feng's eyebrows creased.

"This is one is able to house 30 million people, only 8.9 billion." Luo Di continued and smiled.

"No smaller ones?" Luo Feng asked.

"No more." Luo Di's expression was somewhat dissatisfied, he cursed to himself, did these three people purposely call him here just to waste his time?

Luo Feng pondered to himself, the living standards and capacity of these bases, was leaving about 10 square meters for each person. And in Earth's times of distress, if they crammed together, the 30 million standard capacity should be able to house up to 100 million people!

"We've checked the information, your company can make custom survival bases right?" Luo Feng said.

"Custom?"

Manager Luo Di shot Luo Feng a glance, "To make a custom one according to your requests is too troublesome! That's why, custom mades are privileges only for orders exceeding the 10 billion black dragon dollars big orders. Sigh, you three, are you going to buy or not? If you can't afford a C grade, then just buy a B grade. Don't look down on the B grades, while not being able to afford the C grades."

"Do you even know how to speak?" Thunder God was pissed and a bunch of Mandarin left his mouth.

To no avail...

Luo Di obviously didn't understand.

"Oh, angry?" Luo Di rubbed his big nose, scoffing as he laughed, "Being in charge of the virtual universe side of things, I often meet

these sort of lousy customers! They can't even afford anything, and still ask so many questions, such a waste of my precious time! Is it because you thought in the virtual universe, there's no way to punish you, that you thought you could waste my precious time?"

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were stunned.

In what way was this manager anything close to a business person?

"What? Not satisfied? So what if I scold you? In the real world, your majesty would definitely severely punish you all."

"Hmph, three poor misers!" Luo Di stood up, poof, vanishing into nothing, obviously leaving the Virtual Universe Network.

Within the private room, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were enraged.

Poor misers?

They were called poor misers!

"If I understood and spoke universe language, I would have definitely scolded him well." Thunder God couldn't help but say.

"Scolding him wouldn't have meant anything."

The little spirit Babata on Luo Feng's shoulder simply laughed, "Very simple, you all just have to immediately become a large client of the Tie Lo company and directly complain about the service of this Luo Di being extremely poor! These sort of department manager, or second level manager punk, will immediately be fired, he'll definitely regret it later!"

"Large client?" Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were shocked.

"But we don't have so much money." Thunder god said.

"That's simple."

Babata said casually, "Luo Feng, don't you have a black dragon mountain x81 ship, these sort of ancient luxury goods are definitely one of the favourites among the ship enthusiasts, there's definitely a whole lot of them willing to buy it if you take it out."

"Sell the ship?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Just performance wise, the little scout ship you captured from the universe explorers isn't lousier than this current ship. Afterall, it's also a C grade ship. The only thing is its material is alloys. The scout ship is worth a few hundred million black dragon dollars and your black dragon ship is worth more than a 10 billion. Other than that, there's not much difference. After selling the black dragon ship, you'll still have the other one to use."

"What's more, once you acquire the account your teacher left

behind for you, you'd be able to buy a ship even better than the black dragon mountain ship, why bother so much?"

Luo Feng immediately laughed.

Right.

After he reached the Star level, he could naturally buy a new ship!

"How do I sell the black dragon ship." Luo Feng asked.

"Simple, you just have to directly contact Gao Sheng, he's a ship enthusiast. Someone like him, besides his status and position, definitely knows a community of other enthusiasts, people with money and status. The can definitely give you a high price." Babata said, "After selling the black dragon ship, you can build a few survival bases for the people of Earth! That'll be something of great contribution for the people of Earth. Also, you can use your status as a big client to teach a good lesson to that condescending bastard."

Luo Feng nodded.

He immediately made Babata contact Gao Sheng, while connecting, Luo Feng and the other two sat to eat.

"Hello, Luo Feng, it's been awhile since you actually contacted me."

Luo Feng and the others stared at the screen that appeared before them, on it appeared the fat and chubby kid from before.

Chapter 40 – Three Months

“The two beside you are of your race?” Gao Sheng laughed.

“Right.” Luo Feng nodded, “ I’ve been rather short on cash recently…”

“Lack of money, as long as the figure isn’t too huge, within 1 billion Black Dragon dollars, I can help you settle it. Not a single cent of interest.” Gao Sheng said candidly.

Borrowing money should definitely come with interest, Gao Sheng’s straightforwardness proved he was indeed a good friend.

“No, I actually want to sell my black dragon mountain x81 ancient universe ship.” Luo Feng said.

“Damn!” Gao Sheng’s eyes almost popped out, “You can actually bear to sell it? That’s an ancient, over a million years old artifact, to be able to preserve it that well, it’s really rare. It’s definitely a treasure that every ship enthusiast would want. Ah, I advise you to never sell it, it’ll probably be almost impossible to buy it back after selling it!”

Luo Feng was helpless.

Universe ship enthusiasts? The truth was he didn’t share this interest at all.

“I’m really selling it, do you have any channels?” Luo Feng asked.

“Selling it is simple.”

Gao Sheng’s expression grew serious, “You just have to let the news out and it’ll easily be sold. However, to sell it at a high price… hmm, I’m in a few ship enthusiasts communities. I’ll help you spread the news and tell them about this. When I mentioned to them about your ship before, there were many that were extremely excited and wanted to buy it.”

“Then thanks.” Luo Feng was excited within.

“Hm, wait a while, give me a little bit of time, I’ll look for you again when I’ve discussed the matter. I’ll definitely look for the best price for you.” Gao Sheng said confidently.

The call ended.

Within the private room, Thunder God couldn’t help but be suspicious, “Luo Feng, you letting this person help you, will he try and get a commission in between?”

“What’s the point of worrying,I have no better channels.” Luo Feng revealed a smile, “And as long as the price isn’t too far from what I have in mind, I’ll take it. I believe this Gao Sheng isn’t that sort of person.”

About 25 minutes later.

“Di.”

“Luo Feng, Gao Sheng requests a call.” Babata shouted.

“Connect.” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up.

Du!

The screen floated and appeared before them, Gao Sheng’s image appeared.

“Everything is settled, I’ve talked to a brother from the Black Dragon Mountain Star, he’s willing to pay the highest price of 12.8 billion Black Dragon dollars, this is the best price I’ve gotten from all my other good friends.” Gao Sheng said directly, “These people are not stupid at all, they won’t be willing to go any higher.”

“Alright, we’ll sell it at this price.” Luo Feng said easily.

“This is his virtual universe contact number, you can settle the contract with him along with the date and time of the exchange.” Gao Sheng immediately told Luo Feng the number.

After the conversation ended, Luo Feng and the other two returned to Earth.

They brought the silver grey universe ship to Bai Lan Star, for

the upcoming trips, they would have to use that ship in the meantime.

Twelve days later.

Bai Lan star, the planet's docking bay.

"This planet is too cold." A ship with a decorative design of three swords landed, it's cabin door opening. A youth dressed in expensive luxurious clothing stepped out followed by two Star level 8 bodyguards. This youth's mouth especially was fat and chubby, his hair long and dreaded, there was even a special unique marking on his forehead.

"Sir." The main person in charge of the docking bay respectfully received him.

The fat lipped youth glanced over at the person in charge, surveying his surroundings nonchalantly, spotting Luo Feng and the other two, shouting loudly: "Dear Brother Luo Feng, I'm really glad to be able to meet you." He ran over to give Luo Feng a bear hug.

"Very nice to see you, Brother Ke Rui." Luo Feng too hugged him back.

"Where's my baby?" The youth's eyes lit up.

"Look."

Luo Feng pointed in the distance.

The youth immediately flew over to the pure black black dragon ship's side, extending his arm to caress the body, looking at its grain and scars, he couldn't help but compliment, "Wow, pure black yttrium, what a lavish black color! Also the old x marking of the black dragon, it's rarely seen now."

"It's been maintained very perfectly. Hehe." The youth was so excited his eyes were gleaming.

Under Luo Feng's leadership.

The youth surveyed the black dragon ship's internal cabins, rooms, etc.

From Gao Sheng's information, Luo Feng knew this youth came from the main planet of the Black Dragon Mountain empire, an extremely huge background, and the family he was from, was much bigger and stronger than the Nuolan Shan Family! However, these sort of direct descendants of big families couldn't go about antagonizing Universe level 9 warriors just after meeting them.

"12.8 billion, we'll exchange the goods and money in one go." The youth walked out of the cabin door and smiled, "I've just transferred the funds, 12.8 billion Black Dragon dollars have entered into your account."

The deal was successful!

This ship enthusiast youth, brought his new baby, the black dragon mountain x81 ship and left Bai Lan Star. And Luo Feng, he immediately began custom making the survival bases.

“5 million people capacity, a C2 grade little survival base, four of them! The price of 1.6 billion Black Dragon dollars, a total of 6.4 billion!”

“10 million people capacity C2 grade survival base, one of it! Price 2.6 billion Black Dragon dollars.”

“10 million people capacity C3 grade survival base, one! Price 4.2 billion Black Dragon dollars.”

“A total of 13.2 billion black dragon dollars.”

“Your Tie Luo company in the virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain Empire division, there’s a second level manager called Luo Di, his virtual universe number is xxxxxxxx...his attitude is really bad.” Amidst the discussions about the survival bases and business, Luo Feng lodged a complaint.

This was something that his second brother Thunder God strongly requested he added on!

The pitiful little manager Luo Di, ever since he entered the Tie Lo company, such a big company in the universe, he became arrogant.

These sort of big companies had high salaries, high commissions, causing him to start looking down on the average masses. While he was only a Star Traveller, his pay was still higher than some Star level bodyguards.

How could he not be arrogant?

Unfortunately...

Meeting a big client in the tens of billions complaint, this second level manager ultimately lost his job. He forgot...that he was still running a business, he shouldn't look down on people so easily. Even if he hadn't met Luo Feng and his party, he would eventually have met someone else of the same caliber that would cost him his rice bowl.

Time passed.

Luo Feng had immersed himself deeply in his training the past few days, with Babata's instruction, his evolution speed was raised to its highest efficiency.

He would only occasionally leave just to receive goods.

.....

Within the blink of an eye, it was already year 2062, Dec 24th in China's time zone. On this calm night, it had been a month since the little explorer team had landed on Earth, Luo Feng and his two

brothers were currently returning to Earth again.

“In the following day, I’ll build a survival base in America! This survival base has a 5 million people capacity, of course, in desperate times, we can definitely squeeze more in.”

“In India, we’ll build a similar five million people capacity base.”

“In Russia and the neighboring European countries, we’ll build a combined 10 million people capacity survival base.”

“Asia’s population is bigger, in the other Asian bases, they’ll share one five million people capacity survival base.”

“Africa and South America bases, will share a five million people capacity survival base.”

“China, will use a 10 million people capacity survival base.”

Within the wargod palace, Luo Feng announced to Earth’s upper echelon.

……

In terms of population, China definitely had a better deal! Afterall, Europe and Russia’s population combined together far exceeded China’s, however the two only used one 10 million capacity survival base. However, the leaders of the countries didn’t

have any right or authority to say anything, after all, these were bases that Luo Feng was giving to them!

Giving them these bases was an act of benevolence.

Even if Luo Feng didn't give them anything, no one could blame Luo Feng!

In truth, they didn't even know...

China's survival base was a c3 grade, the rest were only c2. While the c2 grade could still barely withstand a Universe level 1 warrior's attack, it paled in comparison to the c3's sturdiness.

Earth, China.

The survival base Hope, was built in the north area of the Jiangnan headquarter city. The entire base was just like an enormous pillbox. This survival base's entire structure was bronze, it's height was close to 90m, with 28 levels in total. It's precise space allocation was for 10 square meters for each person.

The survival base had an underground 16 levels.

In the 6m wide walkways, China's upper echelon was surveying the place.

"Senior official, wouldn't these be too tight?" A middle aged man

couldn’t help but ask.

“Tight?”

With a full head of silver hair, the old man shook his head, “All we are doing now is adding upper and lower decks along with side decks to our original living spaces, allowing 4 people to live in one room! Those activity areas, etc, we don’t even use them, how can this be considered tight? This survival base currently can house 40 million people, and we can totally increase that number!”

“Increasing anymore and we won’t even have the activity areas.” The middle aged man said.

Right now within the survival base, there were still activity areas etc.

People living in there wouldn’t find it too tight.

“A crowded area beats having them dead.” The silver haired old man sighed, looking at the inlayed mirror along the walkway, discovering that his hair had gone all white.

“The universe, is a place full of mystery for us humans of earth.”

“Luo Feng, everything depends on the three of you.”

……

Earth’s various countries, placed all their fighters, science elites and brightest in the survival bases. As the fighters were mostly from a little district, their big movement wasn’t too much of a deal.

……

Time passed.

Earth’s average humans continued living their normal lives as before, Earth’s elites however had all moved into the survival bases!

……

Luo Feng had already reached a planet not too far from the milky way, a government station of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, the Jade Rock Star, it was the center of several countries around. It was in fact more central than several low level empires. The Jade Rock Star was even closer to Earth. With the universe travel, it only took about five days.

On Jade Rock Star.

Luo Feng didn’t dare relax for even a moment, using the highest efficiency to constantly evolve his body.

The moment he reached the Star level, he would be able to access his teacher's account on Jade Rock star, and immediately apply to be Earth's leader.

……

In space.

Around that star, eight other planets constantly orbited around, this was the solar system! There was one particular life planet... Earth!

Two enormous interstellar battleships, one leading the other, were flying at shocking speed towards it.

"Senior Pula, just another 2 hours 26 minutes and we'll reach that life planet!"

"It's already in sight, that blue green planet, it's beautiful."

"How beautiful."

The Nuolan Shan family fleet, after travelling in space for over two years, had finally reached the solar system.

On that day, it was currently year 2063, February 21st in China's time zone!

Chapter 41 – Time of Urgency

Solar system, a grey, enormous apparatus was currently set up on a moon orbiting Neptune.

Di!

One of its lenses was currently aimed at the two enormous battleships flying past the distant Jupiter.

“Du! Du! Du!”

The huge apparatus immediately flashed several warning lights and a signal right after.

……

Ever since the universe scout ship from before sneaked in without a trace on earth, after Luo Feng left Earth and came to Bai Lan Star, he immediately ordered a few space detecting apparatus, separately installing them on several moons within the solar system. This allowed him to know the moment the Nuolan Shan fleet had arrived.

China, Hope survival base.

“Ring…ring…ring…ring…”

An ear piercing warning alarm immediately resounded across the entire 28 floors of the survival base, the solar panels originally placed at the top floor of the base were immediately kept, all of the large windows automatically shut themselves, the initial important pathways and exits too were shut and everyone went into a state of nervousness!

Survival base underground 12th level.

Luo Feng's family, Thunder God's family and Hong's family were living within this spacious living quarters. However, while they were special and privileged because of their relationships to Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God, their personal space was still a grand total of 10 meter area each.

"Master."

Meng Two and Meng Four, the two powerful warriors Luo Feng had left behind swiftly rushed in.

"The universe fleet is arriving Earth soon." Xu Xin looked at her wrist communicator, this was something Luo Feng had given her. "The apparatus's signal transmitter works at light speed, even faster than the speed of the two battleships. However...it'll probably be about an hour, the enemies' interstellar battleships will arrive on earth."

Everyone within the room fell silent.

“I’ll inform Luo Feng and the others.

Xu Xin immediately went to the room beside, within it lay an untraceable account consciousness transmitting helmet.

……

At the same time!

Earth’s five great countries and twenty three bases were informed of the news. They had already known much earlier…that the Nuolan Shan family fleet would be arriving in three months, hence they had measures prepared for it. After receiving the report, each country began to swiftly put things into motion!

The only thing was…

The upper echelon of earth, the leaders, were still very worried about the situation!

……

No one knew what would become of their fates!

Against a powerful universe family’s fleet from the universe, Earth had no power to resist. Everything could only lie on the hopes of Luo Feng on Jade Rock Star.

Jade Rock Star, was an important hub surrounded by six other huge Empires. The Black Dragon Mountain Empire's government station on this planet's main motive was to rely on this planet's location to deter the other surrounding countries and the Silverblue Empire.

It was modern and bustling beyond compare on Jade Rock Star.

In a particular Oceanside bar, Luo Feng and the other two had rented a little building.

"Today is already February 21st. That Nuolan mountain family fleet's arrival on Earth should be today." Thunder God stood outside the villa, looking at the vast sea outside, creasing his eyebrows, "Brother Hong, right now third brother hasn't even broken through! Will we really not make it in time...then all we can do is..."

"Bear with it! There's still hope!" Hong said solemnly.

If Luo Feng truly didn't breakthrough in time, then they could only submit Earth's properties, population, etc to the Black Dragon Mountain Empire and receive the reward. That way, Earth would belong to the Black Dragon Mountain Empire!

The moment it belonged to the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.

Then Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God would absolutely have no say in Earth's government.

“Endure, endure, endure.” Thunder God’s disposition may be very good, but as the days passed one after another, along with the thought of the ever closing Nuolan Shan family fleet reaching Earth, this sort of pressure…if it were a normal person, he would have lost it much earlier. “Even I’ve broken through to the star level, but third brother still hasn’t!”

Thunder God was originally at the peak of the Star Traveller 9 level!

Relying on the Yun Mo Planet’s training secrets, along with being on Jade Rock Star, Luo Feng bought them several assisting treasures, Thunder God became the first to breakthrough to the Star level 1, while Hong remained in the Star Traveller 9 level.

“And we don’t even know when he might breakthrough,” Hong turned around, through the special translucent wooden paneled window, he saw Luo Feng sitting crossed legged on the bed.

“Hm?”

Hong and Thunder God realized, Luo Feng’s eyes opened from within the room.

“Has he broken through?”

Hong and Thunder God rushed into the room.

“Hm?” Luo Feng opened his eyes, “It’s a call request from Earth?” Babata was currently semi connected to the virtual universe, just to be able to receive messages, to be able to send out messages however required one’s full consciousness to enter the virtual universe.

When he saw the two seniors rushing into the room with faces of anticipation, Luo Feng shook his head, “No, I haven’t broken through. It’s only that I’ve received a message request from Earth.”

“From Earth?”

Hong and Thunder God were shocked, the countries on earth these past few days wouldn’t have deliberately disturbed them.

“Don’t tell me…”

Hong, Thunder God and Luo Feng’s expressions became ugly.

“Let me check.” Luo Feng closed his eyes, his consciousness entering the virtual universe.

The blue green planet.

Two large objects had just entered the atmosphere.

“Haha…”

Within one of the battle ship's control room, Pula and four other heirs, via the external image simulator, looked at the clouds covering the beautiful earth, laughing excitedly.

"We've finally reached this life planet."

"After travelling in space for two years, it's too long."

These four heirs had extremely high positions, never actually going through such hardships before. The arduous journey through space that took a total of two years!

"Discovered the online network."

"Already hacked into the planet's network."

The control room's AI swiftly hacked into Earth's network, acquiring large amounts of information. That AI didn't know however... that early three months ago, the entire Earth had revamped and cleaned up the entire online network after the incident with the little explorer team! There was a mass clearing of the more important information, footage from the net.

The person orchestrating the whole clean up, was the AI in charge of maintaining the wargod palace.

"This planet's name is Earth, radius of about 6,400km. Surface

mass is 5.1 hundred million square km. Of which 29.2% is land while 70.8% is water bodies. The planet's gravitational pull is 0.11 of the universal gravitation unit."

"This planet's population is close to 7 billion."

"This planet's fighter numbers..."

.....

The battleship's AI was swiftly reporting large amounts of data.

"I'll pass on the good news to teacher." The handsome youth Bula said and immediately left the control room, entering his private room.

Within his room.

Bula swiftly connected his consciousness and entered the virtual universe.

.....

Within a three story luxurious villa, it's walls covered in a beautiful array of flowers.

Within a quiet room.

“Di, di, di…”

Pula stood within the room, quietly waiting, beside him a screen appeared, it was blank.

Shua!

The screen suddenly displayed an imposing strong looking man, his ears pointed, obviously of the same race as Bula.

“Teacher!” Bula respectfully bowed.

This, was his teacher, and also Pula Nuolan Shan’s grandfather, currently the head of the Nuolan mountain family, Yu Ke Nuolan Shan, one of the newer and more unconventional heads. Unlike the other heads who liked art and spoke of etiquette, this was a brash and wild head, one who displayed more power than the previous generation of heads.

“Hm.” Yu Ke Nuolan Shan nodded, his eyes fixed on Pula,” You’ve reached that planet?”

“Yes, teacher.” Pula said respectfully, “This planet’s aboriginals call it Earth.”

“Earth?” Yu Ke repeated the word a couple of times.

“Bula!” Yu Ke Nuolan Shan said seriously, “The planet you’ve just reached, you have to be extremely careful! Buluo from before has already been out of contact for a total of three months. Even the old head has been unable to contact him. He’s…most likely already dead. That’s why, don’t get careless.”

“Understood.” Pula nodded.

When Buluo Nuolan Shan began not answering to calls, the family didn’t think too much of it initially.

However as time passed, and when even the two other heads couldn’t contact him…the Nuolan Shan family began to suspect that Buluo could had died.

“Everything will go according to plan.”

Yu Ke Nuolan Shan said seriously, “With the greatest speed, collect as much of Earth’s data as you can and begin sampling! With the interstellar space marker, the data and goods, we can swiftly apply to buy the planet from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire and place our family name on it. When that time comes, whatever we want to check or investigate on earth, we can do it slowly and leisurely.”

“Yes, teacher.” Pula said respectfully.

“Go on.” Yu Ke said.

Di.

The call ended.

Pula's eyes slight squinted, "Data, sampling!"

Sou!

Pula's consciousness left the virtual universe and returned to reality.

More than 10 billion people lived on Jade Rock Star.

A posh and luxurious city, within one of its Oceanside bars, one could hear the swishing of waves rushing against the beach.

Hong and Thunder God sat crossed legged on the beach, quietly waiting.

Behind them...

In a quiet house.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged on a bed, his entire being immersed in silence, yet within, he was boiling with anxiety and pressure. His body's training, usually level 1 to 3 is the easiest, 4 to 6 is a little harder and 7 to 9 is even harder. For person at level 9 to

breakthrough, that was the hardest part!

As Luo Feng's core was his original core, hence his soul couldn't breakthrough, limited by his human body!

His physical body had early on reached the star traveller level 6, however to break into level 7 was extremely difficult! Luo Feng had been stuck at this crucial pass for abit, whenever he felt like it was about to breakthrough, he didn't seem to be able to!

"The Nuolan Shan family has already reached earth!"

"We don't have much time, not much at all!"

"Don't tell me, that we really have to resort to the second route... engaging in a mass evacuation of Earth's humans? Close to 7 billion all evacuating, and most of them aren't even at the Star Traveller level, they cannot receive protection from the empire. When they meet slave traders, if they get kidnapped, we can't even do anything!"

"I can't accept this, I won't accept this!!!"

"Hurry! Hurry! Hurry!"

It was an emotion unlike never before!

That glimmer of hope!

“Rumble!”

Luo Feng’s consciousness tremored.

Silence!

All was silent!

His ears could hear the distant waves rushing against the shore, it could hear Hong and Thunder God’s uneasy breathing, and also mechanical noises of the clock hung on the wall, with his powerful spirit reading feel, it seemed like the world had been reborn.

“It’s not the same anymore.” Luo Feng opened his eyes, smiling as he looked around.

“I’m not the same anymore.”

Luo Feng said softly, Earth isn’t the same anymore!”

Outside the house, Hong and Thunder god turned at the same time and looked within the house.

“Big brother, second brother.” Luo Feng smiled, “Follow me to the Universe Galaxy Bank!”

Chapter 42 – Universe Mercenaries

Jade Rock Star, a mid level civilization country planet directly controlled by the Black Dragon Mountain Empire. It was an important hub for the six big countries surrounding it, it's level of importance was higher than even the low level civilizations. Naturally, they had a branch of the Universe Galaxy Bank and the Universe First Bank, the two giants in the banking industry.

At the core of the modern city, land was extremely expensive.

A stunning and breathtaking tower was constructed right here, also, surrounding it was over 3 square km area of grass. In a place where every inch is very expensive, a 3 square km area of no constructs, just plain grass and plant life for décor, this was an extreme luxury and waste of space.

Admiration could be seen in the eyes of the humans from other planets walking on the street when they looked towards this building.

Just simply because…this was the Universe Galaxy Bank.

"It's so huge!"

"So pretty!"

Luo Feng and Thunder God raised their heads to look at this 'art piece'-like building, their gaze filled with awe.

“Definitely has an aura about it, how was it built?” Hong’s eyes too were gleaming.

The three brothers from Earth were almost like little countryside people, shocked at the enormous construct! This skyscraper for the Universe Galaxy Bank had completely created the universe river’s stereoscopic effect. Just looking at it…it was like facing space head on, a visual experience that went beyond extraordinary.

“Last time on Dragon Star, I visited it once before. But seeing it again, it is breathtaking.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but compliment.

“Look, even walking towards the main doors of the bank, the air is different.” Thunder God pushed his lips out and pouted, hinting at the distant customers.

Luo Feng looked over.

Indeed, the occasional customer heading into the Universe Galaxy Bank, had an obvious different air about them! Afterall… the lowest account here was 100 million Black Dragon dollars, a normal planet’s wealthiest would probably only have that much.

“Let’s go, let’s enter.” Luo Feng said.

“Yes.” Hong and Thunder God were filled with anticipation.

The three walked side by side towards the big bank entrance.

The distant traffic of people on the streets, noticing these three walking towards the bank were naturally filled with envy. When would it be...before they themselves would be able to enter the doors of the Universe Galaxy Bank?

The Universe Galaxy Bank's doors were enormous beyond compare, almost like a huge waterfall, like Earth's legends of waterfalls with caves behind them, the only difference was...what seemed like a waterfall here, was actually just a result of light reflecting off the door itself.

"If one who wasn't an old customer of the bank, wants to open an account, they have to go that way." Luo Feng said comfortably, "However I am an old customer, you two can follow me and we head directly through the main entrance."

Entering through the 'water' entrance.

The interior was extremely spacious; it was a big hall that warmed the hearts and delighted the eyes of whoever that entered.

"How are you sir, please rest over here for a bit, there are many customers today, my apologies." A beautiful young lady dressed in the bank's corset with it's logo smiled as she bowed.

"Understood."

Luo Feng noticed that on the sofas, there were already about twelve groups of other customers, Luo Feng and the other two followed the instructions and waited on the thirteenth sofa. Beside the sofa, a screen automatically appeared, on it displayed various types of menus and pages.

“Whatever you want to drink, it’s all free.” Luo Feng said.

“Oh?” Hong and Thunder God browsed with interest.

Silently waiting.

Groups of customers entered into the offices, more customers formed up behind and queued. When Luo Feng reached third in the line, the hall had sixteen groups of people.

Hua!

Luo Feng suddenly felt the originally silent hall rise in commotion, this was a commotion where people kept their voices down! One had to know, to be able to enter the Universe Galaxy Bank, everybody had some sort of status or personal status, no matter how rampant and arrogant one was outside, one still had to work hard to prove one was ‘civilized’ here, hence a commotion was a rare occurrence.

“Hm?” Luo Feng turned to look.

Three people walked into the hall.

The one leading them was dressed in a black military uniform, his entire body was fit and sturdy, with a height of 2.1m, his skin green. In the middle of his forehead there was even a third eye! Beside him, there was an obviously weaker and smaller but of the same race person, and the last was was a person completely covered in a black robe.

The one similarity of the three was...

On their left chest, there was a medal, and the picture of the medal was a blood red wave with a planet one it.

“This is...” Luo Feng’s pupils strained!

“In the Virtual Universe Network, I’ve seen those pictures.” Thunder God said with a hushed voice, beside him, Hong’s eyes too were gleaming, burning with intensity.

The other customers who were conscious of their status were all anxious and held their breaths, some were looking crazy with respect towards the three, the others were engaged in hushed discussions.

“Universe mercenaries! Real universe mercenaries!”

“We actually got to see universe mercenaries!”

“And they are the 1 star mercenaries!”

“Three Universe Mercenaries, to be able to see them on Jade Rock Star, this sort of planet, it’s too…too…”

Excitement!

Incomparable excitement!

Including Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God, everyone within the Jade Rock Star branch of the Universe Galaxy Bank was completely filled with excitement. That was because…these three, were within the universe, the most respected, strongest and most valiant organization…the Universe Mercenaries!

The universe’s number one power…the Universe Mercenaries Alliance!

Over 99% of the powerful fighters, spirit readers would all join the Universe Mercenaries Alliance. Even though the alliance was more lax and dispersed, in the vast universe, no Empire would dare to mess with the Universe Mercenaries Alliance. Back then, Luo Feng’s teacher, the master of the Yun Mo Planet Hu Yan Bo, was one of them!

A Star Traveller, would be considered an explorer.

Star level, they had the rights to enter the examinations and earn the title of probationary universe mercenary!

Universe levels had the rights to enter the universe 1 star mercenaries examination!

……

Domain lords, had the rights to enter the universe 3 star mercenaries examinations!

One had to actually earn the rights to take part in the examinations!

Whether one actually earned the titles depended on the results of the examinations! The tests themselves were incredibly difficult and tough, that was why…the authentic universe 1 star mercenaries were all Universe levels that had gone through a tedious selection process! So much so that even Domain Lords who hadn't passed the 2 star examinations remained as 1 star!

This meant…

The three Universe Mercenaries before everybody, were at least three Universe levels! They might even be Domain Lords!

Universe Mercenaries!

This was something that instilled and commanded a sense of respect and even worship! They lived in tumultuous situations and

experienced dangerous life or death situations time after time! They had an invincible amount of power! This was an alliance within the vast universe that countless human races respected and worshipped. Some others may be Universe levels, but they don't have the guts to join and be mercenaries, or, have no power at all to pass the examinations!

The Universe Mercenaries examinations were called the toughest and strictest of all tests!

It's death rate percentage was extremely high!

"Three Universe Mercenaries!" Luo Feng felt his heartbeat speed up.

"Fighters able to battle it out on a white dwarf!" Hong looked at these three universe mercenaries, memories surfacing in his mind!

As the strongest warrior on Earth for a long time, Hong anticipated as he saw the Universe Mercenaries who were so much higher up than he was: "One day, I too will become a Universe Mercenary!" The Universe Mercenaries, this was a gold plated medal, much much stronger than any universe warriors ability alone.

As they were mercenaries, almost all of them had partners, their partners too wouldn't be too much weaker, and they would all have experienced life or death situations countless times!

Even the Nuolan Mountain family wouldn't dare mess with the three Universe Mercenaries before them! Unless they were prepared for the destruction of their family...

"Three respected guests!"

A rather plump, small eyed fatty with purplish-red skin and two golden horns on his head and was dressed in a dark green uniform sat on the elevator and appeared in the hall. He ran over and said humbly and respectfully, "I am the Universe Galaxy Bank Jade Rock Star's branch president, Peteri, my three respected guests, please follow me."

"Ok."

The leading Universe Mercenary creased his eyebrows slightly, his third eye briefly scanning the fat branch president, nodding.

After that, the three Universe Mercenaries followed the branch president and immediately sat in the elevator and went up the tower.

At once, the bubble burst within the hall and a huge commotion erupted.

"It was actually three Universe Mercenaries."

"Universe Mercenaries! And two of them are Pishi Race people, the other one was wrapped from head to toe so it was hard to

discern.”

“Second Uncle, why did they go up, doesn’t this Universe Galaxy Bank work on its operations on the first floor?”

“Normal customers are handled here, the star customers are all above!”

“What determines a star customer?”

“No idea, anyway even our company’s main person in charge, with properties and wealth in the trillions, still is only a regular customer in the Universe Galaxy Bank, not even reaching the 1 star customer grade requirements.”

Within the bank’s big hall, many groups of people were actively discussing.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God too couldn’t help but discuss in hushed voices.

“From what I see, these three mercenaries are probably 1 star clients.” Thunder God said.

“Maybe, after all the star client’s requirements are absurd.” Luo Feng said.

During their discussion, the personnel in charge of the queue had

already reached Luo Feng.

“Sir, it’s your turn.” The bank’s service personnel was incredibly respectful.

“First and second brother, I’ll be back shortly.”

Luo Feng said, under the instructions of the service personnel, he entered the reception room within.

“I would like to make a transfer.” Luo Feng told the personnel within the reception room.

“May I know the number of your account?” Within the reception room, the beautiful personnel said with a smile.

Babata had told Luo Feng the account number earlier on, at this time, Luo Feng was extremely excited! This was one of the 3 accounts left behind by his teacher for him, the 3 accounts were separately for the Star level, Universe level, Domain lord level to acquire. This first account’s amount of money was probably the smallest, however, for someone as big as the master of the Yun Mo Planet...

Even just a strand of hair itself would be extremely thick!

“8492——8593——woxh——8528——5285——032。” Luo Feng held his breath, reporting the account number.

“Please wait a moment.”

The personnel worked swiftly within the reception room, before quietly waiting for the universe network to transfer the details.

“This, this is…”

The personnel, who originally had big enough eyes, stared so hard they almost looked the size of fists, pupils filled with shock. After, she turned to look at Luo Feng with shock, trembling as she said, “Respected guest, please, please wait a moment, I have to inform the branch president!” Finishing, she turned and ran out, just after leaving, she ran back in, extremely nervous as she looked at Luo Feng, “Respected customer, there will be someone else taking care of your needs, please wait a moment.” Finishing, she left swiftly.

The Universe Galaxy Bank, Jade Rock Star branch, 9th level.

The branch president Peteri was smiling and respectfully talking to the three Universe Mercenaries, working on their documents: “Even though it’s troublesome, but it’ll be finished really quickly, please wait a moment.” On such a place like Jade Rock Star, even he, would only occasionally have to deal with 1 star clients, after all the requirements to reach the 1 star level is extremely high.

At this time…

“Hua!”

The door was immediately yanked open!

“Hm?” The three Universe Mercenaries turned to look, their faces revealing signs of dissatisfaction, the leader of the group, the Pishi three eyed race human’s gaze was ice cold towards the person barging in.

“What’s the matter?” The branch president was extremely dissatisfied!

How could one barge in while he was receiving important guests?

A lady along with a similar fat man with two horns entered, both gazing straight with distress at the branch president. Peteri was slightly alarmed, these two, one of them was the vice president while the other was a service personnel, Peteri got the hint and told the three people with a bow: Please wait a moment.”

As he finished, he swiftly left and closed the door.

“What’s the matter?” The president creased his eyebrows and looked at the two of them, “Little brother, don’t you know I’m currently entertaining three 1 star customers? This is a big deal!”

“I know.” The fat vice president who looked similar to the president forehead was filled with perspiration, “However this is even bigger.”

“What’s the matter?” The president Peteri seemed shocked.

“Let’s talk in the private room.” The other personnel said.

The president squinted his eyes, the reception room for the three universe mercenaries was a special room made for such special guests, even spirit energy couldn’t pass through, absolutely soundproof, it even blocked many different kinds of signals. And the private room, was the Universe Galaxy Bank’s even more prestigious room for important matters, even Undying Beings would have trouble eavesdropping.

Very quickly, the three reached the private room.

Within the private room, the president looked at the personnel and said: “Speak, what’s the matter?”

“Big matter.” The vice president choked and cleared his throat.

“President.” The personnel’s face was flushed from excitement, she said softly, “There’s a client downstairs looking to withdraw money and transfer accounts, his account...is a 5 star account!”

“What?”

The president’s face immediately went pale!

My god!

Many planets' Universe Galaxy Bank branch presidents would occasionally meet a one star client, they were incredibly rare, even to the point where it took decades to meet a single two star client, and one may not even meet a three star client in one's lifetime, much less the legendary five star client! One had to know...Even Universe level warriors, to be a one star client was pretty decent already.

Five star account, what does that signify?

A client with a five star account can buy planets like they were candy! A place like the Silverblue Empire's low level civilizations, in front of this client, was like ants! Even in the vast universe, even in the universe high level civilizations, Empires, he would still be a person of high status!

One breath, and he could order hundreds of millions of people to become slaves, hundreds of millions of people to rise up below him, such a terrifying force and presence!

"Five star account?"

The president was completely dumbfounded.

"Right, brother, if you don't believe me, you can check for yourself. Right now the entire bank's control settings have been completely transferred and controlled by AIs! Our every word and

movement is being monitored...Before, if we actually dared to mention anything about the five star client outside the private room, the bank's AI would have immediately killed us." The vice president's head was covered in cold sweat.

The president too decided to wipe his own head.

The Universe Galaxy Bank, such a powerful and enormous bank, definitely placed its clients before everything else! Especially the five star clients, these sort of clients placed their wealth within the bank and the bank used that money to circulate and invest, the revenue generated everyday had huge amounts of profits! These sort of clients, if their secrecy were ever to be divulged...even if it meant destroying one whole planet, the Universe Galaxy Bank would do whatever it took to protect the client's secrecy and not leak out any information.

Chapter 43 – Huge Amounts of Wealth

Within the reception room.

“Babata, what’s the matter, why do I feel a sense of uneasiness?” Luo Feng rubbed his chin, questioning Babata through his thoughts.

“Is there something wrong?” The little demon feigned ignorance.

“The look and expression of that personnel before, seemed like Earth’s western religious groups finally meeting their god, or angel or something like that. Before, even when they saw the Universe Mercenaries, their expressions didn’t even go that far.” Luo Feng asked, “Babata, tell me, just what’s going on? Don’t lie or trick me!”

“I say.” Babata mocked, “The account you reported before, is actually a five star account.”

“Five star account?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

In the enormous hall before, everyone had heard that even wealth and amounts up to the trillions were only normal customers, not even reaching the one star account requirements! Compared to the one star account, who knew how many times larger the five star account had to be, what was the meaning in this?

“The teacher couldn’t possibly give me that much money just from the first account right?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

Star level, Universe level, Domain Lord level, he could acquire a total of three large amounts whenever he broke through, one for each level!

This first amount, should the least of the three!

“That’s a given!”

“This first amount of money is definitely the smallest! It’s like only a drop of water in the vast ocean of your teacher’s wealth! As for this account...actually, your Universe level account, is also 8492——8593——woxh——8528——5285——032’, the Domain Lord level account, is also this one! Incidentally, it’s also the same account that your teacher used back then! A five star account.” Babata said.

“The account my teacher used to use?” Luo Feng was stunned.

The master of the Yun Mo Planet!

This was the ultimate warrior with nine Undying Beings as slaves under him, a powerful being even amongst the Undying. In the Ganwu Empire, he was also quite a powerful being. This person, with that much power, having a five star account wasn’t strange at all.

“The three accounts your teacher arranged for you, in truth, are all in this account.” Babata said.

“What does that mean?” Luo Feng was somewhat unclear.

“The same account, with different passwords and opening mechanisms, hence the amount of money you will receive will be different.” Babata said.

Luo Feng realized immediately.

Even the bank cards on Earth had the same mechanism, entering a password and discovering a balance of 10,000 dollars. Entering another password and the balance becomes 10 million dollars. Enter a third password and maybe the balance becomes 1 billion! If anybody were to ever be robbed or kidnapped and blackmailed into revealing their back account password...the robbers retrieving the money would only be able to retrieve 10,000 dollars only.

“This account, is the main account.”

“All three parts of the inheritance your teacher left you, is all here in this account.”

“However, there’s three different ways to acquire the inheritance in this account, through these different methods, the inheritance you acquire will be different.” Babata explained.

“So I see.” Luo Feng realized.

At this point in time, the fat and chubby branch president rushed in through the doors, very enthusiastically and respectfully: “Respected guest, please follow me.”

They rode in the elevator and arrived at the tower’s thirteenth floor.

Du!

“Respected guest.” A clear crisp voice resounded from a metal robot, “Universe Galaxy Bank welcomes you.”

Luo Feng left the elevator suspiciously, the branch president bowed respectfully and left in the elevator.

“Please follow me.” The metal robot said to Luo Feng.

“Eh? A robot is serving me?” Luo Feng said suspiciously.

He didn’t know…that the position of the Jade Rock Star’s Universe Galaxy Bank’s president was too low; even he wasn’t deemed worthy enough to serve Luo Feng!

Within a luxurious and comfortable reception room.

“8492——8593——woxh——8528——5285——032”. Luo Feng sat down, clearly repeating in universe language, “This is the account,

I would like to withdraw money from."

"Please wait a moment."

The metal robot smiled, at this point in time, it said, "Please scan across this board on my arm with your spiritual force." Suddenly, a peculiar black and gold board extended from the robot's arm.

"Spiritual force?" Luo Feng smiled.

Babata had mentioned, one of the requirements of withdrawing the money was...his spiritual force had to be at least a star level, and it had to be spiritual force from the Yun Mo Planet sect to be able to pass.

Luo Feng's thoughts moved, his spiritual force brushed past the board.

"Di!"

"The requirements match!"

The metal robot looked at Luo Feng, "Please enter the threefold four dimensional wave band password, respected guest, you can choose to enter it with your spiritual force, voice or manually with your hands."

The threefold four dimensional wave band password was

extremely complex, and it went according to the time and space marker, etc to generate the account. According the original password, and the time and space marker, the spiritual force level, etc, a new password would be generated right that moment! Also, the method of calculation and determining was set by the Yun Mo Planet master back then.

Moreover, this password was three fold!

“What a long password.” Luo Feng used the quantum computer to connect to the Universe Galaxy Bank’s system, before using his spiritual force to enter the password.

“Check the balance.” Luo Feng felt nervous as he gave the order.

Nervousness! Anxiety!

His teacher, was a person whose wealth could even match the wealth of an entire Empire in the universe. However, his wealth was split into three portions, and the Star level amount he was receiving was also the least. Just how much would this smallest portion be? Luo Feng didn’t have to much faith or guarantee it... but who knew just what his teacher thought?

“I hope I can afford Earth, I hope I can afford Earth.” Luo Feng secretly prayed.

“Du!”

The screen on Luo Feng's arm lit up, numbers appeared on the screen, the long number of 0s in the figure dumbfounded Luo Feng.

"10 000 000 000"

"Tens, hundreds, thousands, tens of thousands...hmm, hundred million, 10 billion?" Luo Feng stared at the currency symbol behind, "Ganwu dollars?"

"10 billion Ganwu dollars!" Luo Feng's eyes lit up completely, his expression filled with joy.

What a gift!

He was a kind teacher indeed! 10 billion Ganwu dollars, even the government's reward itself was a total of 10 billion Black Dragon dollars! Through the Black Dragon dollar exchange route, one could totally exchange for tens of trillions of Black Dragon dollars. Even Universe level warriors had to probably sell off a few planets to be able to acquire a fortune this huge.

"Your teacher back then thought, when you reach the Star level, you'd probably just begun messing around in the universe, 10 billion Ganwu dollars should be enough! Afterall, it would be good for those heirs to the large families to be able to acquire just 100 million Ganwu dollars." Babata said.

Luo Feng nodded his head and agreed.

Even Gao Sheng Wei Di only acquired a life planet after 10 years, and he wouldn't dare sell it off.

"Babata, my Universe and Domain Lord level accounts, just how much would I get in those levels?" Luo Feng asked, Babata back then was the teacher's AI, the three accounts the teacher set up in the Virtual Universe Network, he would definitely be the clearest of the amounts.

"I can't say, I can't say."

Babata insisted on not divulging the information.

"I just can't say and that's final!"

"10 billion, and it's in Ganwu dollars!" Luo Feng looked at the balance, finally feeling a sense of wealth and security. This wasn't Black Dragon dollars, but the much more valuable Ganwu dollars! Amongst the Star levels, even the heirs of big families, the later generations with huge powers, Luo Feng would still be considered one of the richest wealthiest of the lot.

One had to know that the wealthiest person on normal planets usually only had about 100 million Black Dragon dollars!

Just Luo Feng alone, was akin to tens of thousands of these wealthiest put together!

“Transfer!” Luo Feng looked at the metal robot and said, “Transfer it to the account that’s linked to my spiritual force imprint.”

This teacher’s account, was linked and bound to his teacher’s spirit imprint, even though he had ways to open it, it was too troublesome to open it time and again.

The spiritual force imprint was the safest and most convenient method.

Outside the entrance of the Universe Galaxy Bank.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God walked out.

“Luo Feng, is the money enough?” Thunder God asked.

“Is it sufficient?” Hong too asked nervously.

To request to buy Earth, astronomical amounts of money was required.

“No problem at all!” Luo Feng smiled, “Come, let’s head to the Empire Government and buy Earth.”

Milky way, Earth.

The entire population of ordinary citizens still went about their lives as per normal, completely oblivious to the fleet from the universe arriving on Earth! And Earth's fighters, scientists, etc, the families of the elites, all waited within the survival bases, they too didn't know of the dangers that had arrived...only the upper echelon knew!

In the air above the Pacific ocean.

Two enormous battleships floated side by side.

Within one of the battleships.

The Nuolan Shan family's eight great heirs stood in a row, looking at the huge screen above the control board. These eight Star level 9 youths, looked serious and determined, not one of them smiling.

"Scan complete!"

"Earth's population is close to 7 billion, amongst them 1.8 billion of them are living in six survival bases. This planet's Student level, Star Traveller level fighters, over 99% of them are in the survival bases. And outside those, there are almost none that have even reached the Student level 1." The battleship's AI swiftly calculated and reported.

As an interstellar battleship, it's scanning capabilities and radius was extremely huge.

Earth's radius was only about 6,400km, scanning through it's entirety was simple.

"Survival bases! There are survival bases!" Among the eight heirs, one black skinned youth raged, "Who said this was a backward planet with no leader? They even have survival bases, I don't believe that a small little planet like this has the ability to manufacture the parts required to build survival bases! It's definitely impossible!"

"Right."

A Nuolan Shan family direct descendant nodded, "I agree too, this planet definitely has had communication with the universe!"

"But what should we do now?"

"Buluo definitely must have been killed by an aboriginal of this planet."

"Don't call them aboriginals, this planet definitely isn't an aboriginal planet, to be able to build six survival bases, and they are all C grade, just these six bases alone...even in the universe, normal planet's wouldn't be able to build them!"

There was a ruckus within the control room.

They had originally thought it would be simple to deal with Earth, but looking at the situation now, this planet's upper echelon had all hidden within the survival bases! The ordinary folk outside that had not even reached the Student level 1, to have done this step itself...obviously they had prepared for this invasion much earlier. Even the information gathered from the network probably isn't reliable.

Naturally, the eight heirs weren't too happy.

"Silence." A serious voice resounded.

The other seven heirs turned, Pula was the one speaking! He was the one amongst them with the highest authority and position!

"Earth's upper echelon are all hiding within the survival bases, these bases, we can't do anything about them." Pula's gaze was ice cold, he scanned the seven in the room, "Right now...one group will act according to the plan and swiftly gather Earth's various mineral ores, etc, begin sampling and collecting data! As for the rest...I'm going to see the teacher!"

Since a young age, Bulua was always the brightest within the Nuolan Shan family.

At the Star level 9, he had his own domain and was the family's biggest hope to be the next Universe level heir, he was indeed a genius! Of course there was no comparison to the freaks of nature Hong and Thunder God who had their own domains at the Star Traveller level.

Geniuses, had their own privileges.

Pula could easily meet up with the heads and elders. Compared to the tragic Bulo from before, he was much stronger.

Virtual universe, Ganwu Empire, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

“Du!”

Two human silhouettes appeared on the screen, ears pointy and pupils red. One of the two was more imposing and intimidating while the other seemed more comfortable to be around.

“Teacher, Elder.” Pula bowed respectfully, his heart within stunned...there two Heads before him, “I have urgent news to report.”

“Speak.” The intimidating presence of the current head Yu Ke Nuolan Shan said.

“This planet, has made ample preparation for our invasion!”

“Their planet’s upper echelon and elites are all hiding well within survival bases, and these bases are all C grade. We have no way to break through them.” Pula said solemnly, “I can deduce... that the valuable information, etc on this planet has been collected or destroyed, we have no way to check it out.”

“Also, the building of a survival base is extremely complex, one planet alone definitely cannot do it. The survival bases are most definitely bought from the universe.”

On the screen, the Head and Elder’

As long as one wasn’t dim, anyone could have guessed that this planet has had contact with the universe.

“I’ve checked, this planet is still currently without a leader.” The Elder said.

“Teacher, Elder, what should be the next step for our fleet on earth?” Pula questioned respectfully.

The two heads discussed quietly.

Pula didn’t dare interrupt.

“Pula!” Yu Ke Nuolan Shan’s gaze was piercing, “With the greatest speed, collect data and record the planet’s coordinates! After that, with the greatest speed possible, send this data to the closest Black Dragon Mountain government branch station at Jade Rock Star! Since Earth is doesn’t have a leader, we have to as quickly as possible buy it under our name.”

“Two!”

Yu Ke Nuolan Shan's voice resounded firmly, "Begin searching on the planet, whether there are any treasures left behind by that Undying Being back then!"

"Three! Remember, the strongest and sturdiest fort usually crumbles from within! Since you have no way to forcefully break into the survival bases, be it hypnotism, or bewitching or confusing the human hearts within, whatever the case...finding a way to control the human race will greatly benefit our excavation of Earth's treasures."

"Four, I remember you said that there were large numbers of beasts on this planet? Begin taming and communicate with them, they too are the life forms of this Earth, maybe they know of places within Earth."

"Understood!" Pula complied.

"Go on, immediately begin." Yu Ke gave the order.

"Yes sir!" Pula complied.

When Pula began to act on all four fronts, giving out the orders, ordering over 1000 star levels and tens of thousands of star travellers, Luo Feng was at Jade Rock Star's government branch.

The empire government branch.

“This is this planet’s coordinates.”

“This is our travel log and record of us reaching this planet.”

“As for this planet’s samples and data, etc, everything is already in here.” Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God sat in the chairs, Hong and Thunder God didn’t speak universe language, all they could do was rely on the quantum computers and AIs to translate through their thoughts. Luo Feng sat at the side and spoke.

The government branch personnel were working on the case.

One of the personnel said: “If the space marker and travel log, etc pass without any problems, you will acquire 100 billion Black Dragon dollars as a reward...”

“No, I don’t want the reward.”

Luo Feng looked at this personnel, “Discovering a leaderless planet, I have the right and authority to purchase it! I want to buy it!”

The group of government officials within who were originally locked in discussion immediately went silent, turning to look at Luo Feng.

“Buy a life planet?” The personnel couldn’t help but repeat the question.

This wasn’t simply purchasing a weapon, treasure or something of the sort, a life planet was something much more expensive.

“Yes, I want to buy it.” Luo Feng said.

Chapter 44 – This is...

Jade Rock Star Empire government branch, of the huge expanse of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, it was considered an out of the way place.

Buying a planet?

It was something they hadn't heard of in years.

"Three guests, please follow me upstairs." A skinny government official said.

"Ok."

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God followed him and very quickly reached the government branch's 34th floor.

"Mr. Luo Feng, is it?" The official looked at Luo Feng, "Are you sure you want to purchase this, according to your information, the planet called 'Earth'?"

"Absolutely!"

Luo Feng's eyebrows creased, "We should be able to buy it right?"

"Mr. Luo Feng, as the first person to discover the leaderless

planet and delivering the news to us, you definitely have all the rights to purchase it." The official emphasized, "However, I do have to remind Mr Luo Feng...when we sent the numbers of this planet to the empire headquarters, the answer we got from them was...once everything was cleared, they would give you a reward of 100 billion Black Dragon dollars, do you know the implications behind that reward?"

"The implications behind the reward?" Luo Feng was stunned.

Suddenly, Luo Feng thought of something Babata had once mentioned to him before... 'discovering a leaderless planet, the Black Dragon Mountain Empire will act accordingly on the different planets, the lowest reward is 10 billion Black Dragon dollars and the highest is 100 billion Black Dragon dollars.'

"This is the highest reward?" Luo Feng understood finally.

"Yes!"

The official nodded, "Even though the numbers and large amounts of data you provided are still in process of being confirmed, however...just from that planet's coordinates, caused the empire headquarters to determine that this planet is of the highest degree of life planets! The person who discovered it, would be given the highest level of reward! If you want to buy this planet, then you'd also have to pay the highest price!"

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god glanced at each other.

How much would they have to spend just to buy Earth, Luo Feng was discussing with his two senior brothers earlier...

According to the laws of the empire.

To immediately purchase a planet, the lowest price is 300 billion, the highest is 3 trillion Black Dragon dollars! This was the privilege given to the person who discovers a leaderless planet. If it was a planet auction, then there'd be no limit on the price.

"You mean, Earth belongs to the highest price level of life planets?" Luo Feng couldn't help but ask.

"Yes! That's what the headquarters replied to us." The official nodded.

"As expected!" Thunder God twitched his mouth.

Luo Feng and Hong were helpless.

Before, Babata had already guessed...a life planet that an Undying Being had once governed, would most probably be regarded as one of the highest level.

"Requires 3 trillion Black Dragon dollars, right?" Luo Feng looked at him.

"Yes." The official nodded.

“I’ll take it.” Luo Feng said without hesitation.

The Earth was priceless within Luo Feng’s heart, no matter how much he’d have to spend,he would still do it.

“My apologies.” The official said apologetically, “If. Mr Luo Feng intends to buy Earth, he would first have to submit an application! Next...with regards to the large amount of numbers and data you provided, they would have to be passed though the empire headquarters individual departments for audit, verifying their authenticity, before finally completing the deal!”

“Damn, it’s just like on Earth, doing anything requires going through an entire process.” Thunder God muttered in mandarin.

“How long would it take.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

“I am but a distant planet’s small little official, I cannot guarantee the headquarters and its departments audit would require how long, I can only inform you Mr Luo Feng! According to the empire’s laws limits...the slowest is 30 days! I’m not sure of the fastest. If you are a person from a big family within the empire, maybe just the amount of time for a cup of tea and it would be done.” The official revealed a smile.

Luo Feng’s expression changed!

Hong and Thunder God’s expressions also became ugly!

“30 days?” Luo Feng was panicking.

The Nuolan Shan family had already arrived on earth, they would definitely be collecting data, samples and the space coordinates. They could immediately enter the universe travel and reach jade rock star. With regards to speed, with the huge background and connections of the Nuolan Shan family, the efficiency of the empire working for them would probably be much higher!

Before the purchase is completed, he cannot relax, who knew what could go awry?

“It definitely cannot take 30 days.” Thunder God said seriously, “I can see, the way they work is exactly like on Earth. If it gets dragged out by them, things could go seriously wrong! We have to settle this in the greatest speed possible.”

“And even if nothing goes wrong, 30 days? Who knows what Earth would even look like after 30 days.” Hong’s eyebrows creased.

Luo Feng nodded.

Suddenly he raised his head and looked at the official in front of him, standing straight up and walked towards him.

“Mr. Luo Feng, what are you doing?” The skinny official seemed

flustered.

Pa! Pa!

Luo Feng slammed both palms on the desk before him, leaning over and staring straight at the skinny official, “I need to settle this with the greatest speed possible!”

“My apologies.” The official shook his head apologetically, “I am but a little official on a distant little planet.”

“If you can settle it in 7 days, I’ll give you 10 million Black Dragon dollars!” Luo Feng stared at the official, his voice serious, raising one finger, “if you can settle it in 3 days, I’ll give you 100 million Black Dragon dollars!” the official’s eye’s looked like they were about to pop out, his entire body in a mess. An official of the empire had a very high salary.

But even after working for a whole lifetime, he wouldn’t be able to have 100 million Black Dragon dollars.

That was the price a status of a normal planet’s wealthiest!

100 million Black Dragon dollars was enough for him to get a Star level bodyguard, buy a large group of beautiful slaves, make all his close relatives and friends along with his fellow similar race people have to suck up to him, and lead a wealthy, luxurious and comfortable life .

“Huff, huff.” The official’s breathing was in disarray.

“If you can settle it in a day, I’ll give you 500 million Black Dragon dollars!” Luo Feng’s gaze was piercing, with five fingers raised, “Settle it in an hour and I’ll give you 1 billion Black Dragon dollars!”

The official’s eye’s opened wide, he choked.

My god!

Even biscuits from the heavens weren’t this big!

“Mr. Luo Feng!” The official’s breathing was heavy, his eyes red, he said seriously, “I mentioned before about the time it takes to drink a tea, that’s something only the big families and elders in the empire can say, only the empire’s highest level giving the order will enable that speed! As this involves too many departments, I have no guarantee to complete it within an hour, however, I definitely have a 100% guarantee of finishing this in a day!”

The official’s neck thickened!

Luo Feng smiled.

A 100% guarantee of finishing in a day? He said before that the slowest was 30 days and he had no way of guaranteeing anything, that he was only a small little official without any methods.

The power of money, was apparent within the universe.

“However I require the money immediately to pave the road.” The official’s eyes were lit, speaking rapidly, “As the audit of buying a planet etc, involves 12 departments, I have to call through to every department! According to normal procedure, this would normally take over 15 days. I do know people within those departments!”

“No worries!”

“Even if you personally bring out some big shot and order from the higher levels, they probably would still be slower than me, because I’m well connected from within.”

“Would Mr. Luo Feng first pass me 100 million, I’ll begin immediately.” The official said, “If a big person like Mr. Luo Feng wanted to kill me, it would be akin to stepping on an ant, simple and easy, hence I definitely wouldn’t take Mr Luo Feng’s money and not do the work.”

“Very well.”

Luo Feng smiled and nodded, “I’ll first pass you 200 million Black Dragon dollars, after everything is completed, I’ll pass you another 300 million.”

He was already willing to spend 3 trillion to buy the planet, why

bother about another 500 million Black Dragon dollars? It was just scrap compared to it! Luo Feng was clear, mice had their own little pathways, to allow this well connected from within official to deal with matters would probably be faster than asking Gao Sheng to help out! Also, Gao Sheng was only an heir from a large family, the officials from the different departments within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire may not even recognize him.

Gao Sheng too would need to ask someone else for help, etc...

Luo Feng didn't want to owe favors too much for no good reason! These sort of favors weren't easy to return.

Milky Way, Earth.

China, Hope survival base.

"I say my little sister, when will your husband return? Also! When will those outer space fleets leave?" Xu Gang sat in a chair, smoking on cigarette after cigarette, obviously feeling anxious and flustered.

There was no way to not feel panicked!

"Big brother, you are panicking, but you are still much better off than all the ordinary people living outside." Xu Xin reprimanded him angrily, "Right now it's not just you, the entire world's upper echelon are all waiting...waiting for Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God to send some news over. We cannot do anything but patiently

wait, slowly wait!”

Xu Gang took a deep breath.

They could only wait!

It wasn’t just him, everyone on Earth was anticipating. Against this universe interstellar fleet...the entire Earth’s human population was like a child without even a single trace of resistance, Earth’s countless people were all silently anticipating, hoping...that Earth’s pride, the three warriors at the peak of Earth’s strength, who were in the distant depths of the universe would be able to get them a chance of survival!

Yes, Luo Feng and the other two, in the distant Jade Rock Star, were working hard for Earth!

.....

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

On Earth, Asia, Europe, North America...across all the large continents or sea bodies, human silhouettes were seen flying past in the skies! Within a short half a day of the universe outer space fleet arriving on Earth, the news couldn’t even be hidden at all, majority of the population had already found out.

Look?

That man with a height of 3m, green skinned, eyes big as bowls, that obviously isn't someone from Earth!

Countless strange humans flew from the cities in the air.

The ordinary folk of Earth were all dumbfounded.

……

The Nuolan Shan family fleet was currently engaging their plan from four fronts!

"Sir Pula, we've communicated with the native beasts of Earth, we've discovered a few strange sea bodies! Over there…in that region, also known on Earth through various books and studies as the renowned Bermuda sea." Three Star level 8 spirit readers respectfully led the way, the handsome Pula followed them and flew over.

Bermuda, its name and reputation was too huge on earth.

There were many books on earth introducing it, the Nuolan Shan family fleet too had scanned every bit of data and book on earth, hence coming to know of Bermuda.

"Rumble…"

The four rushed straight into the sea.

Swiftly descending!

“Lord Pula, look, over there.” The three star level 8 spirit readers were somewhat excited.

Pula looked and scanned carefully.

In the distance, there was a blur enormous white silhouette, with them gradually getting closer, the white blur image began to get clearer. This was an incredibly huge, bigger than every of earth’s skyscrapers, an enormous pyramid! This pyramid itself was without a single scathe or trace of degradation.

There wasn’t even any weeds or water plants.

It was fresh as though it was brand new!

“Lord Pula, this white pyramid is 1200m tall, it’s entire structure is floating in the sea.” A slightly fat black skinned spirit reader amongst them explained.

“Pyramid!”

Pula’s eyes lit up, flying closer, trembling slightly as he extended his hand to carefully touch the surface of the pyramid. The strange thing was…the entire pyramid’s body was a silver white color,

there wasn’t even a trace of any alloy connectors, almost as though this 1200m high silver pyramid was completely irrigated to form the shape this way.

“This, this this…” Pula’s eyes grew brighter and brighter, his entire body trembling, “This is…”

“A big treasure, a big treasure!” Pula’s eyes flushed red, excited to the max.

Chapter 45 – Extreme Excitement

Floating within the Bermuda ocean, was an enormous silver white pyramid, at a height of 1200m tall, even though it's been there for tens of thousands of years, time hadn't left even a trace or scar on it's surface!

"This is...an automaton universe ship!!!"

Pula was extremely excited.

The Automaton Race!

Even though the human race had always been known as one of the leading races within vast universe, however, there were still other races that were able to go toe to toe with the human race! The Automaton Race was one of them! Accurately speaking... everyone of the Automaton Race were living AIs, the technology of the entire race had advanced to an unbelievable level!

Also...

Every one of the Automatons were absolutely powerful fighters!

As they are different from humans and did not require going through the slow process of training, the living AIs only required a powerful body, with enough powerful battle skills and techniques within their memories, they would immediately become powerful fighters! Theoretically speaking, no matter how strong the

Automatons were, they had no way to become Undying Beings! However...the Automatons actually broke this curse, with several Undying Being within their race!

Just like the one that died on the Yun Mo Planet ship!

“The Automaton Race, the race with highly advanced technology.” Pula’s eyes lit up, “Our entire human race within the universe, a lot of it’s technology was taken from the Automaton Race themselves.”

“An automaton universe ship, usually even the lowest grades are c grade, the way I see it, this is probably a d grade, or even higher.” Pula couldn’t tell specifically, unlike the humans who used the metals and alloys in a more distinct way, which was easier to tell what sort of metals were used. What alloy! The universe ship, etc, constructs from the automaton race, humans had no way at all to tell just what they were made of.

The feeling of it...it might be a new material altogether.

Hence, a D grade ship from the automatons would usually be regarded immediately by humans as a D9 grade. It was the best in the grade! One automaton ship’s price was extremely expensive, much more expensive than a ship of the same grade built by humans.

“Entrance, where’s the entrance?” Pula shouted.

“Lord Pula, the entrance is on that side! However the entrance is extremely dangerous, we threw some broken weapons in and they were all immediately vaporized into nothing.”

“That’s a good thing!”

Pula excitedly flew over.

The entrance of the pyramid was close to it’s bottom, it was a beautiful mysterious triangular like pathway, the cabin door was opened much earlier, but no one was capable of entering it.

“Analyze the strength of the attacks.” Pula flipped his hand, a reserved weapon that he used before appeared, it was a very long sword.

He casually threw it over.

The sword flew into the triangular pathway.

“Chi...” The mysterious three-colored light beam shot out from the three sides of the pathway walls, brushing past the sword, the sharp and incredibly sturdy sword produced a slight rustle of noise before being vaporized into powder and subsequently nothing at all.

“Good!” Pula shouted excitedly, “Even a C2 grade weapon was easily destroyed!”

What did it mean?

It meant that normal Universe level 2 fighters couldn't even withstand the attack.

"The stronger the better." Pula's eyes lit up, throwing out a second reserve weapon, an exact copy of the weapon before. These reserve weapons weren't worth much...before, it was a strength weapon, now it was a spirit weapon.

"Chi chi..."

This time, the sword received the three colored light wave, slightly trembling before breaking apart a little, however, the speed this time was much slower.

"It's having a harder time breaking the C5 grade?" Pula nodded, his smile growing wider, "Very good, extremely good."

An universe ship, strongest attack would definitely not be at just the entrance of the ship, because these sort of entrances had to maintain their defenses for an extremely long time, moreover, it's simply just the entrance, hence it couldn't be the strongest weapon on the ship.

Like the black dragon mountain x81, the entrance's attack could only kill normal Star Traveller level 2 or 3 warriors. Yet it's laser cannon was of a B6 grade.

“The entrance pathway alone is that powerful!”

“This ship, it’s lowest grade would probably be a D grade! It could very well be an E grade ship!” Pula’s eyes lit up.

“If it’s a D grade, a D grade automaton ship, it’s equivalent to a human race D9 grade ship!” Pula was extremely excited, this ship’s every detail and power was extremely exaggerated.

With a diameter of 100m, a ship just like the black dragon ship, C5 grade.

A cheap C5 grade. With a diameter of 100m, would be priced at several hundred million. And the C9 grade, even if it was purely made of alloys, would be close to 10 billion Black Dragon dollars! After all, the C9 grade’s defensive capabilities were tens of times stronger than the C5 grade.

As for the D grade!

A Universe level warrior and a Domain Lord usually rode in this level of ship, the Nuolan Shan family’s first head Nuolan Shan himself sat in a D5 grade ship, spending 20 billion Ganwu dollars for it!

D1, that alone was about 100 billion Black Dragon dollars.

D9 grade, even if it was all alloys, was at least one thousand times more than the D1 grade! One could say, one had to sell ten to one hundred life planets before being able to afford a D9. Hence, to a Domain Lord, even this was expensive. Of course...The prices mentioned were all referring only to the ships with 100m diameters. As for those with a height of 1200m like the pyramid, at the D9 grade, with a huge body, the material used would be even more.

The price naturally would be absurd!

One could say...

Most Domain Lords couldn't even afford it!

"D9 grade, diameter 100m, if we sold off the entire Nuolan Shan's family fortune, we could still afford it. However, for something at 1200 tall...The entire family fortune wouldn't even come close to being enough." Pula's eyes were gleaming, "If this pyramid is e grade..."

Five minutes later.

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

Within a large hall.

The 8 heirs stood side by side, a screen appeared before them, on it was the head Yu Ke Nuolan Shan.

“Teacher!” Pula said determinedly, extremely excited, “We’ve discovered on Earth an Automaton Race universe ship within the sea.”

“Automaton Race?” The head’s expression on the screen seemed stunned too.

“Yes, teacher, also, that automaton ship’s height is 1200m, it’s lowest possible grade is also D grade.” Bula said.

D grade, it was the common ship of most of the Domain Lords! It’s price was definitely absurd.

Also, it was a D grade, the most popular and expensive, of the Automaton Race, and it was even 1200m tall!

“This, this…” Yuke Nuolan Shan’s eyes lit up too.

“Teacher.” Another handsome youth said loudly, “Not just that, we’ve also discovered here on Earth…that Earth was attacked by a Swallowing Beast not long ago. This Swallowing Beast, in actual fact, was a space beast of the best and elite bloodline, the brutal and savage Golden Horned Beast! Of course, this Golden Horned Beast back then was only a Star level 1, it was only an infant.”

“Golden Horned Beast infant?” Yuke Nuolan Shan became even more shocked.

A Golden Horned Beast infant, if it was alive, it's price would be many times that of the automaton universe ship!

Maybe, the E grade automaton ship's price could compare to the Golden Horned Beast infant.

However...

To the Nuolan Shan family, this too was an enormous treasure!

"However the Golden Horned Beast infant was said to have been killed, we are currently looking for it's corpse." The handsome youth said.

"Killed?" Yuke's eyes stared wide, taking a deep breath, he knew too that he had lost his composure, immediately staring at Pula, "Pula, hows the data gathering and sampling?"

"I was just about to report, we've completed gathering and sampling." Bula said.

"Very good!"

Yuke's eye's gleamed, "Immediately send a little ship with these data and samples, along with the space coordinates. Reach Jade Rock Star and request to buy this planet. This planet belongs to our Nuolan Shan family! We definitely, definitely cannot let anyone else take it away. Also! With regards to this Earth, we have to keep it all secret, with the highest degree of security."

“Yes sir!”

The eight heirs resounded together.

“Earth probably still has other treasures, the ones who understand it the best would be its native humans. Hurry up…with the quickest methods, control Earth’s humans. Use both gentleness along with force.” Yuke said.

“Understood.”

The eight heirs replied loudly.

“Very good, extremely good!” Yuke was obviously very excited.

A ship that even the Domain Lords would find luxurious, (This is only if it’s still a D grade), along with a space beast infant that would reach the pinnacle of Sector Lords just by maturing.

To the Nuolan Shan family whose strongest power was only at the Universe level 9.

These two treasures indeed would make them feel dizzy!

Chin, Kyoto headquarter city, Tianjin city.

Even though the universe outer space fleet had arrived, the ordinary folk still led their lives normally.

“Greetings humans of Eearth, how do you do!”

“We are from the universe, the Nuolan Shan family, we come in peace looking for friendship! Do not be suspicious of our strength and power...” Households’ televisions, computers etc immediate depicted the scene, a handsome pointy eared, akin to the legendary spirits male youth said in a peculiar language, beside him a screen automatically translating his words to English and mandarin.

“Look, this is your Earth’s Australia continent.”

“All it needs is one punch, and the entire mountain range will be destroyed.”

“All it needs is one punch, and this entire island will be gone.”

The screen flickered between scenes constantly, changing between the nine Star level 9 warriors performances. Watching the Star level 9 levelling a mountain with just one punch, the force of that powerful attack creating a devastating shockwave 100km past the scene. Earth’s humans were all dumbfounded...This, compared to the pinnacle of battles from before...

This was even more terrifying than Hong and Thunder God against the swallowing beast!

The effect of a single punch spread out over 100km!

This was simply akin to a large amounts of nuclear weapons!

“Of course.” As handsome as the spirits, the man Pula smiled, speaking to the humans of Earth, “We come here in peace, hence we will not attack any of the cities! Your earth’s five great countries and twenty three headquarter cities, after one hour, your so called emperor level monsters, we will throw ten of their bodies in all the headquarter cities!”

“If we wanted!”

“In one hour, we can destroy the Earth.”

Pula smiled, “However we come here in peace, but your Earth’s upper echelon, the so called elites are all hidden in those iron castles. This displeases us!”

“I hope, your earth’s upper echelon can come communicate with our Nuolan Shan family, giving us, who are from the universe, and your so called aliens some proper respect!”

“If your Earth’s upper echelon can’t even give us any respect! And rejects our goodwill…”

“Then, we won’t mind using force and brutality to conquer you all!”

Pula smiled, “I’m giving you 12 Earth hours, discuss well. If after 12 hours, we still don’t see see any of Earth’s upper echelon, and don’t receive any little form of respect, then we’ll use the brute force, every hour, we’ll destroy one of your so called headquarter cities.”

Rumble!

Pula talking on the television, internet, was like a trillion ton nuclear bomb exploding, leaving all of humanity on Earth dumbfounded.

12 hours!

The humans of Earth only had 12 hours to discuss and prepare, and after, every hour would result in a destroyed headquarter city! One headquarter city, usually had up to 100 million people! When they saw the frequent aliens flying about in the air, the aliens occasionally displayed their overwhelming power. Seeing the emperor level beast’s bodies being thrown about like ants in the pathways of the headquarter cities and plazas.

Humanity was thrown into chaos!

Even the Earth’s upper echelon within the survival bases were all in a mess!

“You are all traitors!”

“You are all betraying the human race! Over 6 billion people, can you bear to watch them all die?” For the sake of being one of the so called elites, you forsake 6 billion over lives? Luo Feng? Hong? Thunder God? Who knows when they’ll reply or return? I object, I object! The aliens aren’t necessary brutal or savages!”

……

“Relax, don’t be deceived by this Nuolan Shan family’s kind appearance! It’s all an act, it’s fake, the moment we open the survival base, they’ll rush in here and it’ll be too late for us to regret!”

“They are incomparably powerful! Destroying Earth would be too easy for them!”

“For what do they have to resort to pretending to be kind to us? We, the elites of Earth, just what meaning would we have to them?”

“You see, they said it themselves, when the time comes and we don’t go out and communicate with them. They’ll destroy one headquarter city every hour! We’ll lose hundreds of millions of lives.”

“Can everybody please seriously consider and think about it, the moment the majority reaches 2/3 of us, we’ll act.”

……

“I advise everybody here to make their decisions cautiously!”

“Your every vote will determine the lives of the 6 billion people outside! Yes, 6 over billion!!!”

……

“Please just wait alittle while, just wait! Luo Feng and the other two are on a distant planet fighting hard for us! This survival base was brought over by them, please believe in them! The moment we give up, if we make a mistake, then the entire human population on Earth will fall into an endless abyss of darkness.”

……

“I simply cannot watch as 6 over billion people get massacred, 6 over billion! This number alone is crushing me!”

……

During the time the people’s hearts were chaotic in the survival base.

Chaos was breaking out everywhere outside, madness! Silent protests! Pickets! All these plus a few madmen who had begun robbing and breaking into shops etc…millions and even tens of

millions of people kneeling and begging, begging the upper echelon leaders to save them, to negotiate with the aliens

There were even people shouting loudly that this was all a ploy from the aliens!

Anyway, chaos had consumed everybody!

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng, hurry and receive the call.” Xu Xin sent a call request to Luo Feng, at that time, surrounding her were Luo Feng’s parents and family, along with some of the countries’ upper echelon.

Many people were waiting...

On the distant planet and space, Luo Feng and the other two, all waiting for their good news!

Jade Rock Star, Empire government branch.

“3 hours 29 minutes, everything has been settled, I didn’t let Mr Luo Feng down.” The official smiled as he stood up, his face covered in sweat from the anxiousness and worry from before as he rushed, “Congratulations Mr Luo Feng, from now on, you are this planet...Earth’s leader. Oh, I should change my greeting to call you leader, congratulations, Leader.”

“Thank you!”

Luo Feng smiled as he said, within, his heart was racing with excitement, beside him, Hong and Thunder God too were fighting hard to contain their excitement.

Chapter 46 – The Projection in the Sky

After the procedures were all done, within the citizen database of the black dragon mountain empire, Luo Feng's status was officially changed to 'Planet Leader'.

"Let's hurry and leave Jade Rock Star!"

"Let's return immediately."

"Right, immediately contact Earth."

Luo Feng Hong and Thunder God rushed with their greatest speed towards the planet's docking bay, taking their silver grey universe ship and leaving Jade Rock star, beginning the universe travel.

Within the dark space.

The ship continued to advance.

Luo Feng, Thunder god and Hong were each in their own cabins, entering into the Virtual Universe Network.

Within the Virtual Universe Network, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God appeared out of thin air amidst

a crowded spacious alley, the others glanced at the three with a sense of disdain. This was because...in the virtual universe, only people without property would appear in the middle of the alleys. People with their own property would appear at their own place!

“Third brother, we are rich people, let’s buy a house in the virtual universe next time.” Thunder God couldn’t help but to say quietly.

One could imagine, Thunder God on Earth was so much above everybody.

In the virtual universe, he was actually looked down on.

“Before, we had little money, we couldn’t spend much. However, it’s possible now. Let’s buy a big house!” Luo Feng nodded, within the virtual universe, the moment one purchases a house, he could place his own and his close friends, etc virtual universe numbers to the house, the moment they were all linked, everybody would appear within that house.

Otherwise...

For example Luo Feng and Xu Xin, as one of them is on Earth while the other is in a distant space, the two entering the virtual universe simultaneously would never appear on the same alley.

Unless Hong, Thunder God and Luo Feng were together in reality, thus they would appear at the same place.

“We’ll talk about this later, let’s hurry and contact Earth.” Hong said.

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

The three swiftly found a restaurant and entered a private room, immediately contacting Earth.

A screen appeared in mid air.

On the screen, Xu Xin appeared.

“Luo Feng!” Xu Xin let out a face of happiness.

“Xu Xin, what’s going on on Earth now?” Luo Feng, Thunder God and Hong looked at the screen.

“It’s really bad!”

Xu Xin said anxiously, “Look at this footage!” Normal people entering the virtual universe network usually used the assisting quantum computers or AI quantum computers, even though Xu Xin was using the conscious transmitter helmets, it’s efficiency was still much stronger than Earth’s regular computers.

Xu Xin uploaded the footage of Earth into the virtual universe and played it!

“This was from the broadcast.” Xu Xin explained.

“Du!”

The footage began to play!

“Humans of Earth, how do you do!”

“We are the Nuolan Shan family from the universe, we come here in peace! But don’t suspect our power...” The same footage that was played in every household of Earth,was replayed for Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God. These three were earth’s elites, none of them were stupid or gullible!

Finishing the footage, they knew that matters were worse than they thought!

“Luo Feng. “Xu Xin said, “It’s extremely chaotic now, within each of the 6 survival bases, the upper echelon are all having opposing opinions. And the 6 over billion people outside are even more chaotic.”

Luo Feng, Hong and thunder god creased their eyebrows.

They obviously knew what would result from the footage and the backlash from it.

“Sister-in-law.” Hong said solemnly, “That footage said it gave the humans of Earth 12 hours, how much time has passed already?”

“It’s already been 4 hours and 8 minutes.” Xu Xin immediately replied.

“Good, we’ll contact you all again in half an hour.” Hong said.

Du!

The call was ended.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God looked at each other.

“Right now third brother is Earth’s leader, using the law to intimidate the Nuolan Shan family should be useful.” Thunder God said.

“Yes, they are only one big family from the Kaluo empire, against something like the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.” Hong nodded, “They definitely wouldn’t dare go against them.”

“I understand.”

Luo Feng agreed too, however, I was thinking, just relying on the law angle, probably isn’t enough. The best way is for our own strength to significantly increase! That’s why I was thinking...let’s

see if we can buy a Universe level 1 slave."

"Universe level slave?" Hong and Thunder god stared.

"I'm just considering, I haven't exactly made the decision." Luo Feng pondered, "If...the price of the Universe level 1 slave is reasonable, it'd be a good thing. After all his power would definitely be sufficient, with strength to spare!"

Hong and Thunder God nodded.

Even though there was the law within the universe, it was still relative to who it was against. The Black Dragon Mountain Empire's laws, had a great intimidating effect on the Nuolan Shan family because the Nuolan Shan family was much weaker than the Black Dragon Mountain Empire. If it was Luo Feng's teacher, the master of the Yun Mo Planet who was to come snatch a planet, the Black Dragon Mountain Empire wouldn't even be able to touch him!

One's own power had to be strong enough!

"Du, du du..."

Luo Feng made a call request to the slave owner he bought from back on Dragon Star. He was indeed a businessman, it only took a few seconds before they were connected. On the screen, a skinny green haired man with a wide smile and full of enthusiasm appeared.

“Mr. Luo Feng, very nice of you to look for me, it really makes me happy!” The green haired man was extremely enthusiastic.

“Wula!”

Luo Feng smiled as he asked, “This time, I would like to ask you, is your boss able to…get a Universe level slave!”

“Universe level slave?” The green haired man stared.

The highest a slave can ever get is only the Universe level, to be able to turn a Universe level warrior into a slave, the first condition was to capture him alive, rendering incapable of resisting and implanting the microchip. To be able to do something of this degree, one not only had to stronger than the opponent, he still required many other factors to work together.

“If you are serious, we can definitely get one! There’s stock!” The green haired man looked at Luo Feng, “It all just depends on whether Mr. Luo Feng has enough money.”

“A Universe level 1 slave, how much would it be?” Luo Feng asked.

“That’s a trillion dollar figure, so much so that the actual deal would usually be settled in Ganwu dollars.” The green haired man warned Luo Feng.

“Give me a figure.” Luo Feng pushed.

The green haired man looked at Luo Feng with surprise, the first time he met Luo Feng, he had already felt that Luo Feng was definitely one who had received the best education and upbringing, his whole aura was different. He never expected...for Luo Feng to return and question about a Universe level slave, this was definitely something not any normal person could afford.

“10 trillion Black Dragon dollars, about 10 billion Ganwu dollars.” The green haired man said, “And this is the lowest.”

“Damn.” Luo Feng cursed inside.

“Take it that I never asked.” Luo Feng was direct, “Wula, we’ll chat again later, I still have matters to attend to.”

“Haha, what I’ve got is time, call me whenever Mr. Luo Feng.” The green haired man was still extremely enthusiastic, as a businessman, he had to be this way. He was very clear...a customer like Luo Feng, with frequent good service and care, making him happy, who knew when the customer might return with a big order.

One large order alone would let them earn plenty!

Du!

The call ended.

Within the private room, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God looked at each other.

“The price is so absurd, I still thought about 2 or 3 trillion Black Dragon dollars would settle it.” Luo Feng mumbled.

The first batch of money his teacher left him was 10 billion Ganwu dollars.

Buying the Earth required 3 trillion Black Dragon dollars, if he paid using ganwu dollars, he only required 2.1 billion ganwu dollars. Obviously the Black Dragon Mountain Empire was more willing to accept more Ganwu dollars. And right now, Luo Feng’s capital was only 7.9 billion Ganwu dollars plus a few hundred million Black Dragon dollars.

“It’s quite shocking.” Hong and Thunder God nodded.

“Haha, Luo Feng, you’ve gone stupid, wanting to buy a Universe level slave?” A sharp piercing evil voice resounded, it was Babata on Luo Feng’s shoulder, “You have to know when a Universe level warrior joins any empire, he would receive over 10 planets immediately. Even though they are normal life planets, put them together and they’d be worth close to 10 trillion Black Dragon dollars. Even though the Universe level 1 is the weakest among the Universe levels, but 10 trillion Black Dragon dollars and up is definite! And this is only at Universe level 1, if it was the higher levels like 2 or 3, or even 6 or 7...damn, it’d be even more shocking!”

Luo Feng was stunned, replying curtly, “Why didn’t you say so earlier?”

“I was playing a virtual game, much more fun than talking to you all.” Babata said contently.

“Virtual game?”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were speechless.

“That requires money.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but say.

“Playing a virtual game only costs so much, playing for a million years would only require 100 million Black Dragon dollars.” Babata couldn’t care less, his attitude left Luo Feng speechless.

The other assisting quantum computers and AI computers, no matter how intelligent, would never go against the master’s orders and do whatever it wanted.

And Babata, having already evolved into a living AI, with the capability to feel pain and happiness, and awareness, making his own decisions etc, was no different from a normal person! That’s why he liked playing games...and he happened to be Luo Feng’s virtual assistant, everyone entering the virtual universe had a virtual assistant.

Many of the procedures within the virtual universe was done via the virtual assistant.

That's why, when Babata withdrew the money...within the virtual universe's system, it determined that it was Luo Feng who ordered Babata to withdraw the money. Hence it would definitely allow it! After all, no one asked Luo Feng to actually use a living AI as his mini quantum computer, AI computer.

"Alright!"

"Luo Feng, you've now become a planet leader. Immediately order the empire to send you the ownership rights as proof and through the Virtual Universe Network, send it to Earth. Then, let all the countries of Earth broadcast it all publicly! Also, broadcast the Black Dragon Mountain Empire constitution concerning territory ownership once, the Nuolan Shan family is after all only a small family within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, they wouldn't dare go against it!" Babata said directly.

"Of course, you first have to record the footage of them on Earth!"

"If they were to go against the empire laws, they'd be courting death." Babata said confidently.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God looked at each other.

They were indeed ready to use this method, but they hadn't

thought out carefully their plan of action.

“We do it this way!” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up.

“Little guy, why are you so clear about the empire laws?” Thunder God looked stunned as he rubbed Babata’s head.

“Don’t touch me! And don’t call me little bastard! You have to call me...demon lord, do you understand?” The demon Babata stared at Thunder God before closing his eyes and ignoring him, continuing with his virtual game.

Stuck in emptiness for 50 thousand years, to be able to enter the virtual universe, how could the demon Babata not play to his heart’s content?

As for the safety of Earth?

What did it matter to him? To the demon Babata, it didn’t mean much, mostly it was only because of Luo Feng that he came up with some plans for them.

.....

According to Babata, Luo Feng swiftly recorded the footage along with some of the data and proof he received from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.

“Just like this.” Luo Feng looked at Hong and Thunder God.

“Yes, no problem.” Thunder God pondered a little, “It’ll definitely work.”

“Almost.”. Hong nodded.

“Then I’ll first send all these over, after that, I’ll leave it to those on Earth to act.” Luo Feng took a deep breath and began to request the call from Xu Xin.

Milky Way, Earth.

The Nuolan Shan family’s warriors were swiftly scouring Earth’s every corner, especially with over 1000 star levels, in terms of speed, there were many that were much faster than the Swallowing Beast from before. A life planet with a radius of 6,400km, to them, covering one whole round was easy.

Earth, China, Shenlong district.

“It’s unbelievable!”

“My god!”

“This, what is this…”

Including Pula, the eight heirs of the family along with many star level 9s of the Nuolan guard were shocked at the depths of Shenlong, that enormous 800m diameter round ball was constantly emitting poisonous gas around it, just what was this round ball? It was like a round ball mountain, and the poisonous gas it was emitting had already affected the two careless searchers from before, one was a Star level 3 while the other a Star level 5, they both immediately rotted from the gas.

“It’s definitely a treasure.” A group of people stared at the poisonous round ball, to emit a gas that could kill star levels, it definitely wasn’t a simple toy.

Du! Du! Du!

Du! Du! Du!

In an instant, the eight heirs’ quantum computer resounded.

“Lord, above China’s survival base in mid air, a large screen has appeared! Look.” The eight heirs’ quantum computers all lit up, displaying the scene.

……

At the time, everyone of Earth’s household televisions, internet networks all immediately switched to the same scene. At the same time in China, India and the six great survival bases, through these bases, 3D images were projected above in mid air! The large image

shone across the sky.

3D projection, it was enormous.

Even from 100m away, one could still easily see it with the naked eye.

“Kaluo empire Nuolan Shan family, how do you do.”

“I am Luo Feng.”

“Not long ago, the planet of which you are on, Earth, has become my territory.” A large voice resounded through every household’s televisions, computers, even across every country’s broadcast, resounding through the air, “This is the Black Dragon Mountain Empire proof of ownership.”

On Earth.

The originally unbridled, excited and proud Nuolan Shan family members were all stunned, be it those watching their own screens or the other watching the huge projection up high that seemed like a god, in the image, Luo Feng was speaking with confidence, beside him the proof of ownership appeared. Luo Feng was using universe language, at the bottom of the projections, mandarin and English subtitles were displayed.

“Is, is this real?”

“It’s indeed proof from the empire.”

On earth, all the members of the Nuolan Shan family were shocked.

The big projection.

Luo Feng held in his hand a virtual book, that was the Black Dragon Mountain Empire’s <constitution>, Luo Feng’s expression was serious as he flipped the pages and read: “According to the Black Dragon Mountain Empire’s constitution chapter 12, section 61, 62 and 63. Without the permission of the planet leader, barging and invading a planet will result in the invaders being deemed as space pirates! Your Nuolan Shan family didn’t know before that this planet had a leader, it’s not considered a crime. But right now I’ve told you all, this is my territory!”

“As the leader of Earth, I request for you all to…”

Within the huge projection, Luo Feng raged and scolded, “Leave my territory immediately! Otherwise, your Nuolan shan family will gain the status of space pirates and incur the wrath of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire’s army!”

“Wrath! Wrath! Wrath! Wrath! Wrath!”

Billions of household television, computers and other forms of broadcast resounded, Luo Feng’s voice echoed almost like the

tsunami throughout every corner of earth.

On Earth, whether it was those hiding in their houses, or outside, or engaging in robbery, everybody went silent. Whether they were watching from home or on the streets, they could recognize, the man talking confidently on the screen, was Earth's humanity's pride...

Luo Feng!

Chapter 47 – Should we Retreat?

Silence.

Within all the headquarter cities of Earth, countless people were all totally silent.

Within Europe, Paris headquarter city.

A whole group of people who were protesting were all lifting their heads in anticipation as they watched the screen, yes, they were protesting being abandoned by the leaders of their countries. They were requesting for Earth's upper echelon to come out and work together with the Nuolan Shan family. However, that was only because...Earth had no defensive capabilities against the Nuolan Shan family!

Nobody wanted to end up a slave, unless they were twisted in their minds!

This group of people didn't want to become slaves, if there was a way...to not submit to the Nuolan Shan family while gaining their freedom and lives, they would definitely be willing.

"Luo Feng!"

"It's actually Luo Feng, look at the screen, it seems this group of aliens are probably also from that Black Dragon Mountain Empire."

“This Black Dragon Mountain Empire, is a country within the universe?”

“Luo Feng is from Earth, how did he become a planet leader on the universe scale? And also Earth, our leader?”

“Who knows.”

In terms of knowledge, Earth’s humans weren’t stupid.

From the speech Luo Feng broadcasted all over, they easily deducted...the Black Dragon Mountain Empire was powerful on the empire level, much much stronger than this seemingly huge and vast Nuolan Shan family. And their Earth’s pride Luo Feng, had become the planet leader within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.

Elation!

If Earth wanted to ever mix with the universe, and for anybody to ever become their leader, the humans of Earth would definitely hope it’d be one of their natives! Even more so, since Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God had already reached god status on Earth, for any of them to become Earth’s leader, there would hardly be any rejections on earth by anyone.

“Who knows if Luo Feng’s words will do anything.”

“This Nuolan Shan family doesn’t even know whether to retreat or not.”

Everybody was worried…

……

Earth’s six great survival bases.

“Luo Feng, this planet leader status, will it help us?”

“An empire in the universe, it cannot be exactly the same as how we do it on Earth…it may not be accurate!”

“Just watch, there’s going to be an outcome soon.”

……

On Earth, whether it was the billions of ordinary folk, or the upper echelon, they were all waiting, waiting to see the reaction of the Nuolan Shan family.

Luo Feng and the other two sat within the ship, proceeding back through the dark space.

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

Within the restaurant private room.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God watched the screen floating before them, maintaining contact with Xu Xin.

“Xu Xin, what’s happening?” Luo Feng asked, “What’s the reaction of the Nuolan Shan family, are they retreating?”

“The satellite scan indicates that the two battleships are still parked above the Pacific ocean, no movement.” Xu Xin was very worried, “Maybe the people from the Nuolan Shan family are discussing things.”

“No movement?”

Luo Feng’s eyebrows creased.

“They have the guts not to leave.” Beside, Thunder God’s eye’s gleamed, “If they don’t leave, we’ll record their actions and send it over to the empire headquarters, naming them as space pirates. The Black Dragon Mountain Empire is a very strong middle level civilization within the universe! They definitely won’t allow this family to do as it pleases!”

“If it was an extremely huge family, that’d be hard to say.”

“But the Nuolan Shan family, against the Silverblue Empire or that level or empire, would be a hard pill to swallow. However against the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, they are nothing but

ants!” Thunder God said confidently.

These words made both Hong and Luo Feng nod.

“It doesn’t matter what we say.” Luo Feng’s eyebrows creased, “We can only see what they decide to do!”

Luo Feng and the other two maintained contact with Earth, silently waiting…for news from that side!

Earth, in the air above the Pacific ocean.

Two huge interstellar battleships were floating in mid air, in one of their control rooms, the eight heirs were standing, raging and pissed off.

The extreme joy and excitement from finding the strange huge round ball before was all gone from their minds, now all was left was frustration.

“Earth’s leader?”

“This earth actually has a leader?”

“What do we do now?”

They couldn’t stifle their rage.

Anybody would know, the moment the Nuolan Shan family chose not to retreat from Earth, they would have serious consequences! Earth's leader, meaning everybody on Earth were all his property and territory! Invading one's territory plus engaging in wanton looting, this sort of behavior was definitely not allowed by the empire, they would immediately be deemed as space pirates.

Space pirates, or also known as space bandits. They were hated by every huge empire, they were immediately killed!

"Follow me to meet the head." Pula said solemnly.

"Yes."

The other seven complied.

This sort of news, they could only let the head decide their course of action.

A whole half a minute later.

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

Within a luxurious villa's living room, the eight heirs stood at attention, before them a screen floated and the screen displayed two, one was the current head Yuke Nuolan Shan and the Elder

head Dewen Nuolan Shan.

“Teacher, Elder, this is the public broadcast footage on Earth before.” Pula said respectfully.

Immediately, the footage was played.

When they say the proof of ownership from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, the two heads’ expressions became ugly.

Especially during the footage, Luo Feng even took out the constitution and read from it, this enraged them even further.

“Leave my territory immediately! Otherwise, your Nuolan shan family will gain the status of space pirates and incur the wrath of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire’s army” The footage’s last sentence, left the two heads at a lost for words, there was a huge treasure on Earth before, and now suddenly it has become someone else’s territory!

“Earth, is this Luo Feng’s territory?” Yuke couldn’t believe it.

“Yes, teacher. I just checked. There is indeed a record within the empire, Luo Feng must have just become its leader today.” Bula added.

“Bastard!”

Yuke Nuolan Shan bit down angrily.

“Just who is this Luo Feng? Which family?” The elder beside creased his eyebrows in dissatisfaction.

“He is one of the top three warriors on earth, he’s current level should be a Star Traveller level 9, I estimate it to be so.” Bula said respectfully.

“What, an Earthling?”

The head stared wide eyed.

Earthling?

An aboriginal from an aboriginal planet, suddenly became the planet’s leader? One must know that to buy a planet, even the person who discovers it getting a discounted price, for a planet like Earth which was a life planet with the highest level of pricing, would require at least 3 trillion Black Dragon dollars!

It was something that was impossible for normal people, that’s why he asked which family he was from!

“Yes, an Earthling.” Pula nodded.” It’s probably that Earth had several treasures which he sold and earned enough.”

“Earth’s treasures?”

The two heads thought of the automaton universe ship, feeling the pinch of the loss! That was an automaton ship, the lowest level was a D grade. Much more valuable than their entire Nuolan Shan family fortune! This sort of ship's operation, or even to conquer it, with it's entrance defense, would at least require a Universe level 5 or 6 to have a hope of breaking in.

"Teacher, what should we do, should we retreat?" Bula said nervously.

"Elder, should we retreat?" The other heirs were all extremely worried too.

"We don't have a lot of time to hesitate, the longer we stay on earth, the more likely we'll be deemed as space pirates." Pula said anxiously.

The head Yuke Nuolan Shan bit down angrily, "Bastard! That Luo Feng, I want to kill him!"

"Retreat!" The elder's expression was malevolent, he cursed softly.

The eight heirs were stunned.

"Elder!!!" Yuke Nuolan shan looked shocked as he stared at the Elder, "Are we going to just give up like this?"

The Elder said angrily: “Yuke, have you gone senile in your head? If we don’t give up like this, no matter how valuable that automaton ship is, what’s the point? The moment we become space pirates, the empire’s army will destroy our entire family without any problem at all. Don’t tell me, just because of Earth’s treasures, you are willing to sacrifice the entire family?”

“We, we…” Yuke Nuolan shan hesitated.

“Yes, we can escape. But the entire Nuolan Shan family, was built from our ancestors hard work for many many years. Don’t tell me you want all of this to go in vain?” The elder scolded.

Yuke Nuolan Shan went silent.

That was right.

The ancestor back then, also known as Nuolan Shan, the founder of the family, independently created the Nuolan Shan family. With his family last name, strengthening it through tens of thousands of years before actually being able to make it progress to such a level today.

“Retreat!” The elder gave the order, Yuke Nuolan Shan sighed softly.

Pula and the other heirs looked at the two heads before complying, : “Yes!”

On Earth, following Pula and the other heirs' orders. The Nuolan Shan family members who were originally scattered across the globe swiftly headed straight back towards the battleships to gather. As for the entire retreating process...since they were already retreating, the Nuoan Shan family definitely wouldn't be secretive about it. In fact, they did it openly in public, letting the Earth's leader know and not have any reason to report back to the universe empire's court.

The six great survival bases.

Through the satellite, the Earth's upper echelon all clearly saw the Nuolan Shan family with its huge number of people and troops swiftly gather at the battleships.

"Haha, they are retreating."

"They are really retreating.

"They've begun to collect everybody and everything."

"One by one, they are all entering the battleship."

"We've won!"

"We've won!"

"Victory!"

The extremely excited Earth's upper echelons, willfully shouted loudly, displaying their elation! And this news swiftly reached Luo Feng and the other two in the distance dark space through Xu Xin.

……

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God looked at the screen, that Nuolan Shan family troops were gathering from all across the globe, entering the battleships.

"Looks like they are really retreating." Thunder God's eyes gleamed.

"Don't be anxious." Hong stared at the screen, "Let's wait for the battleships to actually leave earth before saying."

"We are about to succeed." Luo Feng too held his breath as he waited.

Waiting for the two battleships to leave Earth!

"Rumble…"

The two enormous interstellar battleships, under the surveillance of Earth's many satellites, finally began to increase their speed and fly upwards, quickly leaving the atmosphere.

This entire scene, was directly broadcasted to every country on Earth, every base's household television, computer screens.

"The day we held our bated breaths, the day that left us all in fear, the day that left us in despair! We had already given up originally, thinking that all of us were about to be conquered by the Nuolan Shan family from the universe, however, when that enormous 3D projection appeared in mid air, seeing that image... we thought about back then, that duty bound honorable image that plunged into the depths of the sea to fight it out with the Swallowing Beast. Yes! We've been conquered by him, he, is a true hero! Yes, hero!!!" On television, the reporter couldn't control his emotions as tears rolled out continuously.

On every television in every country, the scene broadcasted was that same scene, however each used their own language to speak.

"Victory!"

"We've won!"

"We've won."

"Haha..."

A few of the silent sitting protests people who were watching the huge screen, the scene of the two enormous battleships picking up and leaving, all jumped up, crazily shouting excitedly.

“Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God, the three who, the moment they found out about the expected invasion of the Nuolan Shan family, risked their lives and entered the universe to fight it out for our Earth’s single chance of survival. They’ve succeeded, yes! The three have succeeded!” On television, they played the footage of Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God’s incomparable elation.

This footage, was something Luo Feng and the other two sent over via the Virtual Universe Network.

“It’s too emotional, I’m just going crazy.”

Within the universe ship’s control room, Thunder God was extremely excited, “Truthfully, when I saw that the entire Earth, every base, every place, countless people shouting and celebrating, with people kneeling down and kissing the land. I felt so emotional my whole body shivered, I know…this is our race, our root, they our fellow people, our fellow people!!!”

“Yes, we’ve succeeded, succeeded.” Hong was calm, his eyes too were moist.

“I too cannot bear to stay here in the Virtual Universe Network anymore.” Luo Feng’s emotional state was incomparably high, “Looking at the entire Earth’s situation sent over, I feel so emotional that my head is bursting.”

“I want to go home, to Earth.” Luo Feng shouted within the ship’s control room, “I want to return to Earth now, return there now!”

“Me too!” Thunder god nodded.

“Yes, return home.” Hong nodded.

They were extremely emotional!

The universe scout ship was continuously proceeding within the dark space, heading towards Earth’s coordinates.

Unlike the joy that the humans of earth and Luo Feng were experiencing.

The people in the Nuolan Shan family’s two battleships were extremely enraged, the leading battleship, the eight heirs were in the control room, not a single smile could be seen.

“Bastards!”

“Dog shit.”

“How did it turn out this way?”

“This Luo Feng, how did he become the Earth’s leader, and so quickly?”

The atmosphere was cold and tense, it could drive people crazy.

“Du!”

Pula creased his eyebrows slightly, the other heirs looked towards him, Pula said solemnly, “The head wants to meet me.” Finishing that, he immediately went towards his own cabin.

Within the Virtual Universe Network.

The current head Yuke Nuolan shan and the elder Dewen Nuolan shan were standing there, respectfully, beside them, stood an incredibly skinny, eyes looking extremely vicious with pointy ears man. He was donned in a dark green battle uniform, on his chest there was a peculiar axe medal.

“For the family?”

“Thinking about me?”

This man was extremely furious, “It doesn’t mean a thing for the family, back then when I started this whole thing from scratch and built the entire family! I can do it all over again if I need to! The most important thing is power! It’s power, do you all understand? Right now I’m already at the Universe level 9, just a little more and I’ll reach the Domain Lord level! If I had a huge amount of immeasurable wealth, I can invite an Undying warrior to teach me, with that I’ll be able to breakthrough, and when that happens, I’ll have a 100 era lifespan. Then, the Nuolan Shan family will become even more glorious!”

“The wrath of the empire?” What a joke!”

“The family’s elite will immediately take the ships and travel through the universe. If it comes to it, we’ll leave the Black Dragon Mountain Empire!”

“Those planets, we can just throw them away!”

“Later when I become a Domain Lord, the Nuolan Shan family will be stronger by a hundred times!: The man said coldly, “What’s more, it’s not like our entire Nuolan Shan would have to leave right away after looting earth. It would be a waste afterall to give up all of our planets.”

The two heads, in front of the head ancestor, didn’t dare utter a word.

“Du!”

A notice sound rang.

“Oh, the brat leading the fleet has arrived.” The man, only now did he reveal an ice cold smile.

Chapter 48 – Nuolan Shan's Order

Pula stood respectfully, a screen appeared floating before him, on it appeared a human image.

"Eh?" Pula was stunned.

There were a total of three people on the screen, one of them was his teacher Yuke Nuolan Shan, the other was the elder, and these two were respectfully standing at the side of a man dressed in a dark green battle uniform, and on this man chest, there was a peculiar axe medal, this made Pula's heart race within with a torrent of emotions.

A battle-axe medal!

This was a display of proof of absolute strength amongst the warriors, it was one of the Five Leviathans, the Battle-axe Coliseum, proof of experiencing life or death situations over countless time, the greatest honor! The Battle-axe Coliseum, along with the Virtual Universe Network Company, the Universe First Bank, Universe Galaxy Bank and the Universe Mercenary Alliance, were the Great Leviathans of the universe!

The Battle-axe Coliseum allowed its members to kill amongst themselves while others bet.

For example, when Universe level warriors dueled, it placed the two Universe level warriors on an uninhabited planet or in space, under the supervision of the Battle-axe Coliseum and broadcast,

battling to the death! Only when one side has died will the other be considered victorious! Its death percentage for every battle was a 100%, this was because in a battle to the death, everyone who dared to duel all had their own ultimate ability.

The contestants, were called the fighters of the arena.

Winning ten matches, one would acquire the Battle-axe Coliseum's title warrior.

Winning one hundred matches, would acquire the title warrior king.

Winning one thousand matches would acquire the title of 'Battle-axe warrior'.

That means to say...under Nuolan Shan's hand, there were over one thousand dead Universe level warriors! Every battle to the death was a definite risk and danger, a challenge to one's life! To be able to win one thousand matches, that was the true mark of a Universe level, a true 'most powerful universe level fighter'. This didn't really mean invincibility though.

The so called Star Traveller level domain fighter, to be invincible within one's own level.

These were just 'nicknames.'

But the Battle-Axe warrior status, one actually had to risk his life

in match after match of deadly battles, swapping one thousand Universe level warriors' heads and blood to prove it! It goes to show how powerful Nuolan Shan was! In the Nuolan Shan family, the first Nuolan Shan was almost just like a legend, within the Kalo Empire, the Nuolan Shan family was the solidly placed third family!

The first family was the royal family, they had a Domain Lord.

The second family was the Wei Di family, its main power was in Black Dragon Mountain Empire, stretching all the way to the Ganwu Empire, it's entire complete power was much much more powerful than the royal family.

The other families behind, many families had Universe level 9 warriors, however...Nuolan Shan family was still the uncontested third family! With a huge number of Star level warriors willing to join, also excluding Nuolan Shan himself, with his disciples and other family members, there were a total of six Universe levels!

Six great Universe level subordinates!

To be able to build an eight thousand man Nuolan Shan guard army! The Nuolan Shan guards were all at Star level 9! The number of life planets they controlled in total exceeded one thousand!

This, was all built from Nuolan Shan himself!

Nuolan Shan, a legendary being!

.....

Even though it was said that one galaxy usually only produced one Universe level warrior, however the moment there's a teacher to guide, the efficiency would rise by a lot more, (just like earth, they could actually be forced by the Yun Mo Planet master to reach the Sector Lord level, this showed the benefits of having a teacher). Looking at the Silverblue Empire, maybe the number of Universe level warriors was little and pathetic. However in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, to control over eight thousand galaxies, such a powerful and vast empire, with many many ancient families, there were even Undying Beings!

Hence, the number of Universe level warriors was definitely plenty!

Hence, the universe battle-axe warrior, even within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire still meant quite a big deal. Of course the Domain Lord battle-axe warrior and the Sector Lord battle-axe warrior within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire were like myths, that was because the entire Black Dragon Mountain Empire only had so few Domain Lords. Hence the number of participants was much much less!

Hence...

In over a million to ten million years, the vast Black Dragon Mountain Empire had only produced one Domain Lord level battle-

axe warrior.

As for the Sector Lord battle-axe warrior, that was a myth in the Ganwu Empire!

“Battle-axe warrior, Universe level battle-axe warrior!” Pula was so excited his heart trembled, “Within the entire Black Dragon Mountain Empire, the current ones who are still alive and have been awarded the Universe level battle-axe warrior title, there’s only twelve of them. Six of them are currently still at Universe level 9, four have become Domain Lords and two have become Sector Lords.”

“Head ancestor!”

“I’ve finally got to see the Head Ancestor.” Pula was extremely excited.

“Your name is Pula?” The man whose eyes were piercing and vicious looked at Pula, “I’ve heard of you, you are our Nuolan Shan family’s youth who’s most likely to reach the Universe level.”

“Pula greets the head ancestor.” Pula was excited within, being extremely respectful.

“Hm.” The man nodded. “I heard you discovered on Earth an automaton universe ship, and the corpse of a Golden Horned Beast infant?”

“Yes!”

Pula said, “The automaton ship is underwater on Earth, only thing is the ship’s entrance defenses are too strong, we have no way to enter. And the Golden Horned Beast infant indeed landed on Earth, however…we had too little time, the amount of places we managed to seach was too little, we haven’t found the infant’s corpse.”

“Ship, Golden Horned Beast infant’s body!” The man couldn’t help but tremble within, as a battle-axe warrior, the friends he had made and the things he had seen were beyond normal. He was very clear that this sort of extremely valuable item like the Golden Horned Beast’s body, was something Undying Beings would be willing to buy, even the Ganwu Empire would definitely want to buy it to dissect and research.

Undying Beings, Ganwu Empire, this sort of power and buying power, any casual price thrown out would far exceed the entire Nuolan Shan family’s fortune by many times.

“The ship is secondary, the Golden Horned Beast infant body is the real treasure, even if the body is treated and used as a specimen, it’s still the pinnacle of luxurious treasures to obtain.” The man was highly anticipating.

Pula said, “We are worried, whether the infant’s body has already degraded…”

“Impossible!”

The man said, “The Golden Horned Beast has an internal world to support it, even if it dies, after a thousand years, its muscles degraded, its bones and scales will still remain. What’s more, the date you sent shows it’s only been dead for three years.”

“Pula.” The man said coldly, “I order you...From your fleet’s brightest and elite warriors, form a small group to stay, they will take a small inconspicuous ship to stay on Earth! The aim is to find the golden horned beast’s body!”

“Stay on Earth?” Bula was shocked, “Head ancestor, Earth has a leader...”

“So what if they have a leader?”

The man said coldly, “I’m only ordering a small elite group to conceal themselves on Earth to look for the Golden Horned Beast infant’s body! Even if they are found or revealed...wouldn’t just letting that group be deemed as space pirates suffice? What proof could Earth have that that little group is from the Nuolan Shan family?”

Let that little group impose as space pirates?

“Head ancestor, we just left and space pirates immediately appeared? Wouldn’t the people from earth suspect us?” Pula said.

“Remember!” The man said coldly, “According to empire laws,

what they need is proof! Without proof, even if they know clearly that these are Nuolan Shan family people, without any proof to submit...that these people are from our family. Then, that Earth leader Luo Feng won't be able to do anything anyway!"

"Understood." Pula nodded.

"Go!" The man ordered, "Ensure that we find that Golden Horned Beast infant's body."

"Head ancestor, we've found another peculiar treasure on Earth, take a look." Pula immediately played the footage, it was the poisonous round ball they found in China, Shenlongjia.

"Treasure?"

Nuolan Shan's gaze was ice cold, he was originally watching the footage calmly, but his face displayed a sense of shock and fear, immediately ordering, "Pula, I do not allow any of you to go near it! Listen to me clearly, I definitely do not allow it at all! Do not act on your own!"

Yuke, Dewen, the two heads were very shocked, they had never seen the head ancestor so flustered and angry before.

"Head ancestor." Pula was stunned.

"Why are you still here?" Nuolan Shan ordered coldly, "Remember my words, do not touch that thing, you must

definitely never touch it.”

“Yes, yes, yes.” Pula was shocked, immediately following his order and leaving the virtual universe.

……

“Head ancestor?”

Yuke Nuolan Shan, Dewen Nuolan Shan, the two heads looked at the head ancestor with curiosity, Nuolan Shan simply said softly, “Don’t ask so much, let’s just hope it’s dead, if it was alive…” Nuolan Shan seemed as though he had seen countless galaxies destroyed, his body couldn’t help but to tremble a bit.

“Earth? Earth?”

“Just what is this place!”

Nuolan shan felt fear from within, “Even if Earth had countless treasures, I would still definitely never go there. As for the automaton universe ship, it requires a Universe level 5 or 6? Hmph, I’ll send a disciple, I can’t go there personally, if that thing was alive, I’d never be able to escape alive!”

Solar System.

The two enormous battleships flew out of Earth simultaneously,

a ship with a diameter of 100m flew out from within one of the battleships, turning on it's screening and camouflage systems, just like Buluo back when his little group of explorers had first arrived, carefully re-entering Earth. With the capabilities of the C grade universe ship camouflaging itself, the humans of Earth had no way at all to detect it.

"Tuoleiwu!"

"This is the order given by the Head ancestor, you must complete the mission. These are the specific details."

"Remember, no matter what happens, you must definitely never let any proof of you all being members of the Nuolan Shan family be captured by the people of Earth."

There were twenty Star level 9 and sixty Star level 7 and 8 fighters.

This was the Nuolan Shan family's little elite group.

With Earth oblivious to them, they quietly entered Earth, not disturbing anyone, and began their mission in searching for the Golden Horned Beast infant's body.

Within the dark space.

Luo Feng and the other two were still in their ship heading towards Earth.

“Haha, after going through this once, the future will definitely be much easier.” Hong laughed.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were extremely happy.

“Yes! Even if they know that earth has treasures, however, if they send anyone over…they would have to go through the wormhole and enter the dark space district, then it’d take another two years and eight months to reach.” Thunder God was proud, “Two years and eight months, that’s so much time, we’d be extremely prepared by then.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Yes!

After this batch of people leave, even if the Nuolan Shan family sent a Universe level warrior, it would still take him two years and eight months to reach Earth. By then…

“My Golden Horned Beast’s body, would long have reached the Universe level.” Luo Feng was extremely elated.

Chapter 49 – Capture!

Earth, South America, the Amazon jungle.

A universe scout ship had entered into the amazon jungle's rivers, deep underwater. Along with its own signal masking, camouflaging systems etc, it was impossible to detect. Deep somewhere in the forest, one after another, soldiers dressed in dark blue battle uniforms were either sitting crossed legged on the ground, nestled against a tree or sitting on the branches.

The fearsome beasts within the forests didn't even dare approach or get near them.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

4 human silhouettes rushed out from a distant river, these 4 were dressed in black uniforms.

"Captain!"

A group of soldiers stood up and shouted in unison in universe language.

This time, the Nuolan Shan elite little team had a total of 20 star level 9s and 60 star level 7s and 8s, they were divided into 4 little groups. Each group was led by a different leader, their names Tuoleiwu, Rong Zhi, Aeman and Abuluote, amongst them Tuoleiwu was the main in charge.

“Yes.”

“Since everyone has arrived, speak, you were all each in charge of different oceans, did you search result in anything?” Tuoleiwu said seriously, he was a strong and sturdy back skinned man, his hair was a peculiar mix of black and green. Even though there were a total of 20 Nuolan guards and they were all star level 9s.

However...

A good comparison was how Luo Feng could kill enemies 3 or 4 levels above him! Similarly within the star level 9, different people had different battle levels. The universe level 9 Nuolan Shan had killed over 1000 universe levels, more than half of them were universe level 9s!

Same grade, same level, the difference in their battle capabilities and strengths were still vastly different.

Tuoleiwu!

He was amongst the top 10 in the 8000 strong Nuolan guards, just he alone would be able to hold off up to 10 normal star level 9s!

“Captain, we couldn’t find anything, we couldn’t find the swallowing beast’s body at all.”

“Right, our little group here was in charge of the Atlantic ocean, after a few days of landing, we’ve combed over the entire Atlantic ocean. But we still couldn’t find the swallowing beast’s body.”

“Same here.”

“Captain, what do we do since no one has been able to find it?”

A group of soldiers all looked at the 4 captains.

The 4 captains exchanged glances, Aeman, the one with the most intimidating body and build said seriously: “We have 80 people, we’ve spent so much time and searched every inch of earth’s oceans without any luck. The next step…are we to engage in Lord Pula’s plan?”

“Yes.”

Tuoleiwu nodded, “According to the plan Lord Pula gave to us, there are 2 possibilities with regards to the swallowing beast, 1, the humans have it either to dissect and research or keep, 2, they don’t have it, it’s body is still in the ocean. Since right now we’ve searched and there’s no sign of its body at all in the oceans, then they humans definitely have it!”

America, Washington base.

“What a beautiful day.” Boris Brent was all smiles as he walked out of the White House, in the distance, policemen rushed to help

open the car doors, Baoli entered the cars and 2 bodyguards swiftly followed and the chauffeur immediately departed.

"It was too cramped in the survival bases. With only that much space, it was too uncomfortable."

"Luckily, that group of evil aliens have all left."

Baoli smiled as he said to the black bodyguard beside him, "David, should I display some form of gratitude towards the noble Mr. Luo Feng?"

"Yes, sir." The bodyguard smiled, revealing a very white set of teeth.

"Ok."

Boris smiled and nodded, "According to the data we acquired from the virtual universe network, our earth is within the dark space, the next time aliens actually try and invade, would take at least a few years. Our people of earth are very confident. Look, the stocks which had dropped to near zero before are bustling and live again. David, if you had listened to me earlier, you would have earned a great deal of money."

The bodyguard maintained his smile.

Yes.

After experiencing that crisis, the people of earth were filled with hope for the future!

“Hello, hello, dear, I’ll be home in 5 minutes.”

“Yes, relax, I’ve already prepared a present, yes, I’ll give you a surprise later.” Boris smiled as he called, suddenly his expression changed. This was because he had just realized, the chauffeur had actually driven and parked the car in an unfamiliar road. Boris said, “Hey, This is the wrong way! Turn back!”

The moment the words left his mouth, he suddenly felt an extreme sense of weariness envelope him...

Be it the bodyguards, or the chauffeur, including Boris himself, they all suddenly fell into a trance, a state of hypnotism. The car continued to proceed, until finally it reached a desolate alley.

The car screeched to a halt.

Sou! Sou!

Two human silhouettes appeared beside the car, one was Tuoleiwu while the other was dressed in a dark blue battle uniform, with 3 eyes, this was another star level 9 out of the 20.

“Question him.” Tuoleiwu gave the order.

“Yes, captain.” The 3 eyed man looked at Boris, without speaking, the quantum computer spoke in english...

“Tell me your name.”

“Boris Brent.” Boris said dazed,

“The swallowing beast incident, where is that beast’s body?” The 3 eyed man’s quantum computer spoke basic English.

“No idea.” Boris ‘s eyes weren’t focused at all.

Tuoleiwu and the 3 eyed man glanced at each other.

“Where’s the most likely place the body of the swallowing beast could be right now?” The 3 eyed man asked again.

“The swallowing beast, was fought by the combined forces of the 6 great heroes and finally killed by China’s Luo Feng. Everybody thought back then that Luo Feng had died, but a year after, he actually returned alive. The countries all think...that wherever the body of the swallowing beast is, Luo Feng would know the best.” Boris said.

The 3 eyed man asked again: “Are there any other possibilities?”

“Either the other countries may have acquired it, or it was eaten

by the sea creatures.” Boris said.

The alley went silent.

“Captain?” The 3 eyed man looked at the captain.

“Luo Feng?”

Tuoleiwu pondered for a moment, opening his communicator, Rong Zhi, Abuluote, take your teams individually and capture the leading brains of the 5 great countries. I’ll personally take a team and go capture the close ones of the planet leader.

“Yes.”

The other 3 captains complied.

Yangzhou city, Westlake courtyard, Luo Feng’s castle.

The Nuolan Shan family fleet had entered universe travel and left the solar system, this was something actually recorded by the surveillance devices set up around the solar system. Since everybody knew that the Nuolan Shan family had left, large amounts of the people within the survival bases naturally came out, after all, the personal space within the bases was quite small.

“Ping ping, Little Hai, when you are home, listen to your grandfather and grandmother.” Xu Xin finished her lunch and

smiled at her 2 sons.

“Mama, I want to follow you out.” Little Hai shouted.

“Mama has some business matters to attend to.” Xu Xin kissed her 2 sons before heading to the car and leaving the castle.

Since the crisis had passed, life gradually returned to normalcy.

Large amount of powerful warriors were scattered around the castle’s surroundings, these were all what Luo Feng bought before.

“Run a little faster, Litte Hai is so fast.”

“Ping Ping, keep going, keep going.”

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan were happily on the grass outside the castle playing with their grandchildren. Beside in the distance, Zhen Nan was sitting in chair reading a book,just from watching Ping Ping and Little Hai made her look down and occasionally rub her belly.

“Remember, everybody must be careful.”

“The moment we act, we must swiftly capture the earth leader’s close ones.”

In mid air, with Tuoleiwu as the leading warrior, 20 beams of light swiftly flew towards Yangzhou city. Everyone of them brought with them a camouflage device, even on normal planets such as Bailan star, these could be used, much less earth.

“There’s another 300km, we’ll be there shortly.”

“We must be fast!”

The grass patch outside the castle, Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan were still playing with their grandchildren.

“Wuwuwu…”

“Wuwuwu…”

An extremely ear piercing alarm sound immediately resounded throughout the entire castle.

“Protect the little masters!”

Beside them in the distance were Meng 2 and 4 who were just standing by, their expressions changed and immediately became 2 beams of light, Meng 2 was a star level 7 spirit reader, her speed was absurd, almost instantly she was hugging Ping Ping and Little Hai. And Meng 4 swiftly hugged Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan, the other star level 1 guards swiftly hugged Zhen Nan.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

The grass patch was less than a 100m away from the castle, they swiftly rushed in, entering into the castle's master bedroom which was the place with the highest defensive capabilities.

"Rumble..."

The castle's defense system swiftly activated!

With the master bedroom as the core, 10 pathway gates immediately fell and locked dead! One had to know that the castle's core was made of c grade metals, guaranteeing that even a universe level attack wouldn't be able to breakthrough.

Within the bedroom.

"This, this, what is this?"

"This..."

Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan's faces were pale white.

"Grandfather."

"Grandmother."

The 2 children were very flustered.

“The castle’s security warning system has an area of 20,000m.” Meng 2’s expression was serious, he said solemnly, “According to the level of enemies approaching, the warning system will give out a different alarm sound. The alarm from before represented…that the approaching enemies were at least of our level. Their specific levels and strengths will only be known from checking the defense system.”

Virtual universe network, Black Dragon Mountain island.

“Sir, this manor requires 15 million black dragon dollars, it’s definitely luxurious and comfortable, suitable for your status and position.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god were looking at houses.

They were getting ready to buy a house within the virtual universe network.

“It’s really expensive, even the items in the virtual universe network are so expensive.” Thunder god snapped.

“Hold on a moment.”

Luo Feng realized that there was a call request, looking at the spirit imprint matched to the virtual universe network number, it was actually his own father.

“Du!”

An image appeared before Luo Feng.

His father Luo Hong Guo looked pale and terrified, saying anxiously: “Luo Feng, there are aliens attacking our home, the defense system shows that the enemies are 5 star level 9s, 15 star level 7 and 8s. I think that the Nuolan Shan family probably hasn’t totally left!”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God’s expression changed.

“Dad, attacking the castle? Are there any injuries?” Luo Feng said anxiously.

“Many of the guards have died, we and Ping ping and Little Hai, along with Zhen Nan are in the castle without harm. However Xu Xin and your little brother Luo Hua are outside because of work.” Luo Hong Guo said worriedly.

Chapter 50 – Extreme Anger

Earth, China.

Luo Feng's castle was a symbolic structure of Yang-Zhou city, but it was currently being attacked like crazy!

"BOOM!"

"BOOM!"

The entire castle shook again and again as it was attacked by lightning-like images using either their fists or weapons. The powerful shockwaves crazily spread out and, within a radius of a few km, destroyed the lawn of West Lake Courtyard, revealing the ugly dirt and stone below.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Large amounts of smashed rock flew around, which damaged a few streets and residential areas outside of West Lake Courtyard. The flying rocks were no weaker than bullets. Cries of pain sounded across with West Lake Courtyard in the center. The few surrounding km of West Lake Courtyard were filled with people, so the amount of casualties rose to the thousands.

Thankfully!

These star level fighters were all focusing their attacks on the castle. If they spread out, then one of their attacks could completely decimate a sector and cause damage to over a 100 km radius!

“What’s going on? We still haven’t broke it?”

Tuo Lei Wu in his black battle uniform hovered in front of the castle like a warrior god. His 19 underlings transformed into 19 flowing lights as they attacked the castle again and again.

“Captain!”

A dark blue image stopped near him and said in a hurry, “This castle definitely wasn’t created on earth. This is a transportable castle sold to the wealthy in the universe. The structure of the castle was constructed with safety as its top priority. Especially the central area of the castle, it’s definitely at a C rank safety level”

“Bastard!” Tuo Lei Wu’s face became colder and colder.

“Captain!” Another squad member instantly appeared beside him and hovered there as he hurriedly said, “We can’t breakthrough. We should just go and capture Luo Feng’s wife and brother”

“Luo Feng’s parents and two children are in the castle. They are his most important family members! Only by catching them can we achieve the greatest effect” Tuo Lei Wu’s face became worse and worse.

In the vast universe, powerful universe fighters usually have many wives.

Because a fighter's genes will improve the genes of his future descendents, for the sake of his family and race, they would usually have many wives! And..... some powers and families are willing to send up their women to stay with powerful fighters. So in the vast universe, powerful fighters have many wives, which means that the importance of a single wife is extremely low.

And the more powerful a fighter becomes, the fewer children they'll have!

For example, the 'Manka Planet people' become domain lords when they become adults. Their genes are extremely good, but their population is also extremely small. And beings like the 'Golden Horned Beast' are so few that they're almost extinct. Their population level is even lower than the amount of undying fighters in the universe!

A powerful fighter can have a huge group of wives, and yet very few children. And of course, one mom and one dad.

So a very natural idea was formed in the universe—— the most important thing to a powerful fighter is their 'parents and children'.

"Captain, earth usually goes by a monogamous system, so his wife is still important to him" said the squad member.

“Hmph, since this Luo Feng is the leader of earth and has a huge amount of wealth, he’ll definitely have more than one wife in the future” Tuo Lei Wu frowned as he said, “Whatever, since we can’t get to his parents and children, capture his wife and brother immediately”

“Yes”

The squad members obeyed respectfully.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Large amounts of flowing lights flew away, leaving behind only the extremely damaged castle and the ruined lawn.

Wuwuwuwu~~~

The sound of an alarm reverberated in the sky of Yang-Zhou city.

“Holy!”

“My heavens”

“This, this……”

As they stood on the ruins of destroyed homes, a group of police

looked into the distance with shock. In front of them, huge ditches that were a few km long and several dozen meters deep seemed to have been created from the blade of a deity. The beautiful West Lake Courtyard has already become a ruin. Other than the tattered castle that still stands, everything else has been destroyed.

"Luo Feng's castle sure is tough. The aliens blew past one layer of the castle walls, but the resulting shockwave has already destroyed the surrounding land and the walls of West Lake Courtyard"

Two high ranking military personnel talked on the car.

"How many people died?"

"812 deaths, several thousand injured"

"I can't believe the people from the Nuolan Shan family still haven't left!"

To earth overall, the destruction of West Lake Courtyard and the damage caused to the surrounding civilians is something big, but not big enough to threaten the entire world. The thing that truly shocked every county was..... that this showed the people from the Nuolan Shan family still haven't left.

"Xu Xin, hurry, hurry and get to the survival base"

"Yes, don't delay, right now"

Xu Xin, who received Luo Feng's notification from the consciousness sensor helmet she carried around with her at all times, arranged for a fighter jet to come as she prepared to fly directly to the survival base.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The fighter jet was directly dragged to the ground while it was still in midair.

HUA!

The hatch opened, and Xu Xin looked towards Nuolan Shan family's elite squad whose members clearly looked different from the humans on earth with an ugly face.

"Madam Luo, come with us" the mini quantum computer gave off an electronic sound.

One of the members grabbed Xu Xin's hand and directly dragged her out.

Whoosh! All of them flew away.

Other than the problems they had with capturing Luo Feng's parents and children, there was absolutely no problem in capturing the leaders of the five countries, Xu Xin, and Luo Hua.

Earth, South America.

Because of population issues, South America only has two headquarter cities. One of them is ‘Brasilia Headquarter City’, which is primarily made up of Brazilians from before the Grand Nirvana period. There were also people from other South American countries there too.

One of the courtyards in Brasilia headquarter city.

“Rong Zhi is back”

Three men in black battle uniforms raised their heads and watched as another squadron swiftly landed from the sky.

“Captain Rong Zhi, all of them have been captured?”

“Way too easy”

The four captains stood together. Because their spaceship was hidden in the Amazon Forest and they didn’t want to keep living in the forest while they were on earth..... they picked the nearby Brasilia headquarter city and chose a decent area to build a decent courtyard.

As for the original owner of this area?

He has long become fertilizer.

“Get all of them here” ordered Tuo Lei Wu.

“Yes, captain”

The leaders of the five powerful countries, Xu Xin, and Luo Hua were all escorted to the huge lawn of the courtyard.

“1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7!” Tuo Lei Wu looked at the seven people and revealed a smile, “It is my honor to meet you guys” he spoke in the universe language and the quantum computer automatically translated into ‘Chinese and English’.

The seven people here were no ordinary people. Nothing needs to be said about the five leaders of the five most powerful countries on earth. Xu Xin is Luo Feng’s wife and frequently uses the virtual universe network, so she understand a lot about the universe. Luo Hua has been handicapped for around 10 years and loves playing in the stock market, which tests one’s mind. When encountering something like this, he was naturally calm.

“May I ask who you are?” out of the five leaders, the American president was the first to ask.

“I, am just the captain of an extremely ordinary adventuring squad in the universe” smiled Tuo Lei Wu as he spoke in the universe language, “I want to ask you guys, I’m sure none of you have forgotten the swallowing beast incident back then?”

The seven of them slightly nodded.

“Good, you all are cooperating well”

Tuo Lei Wu nodded, “Then where is the corpse of the swallowing beast?”

A bit of confusion flashed across the eyes of the seven of them here. Tuo Lei Wu frowned in response: “Rong Zhi, hypnotize them and ask them. Don’t forget, especially the woman and the youth, don’t damage their memories. Later on I still need them to contact the leader of earth, ‘Luo Feng'”

“Don’t worry” smiled another captain.

His formless spiritual force seeped into each of their consciousnesses, and then he began his questioning.

“What’s going on, none of them know?”

“Not even Luo Feng’s wife knows!”

The faces of Tuo Lei Wu and the other three captains all changed. Their goal on earth was to find the body of the swallowing beast!

“Wake up!” yelled Rong Zhi.

The seven of them awakened, and all of them exchanged glances, their faces changing slightly.

“Madam Luo, I need you to enter the virtual universe network immediately. I will accompany you” said Tuo Lei Wu in a low tone, “If you don’t accept, you should know that many people will die. I’m sure, with your kindness, you will accept.....”

Xu Xin took in a deep breath and slightly nodded.

She had no choice!

Xu Xin had no power to resist this universe adventuring squad that can capture the leaders of the five powerful countries without trying.

Virtual universe.

Xu Xin and Tuo Lei Wu appeared on the street at the same time. Tuo Lei Wu brought Xu Xin into a room in a bar.

“Contact Luo Feng” commanded Tuo Lei Wu, “Remember, do as I told you”

“Okay”

Xu Xin could only send the invitation. In just a moment, Luo

Feng, Hong, and Thunder God appeared on the screen in front of them.

"Xu Xin?" Luo Feng's cold face finally let out some happiness, "You arrived at the survival base? You're fine?"

"I'm fine"

Xu Xin said, "Luo Feng, the humans from the universe squad that invaded our home captured brother Luo Hua, and then used brother Luo Hua's phone, and then called me, and then made me tell them where the corpse of the swallowing monster is. If I don't tell them, they'll kill brother Luo Hua. I don't even know where the corpse of the swallowing monster is, what should I do?"

Tuo Lei Wu stood in the corner of the room as he coldly watched.

According to his plan, he'll first get Xu Xin to ask her husband. It is easy to give out the information when a wife is asking her husband. If that doesn't work, he'll force out the information!

"Luo Feng, if you don't say anything, brother Luo Hua is going to die" said Xu Xin hurriedly.

"What are you asking this for, the corpse of the swallowing beast has already rotted away" Luo Feng started to become nervous, because he knew..... Xu Xin has been captured.

Because, Xu Xin has already been hinting at that fact.

When Xu Xin usually talks about Luo Hua, she'll usually directly say "your brother" or "Luo Hua". She wouldn't say something like "brother Luo Hua". And Xu Xin said "brother Luo Hua" several times in the conversation, and she spoke in quite a weird tone. And Tuo Lei Wu, who is relying on his 'mini quantum computer' for translations..... wouldn't be able to realize this at all.

"Mr. Leader!" an image appeared beside Xu Xin.

Luo Feng stared at the cold man in front.

"Don't lie to us like you lied to your wife! There is no way the corpse of the swallowing monster will rot away in a short three years. Tell me, where is it?" said Tuo Lei Wu in a low tone, "If you don't tell me, your brother, wife, and countless others will lose their lives"

Luo Feng stared at Tuo Lei Wu: "You're from the Noulan Shan family?"

"Nuolan Shan family? What do they have to do with us, are you joking" laughed Tuo Lei Wu. Suddenly, his tone became cold as he yelled, "Stop wasting time, are you going to tell me or not?"

"BASTARD!!!"

Luo Feng's expression was complicated.

“Ten seconds, if you don’t tell me in ten seconds, I’ll kill your brother first” said Tuo Lei Wu coldly, “10….. 9……”.

“Stop playing these childish games” Luo Feng stared at Tuo Lei Wu, “Don’t you want to know about the corpse of the golden horned beast. Stop saying swallowing beast, you think I don’t know?”

“Good!” Tuo Lei Wu laughed.

As an elite in the top 10 of Nuolan Shan’s guards, he indeed has heard of the swallowing beast. However, in Pula’s plan, everyone was commanded to just say ‘swallowing beast’.

“However….. I can’t completely trust you” said Luo Feng.

“I understand” Tuo Lei Wu nodded.

“We’ll exchange the people and the corpse of the golden horned beast at the same time” said Luo Feng coldly, “The corpse of the golden horned beast actually isn’t even on earth. It is on a uninhabited planet that needs around 10 days to reach while flying at a rate of 20,000 km/s. So, no matter how hard you search on earth, you won’t be able to find it.

Tuo Lei Wu’s eyes flashed as he complimented: “Nice, smart, Mr. Leader, I’m starting to respect you. Yes, a treasure like the corpse of the golden horned beast indeed needs to be hidden well”

“Tell me, where is it?” Tuo Lei Wu started to get a bit excited. The corpse of the golden horned beast was too important. It was way more valuable than the property of the entire Nuolan Shan family.

“Hmph”

Luo Feng sneered, “If I tell you now and then you end up killing people, what can I do?”

Tuo Lei Wu’s face sank.

“Hmph” Luo Feng sneered, “If we cooperate, I’ll give you some space coordinates. Arrange for some people to get there! As for me, I’ll also arrange for people to meet my family members and confirm their safety. At that time, you will release them, and I will tell you the exact location of the golden horned beast”

“If you can’t even accept this, then that means you were never planning to let my family members go”

“Then, we have no need for any deals!”

“It’s not like I can’t ruin your squad via the golden horned beast’s corpse” sneered Luo Feng.

Tuo Lei Wu laughed weirdly: “Leader Luo Feng is indeed straightforward. We’ll do as you say!”

“Alright!”

Luo Feng’s expression was cold.

Luo Feng swiftly arranged everything with Tuo Lei Wu and then ended the call.

“Wula” in a moment, Luo Feng contacted the slave market salesman again.

“Mr. Luo Feng, you said you want me to transport 100 star level 9 slaves to Bai Lan star within a day? One day is just too short! One days time, which is to say..... we have to complete the transaction within the Silverblue empire. Star level 9 slaves aren’t common to begin with. In a small area like the Silverblue Empire, even if I make arrangements with other salesmen, there aren’t that many”.

“Stop wasting time. Up to how many can you bring within a day. I’ll pay the full price” yelled Luo Feng.

“Eight! To reach Bai Lan star within a day, at most eight star level nine slaves can be sent. And you can’t pick their race, gender, etc.” the green haired man shook his head helplessly, “Mr. Luo Feng, is there really such a need to rush? One day, sigh, that’s just too short. It takes almost 10 days to transport from Dragon Star to Bai Lan star”.

Luo Feng was clear.

It was hard for the slave salesman to transport star level 9 slaves to Bai Lan star. Since there is a limit to how far you can fly in a day!

“If it’s eight at most, then just do eight!” said Luo Feng.

Chapter 51 – The Killing Fields

After finishing the call with Wula. 12 hours later, they reached Bailan Star.

The white snow fluttered about, extreme cold temperatures all about.

The ship landed within the warehouse bases, in front of a castle.

“Master.” The slave guards were respectfully waiting in front of the base.

“Yes.” Luo Feng swiftly exited from the cabin door, Thunder God and Hong followed behind.

“The metals Master ordered have arrived, they are all stored in the warehouse.” The slave guard captain said respectfully, “Also, the slave owner’s ship arrived too, delivering three slaves.”

“Ok.” Luo Feng nodded.

The metals he ordered, were the optimum combination the Golden Horned Beast required during the Star level, it allowed the evolution speed multiplier go up to eighty nine times! The metal groups he ordered the previous time cost 10 billion Black Dragon dollars, and right now, they were just about depleted, their multiplier efficiency had only reached fifty one times.

The slave guard captain watched as Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God entered the castle.

The slave guard captain was somewhat shocked, the Master usually had a smile when he arrived, yet why was his aura so angry and malevolent this time?

Ever since the possession, Luo Feng's killing intent and aura had always been heavily brutal and savage, it was only because of his wife and children that helped diffuse this malevolence, that and Luo Feng's own self control. This was why he was always courteous and never seemed to look down or bully anybody, one had to know...When Luo Feng first left the sea and killed Sago Nehru and Atkin, that was the Luo Feng without restraints!

This time, Luo Feng's killing intent and savage side couldn't be held back any longer.

.....

Within the top floor of castle on Bailan Star.

They had been on Bailan Star for about 9 hours, just at that time, the last five Star level 9 slaves were finally delivered.

"Third brother, you are taking the slaves back with you to Earth alone, don't you need us with you?" Thunder God stared wide eyed.

“First and second brother, the battle this time mainly relies on the Star level 9 slaves. You and I, have no way to intervene at all. The only reason I’m going is to direct and give orders faster. If I didn’t need to direct them, there’s actually no need for me to go at all.” Luo Feng explained.

Hong and Thunder God understood.

This battle was a battle between Star level 9 warriors, between the two of them, one was a Star level 1 while the other was only a Star Traveller level 9, going with them would be suicide!

“Third brother, you must be careful.” Thunder God couldn’t help but say.

“Don’t overdo it.” Hong reminded.

Luo Feng nodded, “I’ll be leaving first.” Ever since he found out about his wife and little brother being taken hostage, he had lost all sense of restraint, it was only because he needed to wait for the eight slaves that he held back till now.

At the entrance of the castle.

Hong and Thunder God watched as Luo Feng brought the eight Star level 9 slaves and took the ship, disappearing into the sky.

“Sigh…” Thunder God sighed angrily, looking to Hong beside him, “Big brother, don’t you feel really bad inside.”

“A little.” Hong slightly lifted his head, looking in the direction of which the ship disappeared.

“I don’t feel good either.” Thunder God exclaimed. “Before, no matter what level of danger we encountered, the two of us could still fight it out. Yet this time…from the start till end, the two of us couldn’t do anything at all! This feeling of helplessness, it’s really…really shitty! Feels terrible!”

“It is indeed a terrible feeling!” Hong nodded.

Hong and Thunder God, just what sort of people are they?

Over the decades, the two had always been Earth’s pinnacle of strength and elites! Whether it was the period of the Great Nirvana, or the incident with the Swallowing Beast! They could always fight it out and give their all!

Yet this time…The crisis brought about by the Nuolan Shan family, the two had no power to help at all!

“Our power is simply too weak.” Hong said solemnly.

“Yes, we are too weak.” Thunder God nodded, “It’s not just us that are too weak, even third brother’s power is too weak! Right now we are relying on the power of money…and our own strengths and powers? Two star level 1 warriors, one Star Traveller level 9. Compared to the Nuolan Shan family, the difference is just

simply absurd.

Hong said solemnly: “Let’s go to the virtual universe.”

“Virtual universe?” Thunder God froze.

“The virtual universe is the place within the entire vast universe where countless people and powerful warriors gather. We have to find a path that fits us!” Hong said.

Within the Virtual Universe Network.

Hong and Thunder God sat within the corner of a bar, Hong relied on his quantum computer to search for data.

“How’s it coming?” Thunder God asked.

“I’ve found it, a very suitable place for fighters to train.” Hong nodded, “However this place, the price is very high! According to the difference in levels of power, the amount to be paid is different, but they are still expensive!”

“Third brother gave us each 500 million Ganwu dollars! That’ll definitely be enough.” Thunder God said.

“It is enough, 500 million Ganwu dollars is a huge sum of money.” Hong nodded, “however, as we grow stronger, even the 500 million Ganwu dollars will be used up.”

“What is this place?” Thunder God couldn’t help but ask.

“The Killing Fields!”

Hong slowly explained

For a fighter to raise his powers, does he rely on simply hard training? Unless one was a Manka person, or something like the Golden Horned Beast, with a strong natural bloodline to naturally reach the Domain Lord or Sector Lord! However…even the Manka people, after reaching the Domain Lord, would still require various methods to train and work to breakthrough.

Want to raise one’s power?

Battle!

Battle was the best method! The best way was to battle one that was on par with one’s own strength! A battle that forced one to his limits and feel the imminence of death!

“Right, big brother, the time when our powers rose the fastest was during the Great Nirvana, it was during that period that we had to face many many different kinds of monsters. But as our powers overtook that of the monsters, our evolution speed too slowed! Over decades, we only rose by three levels.” Thunder God said.

“Yes.” Hong’s eyes gleamed.

A fighter that didn’t battle, how could he still be considered a fighter?

……

Hong and Thunder God had indeed found a more suitable path, battle was indeed one important path for upgrading one’s powers, this was also the reason why the powerful fighters and spirit readers, over 99% of them joined the Universe Mercenary Alliance. This was also why the Battle-axe Coliseum, a terrifying place where there was a definite death every battle, was still popular and functioning!

To one who acquires the title of Universe level Battle-axe warrior, the probability of reaching the Domain Lord could be said to be 50%!

While for normal Universe levels to break into the Domain Lord level, the probability is absurdly low.

……

“This is the Killing Fields?” Hong and Thunder God entered a large hall, this hall was enormous, comparable to even a city, however there weren’t too many people within.

“It’s truly imposing.”

Thunder God looked within the large hall, the huge 'blood' backdrop, caused him to compliment.

"How can it not be imposing? This place's prices are extremely expensive, I'm a Star Traveller level 9, a day here requires 1 million Black Dragon dollars or 700 Ganwu dollars. This is definitely not something an average person could afford." Hong couldn't help but say, 1 million Black Dragon dollars is enough to even buy a huge warehouse base on Bailan Star.

Over here, just one day was enough!

"But many people are still willing to come." Thunder God couldn't help but say, "didn't you see the advertisement, whatever kinds of enemies, they can completely customize them to your request."

"Indeed, that's what I like about here." Hong took a deep breath.

Killing Fields!

This was an extremely extravagant battle place, the customer, could request from the Virtual Universe Network with whatever he wants. For example, Hong was a Star Traveller level 9, his domain was at the 2nd level, he could totally request for a Star level 9 with domain level 3, this was extremely difficult to do in reality.

He could also request for a hundred Star Traveller level 9 warriors to surround and attack him.

These sort of meetings, were extremely rare in reality. However in the virtual universe, they were all possible!

Of course…

There were still differences between the virtual universe and reality, otherwise, the Battle-axe Coliseum wouldn't be so popular.

"Tulu, you'd made big this time no?"

"Still ok, however we lost three of our people from our little team! No choice…several small teams discovered the new world together, how could we not engage in battle? And who knows which Sector Lord created the new world, within it there were several treasures that I didn't manage to grab hold of, at least we managed to get 10,000 of the universe crystals, it's considered quite an earning."

"10,000? This world, there's definitely more to be excavated there!"

The three men walked past from beside, on their left chest were medals, the picture of the medals were blood red waves floating about a planet.

"Universe 1 star mercenaries."

Hong and Thunder God looked at each other.

The Mercenary medal the Battle-axe medal, etc, these were all medals recognized within the virtual universe, through the virtual universe's customer screening through their quantum computers or AI systems, while checking the user's data, it automatically recorded these details. The users could choose whether to display these or hide them.

"What in world were they talking about?" Thunder God couldn't help but ask.

"They were talking about a Sector Lord, I've also heard that Sector Lords are capable of creating another world." Hong shook his head, "Anyway, that's still too far from where we are, let's go, let's enter to battle."

"Right, battle."

Hong and Thunder God thus began their days within the Killing Fields...

Over here, many of the strong and powerful within the universe frequented the place. If they met any enemy in reality, they could totally enter the Killing Fields and custom an enemy similar to the one in reality and begin the battle! Of course...there were bound to be several differences between the virtual universe and reality.

You could never possibly customize an enemy or opponent to be 100% similar to reality.

When Hong and Thunder God were experiencing ‘death’ time and again within the Killing Fields, and also the feeling of killing the opponent time after time, after about 8 hours of universe travel, Luo Feng’s universe ship had finally arrived on Earth!

China East side, within a particular wilderness area.

A man dressed in a blood red uniform, eyes gleaming from with rage stood there. Behind him, stood a row of eight people, the shortest about 1.2m while the tallest was about 4m tall. There were both men and women, one them in particular had a lion’s head .

Yes!

These were the eight star level 9 slaves Luo Feng had purchased! Due to time constraints, Luo Feng didn’t have much to choose from, hence this eight slaves had very big differences from the first batch that he bought. The first batch had appearances that were very similar to the humans of Earth, without careful analysis, one couldn’t even tell.

“From now on, you cannot be over 100 meters away from me.” Luo Feng said using universe language.

“Yes, master!”

Whether it was a loud reverberating, or deep and resounding, or clean and crisp voice, the complex mix resounded, the eight star level 9 slaves replied respectfully.

Luo Feng was expressionless, there was a fire raging in his eyes.

“Babata, enter the entire planet’s satellite network, through the countries’ surveillance systems, look for traces of those scum from the Nuolan Shan family.” Luo Feng gave the order.

“Yes!”

Chapter 52 – Rescue Mission

In the wilderness, Luo Feng and his eight slaves were patiently waiting.

“Luo Feng, those scum must have hidden their signal, and they are using camouflage systems, the countries’ surveillance systems cannot detect them.” Babata was obviously dissatisfied, “Oh, wait!”

“What’s wrong?” Luo Feng listened intently.

“I realized…that there’s an AI system that has hacked into the Earth’s satellite network. Hehe, and it’s a little punk!” Babata was obviously excited, “Oh, I’ve found it. This AI level probably corresponds to a basic level AI, it has entered the Earth’s network, the entry point being south America, Brasillia headquarter city.”

“South America?” Luo Feng grinned slightly with a cold smile.

Hua!

A ship appeared in mid air beside him, the cabin door automatically opening.

“Let’s go!” Luo Feng ordered.

The eight great slaves followed him into the ship.

……

Flying from Asia to South America, even though Luo Feng's speed was incredible, it would still take awhile. Using the universe ship however was extremely fast! Just like the Nuolan Shan family, Luo Feng's ship naturally had its own signal masking and camouflage systems and abilities, with Babata around, Luo Feng's ship could camouflage itself even better than the Nuolan Shan family's.

South America, Brasilia headquarter city.

The villa that Tuo Lei Wu and his men had taken over was about 60km away, the ship floated.

"Remember, no one is to leave more than 100m away from me." Luo Feng stared coldly at the eight great slaves, "At the same time, no one is to make a single sound, understood?"

"Understood."

The eight great slaves replied.

"Very good, let's go." Luo Feng flew out of the ship first and the eight great slaves followed.

The nine of them swiftly headed towards the villa.

The little elite team probably would never have suspected that with their far more advanced technology than Earth, the only reason why they were finally discovered was because their AI had hacked into Earth's network systems and got discovered. There was no way around it, compared to Babata, that AI's capabilities were far too inferior.

"It's that villa in front." Babata reminded.

Luo Feng and the eight great slaves floated in mid air.

However, the light around them was somewhat warping, causing the nine who were floating in mid air to be invisible to the people in the district below them. This sort of camouflage was purely a result of the study of light systems to hide oneself from sight. To the warriors and strong however, as long as the distance was close, they could totally feel each other's energies.

"Babata, have you checked on the situation inside?" Luo Feng asked.

"My scanning system radius is 20,000m, why don't you even take a look at where my security surveillance system is from? It's actually taken from the Yun Mo Planet ship!" Babata was extremely confident, back then on Misty Island, he relied on this security surveillance system to scan every human's strength, potential, even the breadth of their brains he scanned from far.

The Yun Mo Planet ship!

Hu Yan Bo's ship! Just how advanced was his security surveillance system? Checking in on a group of Star level 9 warriors was too simple.

"Hehe, they actually even installed a defense mechanism? Haha, in front of me, it's all a joke."

"Hoho, take a look. 15 Star level 9, 19 Star level 8, 26 Star level 7 warriors. The Nuolan Shan family has a total of sixty people. The captured...hm, they are the leaders of the five great countries along with your wife Xu Xin, and your little brother Luo Hua." Babata easily scanned everything.

As long as it was within the 20,000m (20km) area, he could easily scan everything clearly.

"Sixty people?" Luo Feng's eyebrows creased.

Fifteen at Star level 9 and forty five at Star level 7 and 8.

Their strength was double that of his!

Luo Feng didn't know...

There was a separate group of twenty that was in a ship leaving earth, heading towards Luo Feng's given coordinates, ready to search for the Golden Horned Beast's body.

“Babata, give me everyone’s specific locations along with the entire blueprint of the villa, etc.” Luo Feng was very clear, he needed to be extremely careful in this rescue mission, just a small hiccup would result in undesired consequences.

Within a short time.

“From now on, I will give you your orders through the mini quantum computer.” Luo Feng’s gaze swept past the eight great slaves, “You need to be extra careful.”

“Understood, Master.” The eight great slaves replied solemnly.

“Let’s go!” Luo Feng gave the order through Babata to their quantum computers.

The eight great slaves didn’t even reply, following Luo Feng into the villa, the nine reaching the foot of the wall.

“The four of you will stay out here and stand guard, be prepared for orders.” Luo Feng ordered.

The four nodded, not daring to make a sound.

“The rest will follow me.” Luo Feng too didn’t make a sound, only directing.

Luo Feng and the other four sneakily began to enter the conquered large villa, luckily with Babata's scanning and surveillance, any person's position and movement were all within his grasp. The only thing was...Luo Feng still didn't dare get careless, even controlling his heartbeat to the point where it was stopped for awhile, after all, the weakest on the enemy side was still at least a Star level 7.

They were all extremely vigilant people!

Even heartbeats could arouse their suspicion and notice! Controlling one's heartbeat to temporarily stop wasn't necessarily a hard thing, normal Student level fighters could slow down their heartbeats already, Star Traveller fighters could even stop their hearts for half an hour, much less Luo Feng who was a Star level 1 spirit reader. He could even simply destroy his heart and nothing would even happen!

"There's someone heading here, he'll discover you in about 1.1 seconds."

"On the left, 52m away there's someone coming down the stairs."

"In front..."

.....

Babata's frequent warnings made Luo Feng and the other four extremely nervous and careful.

Within the villa, in a particular building, a luxurious room on the third floor, there were two Star level 9 fighters standing guard.

Within the room.

Tuo Lei Wu sat crossed-legged, currently within the virtual universe reporting the situation to the family head.

“Head ancestor, Nuolan Shan guard Rongzhi is leading a small team and is currently heading towards the destination, I estimate they’ll reach fifteen days later.” Tuo Lei Wu stood at attention, his eyes filled with excitement and worship, the human silhouette on the screen before him was the man with the highest power and authority within the entire Nuolan Shan family!

Tuo Lei Wu was filled with great pride and passion.

To be able to meet with the founder of the family, this was such an honor. One had to know even the elite heir Pula only got to meet Nuolan Shan for the first time also because of this incident.

“Fifteen days?” Nuolan Shan’s gaze was cold, the corners of his mouth curling slightly.

“Very well, you currently have the position of ‘Great Captain’ right.” Nuolan Shan said casually.

“Yes, Head Ancestor.” Tuo Lei Wu said respectfully.

“When this matter is done, you will be promoted to commander.” Nuolan Shan said directly, “and be awarded with a family medal.”

Tuo Lei Wu and the others were all outsiders, hence normally the highest position they could ever achieve was as a commander! Of course…if they reached the Universe level, they’d become something the Kaluo empire, Silverblue Empire, etc would fight to have. Staying within the Nuolan Shan family, they naturally would receive an even higher position, comparable to even the heads.

Tuo Lei Wu looked happy and excited, replying loudly, “Yes, Head Ancestor!”

“On earth, be more careful with the captured leaders and hostages, don’t let anything happen.” Nuolan Shan warned.

“Head Ancestor, there definitely won’t be anything that’ll disrupt the plan, I guarantee with my life!” Tuo Lei Wu was extremely confident facing the Head Ancestor.

Nuolan Shan slightly nodded.

He was satisfied with the way his underlings were handling matters seriously.

“Luo Feng, in front of you 150m ahead, is the place where they are holding the leaders of the five great countries and Xu Xin and Luo Hua.”

“Right now, we are unable to get any closer, that level is the place within the villa with the most number of fighters, the Nuolan Shan family little team of sixty members, thirty two of them are in that level. Including nine who are at Star level 9.” Babata warned Luo Feng, the entire villa was huge, the number of other people in the other areas wasn’t considered large at all.

Luo Feng had no choice but to gradually draw closer.

“The captive place is guarded by two Star level 9 guards.” Babata warned, “The other people guarding are quite a bit further.”

Luo Feng’s thoughts moved, the cloud contact vine swiftly covered his face.

One was for safety, two, he didn’t want the Nuolan Shan family people to know that he was Luo Feng.

“150m, you are all at Star level 9, flying speed within space can reach a max of 150,000m per second, on Earth, because of the air resistance, you’d be much slower. But you’ll still be able to hit 50,000m per second, I now request for you all to reach within 150m of that room with your greatest speed.”

“Two of you will be in charge of pinning down the guards while

the other two will be in charge of saving people.”

Luo Feng’s orders were transmitted to their quantum computers.

The four great slaves nodded.

“Then...”Luo Feng looked at the building before him, his eyes squinting, “Let’s do it!”

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

The four great slaves, Star level 9 warriors, and Luo Feng!

The four slaves had a flying speed of about 50,000m per second, even though Luo Feng was only a Star level 1, however relying on the level 3 spirit weapon Soaring Shuttle along with great awareness, his speed could still exceed 20,000m per second!

Within the room.

Xu Xin, Luo Hua and the leaders of the 5 countries were scattered in the different corners of the room, nothing but a blanket was spread across the floor.

“What are you looking at?” A guard sitting in a chair stared at the leaders of Europe, pointing as he snorted, “Someone like you, a country leader? However, I do have to say, your Earth is only just this big, to actually have so many countries! Within the universe’s

low level civilizations, they usually contain a few galaxies, millions of life planets…”

The moment his words left his mouth!

Rumble!

The wall violently exploded apart!

A strong and sturdily built man huge man with a lion head dressed in battle armor rushed in, immediately reaching right in front of the guard.

150m distance, 50,000m per second? What did it mean?

It was faster than a blink of the eye!

As it was simply too fast, faster than the speed of sound by many times. The moment the two guards felt the powerful auras, the four slaves only had a distance of 10m between them, following that, they immediately engaged in battle!

“What!”

Luo Hua and Xu Xin stared.

Sou! Sou!

Two long vines fiercely rose from the ground and wrapped them, the leaves wrapping them separately.

……

Luo Feng controlled seven vines and separated they wrapped around the seven hostages. One had to know back then during the Misty Island incident, the cloud contact vine numbers were already plentiful, much less the currently already Star level 3 cloud contact vine. With regards to just the cloud contact vine's growth speed, Luo Feng's particular one was indeed fast.

At least…

It was much faster than Luo Feng's human body training.

"Capture them!"

"Quickly!"

The entire villa had suddenly rumbled and exploded into chaos, with the naked eye, one could only see shockwaves whistling and spreading in every direction, not only did it level the villa completely, the surrounding residential district alleys too suddenly received large amounts of shockwaves that destroyed and leveled the area. Back during the attack on West Lake Courtyard, the main courtyard itself was a few km square meters.

And this villa wasn't that big.

Plus, during the last time, all the attacks were directed at the castle. This time however, was a group of Star level 9 warriors attacking each other seriously, some of the attacks were dodged and naturally hit the walls and ground.

"Capture that red armored person!" Tuo Lei Wu became like a flash, rushing towards the sky.

With one look, he could gaze far and wide, a person clad in blood red armor with seven vines extended, wrapped around seven people.

"No need to send me off."

A universe ship appeared in mid air suddenly, the cabin door was opened from earlier on, the person clad in blood red armor carried the seven and swiftly entered the cabin.

Sou!

The universe ship immediately disappeared.

With regards to speed...the universe ship's speed, was many many times faster than a Star level 9.

"Lure them towards the Pacific Ocean, these are the

coordinates.” At the same time, Luo Feng sent out the order to the eight great slaves’ mini quantum computers.

Chapter 53 – Bloodbath at Sea

Within the universe ship, the leaders of the five countries were breathing anxiously, obviously the scene from before happened too quickly, suddenly they were wrapped in the cloud contact vine's leaves, not having a chance to react to anything.

The cloud contact armor swiftly retracted, revealing Luo Feng's face.

"Luo Feng?"

"Mr. Luo Feng?"

The leaders of the countries all looked shocked at the person before them, following with expressions of elation and joy, they understood they had been saved. Beside them, Xu Xin and Luo Hua looked even happier, Xu Xin rushed straight into Luo Feng's chest, hugging him tightly: "I was afraid, afraid that I would never get to see you again, and that I would never see Ping Ping and Little Hai..."

"It's fine now, darling." Luo Feng said softly.

They hugged for awhile before Luo Feng released her.

"Attention all." Luo Feng looked at the others, "I still have matters to attend to, I request for you all to wait within the universe ship for the moment, it's extremely safe within here."

“Bro, be careful.” Luo Hua said.

Luo Feng laughed before gently pinching the cheeks of his wife’s little face. After that, he turned and swiftly left, flying out the cabin!

Above the Pacific Ocean.

Luo Feng raised his head to see the universe ship in mid air disappear into the borders of the sky.

“It’s time to truly battle it out at least once!”

“Those scum from the Nuolan Shan family, they really think of Earth as their backyard, playing with whatever they want!” Luo Feng floated in mid air, gazing far at the direction of South America, smiling coldly before plunging straight into the ocean below. With a splash and ripples of waves splashing about, Luo Feng entered towards the sea bed.

Luo Feng’s internal world.

The large land enshrouded in golden mist, the Golden Horned Beast that was originally occupying the metal land suddenly disappeared, at the same time, a human male appeared within. According to theory, within this internal world, whether it was metal or human flesh and blood, the moment they entered, they would immediately be broken down and killed.

Back when the Golden Horned Beast attacked, that was how it swallowed the battle bases.

This level of decomposition power, was a natural ability from the internal world.

When Luo Feng appeared...the energy actually reacted as though it had discovered its own child, wrapping itself around Luo Feng, not hurting him at all!

“Luo Feng, later, just go ahead and kill to your heart’s content!”

“When I created the auxiliary AI to meld into that ship, I already linked it to the Earth’s satellite network, any footage or pictures of this entire sea’s happenings will immediately be deleted, relax, no one will discover you.”

To chase and slaughter!

The extremely enraged Nuolan Shan family little elite team, had been madly pursuing Luo Feng’s eight Star level 9 slaves. Their bloodthirsty close quarter fight extended to tens of thousands of km, however their speeds were simply too fast, every second equated to 50km, after a few minutes of work, they had rushed over from South America to where Luo Feng had concealed himself.

“Hua hua...”

The ocean slightly rippled, the sun was incredibly glaring.

“Bastard, bastard, bastard!!!” Tuo Lei Wu was roaring with rage within, not long ago, he even told the Head Ancestor that he was extremely confident with guarantee... “Head Ancestor, there definitely won’t be any problems, I dare to guarantee with my life!” However in the blink of an eye, all his hostages were taken away, how could he not be angry?

Chase him down and kill him!

They had the numbers, successfully killing one of the enemy’s Star level 9 warrriors, while losing themselves a Star level 8.

“Not one of you is escaping!” Tuo Lei Wu’s eyes glared.

Fifteen Star level 9 warriors were chasing down seven Star level 9 warriors!

The Star level 9 warriors were flying far head while the eighteen Star level 8 warriors were obviously slower by quite a bit, the twenty six Star level 7 warriors were even further behind.

And just when Tuo Lei Wu and a group of the Star level 9 warriors just flew over from that side of the ocean, the originally peaceful ocean suddenly erupted and burst open, almost as though an enormous black creature was rising from the seabed, gradually, revealing its sharp blades, silhouette that was just like a huge

mountain.

“Look!”

“What’s that?”

The eighteen Star level 8 warriors caught up from behind, they were extremely vigilant, such an enormous figure, caused so much commotion, how could they not discover it?

“Why do I feel that it resembles the Swallowing Beast from the data.” A group of members looked carefully.

“Swallowing Beast???”

“Quickly look!”

“It truly looks like it!”

“It’s indeed similar, the scales on its back even have golden engravings.”

“It’s head is about to surface.”

The Swallowing Beast was incredibly important, compared to chasing down those Star level 9 warriors before, that didn’t have any meaning anymore. At this time, a group from behind...the

twenty six Star level 7 warriors finally caught up.

Under the careful scrutiny of the Nuolan Shan family's elite little team who were floating in mid air, among the lashing of waves, an incredible enormous head, just it's head alone was over 100m huge, meaning to say...one head alone was bigger than earth's normal high school's football fields!

The huge and vast back, was just like a mountain!

Incomparably huge!

However, this group of elite members, who were from the universe, having experienced much and seen extensively, were all very calm.

"Hua la!"

This huge beast finally broke out from the water's surface, the ocean lashed at it's entire body of piercing black scales, under the glare of the sun, its reflection was incredibly glaring. It's huge head's most eye-catching point was obviously, the two black horns that pierced the sky and made people tremble, wrapped about the horns were tight and peculiar golden engravings, causing the black horns to look, at first glance, like they were golden.

A pair of huge dark golden pupils!

Almost as though it were the eyes of heaven and earth!

Ice cold, brutal and savage!

“Swallowing Beast!!!” One member from the group shouted loudly.

“It’s the Swallowing Beast!”

“That’s it, that’s it”

The Nuolan Shan family’s elite group of members, none of them were feeling fear, rather, they all shouted in excitement.

“Quickly inform the captain!”

“Quickly.”

“This is too good, this swallowing beast is actually still alive.”

Tuo Lei Wu and the other fifteen Nuolan Shan guards were still engaged in chasing.

“They really run fast.” Tuo Lei Wu was so enraged that his teeth itched, other than killing one of the enemies amidst the initial chaos, he couldn’t kill any at all during the chase. As the enemy was focusing all their power on escaping, to actually be able to kill while chasing was difficult. However the moment Tuo Lei Wu thought about the guarantee he made towards the Head Ancestor,

and the way things were now, he couldn't help but grow more enraged.

"Du du."

The quantum computer on his arm vibrated.

"Captain, captain, it's the Swallowing Beast, a living Swallowing Beast!" An excited voice resounded, simultaneously, the screen appeared with the footage of the Golden Horned Beast gradually appearing from the sea bed.

"My god!"

Tuo Lei Wu's eyes stared wide, the scene from the quantum computer made his heart and spirit tremble, the other members didn't know about the Golden Horned Beast but he did! That was the Golden Horned Beast, the most elite bloodline amongst the space beasts, the moment it matured, it would be the pinnacle of Sector Lord level 9!

Similar to the Undying Beings, just as invincible!

The most elite bloodline, an almost extinct race, much less than even the Undying Beings and warriors.

"This is the Golden Horned Beast, and it's still an infant." Tuo Lei Wu had a feeling of admiration, the legendary pinnacle of space beasts, the Golden Horned Beast was the true presence of power,

with a slight movement of its legs, a wave of its tail, it could shave away at layers of a planet, with its full power, it could easily destroy an entire planet!

This was the elite Golden Horned Beast!

The pinnacle existence of Sector Lords!

“Quickly, capture it.” Tuo Lei Wu raged.

“Everybody, stop chasing, quickly, follow me.” Tuo Lei Wu informed the other fourteen members through the AI computer with the video, giving the order. There were some who were still curious as to why they were stopping, however after seeing the footage, they all grew excited and began to shout, incomparably excited as they turned and flew back.

The air above the ocean.

“Capture it!”

“Capture it alive!” The eighteen Star level 8 and twenty six Star level 7 warriors, the group members were extremely excited.

The Golden Horned Beast that gradually surfaced looked above and surveyed the fastest and the ones in front, the group of Star level 8 warriors, its eyes filled with a thread of killing intent.

Hu!

A scaled tail that shook the earth moved at a shocking speed sweeping past the air, towards the eighteen Star level 8 warriors, nine of which were hit by it, the first five who were immediately and directly hit by the tail were instantly split apart, fresh blood scattering with limbs flung all over, the remaining four were either crippled or heavily damaged.

“Don’t use force to fight with it, use skill.”

“It’s body is huge, within a small space, it won’t be able to react as quickly as humans.”

The other members were terrified to the point of sweating cold sweat, each becoming like thunder snakes with movements that were hard to trace and capture.

This was indeed a weak point of the Golden Horned Beast, back when Hong and Thunder God immolated their souls and faced the Golden Horned Beast, they relied on their small stature and quick reflexes to attack. However...as an elite of the bloodlines, the Golden Horned Beast also had methods to supplement its weaknesses, that being its entire body was a weapon!

Claws! Horns! Tail! Wings!

“Hu la!”

The Golden Horned Beast whose speed was exploding, with a wave of it's huge wings, it's wings were totally covered in scales, at its sides were the incredibly sharp and piercing scales, when the beast's speed exploded, and it's wings waved madly, "Ah!" those brushed by the enormous wings were immediately cut into three chunks.

"Its scales' defenses are too ..." a member shouted out loudly, his body instantly slashed into chunks by the sharp and incredibly fast claws, fresh blood flew all over.

"Escape!"

"It's too strong..."

With a tail length comparable to it's entire body, the scaled tail fiercely swung, just like a whip suddenly brushing past three members, slicing them open alive! Against over ten Star level 9 warriors would be somewhat troublesome, however against Star level 8 and 7 warriors, for the Golden Horned Beast that had already reached Star level 7, was simply just a massacre!

It's four claws, were recklessly clawing about!

It's two wings madly waving, it was just like two overcast clouds engulfing everything!

The most extreme waving and fastest was still the tail!

At this time!

Eighteen Star level 8 warriors were all killed, yes, the Golden Horned Beast purposefully aimed to kill all the Star level 8 warriors.

“Escape!”

“Escape!”

“Quickly escape!” The Star level 7 warriors were all distressed and frantic.

At this time, the Golden Horned Beast’s eyes had a sense of bloodlust and madness, it opened it’s bloody mouth wide, immediately, a formless energy engulfed the space around, completely surrounding the Star level 7 warriors of the Nuolan Shan family’s elite group. The members bodies all gradually shrank and flew into the Golden Horned Beast’s mouth.

The closer they got to its mouth, the smaller they got.

Until the point where they couldn’t get any smaller, they vanished into the black hole within the Golden Horned Beast’s mouth.

One of its three natural abilities, swallowing!

The swallowing technique, was a natural ability that was for training, it was for swallowing large amounts of metal into the internal world, it however had it's own attacking properties, anything weaker than itself, it could instantly swallow and kill.

"Burp!" The Golden Horned Beast seemed like it hiccupped, looking at the over ten beams of light swiftly flying over, it immediately rushed straight back into the ocean, leaving only a mist of blood where it had killed in the surrounding.

Chapter 54 – The Power of the Golden Horned Beast

“Swallowing beast.”

“Haha, a living swallowing beast.”

Tuo Lei Wu, Aheman, Abuluote, the three captains were shouting out in excitement, the other members were also extremely excited. They were very clear on the rules of the Nuolan Shan family, the bigger the amount of work put in, naturally the bigger the reward! If they were to capture a the Swallowing Beast alive, the reward would definitely be shocking.

How could they not be excited?

“That’s not right.” Tuo Lei Wu suddenly stopped.

“Aheman, Abuluote, bring your men and chase the Swallowing Beast, I’ll come over in a bit.” Tuo Lei Wu ordered.

“Relax.”

Aheman and Abuluote both brought the others and swiftly vanished into the distant boundaries of the sky, Tuo Lei Wu floated in mid air, his consciousness immediately entering the virtual universe network, sending a message to his superior... “Lord Pula, the Golden Horned Beast isn’t dead. It’s still alive! And

it’s resurfaced on Earth! This is the footage taken from the other members!” Simultaneously, he sent the footage along.

After which, Tuo Lei Wu immediately left the Virtual Universe Network.

“Plop!”

Just as Tuo Lei Wu’s body plunged into the ocean, creating waves that burst from the surface. As his physical body was in an unconsciousness state, it naturally fell straight into the ocean.

“Ok, I’ve informed the family. Now...” Tuo Lei Wu burst out from the ocean and flew, licking his lips, both eyes gleaming green, “It’s time for me to work!”

“Capturing the Golden Horned Beast alive, hahahaha...”

Tuo Lei Wu became a beam of light and travelled at shocking speed, breaking through the air and chasing the others.

At that time, Tuo Lei Wu saw, in front of him in mid air was a group of Nuolan Shan guards dressed in battle uniforms, appearances different from each all floating.

“What’s the matter?” Tuo Lei Wu raged, “Why aren’t you chasing it?”

“Captain.”

Aheman and Abuluote turned to look over, “The Swallowing Beast in underwater, we can’t even see it with our eyes, however, captain, don’t you think this place reeks of blood?”

“Reeks of blood?” Tuo Lei Wu sniffed.

Star level 9 warriors, be it listening, or olfactory senses, they were all much more adept than ordinary people. Carefully sniffing, he could smell in the surrounding air the strong smell of blood.

“We tried contacting the other members, none of them answered.”

“No answer at all.”

“All the Star level 8 and 7 warriors, they were all the same.”

Aheman and Abuluote were very solemn. This caused Tuo Lei Wu to be taken aback, none of the other groups were responding at all? This, this was too crazy. One had to know that the two groups were only separated for a few minutes and within that short time, forty four members had all perished? Tuo Lei Wu questioned himself, even though he was top 10 within the 8000 strong Nuolan Shan guards, to kill all 44 members, although possible, would still require sufficient time.

“This Swallowing Beast is that powerful?” Tuo Lei Wu creased

his eyebrows, lowering his head to survey the surface of the ocean.

With his vision and sight...

He could indeed see a black shadow at the bottom of the sea bed!

“Di.” Tuo Lei Wu’s AI computer on his arm rang, “Do a long distance scan.”

“Master, the space beast below is at the Star level 7.”

“Seven?”

Beside, a group of Nuolan Shan guards in mid air glanced at each other, discussing in hushed voices.

About 2000m below the surface.

Almost like an enormous mountain, the golden horned beast lay on the sea bed, it’s body length was over 700m, it’s scaled tail length was close to its body’s length.

That’s right!

Star level 7!

Back when Luo Feng first left earth to head to Dragon Star, the

Golden Horned Beast at the time was only a Star level 4! According to the Golden Horned Beast's regular training...

The first three Star levels added together was completed in a year and a half.

The Star level 4, 5 and 6, breaking through each level would require two years.

Star level 7, 8, and 9, every level would require twelve years.

For the Star level to break through to the Universe level 1, it would actually require over fifty years.

Back when Luo Feng sold the arc cutter blade, and later spending up to a billion Black Dragon dollars to buy large amounts of metal groupings, his evolution efficiency rose to 51 times. After that time, Luo Feng remained on Earth and trained even more, when the universe explorers came. Three months later, the family fleet came, and later left due to the empire laws, secretly leaving an elite group of members to work as space pirates and conduct their search.

Another six or seven days later, Luo Feng began his battle with the remaining elite group!

This meant to say!

Luo Feng's metal groupings that rose his evolution efficiency by

51 times had been in effect for about four and a half months!

Four and a half months, 51 times normal evolution speed, faster than the regular evolution by 19 years!

The Star levels 4 to 6, required four years! Levels 6 to 7 required twelve years! Hence...the Golden Horned Beast currently indeed had the power of a Star level 7. If it were another two or three months later, the Golden Horned Beast's body would have been a Star level 8.

Star level 7 Golden Horned Beast!

Just how strong was it?

One had to know, those that receive special training and instructions, elites that possessed powerful spirit weapons, would be able to battle enemies two to three levels above! Just like how Luo Feng was easily able to overpower three to four levels above him, the main reason of course was that the warriors of Earth didn't have a system for training, and no good weapons. To be bullied by Luo Feng wouldn't be strange at all.

In the vast universe.

Large amounts of power nurturing the elites, overpowering two to three levels above, that was a very normal thing!

And the Golden Horned Beast?

If it was the same grade and level, the Golden Horned Beast could be deemed invincible! Only an extremely small percentage or chance might appear, that someone of the same grade and level would be able to win over the absolute genius of the Golden Horned Beast. That would be an absolute monster of an existence!

Back when the Golden Horned Beast was only at Star level 1.

Hong and Thunder God, who were both deemed invincible among the star travellers and had their own domains! When they first began their soul immolation, they actually couldn't even break through the Golden Horned Beast's scales. It was only finally after Hong, who had reached Domain level 2, released his strongest technique before he managed to break through! It wasn't that Star level 1 warriors were that powerful, it was the Golden Horned Beast itself that was insanely strong!

Back when Luo Feng began his soul immolation, using the secret technique of the Yun Mo Planet, heavily wounding the Golden Horned Beast with his attack...

He still had no way of breaking through the Golden Horned Beast's soul defenses.

It was only because of the soul imprint his teacher left within him immolated and became his attack that finally led to him breaking through the Golden Horned Beast! The reason why it was so difficult back then was simply because the Golden Horned Beast was insanely powerful!

Human geniuses from the universe, there exist Star level 7 warriors who could kill Star level 9 warriors in a one on one fight.

A Star level 7 Golden Horned Beast?

Against the Star level 7 humans, 99.99% of them could instantly be swallowed with the natural ability and killed. It was too simple, against Star level 8 humans...it was still a complete massacre with strength! When against Star level 9 humans, it would still hold the advantage, able to kill one or two of them. However against a group of human Star level 9 warriors...

It was indeed still troubling!

The main important thing was, within this group of human Star level 9 warriors, there were extremely strong warriors.

Like Tuo Lei Wu, he alone was able to battle up to ten normal Star level 9 warriors! Same grade and level, their battle abilities were still vastly different.

Hence...

The Golden Horned Beast submerged itself in the ocean, in there, its power wasn't affected. However, the Nuolan Shan guards would be affected greatly.

In the air above the ocean.

“Listen to my orders.”

“Three little teams, will attack simultaneously from three directions! I don’t believe that a Star level 7 Swallowing Beast, against fifteen of us Nuolan Shan guards will be able to win!” Tuo Lei Wu’s greenish eyes looked savage.

“Capture the Swallowing Beast alive.” Aheman roared.

“Yes, capture it alive.” Abuluote shouted too.

“Attack!”

Tuo Lei Wu’s booming voice resounded.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Three little teams became like long-chained beams of light, plunging straight into the ocean.

……

With a 2000m distance, against this level of battle plan, it was indeed a joke!

“Howl…”

The Golden Horned Beast which was like a mountain let out a cry of happiness, lifting its head, a huge pair of eyes looking at the three beams of light heading down towards the seabed from above.

“Rumble!!!”

It’s huge tail was like an enormous python, piercing through the ocean and immediately sweeping at one of the group of elites. “Attack!!!” This group of elite’s leader Aheman roared out, at the time, ordinary weapon after weapon was brandished, they were extremely glaring, directed straight towards the tail which was sweeping towards them. The weapon Aheman was using was only a level 1 normal energy weapon.

Yes!

The Nuolan Shan guards were all fitted with energy weapons (and armor), spirit weapons (and armor). However according to their battle strength, normal Nuolan Shan guards used only ordinary energy weapons that were very cheap. The more powerful ones, like Aheman, Abuluote, used level 1 energy weapons, they were extremely effective in adding to one’s power.

And as for Tuo Lei Wu this sort of absolute elite, he was allocated with the optimum level 2 energy spirit weapon capable of allowing him to use his power to its maximum.

“Rumble…”

The scaled tail swept past fiercely, smashing into two of the energy weapons, breaking them before they vanished.

“My hands have gone numb.”

“It’s definitely energetic.” Aheman shouted proudly.

And the man behind all the planning and attack, Tuo Lei Wu couldn’t help but smile as he saw the situation, against an enemy two levels below him, even though it was the renowned Golden Horned Beast, they had teams of five all attacking together! If even this didn’t allow them to gain the upper hand, then it would be too insane.

“Surround and attack!” Tuo Lei Wu ordered.

“Yes.” Aheman roared excitedly.

“Kill.” Abuluote’s eyes gleamed.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Chaos erupted within the blink of an eye, the three groups of Nuolan guards were madly surrounding the Golden Horned Beast and attacking, the Golden Horned Beast was indeed powerful, however under the well coordinated attacks of carefully and well

trained from the Nuolan Shan family heirs personally, the fifteen Nuolan Shan guards made the Golden Horned Beast do nothing but put up a struggle. It was completely disadvantaged.

“Howl…”A loud mad voice roared.

The golden engravings on the golden horned beast’s black horns began to glow, incredibly glaring, and after, following the flow of the golden light, flowing through the golden engravings into its four claws, tail and wings.

One of the three great natural abilities, strengthening!

“This bastard is playing with his life now.” Aheman shouted.

“Don’t kill it, we need to capture it alive.” Tuo Lei Wu shouted.

“Rumble…”

Its enormous claws fiercely stomped, Abuluote and his group of members madly brandished their weapons, “Rumble…” with that, the Golden Horned Beast violently trampled on three energy weapons, the Golden Horned Beast’s enormous body that was like a mountain staggered, and Abuluote’s team of five immediately separated after the attack, amongst them two members shouted out in pain and spit out fresh blood.

“It’s become so strong suddenly?”

“It’s too sick.”

Aheman and Abuluote stared wide eyed, two levels below them, and it could actually fend off five human warriors?

Chapter 55 – The Golden Horned Beast's Ultimate Move

"Rumble, rumble…"

It's increase in power was obvious after its strengthening, every claw and step it took, every swing of it's tail, every wave of its wings was much stronger than before. The three little teams didn't have the same initial feeling of playing a game anymore, rather, they started to feel exhaustion, both sides were stuck in a deadlock, evenly matched.

"Captain!" Aheman and Ahbuluote shouted, every word they shouted, they relied on raw energy to transmit.

The theory behind using raw energy (Basic energy) to transmit sound was very simple.

It was similar to putting the raw energy into the telephone lines communications, allowing the sound to swiftly travel to its desired location. This was a universe warrior's commonly used trick. As for those with spirit energy, raw energy spirit readers, fighters, they all had their own unique ways and tricks, transmitting sound with raw energy was just one of them.

"Begin!"

Tuo Lei Wu's eyes were filled with excitement, the pure and powerful energy of a Star level flowed throughout his entire body,

even through his hands and into that battle axe.

“Understood!” Aheman and Ahbuluote too were getting excited.

Yes!

They begun their ultimate technique!

It was extremely difficult for all fifteen of the Nuolan Shan guards to fully coordinate and do a powerful combined attack. However, just the three Tuo Lei Wu, Aheman and Ahbuluote could work together to produce the best result, unleashing the strongest attack. And with Ahbuluote and Aheman’s assistance, Tuo Lei Wu as the blade, they could unleash a devastating attack.

“Rumble! Rumble Rumble!”

Three glaring beams of light combined into one, after, an even more glaring blurred image of a golden battle axe was slashing towards the Golden Horned Beast.

“Howl…”

The Golden Horned Beast didn’t evade at all, using its powerful sharp claws that were almost like pillars of the skies to trample hard! Tuo Lei Wu and the other two seemed to not care about attacking anywhere else, maybe they were worried about killing the Golden Horned Beast, hence they chose…to meet force with force! The golden battle axe against the claws clashed together!

“Howl…”An enraged cry of pain resounded.

Fresh blood splattered, the scales on the claws had been slashed through, a large wound had appeared below the meat of the claws, almost as through the claw itself was slashed into two.

“That bastard’s scale defense is incredibly strong.”

“Let’s do it a few more times.”

“We’ll damage him enough before capturing him alive.”

“Haha, let’s do it.”

Tuo Lei Wu and the other captains were very excited, the twelve other Nuolan Shan guards further away were standing back watching the show. And the injured Golden Horned Beast’s eyes flickered with a chill, its mouth opened once again, an object wrapped in an energy bubble flew out…that was…a knife blade from a damaged weapon?

No, it was Luo Feng’s strongest weapon…the hybrid copper essence shard!

Under the effects of the natural ability of strengthening, with the power of the mysterious golden engravings amplifying its powers, whether it was speed or others etc, even its attacks with its soul

had been greatly elevated. The strengthened Golden Horned Beast coupled with the hybrid copper essence shard, just how powerful was it?

Xiu xiu xiu xiu…

The revolving hybrid copper essence danced around, just like a beam of light, in a flash, it swept past Tuo Lei Wu and the other two captains.

“That is…”

Tuo Lei Wu’s eyes stared hard and wide, that blurry beam of light had already reached right before him, his hard and solid helmet was immediately sliced open, following that, the two captains beside also had their heads sliced open, perishing immediately.

They were dead!

The three captains died in one move!

This scene caused the distant twelve other Nuolan Shan guards to be completely shocked.

“My god!”

“That’s impossible!”

“Quickly retreat!!!” One of the Nuolan Shan guards turned to escape, the others were shaken back to reality, without hesitation, they chose to disperse and escape.

Xiu xiu xiu xiu…

A blurry blood red beam of light, moving at its peak speed. It was much faster than the Nuolan Shan guards’ speeds, bending in an arc beam of light, just like a Tanghulu (Chinese candy on a stick), piercing through the heads of the Nuolan Shan guards one by one. Less than 0.001 seconds had passed and the twelve Nuolan guards’ heads were all pierced through, completely and utterly dead.

The enormous mountain like Golden Horned Beast’s eyes were ice cold, sweeping its gaze past each and every body, the meat under its claws were already rapidly regenerating, swiftly recovering.

Hu!

The Golden Horned Beast vanished.

A black haired man dressed in a blood red battle uniform appeared in mid air, as the Golden Horned Beast’s enormous body had suddenly vanished, the surrounding large amounts of sea water began to madly rush back to fill the space.

“I would say the experiment could be considered a success.”

“The Golden Horned Beast’s power, I finally have a good grasp of it within my mind.”

“Hm, under the effects of the strengthening coupled with the strongest weapon, the hybrid copper essence shard, it’s indeed absurdly strong.” Luo Feng thought about the many scenarios and ideas, before ordering with his mind, “Babata, when we return, let’s camouflage and cover up the hybrid copper essence, make it unrecognizable as a hybrid copper essence.”

After finishing his order.

Luo Feng, who was still deep underwater, gazed around at the surrounding bodies of the Nuolan Shan guards, his lips curling into a slight smile. Before the battle had even begun, the outcome had already been decided!

Within the virtual universe.

Pula was excitedly and respectfully standing in front of a screen, on it, were the Nuolan Shan family’s three original heads. The head ancestor Nuolan Shan, who was dressed in a dark green battle uniform, had flame of excitement within his eyes, “It‘s alive? That Golden Horned Beast infant is actually alive? You are sure?”

“Yes, I am sure. This is the footage that Tuo Lei Wu and his party just sent, please take a look Head Ancestor.” Pula replied loudly.

The footage was played.

“Hm?”

Nuolan Shan and the other two heads stared hard.

“Yes, it’s the Golden Horned Beast, two horns? Looking at the length of the horns, it should be about Star level 7.” Nuolan Shan nodded, “A Star level 7 Golden Horned Beast, fifteen Nuolan Shan guards combining forces should definitely have the advantage!”

“Head Ancestor.” Yuke and Dewen, the other 2 heads, looked at the Head Ancestor, Dewen couldn’t help but say, “Do the Nuolan Shan guards have a chance of capturing it alive?”

“There’s hope.”

Nuolan Shan nodded, taking a deep breath, with loads of pressure, he was still feeling extreme excitement.

My God!

This was the Golden Horned Beast, the elite bloodline in the universe, it’s numbers were even smaller than the Undying Beings. One Golden Horned Beast infant, even the Undying Beings would fight for it! He, Nuolan Shan, a Universe level 9, was considered quite a prominent person in the universe, he actually had hopes of acquiring a Golden Horned Beast infant?

It…it was too unbelievable.

“Oh! If we do manage to get the Golden Horned Beast, with my Battle-axe warrior title, I can sell the infant through the Battle-axe Colosseum, getting unbelievable rewards Nuolan Shan had already thought of how to deal with the Golden Horned Beast infant, to ordinary people, this sort of treasure would only bring about harm to oneself.

Even a Universe level warrior would have difficulty handling the Golden Horned Beast infant.

But Nuolan Shan had his own safe methods!

“Immediately contact all the members on Earth.”

“I would like to personally question them.” Nuolan Shan said.

Pula immediately began to contact the sixty members on Earth.

Dida! Dida!

“Why isn’t anyone answering?”

“Even if they were engaged in battle with the Golden Horned Beast, the Star level 7 and 8 members shouldn’t actually need to participate right?”

“Silence.” The head ancestor Nuolan Shan snorted softly.

Seconds passed, the three heads and Pula were all anxiously waiting, 5 minutes, 10 minutes, 15 minutes…the expression on the head ancestor’s face, gradually changed from holding back his excitement, to creasing his eyebrows, and later grew uglier as time passed, it became ashen later on and finally expressionless, his eyes looked ready to devour anybody.

“Don’t bother, they are dead, they are all dead.” Nuolan Shan said.

The other two heads and Pula’s expressions were extremely ugly.

Yes.

They understood, those people were all dead.

Pula’s call request would never be ignored by those people, they wouldn’t dare to not answer. Secondly, even if they were engaged in capturing the Golden Horned Beast alive, the Star level 7 and 8 members didn’t need to participate in the battle at all, and they weren’t even answering…this meant to say that the Star level 7 and 8 members were all dead. As for the group of Star level 9 Nuolan guards, even if they were engaged in battle, the battle between the strong usually was extremely short.

Such a long time had passed without anyone answering, obviously…

They were all dead!

The plan they had this time, had failed!

Within the vast Black Dragon Mountain star field, amongst the over 500 countries, there was one elite...the Kalo Empire, this empire had a territory of twenty six galaxies, one had to know, many smaller and weaker universe low level empires only had two galaxies! The Silverblue Empire was one of the bigger and stronger ones.

Within the Kalo Empire, there was a well renowned planet, the Ice Mist Star.

The Ice Mist Star was the old nest of the Nuolan Shan family. Over 3000 Noulan guards gathered there, along with 30,000 Ice Mist guards, the requirements to being accepted into the Ice Mist guards was...one had to reach the Star level! Meaning to say, the entire planet had tens of thousands of star level warriors.

This level of power, was simply terrifying.

The Kalo Empire's third family!

To be deemed as the third strongest, it wasn't just based on Nuolan Shan alone, no matter how powerful Nuolan Shan was, he after all was just one person. One had to rely on the large armies under him! To be directly above over one thousand life planets,

using Star levels from his army, within the surrounding tens of thousands of life planets, the Nuolan Shan family's power was the strongest within that galaxy!

"Huhu..."

The cold wind howled.

Ice Mist Star was well known for its cold climate, within the extreme north regions where it was uninhabited and desolate, there was a black mountain, its temperature here was even colder and shocking than the rest of the planet.

"Sou! Sou!"

Two human silhouettes pierced through the sky and headed towards the black mountain, one of the two had pointy ears, he was a member of the Nuolan Shan family. The other was dressed in a black robe, vaguely on his forehead was a fine curved little horn. The two flew directly into one of the caves within the black mountain.

Deep in the cave.

Dressed in a dark green battle uniform, a man whose entire body emanated a chilly air sat crossed legged quietly on a black stone.

"Head Ancestor."

“Teacher.”

The two bowed respectfully.

“Dewen, Baikalo.” The man sitting crossed legged quietly opened his eyes, gazing at the two, his gaze had a sense of gentleness, “You two know the situation, your target is Earth! The first target is that automaton ship. As for the Golden Horned Beast infant…let’s leave it to luck.”

“Head Ancestor, we still have some hope to capture that infant beast.” Dewen said.

“No.”

The Head Ancestor Nuolan Shan shook his head slightly, “The Golden Horned Beast’s intellect is extremely high, it’s very crafty and after experiencing danger, there’s a very high percentage chance that it’ll leave Earth! It roams the universe, and you two will take at least two years to reach Earth. Without a target, how will you find it?” How will you find a target within the universe?

The two went silent.

“Go on!”

“Bring the automaton ship back, as for the Golden Horned Beast,

let's leave it to luck." The Head Ancestor Nuolan Shan said.

"Yes, Head Ancestor (Teacher)!"

The two universe level warriors complied respectfully.

Within the virtual universe, in a corner of a noisy bar, Luo Feng sat with his eyes closed.

"Luo Feng, I've already made the order. I've ordered a large batch of items with regards to planet security and defenses, defensive satellites etc, when the time comes, the entire solar system area will become an extremely secure and tight security system! If those universe ships ever appear within the solar system, we'd definitely discover them immediately."

Hearing those words from Babata, Luo Feng was satisfied.

The crisis this time was finally averted, from Xu Xin and the others being held hostage, he knew that this batch of people had an initial number of eighty and four captains. One of the teams had left and headed towards the coordinates within the universe as Luo Feng had suggested, the other three groups were killed by Luo Feng. As for the remaining one team, Luo Feng didn't think of them as a threat, however...he didn't dare be careless!

Earth had already suffered enough for its inferior technology.

Hence, Luo Feng wanted to buy an entire set of planet defense

systems! These sort of things were extremely expensive, normal planets within the universe usually only installed low grade planet defense systems, while Luo Feng picked the highest grade.

It was to be installed over the entire solar system!

The entire solar system would be under surveillance! This was something akin to what the black dragon mountain empire would do, those ship camouflaging systems etc, wouldn't even be able to hide themselves and would be totally visible.

"Also, I would like to install several security surveillance systems around that wormhole, the moment a ship flies through the wormhole, I would like to know as quickly as possible." Luo Feng said, "The Nuolan Shan family probably wouldn't give up."

"Relax, I've thought about it long ago." Babata shouted.

Everything was adequately prepared.

Earth was already out of trouble but it was still unsafe, when the planet defense systems were ready, that was when Luo Feng could relax a little. As for the Nuolan Shan family, even if they really sent anybody else, it would still be 2 years 8 months before they arrived.

"Third brother."

"Third brother."

Hong and Thunder God entered the bar, walking immediately towards Luo Feng. Before, the two had already been informed by Luo Feng, they knew of the crisis being averted and the meeting time and place Luo Feng had arranged.

“Hm?” Luo Feng looked up and got a shock, his two big brothers felt somewhat different from before.

“Where have you two gone? You feel somewhat different from before.” Luo Feng was suspicious.

“Haha, I’ve said it, third brother is very sensitive, he would definitely be aware of it.” Thunder God laughed.

“I even thought that my feeling was wrong.” Luo Feng looked curiously at the two.

“Right, we went to a very special place.” Hong laughed too.

“What place?” Luo Feng was curious.

Hong and Thunder God glanced at each other.

“Stop keeping me in suspense.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but urge.

Hong smiled, saying one syllable at a time: “Kill…ing…..Fields!”

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows suspiciously, muttering to himself: “The Killing Fields?”

Volume 9: World Overseer

Chapter 1 – Man Luo

“The killing fields, just what kind of place is it?” Luo Feng asked.

“It’s a good place.” Thunder God purposely acted all mysterious.

“After visiting just once, you’d be hooked on it.” Hong also chimed in, not revealing any details.

A clear crisp voice sounded, “The killing fields, is a special training ground for fighters and spirit readers. In there, whatever opponent you wish to face, they can make it possible. Group fights? One vs one? Battling against a Sector Lord? The killing fields can fulfill your every whim, of course the daily usage fee is extremely high.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God turned their heads, the one who spoke was Babata, who was on Luo Feng’s shoulder.

“Luo Feng.”

The voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind, “the killing fields is also within my plan for your training. I actually wanted to tell you about it the moment you acquired your teacher’s bank account. However, you got so caught up in dealing with the Nuolan Shan family fleet and didn’t have any time to actually visit the killing fields. Go now, it’s a pretty good spot.”

To be complemented by Babata as pretty good?

“Let’s go, we’ll go take a look now.” Luo Feng couldn’t resist anymore.

“I just knew third brother wouldn’t be able to wait any longer.” Thunder God lifted his drink and gulped it down, the three settled the bill and immediately left the bar.

The Black Dragon Mountain Island within the virtual universe was extremely vast, hence, the island’s internal department had set up transport pathways for travel, according to the distance required, one had to pay different amounts. Travel within the island itself wasn’t expensive, however if one wanted to travel from the Black Dragon Mountain Island to the Ganwu Empire, the price was shocking.

Black dragon mountain island, killing fields.

“Wow!”

Almost like an overflowing sea of blood, the backgrounds one drop of blood was the most eye catching; the entire hall was engulfed within this background. The hall was vast, stretching beyond what one could see with one look. The people within the hall seemed sparse, however that was only because the hall itself was similar in size to that of a city, hence, the total number of people within should still have been in the tens of thousands.

“In the killing fields, the fees are expensive, for someone like me, one day would require 1 million Black Dragon dollars, or 700

Ganwu dollars.” Hong said softly.

“That expensive?” Luo Feng was shocked.

For an ordinary planet like Bailan Star, the wealthiest person usually only has about 100 million Black Dragon dollars. That meant to say that these planet’s wealthiest didn’t have the funds to allow their own children to train in the killing fields. Afterall 100 million Black Dragon dollars was only sufficient for 100 days of use. It wasn’t surprising that there wasn’t a large number of people in here.

“3rd brother, you are a star level 1, the price is even higher.” Hong said softly.

“Right, and spirit readers are even more expensive than fighters.” Thunder god said beside, “I require 2 million black dragon dollars a day, you as a spirit reader, I’ve checked, would require 5 million black dragon dollars, or 3500 Ganwu dollars.”

“That’s too crazy.” Luo Feng was completely stunned.

“Also, the higher up to rise, the stronger you get, the price per day would also get increasingly shocking.” Thunder God said softly. “If a Sector Lord warrior came in here, the amount of money require per day, I believe to us would be a heavenly figure.”

“The prices are high? What a joke, it’s absolutely not high!” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind, “To be able to give

you any form of enemy, even to the point where space techniques, spirit weapons, etc are all within your grasp, where can you find such an environment ever? This place, was made especially for the universe families, sects, groups and empires' powers to train their elites, it's a really good training place.

Luo Feng slightly nodded his head.

"Go link up your bank account." Thunder God said, "That way, the fees can be deducted straight from your bank account."

"Understood, where do I go to do that?" Luo Feng asked.

"Follow me."

Under the guidance of Hong and Thunder God, Luo Feng went to the front desk to handle the linking up of his account.

……

At the edge of the hall, there were many pathways.

"Every path that you take will bring you directly into your own personal killing fields space." Thunder god said softly, "Whatever enemy you wish to customize, go ahead and do it."

"From here, we cannot follow you anymore." Hong laughed.

Luo Feng nodded.

During the time of their conversation, Luo Feng had seen many people follow the pathways deep within, amongst them were many Universe Mercenaries, Luo Feng had even spotted one Universe two star mercenary. This was indeed a rare spotting on a place like Black Dragon Mountain Island, however here in the killing fields, it seemed a frequent occurrence.

“Also, have you seen, that old man over there?” Thunder God said softly.

“Hm?” Luo Feng turned to look.

There was indeed a green skinned, head riddled with wrinkles old man, he was squinting his eyes sitting on a chair, relaxed and comfortable. Beside him were a few other people resting but no one actually dared to disturb that man. From an Earth human’s point of view, this man’s appearance was an eyesore, however he had a mysterious feeling that soothed and calmed others.

“He’s called Man Luo, The man in charge of the killing fields on Black Dragon Mountain Island division.” Thunder God said softly, “we got to watch a good show before, this old man was lashing out and lecturing two universe mercenaries, and the two mercenaries didn’t even dare to rebut him.”

“Hm?”

Luo Feng was shocked.

In the virtual universe, even if you were an Undying Being, you couldn't kill anyone in the virtual universe! After all, this was a network! Hence...even if you were a prominent figure, people who respected you would give you face. If they didn't respect you, they couldn't care less! To be able to leave the two universe mercenaries speechless and afraid to rebut, was indeed strange.

"Hehe." The green skinned old man in the distance looked over towards Luo Feng and his party, laughing..

"Damn."

Luo Feng and the other two were shocked.

"He heard it?"

"Forget it, hurry in to the killing fields space." Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God followed different pathways and entered deep within.

As he walked, the space around him changed greatly suddenly.

This was the vast and spacious skies.

Luo Feng was standing on a stone, a golden book appeared within his hands, the book seemed to be made of metal, flipping a page

from the book, Luo Feng understood immediately.

"This is the space of the killing fields?"

"Babata, send out a request, I would like one thousand Star Traveller level 9 warriors as my opponents." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with a flash of red, licking his lips, "I've held back for too long! Time to vent it out a little!" After the possession, Luo Feng has been having pangs of bloodthirst and killing intent, egging at his soul for a long time.

Luo Feng had been resisting all this time.

"No problem!"

"Luo Feng, I've set the battlegrounds as the desert, one thousand opponents using normal energy weapons, what you've chosen is a level 3 weapon the Soaring Shuttle and a level 2 battle uniform set." Babata said, "I've sent the request." As long as it was a weapon within the universe, 99.99% of the time, the killing fields would be able to provide it.

Rumble...

The killing fields space began to transform, the initial skies disappeared, the surroundings morphed into a vast desert, Luo Feng stood on the sand, dressed in a blood red battle uniform, before him floated the Soaring Shuttle. At the same time in the distant skies, blurry silhouettes of fighters dressed in white battle

uniforms welding different weapons appeared.

“Kill!”

“Kill him!” The majestic fighter army shouted, all them glared and rushed towards Luo Feng.

Luo Feng revealed a smile from within.

Huhuhu...

The Soaring Shuttle immediately separated into thirty knife blades, very thin little knife blades, these thirty blades distanced themselves a little and naturally began to form a swordfish structure, at the same time, every one of the blades were glowing with a golden thread, this thread weaved through every single blade, forming an extremely lifelike swordfish.

The Soaring Shuttle’s second form, the swordfish formation!

“Rumble...” the one thousand strong fighter army rushed in, almost like a dark cloud enveloping pressure, pressing towards Luo Feng.

Sou!

Luo Feng rushed into the sky, heading straight towards the entire group of fighters.

“Ah!”

“Pu!”

Wherever that golden swordfish went, there would be a rain of blood. Yet, the huge fighter army seemed not to care at all about their losses, madly surrounding Luo Feng and attacking. Minutes and seconds passed, none of the fighters retreated, until the last fighter had been pierced into a rain of blood, falling from the sky did the battle end.

Drenched in fresh blood , Luo Feng stood on the desert ground, letting out a huge sigh of relief, “That’s much better.”

“Everyday you hold back all that killing intent, as time passes, your inner self and heart will find it harder and harder to resist. Until finally, your entire being will simply go crazy. The entire killing spree you just went on, allowed you to vent it out. I’d be surprised if you didn’t feel better!”

“Babata, this is a side effect of the possession?” Luo Feng was helpless.

Before the possession, Luo Feng was already able to kill without hesitation, however, it wasn’t as bad...inevitably, there was a sense of bloodthirst and slaughtering impulse within! This level of bloodthirst was entirely deep within his bones. Every Golden Horned Beast was known for its brutality and savagery. Luo Feng’s human soul could only forcibly suppress, and not disperse, the

killing intent.

“You are complaining after getting a bargain!” Babata said with disdain.

“Haha.”

Luo Feng looked at his own body, “If you didn’t set this level 2 battle uniform set for me, I’m afraid I’d be dead now.”

For one thousand Star Traveller level 9 opponents to kill one Star level 1 was actually very simple. Even though Luo Feng’s consciousness was very strong, his spirit weapon’s power and usage was shocking, however he would still receive several huge blows, he had to rely on the battle uniform to lessen more than half the impact and damage.

Suppressing years of bloodthirst and killing intent, releasing and venting it all out now.

The first time, madly massacring one thousand Star Traveller level 9 fighters.

The second time, he fought against ten Star level 1 fighters, finally killing eight of them and dying from his own severe wounds!

The third time, Luo Feng directly made Thunder God as his opponent, a Star level 1 with a one layer domain, using a level 2

energy weapon, level 2 battle armor...the result, Luo Feng was actually killed by Thunder God. Luo Feng knew from this that the only reason he was stronger than Thunder God before was because of his spirit weapon. Giving Thunder God a level 2 energy weapon resulted in his own loss.

The fourth time, Luo Feng put Hong as his opponent...

A total of ninety eight battles, after that, Luo Feng felt a sense of extreme exhaustion, at the same time, a total sense of exhilaration.

It felt good!

He had never experienced such exhilaration in battles all his life, being able to choose his opponents and customize their strengths.

“Are you tired now?”

Babata looked at Luo Feng who was lying on the sand, “Luo Feng, since you’ve completed your battles, I’ll tell you the most important usage of the killing fields. This place’s usage fee is extremely high, just one day requires 3500 Ganwu dollars, a Universe level 1 spirit reader would require 350,000 Ganwu dollars. A Domain Lord level 1 would require 35 million Ganwu dollars and a Sector Lord level 1 spirit reader would require 3.5 billion Ganwu dollars. Do you know why it’s so expensive? Why even at this price Sector Lords still come?”

Luo Feng was stunned.

Sector Lords....

Joining a powerful empire, able to receive an entire starfield as his territory, able to construct a world of his own. 3.5 billion Ganwu dollars would definitely be affordable, but no one was an idiot. the killing fields definitely had to have a matching reward for it to be able to attract them.

“You, and even Hong and Thunder God, still don’t know the most important aspect of the killing fields.” Babata said proudly as he raised his head.

Chapter 2 – The Real Use of The Killing Fields

“What important aspect?” Luo Feng asked anxiously.

“Everybody knows the first part, that’s to be able to choose whatever opponent you want to engage in battle. The second aspect, is more important.” Babata’s little face revealed a proud smile, “You’ve seen from that metal book before, you know that you can customize your own opponent right?”

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“The second aspect is, you can customize an opponent’s basic qualities, spirit reading level, consciousness, techniques, weapons, etc, to be exactly the same as you! The only difference is that…the opponent’s experience is incomparably more vast, extremely more adept at battle.” Babata said, “Do you understand what I mean?”

Luo Feng was shocked, immediately going mad with excitement!

Right!

If the opponent was himself with greater experience and more adept at battling, such an opponent would be a great help to his own battle techniques and experience. Afterall, he could customize his opponent’s body, consciousness and spirit reading level, etc to be exactly the same.

“Through this method, you can swiftly absorb experience.” Babata said.

“Of course, these two aspects still aren’t the most important.” Babata laughed mischievously.

Luo Feng held his breath.

Just with the two aspects Babata mentioned, Luo Feng was already extremely excited! How could he better himself? How should he actually fight? He could customize his opponent and analyze. This way, he could swiftly improve his battle techniques, an extremely effective usage.

“To the strong within the universe, which one of them isn’t crafty and clever with an abundance in battle experience?”

“Hence, the biggest thing that draws them here is…”

“The killing fields has an effect of a teacher!” Babata emphasized.

“Teacher?”

Luo Feng was shocked.

“Right.” Babata nodded, “Look, Luo Feng, right now your consciousness level, what’s the maximum number of blade pieces you can control?

“36!” Luo Feng said.

The stronger the Golden Horned Beast got, Luo Feng’s consciousness level too naturally grew with it. Right now the Golden Horned Beast was a Star level 7, his consciousness level could control a maximum of thirty six knife blades.

“According to the Soaring Shuttle’s three ultimate forms and nine layers, with an amplitude of thirty six, you already have the fifth layer’s power. But why are you still using a swordfish formation composed of 30 blade pieces?” Babata questioned.

“With an amplitude of thirty six, that only means that the requirement was met, to be able to actually unleash the technique was still a very difficult thing to accomplish.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but say, “It’s liveliness, usage methods, movement and propelling, etc, I’ve failed time and again, time and again. It requires a long time before I can truly unleash the power of the Soaring Shuttle. Right now my amplitude level is at thirty six, but I’d still have to grind for a long time before I can unleash the fifth layer’s power.

“Haha…”

“Luo Feng, right now if you customize an opponent to use the Soaring Shuttle too, you can customize him to use the soaring shuttle’s fifth layer!” Babata smiled, revealing two fangs, “That way, wouldn’t you witness it firsthand, how others control and use the Soaring Shuttle?”

Luo Feng's eyes lit up.

To have someone demonstrate over and over again before him, compared to himself just poring over the books to learn, the difficulty level was completely different.

"Also, you can customize your opponent to have perfect and complete control of the Soaring Shuttle! That way, you'd be able to see...just how to use the Soaring Shuttle, to maximize its potential." Babata said.

"Perfect and complete control?" Luo Feng was very clear.

The Soaring Shuttle's first form, 'Mountain Drill' didn't have any special technique, it just shot out in a straight line.

The Swordfish Formation however, was lively and more skillful in every aspect.

The third form, was even more complex.

At this time, the controlling ability was extremely important, in different people's hands, the amount of power unleashed too would be different. The same Swordfish Formation used, if unleashed perfectly, maybe its power could be raised one to two times more.

“This is a free training session, free teacher.”

“You want to study the Soaring Shuttle, this way, wouldn’t it do?” Babata laughed evilly.

“This is still considered normal and average. Like your teacher, as an Undying! He was well adept in the space control aspect, he could even use space techniques to camouflage a universe coordinate.” Babata explained, “However, to be able to progress further, what could he do? He could totally customize an opponent who knows space techniques, one with space techniques a litte more powerful than himself.”

“That way, he could personally spar again and again with such an opponent.”

“Then in space techniques wise, if one wanted to progress, this would be much easier than training hard blindly.” Babata explained.

Luo Feng had a revelation.

There were many universe origin secret techniques that were deep and profound.

Just watching an opponent unleash it, naturally one wouldn’t be able to learn and master it. However if one naturally had some feel for it, to spar over and over again with an opponent who knows and uses it, one would naturally be able to grasp it easier.

“Free training, free teacher.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but compliment, immediately staring hard, “That’s not right, the cost of this place is still extremely high.”

“The cost is high? Wait till you become a Sector Lord! Or even an Undying, to acquire any form of breakthrough is extremely difficult, the killing fields, these sort of places…to such powerful beings, the quality to price ratio is simply too high! They just have to spend some insignificant cash to receive an opponent they need.” Babata sighed, “You need to know, there are many strong warriors who’ve come to realize that within the universe, when they get stuck at any point, finding an opponent stronger and with more awareness than themselves would make it easy for themselves to trigger inspiration and allow them to breakthrough!”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but nod.

No wonder…

It was no wonder this killing fields dared to price it’s usage so high.

“Babata, how is this killing fields able to virtually simulate perfectly complete secret techniques.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

“The killing fields’ owner is the Virtual Universe Network company.” Babata said, “Over countless years, with countless

strong warriors from the vast universe sparring and battling in the virtual universe, the scene and footage from every battle will naturally be recorded by the virtual universe. Hence, the database of the virtual universe is extremely large. It has a wide array of secret techniques!”

“Of course, they are all just skills that were used, not training methods.” Babata explained.

Luo Feng nodded.

Indeed, just like the Yun Mo Planet’s <Soul Imprint> technique, even if the virtual universe recorded the scene of him unleashing it, without the training manuals, it was still worthless.

However...

To someone of the same sect training the same techniques, it would have great beneficial properties.

“Babata, help me customize a Golden Horned Beast opponent, a Star level 1 Golden Horned Beast.” Luo Feng shouted.

Luo Feng had fully understood the killing fields’ most important usage, that was to teach himself which direction to take and how to train with the greatest efficiency! This killing fields was the database for the Virtual Universe Network company, and the Virtual Universe Network company, as one of the five Great Leviathans of the universe, was much much stronger than any

empire.

The battle scene of a Golden Horned Beast, Luo Feng believed that the virtual universe country would definitely have some reserves!

“Pu!”

“I died again.”

“Again.” Luo Feng stood in mid air, looking at the fully black scaled terrifying Golden Horned Beast, finally understanding its glory and terror.

He himself was a Star level 1! With an amplitude of thirty six, and his spirit weapon was very powerful.

The Golden Horned Beast too was a star level 1!

One side fell!

Of course it was himself!

“Same grade and level, for a human to battle and win against a Golden Horned Beast? That’s simply an impossible task. Even if a person managed to do it, that person would have to be an occasional absolute genius from trillions of galaxies, even having someone stronger than your teacher to mentor and teach.” Babata

said, “As for you Luo Feng? Your power is rising too quickly, your control of the soaring shuttle is still too raw, even with ten tries, you’d still be killed.”

Death!

And death again!

Luo Feng was killed time and again by the same grade and level Golden Horned Beast, there was actually another reason, Luo Feng had customized this Golden Horned Beast to be incredibly adept at battle!

“So the Golden Horned Beast is actually that adept at battle!”

“Its wings actually have the feeling of blade technique, the best way to use these scaled wings aren’t to smash directly, but to brush and slice past like a blade, and this movement itself allows so much more flexibility.”

“The tail acts like a whip, the tail is indeed the fastest part of the Golden Horned Beast, I’ve always only used very simple attacks, however this Golden Horned Beast’s tail in this killing fields really mimics a whip, suddenly attacking and vibrating the air, causing the space to explode, it’s power is obviously much greater.”

“It doesn’t use its claws immediately, but the moment it does, it’s power is shocking and earthshaking.”

Luo Feng was trampled and killed immediately by the Golden Horned Beast!

“So it’s that way, that way.” Reviving again, Luo Feng felt an extreme sense of excitement, “I know now how to train the Golden Horned Beast in the future.

Even with good natural talents, it didn’t mean that every Golden Horned Beast was at the same level of strength.

One had to know that with generation after generation of Golden Horned Beast, the <Absolute Realm> technique, many die after achieving the first level, while the others were mostly stuck at level 2, however in history there were some who actually managed to train till they reached level 3! What did this mean? It meant that even among the same powerful bloodline, there were differences in their battle abilities.

Luo Feng thought about it, he wanted to make himself the strongest Golden Horned Beast in history!

In the following days.

Luo Feng first went with Hong and Thunder God to purchase a plot of land within Black Dragon Mountain Island’s 9 star bay, following his intentions to purchase several wooden houses. This would totally allow Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God’s families to be able to live within them. After, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God even sent a large number of consciousness transmitting helmets to Earth.

Luo Feng's family all loved it there.

His parents enjoyed playing the virtual games, enjoying a perfect and comfortable life within the games. The two children Ping Ping and Little Hai were receiving Babata's planned training methods, engaging in martial arts training amidst games and fun. The most excited however was undoubtedly his little brother Luo Hua.

"It's too advanced and magnificent."

"Earth's stock market, compared to the universe's banking and investment system, is like a drop of water in a vast ocean."

"Over here, is truly a stockbroker's investment and trading heaven!!!" Luo Hua was incomparably excited, requesting from Luo Feng ten transmitter helmets, all for the sake of having several assistants. Since then, Luo Hua and his assistants stayed within a three storey wooden house, analyzing the finance of the universe countries and began investing.

As for capital?

Luo Feng back then had given Hong and Thunder God 500 million Ganwu dollars, naturally he wouldn't give his own little brother less, similarly giving 500 million Ganwu dollars.

.....

The virtual universe indeed could satisfy all of one's needs.

Amidst the time spent, Luo Feng came to know from the surveillance system installed around the wormhole that a universe ship had passed through, Luo Feng estimated that it was from the Nuolan Shan family. However...to arrive on Earth would require another 2 years and 8 months. Luo Feng wasn't rushed or anxious. He was currently engaged in endless joy and fun.

"Third brother, you called me crazy, your big brother is the crazy one. The longest I've gone is three days in the killing fields without leaving. Look at your big brother, he actually hasn't left the killing fields space in eight days consecutively, won't he ever get tired?"

Thunder God and Luo Feng were currently sitting at a corner of the killing fields hall, ordering some food and beverages.

Chapter 3 – Nuolan Shan

Within the hall of the killing fields.

Luo Feng and Thunder God were casually engaged in a conversation, this was also an effective way to relax.

“Luo Feng, Thunder!”

“Haha, what a surprise bumping into you two here.” A clear laughter resounded, a black skinned man as big as a bear, along with a pale skinny red haired youth walked side by side over.

“Buleimu, Heruo, come, sit.” Luo Feng waved and shouted.

As frequent customers training hard within the killing fields, and also frequent visitors of the big hall, chatting away, they naturally met a few similar elites who spent many hours within the killing fields. Everybody was clear, to be able to spend so much time within the killing fields, meant that one either had a lot of money or a lot of background, that their paths would meet again in the future. The more friends they made, the more paths they opened, the future adventures in the universe may require such friends, hence everybody made the effort to make more friends.

Within the short time of a month, Luo Feng had made over thirty friends, the two standing before them were considered the closer ones.

“Hong hasn’t come out?” Buleimu exclaimed loudly.

“He hasn’t come out in 8 days.” Thunder god said.

“That’s crazy.” Heruo couldn’t help but laugh, “Right, let me tell you two something…Buleimu and I won’t be coming to the killing fields for quite a bit.” The sturdy and huge Buleimu beside him nodded.

“What’s wrong?” Luo Feng and Thunder God were shocked.

These two were very similar to them, frequently staying for long periods within the killing fields.

“Buleimu and I have been ordered by our teacher to go and become universe mercenary trainees by attending the mercenary trainee examination.” Heruo said softly, “This universe mercenary trainee examination is much more dangerous than the usual universe explorer missions, I heard the mortality rate and elimination rate is extremely high. If, a month later, neither Buleimu nor I, come to the killing fields, we’d most likely have died from the examinations. I’m telling you today just to let you know that if we disappear, you’d think we left without saying our goodbyes, totally unfriendly, haha…”

“For real?”

Luo Feng and Thunder God were very shocked.

The universe mercenary trainee examination, was it that absurd?

“It is indeed dangerous, however, the Universe levels, the Domain and sector lords, over 99% of them are mercenaries.” Heruo’s gaze was serious, “If I don’t take a gamble, and become some small guard or soldier, constantly at others’ beck and call, I’ll regret it. If I have to be somebody, I’ll go all out, if I want to live well free and easy, I have to risk it all, I have to battle!”

“Yeah.” Buleimu nodded his head seriously.

Luo Feng and Thunder god glanced at each other.

As the two of them were high above everyone within earth, they didn’t have any sort of pressure from others. Unlike Heruo and Buleimu who had such heavy upbringing, the pressure from their living environment was much more than Luo Feng and the others. The heavy upbringing from the huge powers, with them spending large amounts of money and resources etc, if they didn’t get a satisfactory result, the expelled and rejected heirs’ fates definitely aren’t good.

“Heruo, Buleimu, the trainee examinations, are they that dangerous?” Thunder God was suspicious.

The Universe Mercenary Alliance.

The ranks were separated into explorers, trainee mercenaries, 1 star mercenary, 2 star mercenary and 3 star mercenary. Of which,

the explorers weren't required to take any examination, all they had to do was to go sign up and they'd immediately become explorers. The trainee mercenaries were required to take the examination, the 1 star mercenaries too were required...every rank required taking the exams!

The trainee mercenary examination, one could immediately participate after reaching the star level.

The failure and elimination percentage was extremely high.

"It's very dangerous." The big and sturdy Buleimu said softly from the side, his voice almost like it reverberated from within his chest out, "The Universe Mercenaries, they are originally a job where one risks his life constantly, hence, as the entrance exam, the trainee mercenary exam aims to eliminate fighters and spirit readers who aren't fit to be mercenaries."

"The location of the exam, is and has always been the excavated worlds of Sector Lords." Buleimu said, "In a Sector Lord's world, the Universe Mercenary Alliance will construct several difficult and dangerous situations to eliminate a large amount of people. From the elimination process, if you are lucky, you'll survive, however the mortality rate is still very high."

"Sector Lord's world?"

Luo Feng was shocked.

A Domain Lord's world, Luo Feng had researched and asked Babata about it. Within the universe, a Universe level warrior was already a big shot, and a Domain Lord, was able to unleash his own domain within reality itself! A Domain Lord's domain, wasn't anything like Hong's or Thunder God's, it was tens of millions of times stronger.

As for a Sector Lord, not just having an internal world, one was able to even create a new world!

Within this world, many things could be customized and built according to the wishes of the sector lord. Hence, many impossible and physics defying situations could be created.

"What are you talking about?" A voice resounded.

Luo Feng and the other three turned to look, it was Hong dressed in a black battle uniform walking over, his entire being seemed to be high-spirited. Luo Feng couldn't help but to sigh at this sight... Hong was indeed a weird thing, after extreme battle after battle, normal people would be extremely tired and exhausted. Hong, however, never seemed to grow tired.

"I heard you all saying the mortality rate is very high?" Hong pulled a chair and sat.

"We are talking about the universe mercenary trainee exams." Thunder god said.

“The military instructor is here?” Buleimu said softly.

“Military instructor?” Heruo too looked towards the entrance of the big hall, immediately spotting three human silhouettes walking over. One of which, was their military instructor. Buleimu and Heruo immediately put down their crossed leg, becoming much more serious.

“Military instructor, the Universe level military instructor you all mentioned before, Kunxi?” Thunder God muttered.

“That’s him?” Luo Feng too looked curiously.

Heruo said softly, “It’s the distant bald-headed one dressed in the green battle uniform.” Luckily they were in the virtual universe, where everyone’s power levels were limited to only the low level wargod. Even though one could acquire badges and medals to prove one’s true power in the virtual universe, however only in special circumstances, like the killing fields, could one unleash the same amount of power one has in reality.

And outside these special circumstances, be it the ordinary masses, or an Undying Being, they all had a low level wargod body.

Luckily that Universe level military instructor now currently had a weak and small body, his hearing abilities couldn’t pick up on their conversation. If he had heard the two words ‘bald headed’, he definitely would have fiercely punished his own elite students.

“Bald headed?” Luo Feng looked carefully over.

There were three people walking side by side in the distance, amongst them two were bald, one was in a green battle uniform while the other was in a dark grey battle uniform. As for the third…his ears were pointy, eyes gleaming red…

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s squinted his eyes, “This person’s appearance is similar to the people of the Nuolan Shan family!”

The three people in the distance, the person similar to the Nuolan Shan family also seemed to have noticed Luo Feng, staring at them.

The two locked eye contact for awhile!

It was like they were against each other immediately.

……

“Mr. Nuolan Shan, what are you looking at?” The Universe Mercenary Kunxi turned suspiciously over to look, laughing after, “Oh, there’s two of my underlings’ students.”

“Your underlings?”

Nuolan Shan’s ice cold gaze looked over, “That black haired youth dressed in the blood red battle uniform?”

“No, I don’t recognize that youth.” Kunxi shook his head, beside him, the other bald universe mercenary said, “Those five, the big black one and the red haired little one, are our elite students from within the group, the other three, we don’t recognize.”

“As long as they are not from your North Dragon City.” Nuolan Shan’s gaze was ice cold.

The moment he saw Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God, he immediately recognized...the black haired blood red uniformed youth was the broadcasted publicly Earth’s leader...Luo Feng! Nuolan Shan immediately felt a raging fire erupt from within, rushing straight to his head!

He, a Battle-axe status warrior!

Just how many has he massacred?

Directly controlling over one thousand life planets, the number of warriors under him were like clouds, he hadn’t tasted such defeat in a very long time. However on Earth, he indeed suffered a heavy loss.

“Mr. Nuolan Shan.” The two Universe Mercenaries looked at Nuolan Shan with confusion.

Nuolan Shan took big strides towards Luo Feng. The two universe mercenaries followed behind. They were there following

Nuolan Shan...afterall even amongst the Universe level warriors, there were differences in status, as a Universe level 9 and having the status of Battle-axe warrior, Nuolan Shan's status was naturally very high!

Even though the hall was huge, there were still about ten thousand customers.

A warrior with a huge axe medal on his chest along with two 1 star mercenary warriors, would definitely attract the gaze of many, the three walked swiftly towards Luo Feng.

"Hm?" Luo Feng's eyebrows creased.

"Military instructor!"

Heruo and Buleimu swiftly stood up, Hong and Thunder God looked suspiciously at Nuolan Shan, saying softly, "Luo Feng, that man looks very similar to the Nuolan Shan family people."

"I'm afraid he's not friendly." Luo Feng squinted his eyes.

Within a moment...

Pa!

Battle boots slammed on the ground, the three universe level warriors stood before Luo Feng's table.

“I see the two military instructors.” Heruo and Buleimu said respectfully.

“Hm.” The two bald military instructors nodded slightly, looking over at Nuolan Shan. Nuolan Shan just stood there, surveying Luo Feng who was sitting before him, saying coldly, “You are Luo Feng?”

“Yes!” Luo Feng looked at him.

“That planet is yours?” Nuolan Shan asked this particular second sentence without mentioning the name of Earth.

Luo Feng’s lips curled into a smile, “Yes!”

“Sell it to me.” Nuolan Shan’s cold gaze stared hard at Luo Feng. “Name a price.”

Luo Feng shook his head.

“10 billion Ganwu dollars?” Nuolan Shan said.

“There’s no room for discussion.” Luo Feng said without any hesitation.

“100 billion Ganwu dollars!” Nuolan Shan said.

“I said…there’s no room for discussion. No matter what price you say, no deal.” Luo Feng looked at Nuolan Shan, beside him Hong and Thunder God calmly looked at him.

Beside him, the two universe mercenaries were extremely shocked, Nuolan Shan wanted to buy this youth’s planet the moment he saw him and even gave such an extravagant figure. 10 billion Ganwu dollars was definitely enough to buy a top level life planet, and even saying 100 billion Ganwu dollars, such a heavenly figure, just what kind of planet was worth such a price?

Even for someone like Nuolan Shan, shelling out this much money was quite a feat too.

“You are provoking me!” Nuolan Shan squinted his eyes, staring just like a venomous snake at the youth, “Young man, my temper isn’t good, but today I’m giving you this chance…give me the planet under your name, and all our feuds and debts will be settled.”

“Give the planet to you?” Luo Feng’s lips curled into a smile.

Is that possible?

Earth, was home to countless families to the humans of Earth. To others, it may seem that there could be a price that could be used to buy it, however to one of Earth, it was priceless!

“I apologize, I won’t be treating you to a drink.” Luo Feng raised his cup and downed the glass in one shot.

Nuolan Shan’s expression immediately grew even uglier.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God didn’t even bother to look at him.

“Come on, big brother, second brother, cheers.” Luo Feng lifted his glass.

“Come, cheers.” Hong laughed.

“Bottoms up.” Thunder God said.

The three totally treated the Battle-axe warrior Nuolan Shan who was standing beside as nothing but empty space. If it were in reality...the three would probably have run far away the moment they spotted Nuolan Shan, escaping as far they could. However, in the virtual universe, what did they need to be afraid of?

Chapter 4 – Action

Luo Feng and his two brothers drank their wine as though there was no one else there, Nuolan Shan stood beside them with an extremely ugly expression, the other two bald universe mercenaries too seemed displeased. This was because in the virtual universe, maintaining respect for the strong was the most basic form of courtesy. From their point of view, these three youths before them were excessively arrogant.

"This..." Heruo and Buleimu looked at each other, not daring to make a sound.

"This wine is not bad! If it were in the real world, its price would be at least a hundred times of this?" Thunder God complimented.

"And it'd be really hard to get your hands on it." Hong said.

"There are so many good things about the virtual universe!" Luo Feng complimented.

Nuolan Shan's eye muscles twitched a few times, using a venomous gaze to sweep past the three at the table, suddenly scolding softly: "three disrespectful little brats." Luo Feng carried on not looking at him, "I'll let you all know, even in the virtual universe, you have to respect the strong!"

Hu!

His right leg moved just like a huge scythe, slicing past the air, as fast as lightning, heading towards Luo Feng.

“You dare to make a move?”

Luo Feng roared softly, his body fiercely jolting backwards, at the same time using his left shoulder to block the leg. Peng! Nuolan Shan’s right leg violently smashed into Luo Feng’s shoulder, Luo Feng’s entire body was immediately forced back a few steps, his eyes gleamed, staring at the wine and dishes etc beside. The wine bottle, dishes all immediately floated up and flew over towards Nuolan Shan.

“Fight!” Thunder God roared loudly.

“Hmph!” Hong too moved like lightning and joined the fray.

Everyone was stuck in a beginner level wargod body, so there was nothing to be afraid of!

“Be careful, his force exertions are greater than ours” Luo Feng shouted, he was long prepared for Nuolan Shan exploding and attacking him, however that kick still far exceeded what Luo Feng had anticipated, his shoulder was still in immense pain.

“Fighting with me?”

Nuolan Shan coldly swung a kick Thunder God who was the first to rush in, Thunder God’s entire waist section twisted slightly,

almost like a twisted piece of fried dough, dodging the kick, and his fist swung in an arc that had a sudden boost in speed, strangely whistling as it headed towards Nuolan Shan. Nuolan Shan's eyebrows creased, the left kick he had thrown out became a horizontal slice, slicing towards Thunder God's waist, creating tremor from the impact.

"Hmph." Thunder God's body softened and absorbed the impact, just like cotton candy, wrapping himself around Nuolan Shan's left leg and simultaneously getting prepared to use a binding killing technique.

"Soft methods?" Nuolan Shan's expression changed slightly.

Weng!

The individual muscles within his left leg suddenly softened and collapsed, at the same time, just like a big slippery snake, slipping swiftly out of the binding hold.

"Rumble!"

A terrifying exploding sound, Hong's right leg was like a sharp cone piercing towards Nuolan Shan's head, Nuolan Shan smiled malevolently and rushed ahead instead, his body crouched a little lower, easily avoiding the kick! But Hong's right kick actually immediately hacked downwards as it headed straight towards Nuolan Shan's head!

“Get lost!” Nuolan Shan scolded, actually using his head to hit the leg, his neck suddenly seemed to have thickened by two or three layers.

“Rumble!”

The hard head meets the hard leg, Hong’s entire body seemed to lose his center and balance, toppling over to the side. Thunder God’s hands both became like a gentle lover’s caress, 10 fingers swaying, like a strong wind blowing straight towards Nuolan Shan’s flushed red face, but if one looked carefully, it felt like every one of the fingers were pythons.

“Chi chi…” Hong once again got up and rushed over, punch after punch, each heavier than before, like a tidal wave, extremely unrelenting.

“Destroy his spirit!”

Standing not too far away, Luo Feng commanded softly.

A needle like spirit energy immediately pierced towards Nuolan Shan’s brain.

“Get lost!!!” Nuolan Shan shouted fiercely, his eyes raging, his arms seemed to suddenly expand and get bigger, at the same time having a peculiar piercing power, simultaneously dispersing Thunder God’s palms, Hong’s fists and at the same time hitting the two on their chests, causing Hong and Thunder God to spit blood

and fly backwards.

Silence.

Many people within the spacious hall of the killing fields looked over.

“Whatever we’ve destroyed, put it on my bill.” Nuolan Shan yelled, before looking coldly at Luo Feng and the others.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were extremely shocked.

Usually against the same level of opponent, Luo Feng’s spirit energy attacks could usually completely decimate the opponent, however…this time, without any spirit weapons in the huge hall, Luo Feng could only rely on attacking his mental capacity. However, it didn’t seem to affect Nuolan Shan at all. And Hong and Thunder God, during the Great Nirvana, one was a master at martial arts, while the other was a yoga master and martial artist, the two were both extremely adept at close hand battles, and this time they actually both lost to one person.

One had to know, everyone’s body build and spiritual force were of the same strength.

This was the virtual universe, every single person’s body build was exactly the same.

“Just you, you think you can use spirit energy to attack and

defeat me?” Nuolan Shan looked at the distant and clearly shocked Lou Feng, coldly laughing, “In the Battle-axe Colosseum, if I couldn’t deal with spirit attacks, how do you think I could have survived, much less win a thousand battles and acquire the Battle-axe warrior status!”

Even though their spirit energy levels were similar, however the consciousness level, as a Battle-axe Universe level 9 warrior, his consciousness was indeed very strong.

“As for you two.”

“Don’t think that just because we have similar bodies you can look down on a Universe level warrior! Even with the same bodies, the strong can still easily subdue you two.”

“Well said!” The Universe Mercenary Kunxi shouted from beside.

“Right!”

“Even in the virtual universe, the weak still have to respect the strong!”

“Be it consciousness, skills, experience, unleashing of strength etc, these little brats are too far off. And they are arrogant!” Immediately beside them, a few universe level warriors began talking, countless people looked on with weird gazes at Luo Feng and his 2 brothers. These 3 brats actually dared to disrespect universe levels?

Respecting the strong in the universe was the most basic form of courtesy!

“They deserve it.”

“The deserved to be taught a lesson.” Many people began to chime in.

Hong, Luo Feng and Thunder god’s expressions were ice cold.

“Nuolan Shan!”

Luo Feng said coldly, “Respecting the strong is the most basic form of courtesy, but before, within the killing fields, I’ve never once offended the strong! However you, you scum, because of your greed, you’ve killed so many of my fellow race people, up to tens of millions?” The humans of Earth had indeed lost many lives because of the Nuolan Shan family.

With multiple battles, the ones lost to the shockwaves and impacts were many.

Along with the arrival of the Nuolan Shan family arrival causing the bases of the entire world to go into chaos, with all the robbing and riots, within the chaos, many more died.

“And you even wanted to use force to buy my planet?”

“Killing my people, using force to buy my planet, and you still want me to respect you, bullshit! Dream on.” Luo Feng lowered his head and spit fiercely, Nuolan Shan’s expression kept changing, however he had no way to refute, whatever Luo Feng said was indeed true. Many of the people with huge backgrounds around them came from the various continents of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire all nodded their heads, so it was like that, no wonder this group of youths actually fought it out with this Battle-axe warrior.

“Oh...:

“No wonder.”

“This youth really has guts.”

The situation became clear to those around, with a feud between the two, it was natural that all forms of respect was thrown out the window.

Nuolan Shan looked at Luo Feng, slightly nodding his head, “A mouth that really knows how to speak.”

“It’s not that I really know how to speak, it’s filled with logic! As long as it’s the truth and upright, I naturally won’t be afraid of you, I won’t bow down to you.” Luo Feng stared at Nuolan Shan, coldly smiling, “Mr. Nuolan Shan, if it wasn’t for your greed, we three brothers were simply drinking wine here, why’d you have to come bully us young ones?”

Nuolan Shan raged from within, yet not knowing what to say, clenching his fists hard.

“What, you want to fight again?” Thunder God mocked.

“We cannot fight and win against some like you who has the title of Battle-axe warrior and is also an elder at the Universe level 9.” Hong too couldn’t help but provoke him.

“Big brother, second brother, let us go.” Luo Feng waved.

“Let’s go.” Hong said.

“People like these aren’t worth our words.” Thunder God joined in.

Luo Feng and the other two headed straight towards the exit of the big hall.

Nuolan Shan’s expression was ashen, raging from within, however he was indeed clear that he was eyeing Earth, eyeing its treasures, and since it was greed, he wasn’t upright at all. And now since he didn’t wish to speak about the matter, because he didn’t want anybody else to discover the treasures of Earth!

“Luo Feng!” Nuolan Shan said coldly.

Luo Feng turned to look at Nuolan Shan, smiling, “Mr. Nuolan Shan, what other matters do you have?”

“Just now when I fought you all, aren’t you very dissatisfied?” Nuolan Shan squinted his eyes.

“Yes, I am.” Luo Feng said coldly, “You, a Universe level 9 warrior, with experience, strength, consciousness, etc, all stronger than us, the battle wasn’t even fair, and you think I’ll be satisfied?”

“I’ll give you another chance.”

Nuolan Shan snorted softly, “I’ll find three underlings of the same level and grade as you all to fight on three different battlefields! As long as out of the three battles, you are able to win one battle...then you’ll be considered the winners of this entire gamble. I’ll give you 10 billion Ganwu dollars. However if you all don’t even win one battle, you give me your planet.”

“A gambling battle is fine, but the bet being the planet? No way.” Luo Feng looked at Nuolan Shan.

Nuolan Shan was extremely enraged, to the point he grinded his teeth.

This Luo Feng, he valued this Earth far too much.

Did this Luo Feng not know...

Even though it had the automaton ship and such level of treasures, with Luo Feng's background, the moment he took it out, it would be snatched away by others.

"Immediately exchanging it for 100 billion Ganwu dollars, he wasn't even willing, its 100 billion Ganwu dollars!"

He was really hoping beyond all hope to acquire the rights to Earth, that way, even if he couldn't excavate all the treasures of Earth, he could still auction off the planet, selling off all the treasures in one go! With the rights to the planet, conducting all the businesses would be a lot more convenient, there wouldn't be a need to sneakily send two universe levels to invade Earth.

This sort of action, was called theft!

And the thing that Nuolan Shan was most worried about was that Luo Feng had already claimed the rights from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, meaning that the families of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire knew how to head towards Earth.

Nuolan Shan was afraid...

That those big families, would start having interest towards Earth, sending armies through the wormhole and towards Earth.

After all the Nuolan Shan family, was only the third family in the Kaluo empire. And the Black Dragon Mountain Empire's critical

people within the bigger families, usually the founders were all Sector Lords! If that level of family were to intervene, his Nuolan Shan family wouldn’t stand a chance at all.

Chapter 5 – The Killing Fields' Battlespace

Within the hall of the Killing Fields, Nuolan Shan watched as Luo Feng and the other two left, eyes ice cold.

The two bald Universe Mercenaries from North Dragon City walked over, of which Kunxi even laughed, "Mr. Nuolan Shan, that Luo Feng and his party are just three brats that aren't worth getting angry over! If Mr. Nuolan Shan is unhappy, we'll find a chance, and go destroy his real body in reality if need be!"

"Right, Mr. Nuolan Shan, from what I see, we'd better first head into the battlespace." The other bald universe mercenary persuaded.

"Hold on a moment," Nuolan Shan said coldly, turning to look at the not to far off Buleimu and Heruo, "The two of you, come here."

"Us?"

Heruo with the pale skin and red hair, along with the huge and sturdy black man Buleimu glanced at each other, their hearts palpitating with fear. The powerful warrior that even their two instructors who had to butter up to was looking for them? If he wanted to kill them it would be too simple, Heruo groaned under his breath, "Luo Feng, you've really screwed us over!"

"We greet Mr. Nuolan Shan." Heruo and Buleimu said respectfully.

“What’s the number of his virtual universe account.”

Heruo and Buleimu were slightly shocked, hesitating for a moment. However, staring straight two universe level military instructors along with a Battle-axe warrior, the two could only lower their heads and exchange glances, finally, Heruo said softly, “Sir, Luo Feng’s virtual universe number is…” Heruo reported a long account number.

“Ok.” Nuolan Shan turned to leave straight after hearing it. The two bald Universe Mercenaries followed behind.

Milky way, Earth.

The Westlake Courtyard was fully rebuilt, also Luo Feng had installed a special highest D1 grade level castle within the universe. Around this castle were planet surveillance systems and security, this was the center. The entire solar system’s many surveillance satellites, defense systems, etc were mostly controlled from here.

Within the castle, a seven storey planet control room.

“Master.”

“Around the Dark space wormhole area, there’ve been three groups that have entered, the first is a D3 grade ship, the second is a D1 grade ship while the third is a C8 grade ship.

Luo Feng stood within the main control room of the Earth defense system, before him a huge floating screen was separated into three scenes, each showing a different universe ship. This scene caused Luo Feng to slightly crease his eyebrows, pondering over the situation.

“These three groups of people should be from three different groups.”

“According to the levels of the ships, we can deduce the strength and levels. The first batch, there’s a high possibility that there’s a Universe level warrior, the second batch is probably a group of elite Star levels or a Universe level, the third batch is most probably a group of Star levels.” Luo Feng did the deduction swiftly within his mind, ever since he made the request to become Earth’s leader, the only way to head towards Earth...was through the wormhole and travelling through space for 2 years and 8 months!

This method was definitely known by the empire.

Hence, there would be other powers sending little scout teams over, this too was within his calculations.

“Luo Feng, you have new mail in the Virtual Universe Network.”

“Oh, connect to the virtual universe.”

On Black Dragon Mountain Island, nine star bay, people mostly

built along the bay, or the protruding small mountain range to build their extravagant villas, all customizing according to their wishes. Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God had also bought a piece of land along a river, constructing the building mainly using wood.

“First young Master, this move is really beautiful.”

“Second young master, you should be kicking at this time.”

“Uncle Meng Two, when can I actually enter the inner sect.”

“Very soon, just train a little more and it’ll happen.”

Within a three storey wooden pavilion, two young Black Mongolian youths were currently engaged in teaching Luo Feng’s two children Ping Ping and Little Hai. Luo Feng suddenly appeared and the two children looked surprised over: “Daddy!” Luo Ping and Luo Hai, under the permission of Luo Feng, were specially sent into the virtual universe by Babata to play the virtual games.

These were games that secretly had beneficial effects on their learning; learning through fun. With regards to their bodies’ abilities to expand energy skills, etc, even though they were just children, however his own two children...were many many times stronger than back when he lived in a rental apartment before. Also, Luo Feng had used a few evolution treasures during their conception period.

This was commonly seen in big families in the universe.

These all made Luo Hai and Luo Ping, who were only at the age of 4, to be intermediate level warriors. On Earth, this was indeed shocking, however in the universe, it was common and normal.

“Whose mail?” Luo Feng sat on a nearby chair, with a thought, a screen floated before him, swiftly pulling up the mail.

“Hm?”

“It’s actually an anonymous number, it’s probably that Nuolan Shan knew I wouldn’t negotiate with him, and decided to just send a mail over”. Luo Feng was intrigued and curious about the details of the mail, reading over it carefully. The mail was very long, explaining in detail about the dangers and evils of the universe, warning Luo Feng about the great dangers of bringing out the automaton ship in the universe.

Ten birds in the forest do not equate to one in hand!

The automaton ship was expensive, however without being alive to spend the money, it would be better to just exchange it for some rewards now.

“Tsk tsk, this Nuolan Shan is so well off.” Luo Feng looked at the large amounts of offers and conditions from Nuolan Shan, this time he didn’t want to buy Earth, but to actually share control to govern Earth. The two would function through shares, Luo Feng would be the main stockholder, maintaining his leader status. The Nuolan Shan family would have the smaller status.

At the same time, the automaton ship would be given to the Nuolan Shan family.

This way...

The Nuolan Shan family could continue to do many things.

“Stockholders? Govern Earth together? And all they want is the automaton ship?” Luo Feng rubbed his chin.

“Don’t give it to them!”

“Luo Feng, the Yun Mo Planet ship is already damaged, the conditions required to repair it is extremely hard. And when you get stronger, you’d be able to take the automaton ship! From that, you can live easy.” Babata said, “The automaton race’s technology level far exceeds that of the human race. Don’t ever agree to that Nuolan Shan. Earth’s treasures, this automaton ship itself, can be said to be your future trump card.”

“I understand.” Luo Feng nodded, following that, he proceeded to delete the mail that Nuolan Shan had carefully arranged for his underlings to write in detail with much allure.

At that time...

“Du, du, du.”

“Luo Feng, Heruo and Buleimu requests a call.”

“Answer.”

Luo Feng flew out into the wooden building’s third floor, a screen floated before him, on it was the skinny and frail looking Heruo along with the strong and sturdy Buleimu.

“Luo Feng, my apologies, I’ve given your virtual universe account number to Mr. Nuolan Shan, it shouldn’t affect you that much right.” Heruo said, beside him Buleimu said, “We also just received the call to order, we are leaving immediately to take part in the Universe Mercenary Probation Exams, we’ll see you when we return.”

“Wish that we’ll be able to return alive yup.” Heruo too smiled.

“All the best.” Luo Feng raised a fist, “If you come back alive, then I’ll forget about you ever revealing my virtual universe number.”

“Hah.” Heruo laughed, “Right Luo Feng, I’ve always seen you three brothers up till now only entering in the Killing Fields’ slaughter space, if you have time, go check out the battlespace, it’s a little more meaningful than the slaughter space.”

“battlespace?” Luo Feng was slightly stunned, “Ok, I’ll check it out.”

Earth had been secured and protected by Luo Feng and was well fortified, also, through the slave market he even bought another 29 Star level 9 slaves, along with the seven surviving Star level 9 slaves from before, they formed a group of 36 elite. And according to the level of security systems around the planet, it could be said that as long as it wasn't someone or something from the universe, everything else could be easily settled.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God immersed themselves in their training.

Killing Fields.

"So the battlespace is like that."

"Looking at the introduction, compared to the slaughter space, it is indeed interesting." Luo Feng and the others stood at the front counter of the Killing Fields' big hall, looking at the screen footage introduction of the space. The slaughter space, was made specifically for one person to use at a time. In it, one could specify one's opponent, it was the best training tool.

And the battlespace, was where real fighters and warriors could battle against each other!

The people they fought were two real humans, not just virtual simulations. And the amount of credit consumed for using the battlespace was only one tenth of the slaughter space.

……

“I’m a Star level 1, right now I can only pick an opponent of the same level.” Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God sat in a corner of the Killing Fields’ big hall, there were screens floating before them, on it appeared many opponents and introductions of their strengths and powers. If you wanted to battle…you’d first have to send out a request and invite the opponent to battle.

“Haha, third brother, big brother. Look, this person actually calls himself the number 1 exponent, but has only won 21 and lost 921 times, his ranking remains as 1 star.”

Within the battlespace, one could easily give himself any name.

This was for the sake of the renowned or powerful people to conceal their identities should they want to train. These sort of business places naturally adhered to their clients’ requests and adapt to their every whim.

“I can only pick someone of the same level now?” Luo Feng’s gaze swept past the rankings…ignoring the 5 star ones and looking straight at the 6 star and 7 star opponents. The entire ranking system, the highest rank was 9 stars, that was the strongest warrior of the same level.

“Over this month, I’ve already reached the Soaring Shuttle’s fifth layer of control.”

“I’ll choose a 7 star opponent and give it a shot.” Luo Feng formally sent out the request, this was the first time for Luo Feng to battle against an opponent of the same level and grade.

1 second, 2 seconds, 1 minute, 2 minutes...

“Damn, I picked a 6 star opponent, there’s actually no reply, he’s ignoring me.” Thunder God stared hard.

“My opponent is ignoring me too.” Luo Feng said helplessly, “Big brother, what about you?”

“Big brother?” Thunder God looked at Hong too.

Hong rubbed his nose, saying solemnly, “I picked a 9 star Star Traveller level 9, I feel that I should be able to battle with him, however...the battle request was immediately rejected, the system reported that a 9 star warrior has the power to set a limitation, only 7 stars and above are able to request for a battle with him.”

Luo Feng and Thunder God blinked hard.

The three brothers...

This was the first time they wanted to spar with others, and yet they were all looked down upon.

Chapter 6 – Battle!

Hong, Luo Feng and Thunder God were all very confident in themselves, hence they went straight for battling warriors of the same level.

“That’s not strange at all, afterall I am a newbie and my ranking is ‘null’” Thunder God said helplessly, “If we were strong, in order to not waste time, I’m afraid that we’d have to pick high ranking people to battle. Right now, from what I see, we’d probably do better starting from scratch and making a name for ourselves.”

“We’ll start from nothing.”

“First we’ll rush up the rankings, then we’ll be able to challenge the strong ones!”

Even though Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were confident that they could sweep the 1 and 2 star rankers, they still had to take it one step at a time.

“Luo Feng, what nickname did you pick?” Thunder God asked, there was a function within the battlespace allowing one to conceal one’s true identity, you could pick whatever name you wished.

“Crazy.” Luo Feng said, “You?”

“Martial Arts God.” Thunder god said.

“That’s shameless enough.” Luo Feng was speechless, Hong who was beside couldn’t help but to laugh out too, Luo Feng looked at Hong and asked, “Big brother, what about you?”

“Killer!” Hong replied.

Luo Feng had the nickname of crazy back then, and Hong was an assassin before the Great Nirvana, as for Thunder God, he had always been a martial arts idiot, martial arts crazy, to actually dare to give himself the name of martials arts god, that was crazy in itself.

“Let’s begin then!”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God lowered their heads, sending out requests to opponents, all of them simultaneously sending these requests out to the 1 star rankers.

“Your challenge has been accepted.”

“Sending to the battlespace.” The virtual universe system’s message appeared on Luo Feng’s screen, only then did Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief, only this third challenge attempt actually went through. One never would have thought that the 1 star same level fighters would all be arrogant and proud, not wanting to accept a battle with a new challenger without and rank. The opponent that he finally managed to match up with had the name of ‘Bloody Swordsman’.

……

Within the battlespace.

On an incomparably vast grassy field, there was a black metal arena that was about 10km long and 10km wide.

A tall and built green skinned man, carrying a long sword on his back stood in the arena, muttering, “Crazy? This person actually called himself crazy, looks like there’s some crazy in his bones, tsk tsk, battles against a madman are usually the best. Newbie, newbie, let me teach you a good lesson.”

Nickname Bloody Swordsman, 12 wins, 3 losses.

In the arena, from out of nowhere, a black haired youth wearing a black battle uniform standing on a Soaring Shuttle appeared. The battle uniform along with the Soaring Shuttle were both chosen from within the system. One could choose whatever weapon one fancied within the battlespace and slaughter space, as for the uniform, they had to pick the most basic of uniforms.

“Hello” Luo Feng smiled at the green skinned youth before him.

“Very courteous, you are crazy? Haha, just because you are courteous, I won’t humiliate you too badly.” Bloody Swordsman laughed and smiled back.

“Bloody Swordsman? You are my very first opponent in the

battlespace, you actually agreed and accepted my challenge, just for that, I won't kill you too painfully." Luo Feng smiled, within his eyes however a trace of bloodthirst and insanity, even though he had massacred a lot in the slaughter space, it was far from enough after having suppressed his bloodthirst for so long.

However, venting it all out too resulted in the bloodthirst seeping deeper into his bones.

"What an arrogant newbie!" Bloody Swordsman laughed coldly, with a rumble, attacks that were ten times the speed of sound rained down on Luo Feng, and the high speed attacks resulted in the air exploding with ripples far behind the Bloody Swordsman.

Luo Feng floated calmly in mid air.

"Go!" Luo Feng raised his hand and gently pointed towards the Bloody Swordsman.

Xiu!

Thirty blades with gold threads swiftly unleashed threads of gold, forming a golden swordfish, this swordfish was extremely lifelike, waving its tail in mid air, shaking a little before becoming a single gold line, easily brushing past the Bloody Swordsman's panicked rushed defense with his raw energy blade, piercing through his forehead.

The Bloody Swordsman's body resumed its usual flight for quite

a distance before naturally dropping straight down, his body landing on the grassy field outside the arena.

Xiu!

A golden swordfish swiftly returned to Luo Feng's feet, being absorbed into the Soaring Shuttle.

Crazy's first battle, victory!

"After madly training the swordfish formation within the Killing Fields for a month, battling over ten thousand times, I've reached the Soaring Shuttle's fifth layer of control. Right now using the fourth layer is almost like a natural reflex, flexible and nimble. Killing someone of the same level, would definitely be a simple massacre." Luo Feng was very confident.

This confidence wasn't just baseless.

That was because...his consciousness aptitude had already reached thirty, among the Star level 1 spirit readers, to be able to control up to thirty six weapons simultaneously, even within the Universe, he would still be considered an absolute genius. As for the reason behind Luo Feng's consciousness strength, that was because of the Golden Horned Beast's extremely powerful consciousness.

Such amazing consciousness strength!

Along with the Yun Mo Planet's <Control Manual> basic training, plus the Soaring Shuttle was something his teacher Hu Yan Bo constructed, using the Yun Mo Planet's techniques was simply akin to being a fish in water. His master wasn't afraid of his students learning too much, only them learning too well! Luo Feng's achievements with the Soaring Shuttle were indeed high.

……

"Cheng!"

The golden swordfish waved its tail and smashed directly into the green blade's edge. Smashing the spirit weapon straight into the surface of the black arena, causing a little hole in the surface of the arena, with sparks flying everywhere. The golden swordfish then proceeded to fly around the head of the opponent draped in a black robe once, cutting it clean off.

Crazy's second battle, victory!

……

"Pu Chi!"

The golden swordfish pierced right through the chest of the opponent, before swiftly exploding into pieces, thirty blades rushed out from the skin of the opponent's body, of which three actually rushed out from his forehead.

Crazy's third battle, victory!

"Hmph, I've finally received a 1 star ranking. Continue!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

……

Thunder God held in his hand a Thunder blade, unleashing his domain around himself, lightning snakes wrapping themselves around him.

"Star level 1, with his own domain? When I first saw the data within the battlespace system, I didn't dare to believe it. It's true… come on! Let me see, just how strong a domain user is?" said a 4 star ranker, a tall and skinny male with only one eye as he held a sword.

"You'll find out soon enough." Thunder God curled his lips and smiled, "After killing you, I'll reach the 3 star rank."

……

Hong held in his hand a black pike, quietly standing in the arena.

"A Star Traveller level 9 fighter with a domain? That's interesting, it's rare I meet someone like that here, come on." A short but built youth, holding a blade each in his hands, eyes gleaming red from excitement.

“My third battle and I meet a 6 star ranker, very good.” Hong nodded.

Ever since he unleashed his domain in the previous two battles, the system automatically added in this bit of data, to think that a 6 star ranker of the same level would step up and issue him a challenge, how could Hong reject him? Naturally he’d accept and battle!

……

Within the battlespace, the battles were extremely quick. Finishing a few hundred battles in a day was very normal. Of course many would actually stop for awhile after losing a battle to review their techniques and strategies… ‘battle, failure, review, revelation, battle again’, this was what many had experienced and their process.

However…

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God, ever since they began going through their battles madly, they hadn’t lost a match at all.

Especially Hong and Thunder God, as they had their own domains, hence they received high rankers of the same level challenging them, this led to Hong and Thunder God raising their ranks very quickly! Afterall, defeating a 6 star ranker fighter of the same level, was much more effective than defeating one hundred 1 star same level fighters.

About 3 hours later, within the Killing Field's big hall, Luo Feng sat with his brothers.

"Second brother, I haven't even begun to fully enjoy my battles and you actually called me out here?" Luo Feng looked dissatisfied with Thunder God.

"We have be to serious about every battle, especially since they are getting increasingly more powerful. I'm getting tired mentally, let's all rest a little." Thunder God laughed, beside him Hong also nodded, "I'm not too tired."

"I don't feel anything at all." Luo Feng couldn't help but say, "What are your ranks now?"

"6 stars." Thunder god said.

"7 stars." Hong said.

"I'm only 3 stars." Luo Feng was so mad he gritted his teeth.

"When I first began I had to initiate the challenges, later on all the higher rankers began to challenge me themselves." Thunder God laughed, "a Star level 1 with his own domain, that's extremely rare, hence many strong warriors wanted to battle with me."

"Me too." Hong said.

Luo Feng could only laugh helplessly, he understood why Hong and Thunder God could raise their ranks so quickly. Even though he himself killed the opponents fast enough, most of them were only low level opponents. Also…he didn't have anything to attract the higher rankers to challenge him.

"I'll first have some drinks, after a while, I'll go in and continue, I won't stop until I reach the 6 star rank." Luo Feng said, 6 stars, that was the bare minimum standard display of strength within that level.

He was mad!

Luo Feng had gone mad!

Battle after battle had made Luo Feng's battle record to be constantly revised, '121 wins, 0 losses", "183 wins, 0 losses", "218 wins, 0 losses"…this sort of invincible record finally began to draw the attention of the higher rankers, resulting in them finally accepting and requesting battles from him. This was because this sort of over 100 wins, 0 losses record was very likely to be a powerful warrior first entering into the battlespace.

There was a good saying around here, that spending long periods of time within the battlespace, as long as one constantly battled, no one would dare say he would be able to maintain his perfect record!

……

Black Dragon Mountain Island's Killing Fields had indeed gathered countless elites of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God swiftly rose through the battlespace, gradually gaining the attention of many people.

.....

Within the battlespace, if one spent money, outsiders could spectate the matches. Hence the more spectators there were, the more one had to pay to actually join in and spectate. Of course... even if there was a Star level 1 9 star ranker fighting someone of the same level, the spectator fee wouldn't be too absurd, after all it was only Star level 1.

However if there were Domain Lords or Sector Lords battling, the number of spectators would be plenty.

However, these sort of Star level fights, would usually only be spectated by some groups of higher level people, looking to see if they could get strong people into their organizations. After all the geniuses had to be contacted early, the moment they hesitated, others would snatch them away.

"Nuolan Shan, I heard your hundred tiger building has gathered quite a few elite heirs? Look, this youth just appeared out of nowhere, he is an absolute genius, if you miss out, others would definitely snatch him away."

“An absolute genius?”

“Right, this youth’s consciousness level is very high. Star level 1 with such a high consciousness level, it’s unbelievable. Also…even in the world of controlling spirit weapons, he’s extremely high. Look! Within two days of work, he already has 822 wins, 1 loss. His ranking, hmm, already 7 stars.”

Nuolan Shan looked at the battle on the screen, just as he was about to carefully observe the battle, he realized he recognized the person.

“Luo Feng?” Nuolan Shan looked again, his initial feeling of anticipation immediately vanished, left with only feelings of dissatisfaction.

Chapter 7 – Utter Defeat

Nuolan Shan's expression was cold, looking at the footage displayed on the screen before him, he didn't have any good feelings about Luo Feng at all. Especially since after the meeting, he specifically requested for someone to write a persuasive and convincing letter to send over. Since Luo Feng didn't reply at all, this naturally pissed him off even more. Seeing Luo Feng making a name for himself displeased him greatly.

"Hm?" As he looked, Nuolan Shan revealed shock, looking at the big nosed man beside him, "This the genius you were talking about?"

From the footage, Luo Feng was being destroyed and played with!

Utter defeat!

"This is the footage from his final match." The big nosed man explained, "This youth called Crazy hasn't battled since losing this match."

"The final match's footage?" Nuolan Shan's lips curled upwards, the scene of Luo Feng completely losing, he couldn't help but laugh gleefully.

Within the battlespace, it was very empty.

Luo Feng sat alone in the arena, the Soaring Shuttle too had

fallen beside him.

"How did it end up like this?"

"I couldn't even land a single blow?"

"It was complete defeat! She was only a fighter, and not a spirit reader. A Star level 1 fighter, with only a 6 star rank, she actually... made my Soaring Shuttle totally and completely unable to defend against her at all?" Luo Feng's eyes displayed pain, the scene before was simply like a nightmare.

822 wins! 1 loss!

After consecutively winning 822 matches, this level of glory, this level of confidence? Luo Feng had thought that he was an absolute genius amongst the Star level 1s, with hardly anyone that could defeat him. However earlier, meeting that dual knife wielding female fighter, he was totally humiliated, this female fighter even gave him chances time and again, letting him off even though she had the chance to kill him.

Letting him off a total of nine times at the critical moment, finally slashing between his eyebrows.

Death!

Just from that short battle, he was easily let off nine times, obviously this female fighter was only playing around, her abilities

and power far exceeded Luo Feng's, like an adult playing with a child, letting him off nine times and finally killing him.

"I'm, I'm actually that weak?"

"Am, am I that weak?" Luo Feng gritted his teeth and grimaced in pain.

At that time, there were many challenge requests sent to Luo Feng, but he didn't have any heart at all to battle again, the only thing filling his mind was the scene from before...with the enormous amount of power from the swordfish formation, under the female fighter's incomparably sturdy and sharp attacks, the formation was slashed and knocked away!

With blades in both hands, it was flawless!

"How could I lose so badly? She's the same level, and a fighter! I actually..." Luo Feng could accept defeat, but he couldn't accept such an utter defeat, this loss made Luo Feng realize one thing... just within the Black Dragon Mountain Island, there were many of the same level that were much stronger than himself!

Otherwise, being the same level, how could she defeat him so easily?

In another battlespace.

Thunder God was engaged in battle with a female fighter wearing

white, his battle record before too was pretty impressive, 691 wins and 3 losses, 8 star ranking! Even though he lost three times, Thunder God didn't really care about it, after all there were bound to be wins and losses in battles, the main reason for coming to the battlespace was to grow and breakthrough.

Failure was more beneficial to one's breakthrough than success!

As he had his own domain, hence Thunder God's opponents were mostly 7 stars, 8 stars and even 9 star rankers. Losing three matches was completely normal.

"Break, break break break!!!" A seemingly maddened Thunder God, completely enveloped in his domain, the raw energy battle blade in his hand too had become like lightning.

Cheng! Cheng! Cheng! Cheng! Cheng! Cheng! Cheng! Cheng!

Continuous clashing sounds.

The female fighter dressed in white battle uniform was obviously fresh and relaxed, she had no expression, eyes cold, wielding in each hand sharp battle blades. The two blades flashed about swiftly, parrying swiftly against each of Thunder God's attacks, amidst the high speed battle, the white clothed female fighter's slash actually went past the blurred images of Thunder God's battle blades, slashing his neck.

His head was cut clean off.

Thunder God, defeat!

Hong, dressed in all black, hand holding a long silver spear, his eyes gleamed, looking at the opponent before him. “Haha, thrilling, thrilling, I’ve battled 695 consecutive matches, compared to you, the other opponents cannot compare at all. They don’t deserve to be called elites at all.” Hong’s words went through the virtual assistant’s auto translation and was converted into universe language.

He faced a skinny white robed male, the man held a long blade, looking at Hong, “I too didn’t expect to meet such an opponent like you here in the Killing Field’s battlespace!”

“Let’s go again.” The man said softly.

Xiu!

His body became a bolt of lightning rushing forward, piercing straight towards Hong, at the same time the long blade in his hand seemed to intelligently slash in a peculiar arc, ready to attack Hong’s many vital points.

“Hahaha…” Hong was exhilarated as he laughed loudly.

The spear in his hand fiercely revolved one round, almost like curling a myriad of waves and directly aiming to sweep away the enemy, at the same time, the spear entered straight into the pitch

dark domain, like a deadly whirlpool within the darkness, looking to swallow the white robed swordsman before it. The white robed youth's swordsmanship was clean and precise, with sparks of electricity sparking at every arc, at the same time, the electricity domain around him was constantly expanding.

"Rumble!"

The two clashed and separated, before clashing again as quick as lightning.

Intense!

Hong's previous 695 matches had been incomparably relaxed and easy to win. This time however, he actually met a powerful and fearsome opponent! The two had clashed over and over more than a 1000 times, it was clear Hong's domain had the advantage on the opponent, but the opponent was accurate and precise, his peculiar swordsmanship was indeed powerful, causing them to be stuck in a stalemate.

After such a long battle, neither one of them had made a single mistake.

Rumble!

The two stood separately in the arena, staring at each other.

"Killer, you've earned my respect, for our this battle, let's call it

even.” The white robed youth swordsman said.

“You too have earned my respect.” Hong’s eyes seemed to have stars in them, he stared at the opponent, “After a month of hard training within the battlespace, my domain has finally entered the next level. I’ve yet to unleash this skill before...right now, I’ll use it, treat it as my respect for you.” Hong’s words were translated through the virtual assistant’s robotic voice.

“What?” The white robed youth swordsman’s expression changed greatly.

“This move, I call it ‘This Hate Knows No End’.” Finishing his words, Hong’s spear vibrated, the spear suddenly became like a fierce enormous dragon rushing out, with a strong revolving wave around it, adding to the already thick and dark domain around, creating an endless tornado attack, making the spear even sharper than before.

The white robed youth swordsman’s eyes squinted, electricity sparking out from the blade within his hand.

Pu! Pu! Pu!

Every slash seemed to miss slightly, brushing against the spear’s edge, the spear had seemed to become extremely flexible and fluid, the entire air around seemed to become influenced by it, making it unstoppable.

And the white robed youth wanted to escape but he was getting enveloped by the domain, its speed was terrifying.

He couldn't block it either.

"Pu chi!"

The powerful spear that made people's hearts tremble pierced right through the white robed youth's head, emerging from the back of his brain region.

This battle, Killer (Hong), victorious!

Within the Killing Field's big hall.

The blood red background of the hall, black tables, ice cold chairs. Luo Feng and Thunder God sat together, their moods not good at all.

"I didn't expect you to meet her too." Luo Feng laughed painfully.

"What, you met her too?" Thunder God was shocked.

"Yea." Luo Feng nodded, "That female fighter is really...I wasn't her match at all. She was completely toying with me, humiliating me. And her physical traits are only that of a Star level 1, same grade and level as me, she was actually so much stronger than me.

My Soaring Shuttle was a joke in front of her!”

“Me too, I feel that she should have her own domain, but she didn’t even unleash her domain, hurting me a total of nine times before finally killing me. It’s too, too...” Thunder God’s smile was bitter.

On Earth.

The two of them, one was a high flying absolute genius, the other stood at the pinnacle of Earth, the founder of the Thunder Dojo. Who would have thought that there would be a day that someone of the same grade and level was able to toy with them and defeat them easily.

“Second and third brother, why’d you call me out?” Hong dressed in all black came with a smile in high spirits, “Hmm, why do the both of you seem unhappy?”

“We lost.” Luo Feng shook his head.

“We lost very badly.” Thunder god’s expression too was ugly.

“Losing is a good thing.” Hong sat on the chair beside, saying, “Only through losing will one realize his weaknesses, only through that will we improve.”

“But we lost too badly.” Luo Feng looked at Hong, “Big brother, your mood seems really good?”

“Haha, I met an opponent, a very strong opponent.” Hong laughed and glanced at Luo Feng and Thunder God, “If the two of you were in the Star Traveller level 9, I’m afraid you wouldn’t be a match for him. He was incredibly strong! If not for my breakthrough after training hard in the Killing Fields’ slaughter space for a month, I wouldn’t have been able to win this battle either. It was thrilling to meet such an opponent.”

The Killing Fields, besides the cheaper and more populated big hall, there were still some other secret ‘quiet rooms.’

Within one of the quiet rooms.

A big sturdy and well built man was dressed in all green, sitting on a sofa, looking at the screen before him. On it displayed three different videos simultaneously, one was Luo Feng against the female fighter, the other was Thunder God against the female fighter and finally Hong against the white robed youth. The well built man’s eyes gleamed like never before.

He stared hard at the third scene…Hong against the white robed youth.

“He actually, actually has a domain of three layers?”

“This final attack, he exploded and unleashed his domain, it’s definitely a three layer domain! A Star Traveller level 9 punk, actually reached the three layer domain.” The man was extremely excited.

Suddenly…

“Pa! Pa! Pa!” A knocking sound resounded.

“Come in.” The tall and sturdy man said.

The door opened.

A serious looking female fighter dressed in a white robe, along with a skinny youth swordsman in white robes entered, closing the door behind. After which, the white robed female fighter bowed respectfully, “My lord, the mission is completed.”

“Very good, the both of you can leave the virtual universe and return. I’ve already sent your contribution credits out.” The tall and sturdy man said.

“Yes.”

The white robed female fighter along with the white robed youth vanished into nothing, obviously their consciousness had left the virtual universe and returned to reality.

Chapter 8 – Domain Lord

Killing Fields Hall.

Luo Feng was engaged in discussion with Hong and Thunder God about the previous three battles. As they sat together, they couldn't help but to talk about them. The fight with the female fighter dealt a huge blow to Luo Feng, he wasn't afraid of losing, just that that loss was too bad! This meant...that he Luo Feng, was still a lot weaker than his same level's pinnacle.

There were definitely plenty that were much stronger than him.

"Hm?" Luo Feng saw with the corner of his eye a worker from the Killing Fields approaching them.

"Hm?" Thunder God too looked over, there was only their group there.

"He looks like he's looking for us." Hong said softly.

The Killing Fields worker was a skinny man with a pointy nose, he smiled as he said, "Three sirs, there is a owner of a meditation room upstairs who has called for you three, please follow me."

"Meditation room owner?" Luo Feng was shocked, exchanging glances with Hong and Thunder God beside.

The big hall was a resting and chatting spot for many of the heirs and disciple elites.

And the meditation rooms, they were extremely secretive rooms, many powerful people specially rent rooms for long periods of times, the owners of these rooms were mostly at least a universe level, or they had an absurd amount of money.

“Please lead the way.” Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God got up.

“Very well.”

The worker led the way, very quickly following the winding stairs, reaching the 2nd level. The 1st level was an incomparably spacious and vast big hall, the 2nd was a serene and beautiful labyrinth, within it with meditation rooms were all about, many universe level warriors and even domain lords, or even the stronger sector lords, were within these rooms.

Within the black dragon mountain empire, the sector lords were deemed as the pinnacle of strength and power, while they mostly moved about within the virtual universe Ganwu continent, not the black dragon mountain island. After all the black dragon mountain empire had too few sector lords, to be able to meet within the virtual universe was very rare, naturally they would all move to the Ganwu continent.

Over there, the strong were plentiful like the clouds.

“This room.” The worker smiled and stood at the door, gently knocking.

“Enter.” A thick voice resounded.

The door was pushed opened.

The worker bowed respectfully: “Sir, I’ve brought the three guests.” Following that, the worker left, Luo Feng and his 2 bigger brothers were carefully examining the standing tall and sturdy man within the room, his entire body was greenish black, almost like it was made of steel.

“Three of you, come in.” The tall and sturdy man said.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God didn’t fear anything, walking directly into the meditation room.

Entering the room, the entire mediation room felt like it became brighter instantly, Luo Feng got a sudden shock after looking at the tall and sturdy man before him, this man’s left chest, on his battle robe was a medal, the picture was...a torrent of blood with 2 planets floating.

A universe 2 star mercenary!!!

2 stars?

My God!

Luo Feng was completely shocked, to enter the universe 2 star mercenary exams, one of the conditions was to must have reached the strength of a domain lord! Hence the universe 2 star mercenaries, lowest strength was a domain lord, sometimes even sector lords.

A domain lord warrior…what was this concept?

The Silverblue Empire, or the Kaluo empire etc, the basic level universe empires, they wouldn't dare trifle with a domain lord! They were the owners of their own territories, able to gain the recognition as the strong within the universe! If the universe level warriors were able to destroy earth, they would still require multiple attacks to succeed.

But the domain lords only require one punch, with a scattered punch over the ocean, causing huge waves to drown the entire earth, causing extinction!

This was a domain lord!

An existence able to make a universe basic level empire quake in fear. Back then, the owner of the Horned dragon star, was also only a domain lord! And the one right before them…was stronger than the normal domain lords!

"We greet you."

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances, at the same time speaking in respectful tones.

Respecting the strong, this was the most common form of courtesy within the universe.

“I’ve already been observing you three for over a month.” The tall and sturdy man looked at the three of them, revealing a smile, “Ever since you entered the Killing Fields, you’ve been in here training every day, without ever stopping a day, am I right?”

Luo Feng was shocked.

This man was at least a domain lord, and he’s been observing them for over a month?

Luo Feng turned to look at Hong and Thunder God, they too were in the same state of shock.

“However, I don’t understand why you keep staying here in the Killing Fields. Coming here once in awhile is fine, but staying here for long periods of time, that’s a waste of time!” The tall and sturdy man looked curiously at the three.

“Waste of time?” Luo Feng’s eyebrows creased.

“What do you mean?” Thunder God too creased his eyebrows.

Hong was looking silently at the man.

“Didn’t your teacher ever tell you…the fastest way to evolve, the most effective way to improve is to engage in training while in life or death situations?” The tall and sturdy man asked curiously.

“This I understand.” Thunder God said.

Hong and Thunder God naturally knew.

The era of which earth produced the most number of warriors was during the great nirvana, also during the Mu Ya crystals period. Back during the Great Nirvana period, within a few years, humans evolved from being weak to suddenly having a large amount of warriors, even to the point of star travellers appearing. And decades later, when the Mu Ya crystals were discovered, another large amount of warriors were produced.

“If you know, then why are you still staying here in the Killing Fields?” The tall and sturdy man asked.

“This is also a life or death battle, battles with extreme dangers.” Thunder God said.

“Wrong, completely wrong.” The tall and sturdy man laughed, smiling as he shook his head, “Looks like you three don’t have a teacher, or, your teacher’s level is very low.”

Luo Feng and his brothers listened carefully.

A domain lord level warrior speaking to the three of them, this was their good fortune.

“Do you know why your powers will rise greatly during life or death battles? Quick enlightenment? Fast evolution? Do you know the logic behind it?” The tall and sturdy man looked at the three, they shook their heads, this was something they truly didn’t yet fully know.

The tall and sturdy man sighed, “With life or death, there’s great fear!”

“With life or death, there’s unlimited motivation.”

“Just like facing a needle piercing towards your eye, one would unconditionally shut his eye as a reflex! Facing death and such dangers, the body’s every cell will unconditionally struggle, even the genes would race to evolve! The fear of life or death, will cause even the body’s soul, to reach a peak state that one normally wouldn’t be able to reach. Under these circumstances, man will easily gain enlightenment, evolve and grow stronger.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God all held their breaths.

“This is a form of unconditioned reflex.”

“Or you could call it a life reflex!”

“In the face of death, life would unleash from its deepest depth the strongest form of struggle! Some people have trained hard for decades being unable to breakthrough, maybe from just one life or death experience, that could cause them to breakthrough.” The tall and sturdy man looked at the three, “There’s great fear in life or death situations, with limitless energy, this is why countless warriors risk their lives and battle in these situations!”

Luo Feng repeatedly muttered to himself: “There’s great fear in life or death situations, there’s limitless energy?”

Hong and Thunder God too were deep in thought.

“The strong!”

“The strong I’m talking about, are universe levels, domain lords, sector lords, and even the undying!” The tall and sturdy man emphasized, “Over 99% of them join the universe mercenary alliance, engaging in life or death missions.”

“The Battle-axe Colosseum, is incomparably brutal, every battle is life or death, there’s always one who dies! Such a place, yet it’s able to be so successful…that’s because engaging in such risky battles is the quickest way to evolve! The universe warriors, how many of them haven’t engaged in such a perilous journey to get so far?”

The man looked at the three of them, “That’s why, I was curious, why the three of you are wasting so much time within the Killing

Fields.”

“Spending a few days once in awhile can be considered training.”

“However the battles and training, teacher effect etc within the Killing Fields, can never fully emulate the effect of a true life or death battle. That’s because…the slaughter space, the battle space, even if you die, you’ll be revived in an instant. This is the virtual universe, it can never fully let you feel the dangers of life or death, naturally, you’ll never achieve the full evolution effect.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God all completely understood.

Why after so many days, experiencing so many bloody battles, especially within the slaughter space, the three had customized so many strong warriors, causing them to be extremely excited in their kills.

However…

The three’s body evolution efficiency was still the same as before.

Hong was still a star traveller level 9, Luo Feng and Thunder God’s bodies were still the same without any improvement. Maybe their skills and experience had improved, but their bodies and and foundations haven’t made too much progress.

“Right, there’s no real threat in the death in the virtual universe, people do not feel the sense of danger here. After all it’s a virtual

world, there's instant revival after death. There's naturally no real fear, fluster, anger etc." Luo Feng thought within, at the same time roaring in his mind, "Babata!"

"Why are you shouting at me?" From his consciousness, Babata said softly.

"Why didn't you tell me all these, that spending long periods of time within the Killing Fields would be a waste of time!" Luo Feng raged.

"You cannot blame me! You already have the golden horned beast body, so you have no bottleneck to breakthrough, you can constantly improve until the pinnacle of the sector lords. Why go engage in life or death missions? Even though the evolution would be faster, but the risk of death is very high too. When your strength is higher, it wouldn't be too late to go then."

"I'm fine, but what about my older brothers?" Luo Feng asked.

"They? Huh, without the threat of life or death, the star level can be considered their peak." Babata said.

"Their peak? Why didn't you say so earlier?" Luo Feng only understood now that spending time in the Killing Fields was a waste of time for Hong and Thunder God.

"The mission the master gave me was to train and nurture you! And not to train and nurture Hong and Thunder God, when you

get stronger, you can go on these life or death missions, I would remind you in the future, It's not much loss to Hong and Thunder God. The training plan has always had you as it's core." Babata said it clearly and frankly.

When Luo Feng started feeling apologetic towards Hong and Thunder God.

"Life or death missions?" Hong and Thunder God's eyes gleamed.

"No wonder I've been unable to breakthrough and reach the star level." Hong said softly, "Life or death missions...yes, that's the life that suits me."

"I kept feeling there's no thrill in the peaceful life, no strength or zest in my body, so it's that way." Thunder God' eyes too lit up.

"Third brother, shall we get ready for an adventure?" Thunder God looked at Luo Feng.

At this time, the tall and sturdy man standing beside smiled, "Life or death missions are something every strong warrior has to experience! Breaking through each level, exceeding oneself, that's the path of the strong. However before that...I have to remind you a little, the importance of the body's foundation."

"Different bloodlines have different evolution efficiencies."

"Some evolve easily during life or death situations, some others

have it much other even in the same situations.”

“Some races, when they reach maturity, they can reach star level, even universe level or even domain lord level.”

“This is the bloodline.”

“Look at this list, it separates the human bloodline into 10 over different bloodlines, take a look, which of them do you three belong to, maybe I can help you evolve on the best path, taking a less windy road.” The tall and sturdy man smiled as he said, pointing towards the screen, a list appeared on the screen.

Chapter 9 – An Earthling's Bloodline Level

Luo Feng turned to look, Hong and Thunder God too couldn't keep their eyes off it.

The human race within the universe is extremely vast, with over tens of millions of variety, however they are sorted into these 10 large groups." The tall and sturdy man pointed at the screen and smiled, Luo Feng looked carefully, the list was extremely detailed.

Human 1st grade bloodline: Reaches Domain Lord at maturity, 1st grade.

Human 2nd grade bloodline: Reaches Universe level at maturity, 2nd grade.

.....

The 3rd and 4th grade, both reaches the star level at maturity.

The 5th and 6th grade both reaches the star traveller at maturity.

The 7th and 8th grade both reaches the student level at maturity.

The 9th and 10th grade, don't reach anything at maturity. However according to the training and aptitude, the probability of a warrior appearing within the races, was sorted into the 9th and 10th grade.

“Which blood grade are you all in?” The tall and sturdy man said.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances, according to the list, the bloodline of earth’s humans were considered the 9th grade, after all up till now, majority of of the matured humans didn’t even reach anything. However…according to Luo Feng’s plan, with a large amount of Purple light drink being distributed, they believed in about a 100 years, the humans of earth would be able to reach the 8th grade.

“9th grade.” Luo Feng looked at the tall and sturdy man.

“9th grade?” The tall and sturdy man looked shocked at Luo Feng, before turning to glance over at Hong and Thunder God, disbelieving.

“Yes, 9th grade.” Hong said too.

“So what if we are the 9th grade? We can still breakthrough on our own!” Thunder God said.

The tall and sturdy man laughed, his laughter was thick while carefree and relaxed, continuous: “I don’t mean that, I was just very shocked. A race of the 9th grade, to be able to produce 2 star level 1s, along with a star traveller level 9, this…is very rare, very rare indeed.”

The 9th bloodline grade, meant that the foundation was very

low, it was very difficult to reach higher.

"I really respect you all." The tall and sturdy man said, "And I'd like to congratulate you all."

"Congratulate?" Luo Feng and the others were suspicious.

"Yes, your blood grade is indeed lower, this has made it so that your breaking through is exceptionally tough, much tougher than the higher grade bloodlines! However similarly...if you all use 'evolution catalysts' to alter and evolve your bloodline, they also work better and are more effective in improving your bloodlines." The tall and sturdy man said.

"Evolution catalysts? Bloodline evolution catalysts?" A shocked voice resounded within Luo Feng's mind.

"Babata, why are you so shocked?" Luo Feng communicated telepathically.

"Luo Feng, this person talking to you, definitely comes from an enormous power! 'Bloodline catalysts' are definitely considered the top grade goods within the universe, without a certain amount of position, there wouldn't even be a pathway to buy them. Unless one spends thousands to tens of thousands of dollars to force a pathway, only through that can one probably buy 1 portion of these catalysts." Babata said, "Think of a way to get the bloodline catalyst from him, it's definitely a top grade item."

……

“Bloodline catalyst, what do they do?” Hong asked.

“Our training, isn’t that an evolution in life itself?” Thunder God looked at the sturdy man in front of him with confusion.

The tall and sturdy man smiled, “Let me put it to you this way, normal people’s training process is like constructing a building! The bloodline is the building’s foundation. When the bloodline is weak, it means the foundation is weak! Humans with weak bloodlines, training is akin to building a skyscraper constantly on the weak foundation, as it gets higher and higher, one naturally has to keep strengthening that foundation to allow it to get higher.”

“However the higher the skyscraper gets, the more troublesome strengthening the foundation gets.”

“And the ones with stronger bloodlines, their foundations are much stronger, they can easily build up to a hundred levels, immediately reaching the domain lord, not even having the dangers of the barriers.”

“Bloodline evolution catalyst…its usage is to alter one’s bloodline, akin to improving on your foundation, from a poor foundation, rising quickly to the mid level foundation, this will allow your construction of the skyscraper to be much easier. Do you understand?” The tall and sturdy man smiled.

Luo Feng, Thunder God and Hong understood fully.

“Bloodline evolution catalysts are incapable of adding to your strength by itself, however it can make your training in the future much faster and easier.” The tall and sturdy man smiled as he said, “Of course these catalysts, are completely unable to be bought at any surface shops or places. This is because the cost for producing these catalysts are extremely high, they are low in quantity hence they are definitely not sold externally. Unless one is willing to fork out an exorbitant price would they be able to get maybe one portion.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God weren’t stupid.

A strong warrior who was at least a domain lord speaking so much to them, even bringing up the bloodline catalysts...

“You have to know, just who actually researched and produced the bloodline catalysts?” The tall and sturdy man said.

“No idea.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God shook their heads.

“The virtual universe company.” The tall and sturdy man said directly, “The humans within the entire universe with the most advanced technology, the virtual universe company! This evolution catalyst was something that they had researched and produced.

“The virtual universe company?” Luo Feng understood.

The network of the virtual universe company was able to allow an unlimited number of people within the vast universe to immediately enter the network and communicate with their friends, what level of technology was this? Also the most shocking thing was...the virtual universe network worked not just within the normal universe, it worked even within the dark universe, extremely shocking.

The network could even be maintained during universe travel.

What level of technology was this?

It was totally incomprehensible!

It was a profound mystery!

“Haha, I haven’t introduced myself.” The tall and sturdy man smiled, I am from the virtual universe company, stationed at the Black Dragon Mountain empire department, one of the external departments, you can call me Mr. Ming Yu, or Lord Ming Yu, whichever is fine.”

“Lord Ming Yu.”

Luo Feng and the others took bow, Luo Feng felt extreme shock

within.

My God...

What Babata said was indeed accurate, this tall and sturdy man indeed came from a huge power! The virtual universe company, this was one of the 5 great leviathans from the human race within the universe, stronger than even the Ganwu universe country by many times! Even the master of the Yun Mo Planet would be considered only an ant facing the virtual universe company.

After all, the master of the Yun Mo Planet didn't even dare mess with the Ganwu universe country."

And the virtual universe company, owned and covered large amounts of universe countries.

Such level of strength and power!

Even a department within the Black Dragon Mountain empire, an external department, had at least a domain lord! How powerful, it made others tremble!

"So Lord Ming Yu actually comes from the virtual universe company." Thunder God complimented.

The tall and sturdy Ming Yu smiled.

He too felt somewhat proud about this fact, it was natural, a person from one of the 5 great Leviathans would naturally feel a sense of superiority!

“This evolution catalyst is something our virtual universe company produced.” The tall and sturdy Ming Yu smiled, “However, with these level of goods, there are very few ways of getting access to them outside, even if you have the ability to buy them outside, the price would be terrifying and exorbitant. However if one joins the virtual universe company, to its own internal members...especially to the elites, they could even give it for free to them.”

“Free?”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were taken aback.

Rich and imposing, this virtual universe company was indeed rich and imposing. It was natural, after all who could compare wealth with the virtual universe company? For example, the killing fields’ slaughter space, a domain lord level 1 spirit reader would have a daily rate of 3.5 billion Ganwu dollars. Just how shocking would the entire wealth of the virtual universe company be?

One didn’t even dare to imagine.

Even the master of the Yun Mo Planet probably wouldn’t even compare to their one strand of leg hair.

“Right, sponsored!”

The tall and sturdy Ming Yu looked at Luo Feng and the others, his eyes gleaming, “Our virtual universe company have been collecting elites from many universe countries, and you 3, definitely count as geniuses. You...your consciousness level is extremely high, star level 1, and your battle ability amplifier exceeds 36 already?”

Luo Feng blushed with shame, the reason why his consciousness was that strong was due to the golden horned beast.

“You are not bad too, star level 1 with your own domain.” The tall and sturdy Ming Yu looked at Thunder God.

“You 2, can be considered level 3 elites.” The tall and sturdy Ming Yu finally looked at Hong, eyes gleaming, “Of course the most powerful would be you...star traveller level 9, not only have your own domain, but already a 3 layer domain. It’s too, too...your comprehension ability is too shocking. You can already be deemed as a level 1 elite, the seed elite”

Luo Feng was speechless.

Relying on the strong consciousness of the golden horned beast, he was deemed as a level 3 elite.

“Before, I arranged for 2 of my people to battle you all.” The tall and sturdy man pointed at the screen, 3 different images appeared

on the screen, depicting the white robed fighter and the white robed youth.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were totally unfazed by the footage.

They had already guessed that the 2 powerful warriors could have been arranged by the man before them.

“She, belongs to the ‘special elites’ of our virtual universe company, and he, is a level 2 elite.” The tall and sturdy man explained.

“Special elites?”

Luo Feng and Thunder God stared at the white robed female fighter in the screen, even the star traveller level 9 with a 3 layer domain Hong was only deemed as a level 1 elite. And the female fighter before them was actually deemed as a special elite, no wonder the female fighter could so easily beat both Luo Feng and Thunder God.

“The universe is vast. The Black Dragon Mountain empire, such a big empire, its planets are too many to count.”

“Naturally there will be many geniuses.”

“The seeds that our company cultivates are separated into the special elite, levels 1, 2, and 3. However this is only within the

Black Dragon Mountain department! If it were the main company headquarters, their grading is even more strict and rigorous.” The tall and sturdy Ming Yu said, these words made the Luo Feng and Thunder God totally dumbfounded.

In the Black Dragon Mountain department, the 2 of them were right at the bottom?

“Don’t be discouraged, to be able to be deemed as geniuses by our company, even if one is the lowest level 3 elite, amongst the fighters and spirit readers, that is still the cream of the crop.” The tall and sturdy Ming Yu consoled them, “As long as you are all willing to join the Black Dragon Mountain department, oh right, I still don’t know your names.”

“Luo Feng.”

“Hong.”

“Thunder God.”

The 3 didn’t even hesitate; they didn’t have any apprehension about giving their names. To such a huge power like the virtual universe company, they probably had their data a long time ago.

“Luo Feng and Thunder God, the moment you 2 join, you’ll be sponsored one portion of bloodline evolution catalyst, and you Hong, you’ll be receiving one S grade bloodline evolution catalyst portion.” The tall and sturdy Ming Yu looked at the 3 of them, Are

the 3 of you willing to join our virtual universe company?”

Chapter 10 – Leaving Earth

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances.

“Lord Ming Yu, I would like to ask.” Hong looked at the tall and sturdy man, “If we joined the Virtual Universe Network company, what would we need to do, what missions are there?”

“In the early stages, since your powers are weak, the company will nurture you. Hence the management will be very strict! You will have to strictly adhere to the company’s orders in training, taking on life or death exams etc, however, as your power rises, your rights and privileges will constantly increase. At Universe level, Domain Lord, Sector Lord, the stronger you get, you only need to act at crucial and critical times.” Ming Yu replied directly.

Luo Feng and the others hesitated.

Under strict management?

Hong and Thunder God, they were both founders of dojos, how could they be managed and be under strict management?

“When our powers are weak, during the nurturing time, are we unable to move on our own?” Hong asked.

Luo Feng and Thunder God looked at the tall and sturdy man before them.

“You’ll have holidays, fixed holidays.” The tall and sturdy man emphasized, “The nurturing period when your powers are weak has very strict supervision, this point you all have to understand! Holidays? With the Virtual Universe Network, you can still meet with your loved ones and chat, so the holidays don’t really mean much.”

Hong, Thunder God and Luo Feng exchanged glances and shook their heads.

They couldn’t accept this!

The nurturing period? Maybe the entire Star levels were deemed as the nurturing period for the Virtual Universe Network company, this could be a hundred years or more of strict management. Luo Feng and the other two couldn’t accept this.

“Hm?” The external department Ming Yu creased his eyebrows, sighing within.

They can’t take the strict management!

He had frequently encountered such incidents, as the external department that frequently invited geniuses to join their Virtual Universe Network company. However since they were geniuses, they’d long have powers that tried to entice them, these geniuses were all generally untamed, who would be unwilling to subject themselves to long periods of strict supervision, hence the rejection rate was high.

However...

The important internal people who the Virtual Universe Network Company cultivated had to pass very strict supervision and a tedious process.

“We are unable to accept.” Hong said.

“Oh, of course...” Ming Yu smiled, “What I mentioned earlier was the internal members, our Virtual Universe Network company is separated into internal and external, there are many privileges to being an internal member, but the supervision is stricter. The external members however are much more lax, but their privileges are much smaller. They are far from the internal members.”

“Like me for example, an external department person.” Ming Yu smiled, “If you become external members, even though you’ll be unable to receive evolution catalysts, but you’ll still might be able use money to buy them. Buying your first portion and you’ll even get it at a lower price. Buying the second portion will be much more costly, a normal external member may buy up to three portions.”

“How much?” Luo Feng asked.

“Bloodline evolution catalysts, buying the first portion, is priced at 100 million Ganwu dollars. If it’s the second portion, it would cost 1 billion Ganwu dollars.” Ming Yu said, “Bloodline catalysts are very rarely circulated outside, only one with incredible luck and skill will be able to get one outside, and the prices would be

extremely absurd. At the same time, the Virtual Universe Network company very strictly forbids you all from selling them outside, if you were ever discovered to be peddling them outside secretly…”

“Death!” Ming Yu said casually.

Luo Feng immediately gave up on the thought of selling it outside.

“These are some rules regarding joining our Virtual Universe Network company, take a look, if you can accept them.” The tall and sturdy Ming Yu pointed at the screen, on it appeared a large amount of rules and regulations.

……

Five minutes later.

“Welcome to our Virtual Universe Network company, right now you are all external members of our Virtual Universe Network company Black Dragon Mountain Empire department, currently under my jurisdiction, drop me a mail if you have any matters.” The tall and sturdy Ming Yu smiled.

“Yes Lord Ming Yu.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God bowed slightly.

Leaving the Killing Fields, returning to their house, 9 star bay on Black Dragon Mountain Island.

“Being an external member is extremely lax.”

“They actually allow us to join a few other normal organizations, even allowing us to join things like the Ganwu Dojo, it’s really unbelievable.” Thunder God walked along the pebble road by the lake side, exclaiming surprised, “It only forbids us from joining the Battle-axe Colosseum and other powers that exceed the Empire’s power.”

The Virtual Universe Network company’s military department was separated into internal and external.

The internal group was the most loyal and dependable, and they were also forbidden by the Virtual Universe Network company’s most important departments from joining any other powers.

The external group was much more lax.

For example, if a Sector Lord from the Ganwu Dojo were to be invited by the company, they could just leave their names in the external department. The moment an important battle or matter arises, they can let their external members go battle! Usually there weren’t many limits on the external members, just as long as they don’t join any similarly leveled super powers.

“The Virtual Universe Network company, doesn’t even bother to

notice the Ganwu Dojo." Luo Feng laughed.

"Haha, joining the Virtual Universe Network company, Luo Feng, I still thought of you borrowing some of the Ganwu Dojo's strength in the future, however since you are part of the Virtual Universe Network company's external department, with a high enough position, that's even better." Babata was very excited.

"Big brother, second brother, do you have enough money to buy the evolution catalyst?" Luo Feng asked.

"Enough."

"It's still plenty." Hong and Thunder God said.

Luo Feng felt helpless within, the main thing was that his money worried him at the moment, because he was using the 89 times efficiency metal groupings, madly swallowing to evolve his internal world...believing that it wouldn't even take a year for him to breakthrough to the Universe level. A Universe level Golden Horned Beast, the price of the metal it required, that was hundreds to even thousands of times more absurd.

Calculating his own money, he definitely didn't have enough!

"My teacher back then, probably never would have thought that his next disciple would have a Golden Horned Beast body, a Golden Horned Beast...is really a black hole for money." Luo feng thought within.

“Third brother, after we finish out matters with the external department, I’ve decided to go sign up at the Universe Mercenary Alliance.” Hong’s eyes gleamed, “Even though I’m currently still unable to take the probation examinations, however…I can’t take it anymore.”

“Me too!” Thunder God licked his lips, eyes gleaming with sense of wilderness, “Dancing with blades in life or death situations, that’s what I call an exciting life.”

“You two…” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Third brother, will you go too?” Hong asked.

“Let’s go together no?” Thunder God too looked at Luo Feng.

The fighters of Earth, how many of them were gutless?

“Go, of course we’ll go together!” Luo Feng said.

“Haha…” Thunder God laughed loudly.

“Brother.” Hong too patted Luo Feng’s shoulder.

Luo Feng looked at his two older brothers who seemed to have a new flame ignited within them, thinking within: “Risks? Yes, I too want to take risks, the feeling of dancing with blades in the face of

life and death, that was indeed a glorious feeling!" Back then in the wilderness, gambling his life in death battles with the beasts, that feeling was indeed heart stopping.

"If big brother and second brother really encounter an unavoidable danger, I can release my Golden Horned Beast body and save them!" Luo Feng thought within.

The Golden Horned Beast's existence had to be kept secret.

However if they met with an unavoidable danger, he would of course have to unleash it!

Within the hall of the Killing Fields.

An incomparably elderly green skinned old man sat in the corner, carrying a glass of water, lifting his wrinkled forehead, looking at his surroundings with his muddy eyes. He, was the main manager of the Black Dragon Mountain Island's Killing Fields... Man Luo, an elder with a renowned name around here.

At this time, the tall and sturdy Ming Yu swiftly walked over, walking directly to the green skinned old man.

"Lord." Ming Yu said softly.

"How'd it go?" The green skinned old man's muddy gaze looked at him.

Min Yu lowered his head respectfully, “The Lord guessed accurately, the three are unwilling to join the internal department, they’ve only joined the external department, also that Hong is indeed very powerful, Star Traveller level 9, three layer domain.”

“Three layer domain?” The green skinned old man’s eyes lit up, his originally muddy eyes seemed penetrating and clear suddenly, almost as though it held boundless amounts of knowledge, able to see right through a person’s soul, before this old man, the 2 star mercenary Ming Yu was incomparably respectful, and this was pure respect from within.

“Hm, very good.”

The green skinned old man smiled and nodded, his eyes reverted to its muddy state, “To be able to discover a level 1 elite, that’s not bad. After all special elites, this can be discovered but not sought. This level of genius cannot be forced, for them to join the external department is already not bad! We’ll let them expand on their own.”

“Yes.” Ming Yu said respectfully.

Whatever he did before, be it analyzing Luo Feng or the other two, and observing them for a month...these were all ordered by Lord Man Luo. Why would Ming Yu himself have such time to go observe Luo Feng and the other two for a whole month?

Earth.

The spring warmth bloomed, in China's Yangzhou city, a C9 grade dark blue triangular universe ship floated over in the sky above the castle, this was a ship that Luo Feng and the others had just bought, spending 11 billion Black Dragon dollars, to Luo Feng and the others at the moment, this was indeed nothing at all.

After all the planet defense system alone, Luo Feng had spent about ten times more than the ship.

"Don't cry, Daddy is just going out, and we can all meet in the virtual universe. Come, be good, give daddy a kiss." Luo Feng stood half squatting in front of his two children, the two handsome and adorable boys gave Luo Feng and hard kiss each on the cheek, hugging him tightly, reluctant to let him go.

"Son."

Luo Hong Guo patted Luo Feng's shoulders, "I won't say more, remember to mind your safety outside."

"Oh, right, where's Luo Hua?" Luo Feng looked around him.

Beside, Zhen Nan who had come to send him off said, "Luo Hua's trading and investing these few days have been a very crucial time, right now it's their time of dealings, he doesn't dare to relax even a little. Hence, he told me to send you off and he said he'll apologize again in the future in the Virtual Universe Network."

“This kid.” Luo Feng shook his head and couldn’t help but laugh.

Luo Feng bid goodbye to his family, beside them were Hong’s family and Thunder God’s family, each coming to send them off.

After which, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God took two slaves into the universe ship.

“Hu!”

The dark blue triangular universe ship gradually rose into the sky, under the sights of the three families; it swiftly left the atmosphere, disappearing from their line of sight.

Chapter 11 – Bloodline Evolution Catalyst

The universe ship travelled for about 8 hours within the dark universe, travelling through universes, reaching the Bailan Star about 118,000 light years away from Earth.

Bailan Star north region, the extreme cold district.

A dark blue C9 grade universe ship descended within the center of the warehouse base, right before the castle, the castle's guards immediately stepped forward to welcome them.

"We'll first stay at Bailan Star for 3 days, the Virtual Universe Network company requires about three days of time to send over the bloodline catalyst." Luo Feng jumped straight out of the cabin door, standing on the snow covered ground, the sound of crunching and ice breaking resounded. Behind him, Hong and Thunder God also jumped down and walked beside him.

Luo Feng was dressed in a blood red battle uniform, his waist belt tied securely, his uniform's tail swayed in the wind.

Thunder God was dressed in a white battle uniform while Hong was all black.

Luo Feng and Hong's battle uniforms were both formed from the cloud contact vine's transformation, only Thunder God's was a specially bought level 2 raw energy uniform.

“That external department Ming Yu, actually exaggerated the bloodline catalyst like it’s godly and unbelievable, who knows whether it’s the truth or not.” Thunder God muttered, “Even in the Virtual Universe Network, we couldn’t even research any news about the bloodline catalysts.”

“That’s just because your permissions aren’t high enough.” Luo Feng laughed, “Researching data in the Virtual Universe Network, using my normal status, I cannot search for anything important, nothing secret, everything is public news and easy. However some higher level data...requires a high enough permission to actually gain access to.”

“Tsk, levels everywhere.” Thunder God shook his head.

“What place doesn’t have levels? There’s rich and the poor, the people in power and the average.” Hong also laughed.

On the third night of their arrival on Bailan Star, evening.

Due to the pure white snow covering the land and reflecting, the sky still seemed rather bright, a dark grey disc shaped universe ship didn’t even land within the planet’s docking bay, instead flying directly to Luo Feng’s warehouse base. This ship had a huge Virtual Universe Network logo to represent its status.

Rumble.

The ship stopped.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God stood on the snowy ground, raising their heads anxiously looking at the ship.

“Hua...”The cabin door opened, three members dressed in black battle uniform, led by a lady carrying a briefcase, with the other two by her side, flew over from the cabin door and landed before Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God.

The leading lady wore dark sunglasses, looking at Luo Feng and the others, numbers flitted past her lenses, data that only she could see.

“Identification confirmed, we can proceed with the deal.”

“Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god, these are your bloodline evolution catalysts.” The pale skinned, cold expressionless lady immediately opened the briefcase, within it were 3 colorful glowing long syringes with colorful liquids, ‘clunk’, she closed the briefcase and brought it before Luo Feng and the others.

“Thanks.” Luo Feng raised his hand and received it.

The three, men and lady turned immediately and flew into the universe ship, within a few seconds, the ship had risen up and flown through the atmosphere, leaving Bailan Star.

“Bloodline evolution catalyst.” Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God looked at the briefcase within their hands.

“Go, let’s enter.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Haha, we can’t wait anymore.” Thunder God’s eyes gleamed.

Luo Feng and the other two took out one portion each, entering their separate private training rooms.

“Bloodline evolution catalyst.” Luo Feng looked at the long syringe like object with the color glowing liquid within, this liquid was exquisitely beautiful, earth shaking beauty, “Let’s begin!”

Without hesitation.

He took of the cap of the needle and inserted it into his skin, gradually pushing it in. The colorful liquid within began to slowly seep into Luo Feng’s body, just like aggressive cancer cells, madly swallowing every cell within his body, there was an unbelievable hacking and slicing pain within his mind.

“Damn!” Luo Feng bit down and cursed, immediately curling into a ball on the ground.

Gritting his teeth hard, shouting out, he bit so hard that fresh blood flowed from the sides of his lips.

“It hurts so bad.”

“Luo Feng, bear with it, this thing changes your bloodline, changing it from the absolute deepest regions, it’s indeed extremely painful. Bear with it, it’ll be over soon.” Babata consoled him.

“How long more?” Luo Feng felt like his consciousness was at war.

“Very quickly, not even an hour.” Babata said.

“An hour?” Luo Feng could only bite as hard as he could.

No matter the pain, he still had to bear with it. Luo Feng didn’t hear any cries of pain from the two rooms beside, obviously Hong and Thunder God were also fighting hard to bear with the immense pain.

“Argh, ouch!” Luo Feng’s nose let out a low cry of pain.

And within his body.

Luo Feng’s every cell seemed to be at war, whether it was the cells in the muscles, bones, etc, they were all battling. Human bloodline evolution, according to logic, this was a long arduous gradual process, and the bloodline catalyst, was something the Virtual Universe Network company had researched and produced, speeding up this absolute evolution process.

Every portion’s cost was extremely high.

Within the training room.

Luo Feng sprawled across the floor, his clothes wet and sticking to his body, revealing his incredibly built physique, he was lying there absolutely tired and not moving at all.

“So exhausting.”

“It’s too exhausting.”

“My entire body is gone, I don’t even want to move a finger right now.” Luo Feng told Babata within his mind, “however, there’s a very comfortable feeling within my bones, it’s really really comfortable.”

“The process of the bloodline evolution is of course painful, and after the evolution, you’d naturally feel incredibly comfortable. This sort of process uses up a large amount of your life force, you’d better faster go use Mu Ya crystals, they store a large amount of life force, treasures that can spur your life evolution. If you use it now, it’d be the best.” Babata said.

“Understood.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Inform my big and second brother to use the Mu Ya crystals too.” Luo Feng ordered, Babata informed them through their communication devices.

Within Bailan Star.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were immersed in their training, the amount stored within one Mu Ya crystal was shocking. Usually Luo Feng would spend some time everyday to absorb it, causing his body to be totally full. Today however, after experiencing the big bloodline evolution, his starving body was madly absorbing the energy from the Mu Ya crystal.

“It’s incomparably splendid.”

Luo Feng sat crossed legged, holding a Mu Ya crystal in his hand.

Large amounts of life force energy were being madly absorbed by his body, every cell that had just undergone tremendous change was madly devouring this energy, they were ravished! Every bit of energy that just entered his body was immediately swallowed, this process carried on continuously.

About 23 hours passed, an entire Mu Ya crystal had been completely absorbed. Luo Feng took out another Mu Ya crystal!

The process of absorbing a crystal was also a step in Luo feng’s body’s evolution, with his body constantly growing and evolving, naturally, the amount of spirit energy his can take also grew, with large amounts of pure spirit energy flowing from his life’s core straight into his consciousness, the amount of spirit energy in his consciousness increased more and more.

“Rumble…”

Blood red spirit energy rushed about like a tidal wave, raging within, before madly gathering, forming a large blood ball, constantly expanding and contracting, it seemed almost as though the entire world only had this one red ball, following its final contraction, his entire consciousness rumbled, a glaring miniature glowing planet formed.

Along with the original miniature planet.

Within his consciousness, the new planet revolved around the older planet, the older planet also rotated slowly, forming a two planet construct.

“Chi chi…” Extremely pure spirit energy was purified through passing through the core of these two planets, almost like a mist permeating throughout his entire existence, at the same time the Void Pagoda also began to change.

Star level 2!

Luo Feng’s body had already broken through from the Star Traveller level 7 to 8. His spirit reader side had stepped into the Star level 2.

One day later.

Luo Feng stepped on the Soaring Shuttle, becoming a beam of

light, swiftly flying through the extreme cold regions of the Bailan Star's northern regions. The terrifying speed caused the solid snow below to burst open, forming a deep gorge path. A frozen snow mountain was pierced by a golden swordfish madly going through it, finally it exploded from within, large amounts of snow and ice scattering about.

"Thrilling." Luo Feng stood in mid air, looking at the snow mountain crumble, extremely carefree.

"Third brother."

"Third brother."

Two voices resounded from the distance.

"Coming." The Soaring Shuttle below Luo Feng's feet became a beam of light and swiftly headed in the direction of the voices In the distance, standing on the snow were two men, one in black and the other in white, it was Hong and Thunder God. The current Hong and Thunder God were in high spirits, when they used the bloodline catalyst before, Luo Feng had reminded them to use the Mu Ya crystals, naturally they used it immediately.

Its effectiveness was the best at that time.

Hong actually broke through and reached the Star level 1.

And Thunder God's level also raised and reached Star level 2!

However...this sort of chance might not happen again, the effectiveness of the bloodline catalyst works the best the first time, using it after may not produce any results at all. However, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were already satisfied, after all, the most important effect of the bloodline catalyst was...

Making their evolution path in the future easier and faster!

“Third brother.” Hong smiled as he looked at Luo Feng.

“Hm?” Luo Feng descended and landed on the snowy ground.

“Third brother, Big brother and I were thinking...of going to apply for the Universe Probation Mercenary Exams, what do you think?” Thunder God looked at Luo Feng.

“The Universe Probation Mercenary Exams?” Luo Feng was shocked.

That was right, big brother was already in the Star level 1 now, he could take the Universe probation mercenary exams.

This exam, was the entrance exam into the Universe Mercenary Alliance, back then their good brothers Heruo and Buleimu also went to take part in it, this entrance exam was for the sole sake of eliminating those unsuited for the life of danger!

The elimination method...many die. Those who were lucky got to keep their little lives.

Hence, this probation mercenary exam had a high death rate, it was renowned for that.

“Universe Probation Mercenary Exams?” Luo Feng repeated.

“What do you think?” Hong and Thunder God looked at Luo Feng.

“When are you thinking of leaving?” Luo Feng asked.

“Of course the earlier the better!” Thunder God couldn’t help but say. “Naturally, we have things to attend to first, we first have to check in the Virtual Universe Network about the exam itself and the things we should pay attention to.”

Chapter 12 – To Cang Lan Star

Virtual Universe, Black Dragon Mountain Island's Nine Star Bay.

Luo Feng, Hong, and Thunder God were sitting around a table and facing a display. There was a large amount of information for those wanting to take the Universe Mercenary rainee test.

"The Universe Mercenary trainee test are all taken in the 'Sector Lord's World'?"

"Inside the world of a Sector Lord, besides the dangers naturally found within, the biggest danger are the other members taking the test? Robberies and murders can happen at any time, and people can steal away your item objectives?" as Luo Feng read the caution, he frowned.

"If a rookie Star level 2 or 3 stage is participating in the trainee test, you should find Star level 8 or 9 stage warriors to form a squad! That way, you at least can defend yourselves against those wanting to steal from you."

"No matter what, do not directly enter with just Star Traveller level 1 and 2 stages. Even if you get lucky and find the items you need, they'll just get stolen away"

.....

After Luo Feng, Hong, and Thunder God finished reading, they

all exchanged glances and were speechless.

"So the most dangerous thing in the exam are the other participants" Thunder God shook his head helplessly.

"You can never predict the nature of others" said Hong seriously.

"Thankfully we have two servants" even though Luo Feng felt a bit of pressure, he wasn't too nervous. Because when he departed, Luo Feng brought two Star level 9 stage slaves with him just in case they run into some trouble. Keep in mind he bought a bunch of Star level 9 stage slaves.

Out of these two, one of them is a spirit reader while the other is a fighter.

And these two are the most outstanding ones!

Luo Feng passed on his secret training methods of the Yun Mo sect to these group of Star level 9 stages. Since they are slaves..... there is naturally no need to worry about betrayal, which was why Babata didn't stop it.

"Form a squad with Star level 8 or 9 stages?" Thunder God laughed, "Haha, thankfully we have two great helpers"

"Yes, so we don't need to find other people anymore" Hong also smiled.

Forming a squad.

This wasn't protected by law, so you couldn't completely trust your squad members. Making sure you don't get backstabbed is a very tiring thing! Luo Feng and the other two were lucky to have two Star level 9 stage slaves. This way, they can form a squad of five and have excellent teamwork.

In the vast universe.

Those of the same race or origin usually have deep connections. After all, there are countless amounts of species in the universe, and an even larger amount of planets.

"Daddy, daddy, what are you looking at?" the young boy 'Luo Hua' jumped over in his battle uniform.

"Daddy is busy, come, give me a kiss" Luo Feng smiled as he ran over and picked up his son.

That night, Luo Feng and the others took a spaceship and left Bai Lan star.

You must do the paperwork for the adventurer status in real life at the 'Universe Mercenary Alliance'. Only with your adventurer status can you undergo the trainee test. Luo Feng and the others' destination is 'Dragon Star'.

.....

Ten days later.

The Universe Mercenary Alliance station at Dragon Star basically looked like a castle. Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, and the two Star level 9 stage bodyguards entered within.

“There’s so many people” exclaimed Luo Feng.

“It’s like a sea of people” Thunder God was dazzled.

Large numbers of people entered the Universe Mercenary Alliance building, and over 80% of them were here to sign up for their adventurer status! Luo Feng and the others were also in the sea of people. They lined up with all sorts of other human species and finally finished their paperwork for the adventurer status after about an hour.

“Adventurer card, this is an adventurer card?” Thunder God looked at the card in his hand.

“Don’t lose it, it’s quite a pain to get it” laughed Luo Feng, “Go, let’s go sign up for the Universe Mercenary trainee test”.

There were a lot of people signing up for an adventurer status.

But there weren’t a lot of people signing up for the universe

mercenary trainee test. Luo Feng and the others didn't even need to line up.

"Star level 2 stage spirit reader, Star level 2 stage fighter, Star level 1 stage fighter, Star level 9 stage fighter, Star level 9 stage spirit reader. All of you meet the requirements for the mercenary trainee test. Please pay 10,000 Black Dragon dollars per person"

"Very good".

"The specifics of your test are in here. You can read them when you have the time".

After having all five of their adventurer cards scanned, their numbers entered the 'universe mercenary trainee test' system and are eligible to participate in the test.

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God and the others entered a bar to the side. After entering, they randomly ordered some drinks and immediately started reading about the exam.

"Enter the Sector Lord's world in Cang Lan Star and find three wind corner stones and one horn from the horned iron rhino. After that, hand it to the Universe Mercenary Alliance workers at the exit of the Sector Lord's world. After doing that, you will have successfully passed the test and will become a qualified mercenary trainee".

The missions for the test themselves are naturally made for

testing purposes.

This is not a regular adventure. These missions were made to disqualify large amounts of people.

“It definitely won’t be easy” mumbled Thunder God. And then he laughed, “Wind corner stone, horn from the horned iron rhino? Can’t people just buy them and then claim they got it themselves?”.

“Look here”

Luo Feng flipped to the sixth page of the test explanation book, “The wind corner stone is a special stone unique to that Sector Lord’s world and carries the essence of that world. And the horn of the horned iron rhino ‘beast’ inside that Sector Lord’s world have been marked by the Universe Mercenary Alliance’s workers….. every time a mission is completed, the testing items are taken back”.

“The Universe Mercenary Alliance is extremely strict about the items. Once someone is found cheating, they will directly lose their right to take the test forever. And for those who are selling the items, they are directly killed”.

…..

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, and the two bodyguards were discussing about the Universe Mercenary trainee test that was

about to begin.

"Gentlemen".

"Gentlemen" an extremely skinny man with huge ears came close with a huge smile, "Are the five of you preparing to participate in the universe mercenary trainee exam?"

"Hm?" Luo Feng and the others looked over.

"The mercenary trainee test within the area of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire is always held in the Sector Lord's world on Cang Lan Star. I have here..... a detailed map of that world, and the records and experiences of many seniors who have completed the mercenary trainee exam" said the man quietly, "With this, your rates of success will increase by at least 10%".

"Detailed map? Experiences?" Luo Feng looked at the skinny man.

"How much money?" asked Thunder God.

"Not a lot, 100 Black Dragon dollars per copy" replied the skinny man.

"What do you mean not a lot? 50 Black Dragon dollars for a copy" said Thunder God directly.

“Deal!” the skinny man was extremely direct.

.....

On Dragon Star, Luo Feng and the others purchased two more books on people’s experiences on the trainee exam. After comparing them, the maps were indeed exactly the same. And there were all types of ‘experiences’. But as they read and read, Luo Feng, Hong, and Thunder God were shocked that..... the Sector Lord’s world changes after a certain amount of time!

On Dragon Star, Luo Feng bought his bodyguards a stage two battle uniform and a stage two energy (spiritual) weapon. Maybe an extremely high quality stage two spirit weapon requires a few billion Black Dragon Dollars, but even his own weapon is a low quality stage three spirit weapon. So of course, the weapons of these two bodyguards are ‘medium quality stage two weapons’.

Stage two weapons, are enough for Star levels.

.....

After that, Luo Feng and the others rode on the spaceship and left Dragon Star as they headed towards the even more famous ‘Cang Lan Star’.

Cang Lan Star, one of the stars that can rank within the top 100 in terms of importance within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire. The master of this planet is a ‘Sector Lord’, of course..... this

Sector Lord isn't currently living on Cang Lan star.

"Ao Gu, Tie Nan He, from now on, you two are extremely important members of our squad. When someone tries to rob us, the three of us will have to rely on you two" within the spaceship's control room, all five of them were there. Luo Feng was smiling as he looked at the two bodyguards in front of him, which were the two slaves he brought with him this time.

They had similar appearances to people on Earth.

Ao Gu, a Star level 9 stage spirit reader. He was extremely skinny and barely has any meat on his cheeks. His dark red hair was messy. He was the strongest spirit reader out of the various star level nine slaves Luo Feng purchased.

Tie Nan He, an energetic, large man. He had sunken eyes and the only difference between him and regular humans was that he had three scales on his forehead. He was the most powerful fighter within the Star level nine slaves Luo Feng purchased.

"Protecting our master is our purpose" said old Ao Gu.

"Master, don't say it like that" followed Tie Nan He.

"Don't be humble, our squad will be together for an extremely long amount of time. If our squad splits up in the future and you two are still alive, I'm still alive..... after going through so many life and death situations together, I'll choose to deactivate your

microchips and restore your freedom” said Luo Feng.

Ao Gu and Tie Nan He’s eyes flashed.

Freedom!

That is what every slave hopes for! However, under the control of the microchip, they have no way to go against their master’s will.

Luo Feng nodded to himself. Slaves won’t go against your will, but giving them something to strive for will make these two bodyguards work even harder..... Luo Feng also decided that once these two aren’t strong enough to be useful and the squad splits up, it would be normal to grant these two their freedom after going through so many life and death situations together.

“We’re almost at Cang Lan Star, our spaceship is right about to pass through space”

“Cang Lan Star” Ao Gu and Tie Nan He had a bit of desire in their eyes. They will work hard to protect Luo Feng with all they have.

Because once their master dies.

It’s over for them!

And their hope for freedom will also disappear. Not every master gives their slaves a chance to be free.

.....

After passing through space, the spaceship flew towards a blue planet with unrivaled beauty.

“What a beautiful planet, it’s almost as beautiful as ours” Luo Feng stood in the control room and complimented the faraway star.

“It is indeed beautiful” Thunder God also complimented, “However, it’s quite amazing. This Cang Lan Star has a diameter of around 32,000 km, and the ‘Sector Lord’s world’ hidden on Cang Lan star has a surface area of over 100 times that of Cang Lan star’s. Such a gigantic world, and I heard some Sector Lords at the peak of their level can hide it within a single grain of sand”.

“One grain of sand, one world, this is a powerful aspect of the sector lords” complimented Hong.

The worlds of Sector Lords are indeed mysterious.

And the universe mercenary trainee exam, will be in one of those worlds.

“Whoosh!”

The dark blue spaceship quickly flew into Cang Lan star.

Chapter 13 – World of Thunder

Cang Lan Star, Luo Feng's group's spaceship just arrived and was guided towards the docking area.

"Now we can only rely on our own flight".

"It'll be fast. With our speed, we'll arrive in a few minutes" Luo Feng smiled as he headed towards the flourishing city with the other four—— Thunder City. Thunder City didn't always have that name, it's just that the world that the Sector Lord created was discovered in Thunder City.

And the Sector Lord's world was famous for its thunder, so it was named 'World of Thunder'.

"We've arrived at Thunder City".

Luo Feng and the other four descended. In the city, flying cars could be seen all over the place. Many people could be seen flying by themselves too.

"The Universe Mercenary Alliance area is 30 km away in that direction" Thunder God lowered his head and looked at the map that appeared on the mini quantum computer, and then it pointed towards the south eastern direction that corresponded with this star's magnetic field. After that, Luo Feng and the others swiftly headed towards the Universe Mercenary Alliance's area..... the Sector Lord's world was located in that area.

The Universe Mercenary Alliance area was also constructed after the discovery of the Sector Lord's world.

Luo Feng and the other four entered the Universe Mercenary Alliance area.

"If you guys keep going this way, the villa on your way that is heavily surrounded is the World of Thunder" a worker at the area pointed towards the distance. This area was extremely empty, and yet a huge number of guards encircled the isolated buildings.

"World of Thunder?".

"Villa?".

The group looked towards the villa.

The worker smiled and laughed: "The great 'Sector Lord' that created the World of Thunder back then probably lived in Thunder City in seclusion. He purchased a villa and created the World of Thunder inside it. From the outside, who could tell that this villa contained a world that was even larger than the entire Cang Lan Star? However, after countless years, the villas around it have become rubble".

"Oh?" Luo Feng nodded, and then smiled as he gave his thanks, "Thanks".

“Let’s go” Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, and the other two directly headed towards the villa in the distance.

The villa was securely guarded.

Suddenly——

The guards actually swiftly let out a path. A man with a ‘one star’ medal on his chest walked out and raised his head to look at the sky. The guards beside him were extremely respectful. It seems like this universe mercenary is some sort of leadership figure.

“What’s going on?” Luo Feng was a bit surprised.

“Look, a spaceship is flying towards here in the sky” Thunder God pointed towards the sky. Other than Luo Feng’s group, quite a few people who have arrived at the ‘Universe Mercenary Alliance area’ also raised their heads to look. From a distance, a spaceship appeared in the sky above them in virtually a flash. It hovered there without moving.

HUA! The hatch opened!

After that, around twenty young men and women appearing to be of various races came out.

“Mr. Jia Ya” the universe mercenary came forward.

Out of the twenty young men and women that flew down, one of them was an extremely handsome guy who was wearing a purple battle uniform set. On his chest hung a two star medal: “I’m just bringing some of my subordinates’ rookies to take the ‘trainee test’. A head like you didn’t have to come personally greet me”.

“Mr. Jia Ya saved me back then, how can I not appear when you come?” smiled the universe mercenary. After that, he looked at the group of young men and women, “These are the rookies from the Black Cloud Guild. Hm, they all seem quite good!”.

“Haha, there are a few good seedlings within this batch of rookies” smiled the purple shirted man as he nodded.

After that, the purple shirted man scanned across the group of young people as he ordered: “I won’t say anymore about the dangers of the Universe Mercenary trainee exam. I just hope..... that I will be able to see you guys at the Black Cloud Guild. All of you hurry into the Sector Lord’s world now”.

“Yes, chief instructor”.

The group of young people respectfully heeded the order.

After that, they naturally split into four squads, each squad had Star level 2 and 3 stages, and also had Star level 8 and 9 stages. The four squads swiftly entered the villa. The villa wasn’t even that big..... but it seemed like the twenty people entered a bottomless hole.

.....

The purple shirted man seemed like a venomous snake to regular people; he naturally made people feel fear.

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, and the other two didn't dare to approach at such a time, and just stayed in the crowd in the distance.

"The Black Cloud Guild? What is this Black Cloud Guild they were talking about?" sounds of discussions carried around the surrounding crowd.

"What's the Black Cloud Guild?" Luo Feng also looked towards Hong and Thunder God.

"Don't know".

"Master, we don't know either" Ao Gu and Tie Nan He both shook their heads.

Suddenly, the sounds of discussions to the side attracted Luo Feng's group's attention: "This Black Cloud Guild is one of the four large organizations of our Black Dragon Mountain Empire. Our Black Dragon Mountain Empire controls the entire Black Dragon Mountain region, which contains about 8,000 galaxies! Of course, the most powerful organizations are the two large sacred lands. Below them are the four large organizations and the sixteen large families".

“What are the two sacred lands?”.

“You don’t even know that?”.

“The two sacred lands are ‘Black Dragon Mountain’ and ‘Holy Sea of Frost’. It has been said that ‘Undying Beings’ were the ones that created the two sacred lands. They have quite a few Sector Lords in them too”.

“Each of the sixteen families have at least one ‘Sector Lord’. Sector Lords have the ability to destroy the skies and earth and to create their own world. Of course, either of the two sacred lands can easily destroy the sixteen families”.

“If Black Dragon Mountain, Holy Sea of Frost, and the sixteen families belong to the government, then the four large organizations are organizations belonging to the people..... they have been around tens of thousands of years. Some of their elders from back then have even entered the Ganwu Empire”.

.....

Luo Feng and the others were completely focused on the discussions around them.

So that was how the powers in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire were divided. The two sacred lands, the four large organizations, and the sixteen families.

“Luo Feng, here is some detailed information on the powers in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire” Babata’s voice sounded in Luo Feng’s mind. Suddenly, large amounts of information appeared on Luo Feng’s arm guard. While Luo Feng lowered his head to look at it, he sent the information to Hong, Thunder God, Ao Gu and Tie Nan He.

After looking closely, Luo Feng was shocked.

The root of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire were the two sacred lands, ‘Black Dragon Mountain’ and ‘Holy Sea of Frost’, the government’s strongest power!

And for the people were the four large organizations.

Their power spreads over a thousand galaxies, and each organization has a group of Sector Lord level fighters! In terms of power, they definitely cannot be underestimated. And the background behind the four large organizations even extend to the ultra powerful higher ups in the Ganwu Empire. So maybe the four large organizations aren’t as strict as the two sacred lands.

But in terms of fighting power, they are virtually equal.

“What? Nuolan Shan is part of ‘Hundred Tigers Building’ of the four large organizations?” Luo Feng was shocked. In the information Babata gave was some information about Nuolan Shan and the Hundred Tiger Building. After reading, Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief, “Phew, he’s only an extremely basic member of the

Hundred Tiger Building and doesn't have much authority".

The four large organizations can definitely cause a huge commotion in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.

If the Nuolan Shan family is a droplet of water, then any of the four large organizations are a limitless, raging sea! Because they are so powerful and have such a huge background, the Black Dragon Mountain Empire can only silently accept their existence.

"Noulan Shan has such a huge background?" Thunder God was shocked. At the same time, he used his genetic energy to form a soundproof barrier.

"He's only a basic member in the Hundred Tigers Building, and not a high ranking authority" said Hong.

Hundred Tigers Building, one of the four large organizations. A Universe level 9 stage fighter is indeed a basic member.

"Three Axe Mountain, Hundred Tiger Building, Black Cloud Guild, North Dragon Castle are extremely powerful in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire" Luo Feng fantasized about him becoming a high ranking authority in one of those organizations. With one command of his, the entire Nuolan Shan family will directly become rubble and thousands of planets will surrender to him.

"WHAT ARE YOU FANTASIZING ABOUT!"

“Power is the most important thing. Once you become as powerful as your master, one word from you can make the entire Black Dragon Mountain Empire shake in fear” yelled Babata, “Who gives a shit about the sacred lands, your master had nine Undying Beings under him!”.

Luo Feng laughed.

In front of Yun Mo Planet’s master, the Black Dragon Mountain Empire had to lower their heads. But to Luo Feng..... the Black Dragon Mountain Empire was still a huge being.

.....

“We are here to participate in the Universe Mercenary trainee exam”.

Luo Feng and the others stood in front of the villa.

“Beep!”

A scanner scanned across Luo Feng’s group. Only after the guards heard the beep did they nod: “Enter!”. Clearly, the identity of Luo Feng’s group has just been verified.

A wide garden.

In the middle of the garden was a normal three story villa. In front of the door to the villa stood two black clothed women with cold expressions on. One of the black clothed women looked at Luo Feng's group and said seriously: "Adventurers, I'm sure you all know about the dangers in the world of the Sector Lord. You can still back out now!".

"No need, open the door" said Luo Feng.

Creak!

One of the black clothed women directly pushed open the door to the villa: "The world of the Sector Lord is on the second floor of the villa".

Luo Feng's group poured in the building and entered the main lobby. After that, they went up the stairs to the second floor. All of the rooms on the second floor were quite normal, except a woman with a purple mark in the shape of a flower stood in front of one of the room's door. The woman saw Luo Feng's group and directly pulled open the door. Instantly, flowing lights poured out of the room.

"This is——" Luo Feng's group held their breath as they watched.

The flowing lights were like foam, so Luo Feng's group couldn't see into the room.

"Go in, this is the World of Thunder" said the woman coldly.

“Okay”

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, Ao Gu, and Tie Nan He exchanged glances, and then all of them extended their hands. All of them held hands, because if they don’t, they will all be transported to different locations in the World of Thunder.

“The World of Thunder!”

“Go, go in”.

Tie Nan He was the first one to enter the flowing lights, after that was Thunder God, Luo Feng, Hong, and then finally Ao Gu.

Without a sound.

The five of them entered the flowing lights and completely disappeared.

“PA!” the woman in front of the room closed the door once again.

Chapter 14 -Entering The World of Thunder

The stars turned and time passed.

It was still sunny before outside the villa, incomparably crowded and bustling at the Universe Mercenary Alliance base. Within the blink of an eye, it became night!

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Tie Nan He, Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu had just entered the World of thunder, immediately dropping at a shocking speed, the five quickly controlled their internal miniature planets to change their surrounding gravitational pull, but it was still too late! Following the sounds of five heavy crashes into the floor, Luo Feng and his group stood up from the ground.

“That hurt.” Luo Feng quickly stood up.

“This surface, is it covered with nails?” Thunder God too stood up.

The five stood up and began to survey their surroundings.

It was a pitch black world, only in the distant high sky was there a glimmer of light, the only thing that kept the world from being totally pitch dark. Below them, was an endless and vast black... desert!

“Desert?” Hong squatted down shocked.

“This is from the books we bought, the renowned Death Desert?”

“It is indeed a desert.”

Luo Feng picked up a handful of sand, the sand grains were a dark blue color, at first glance it looked black! Every grain was very heavy, it’s density was definitely at least a hundred times that of Earth’s iron, the grains even had a faint sense of magnetism, causing them to all stick together. When they fell earlier, all they left were little dents in the sand.

“The World of Thunder, its gravitational force is 3900 times that of Earth’s.” Hong emphasized, “Because the entire world is made from the energy of the universe which the Sector Lord used to create it, the entire world’s foundation is the ‘Universe Crystal’, it’s soil, sand, rocks, etc are all affected by the universe energy’s influence, much more special than those outside.”

“It’s indeed special, every grain is very heavy.” Luo Feng nodded.

“It’s indeed extravagant, to build such a big world, just how much universe energy is needed?” Thunder God couldn’t help but say.

Universe energy.

Once one reached the Sector Lord level, one would be able to

unleash unbelievable energies, when these energies solidify, they become universe crystals. Universe crystals are actually classified as currency within the universe. This isn't like the Silverblue dollars, the Black Dragon dollars or the Ganwu Dollars and even the currencies from other empires, but the universe energies solidifying to form!

Hence, it was usable in any universe country, between any race!

"The gravitational pull is too strong, even my spirit reading has been affected." Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

"What's your scanning area now?" Thunder God asked.

"Not even a thousandth of what I can do on Earth." Luo Feng said.

A Star Traveller level 1 spirit reader, on Earth, can spread his spirit reading up to a 1km area. A Star level 1 can spread it over a 100km area. Yet...Luo Feng was a Star level 2 spirit reader, in the Sector Lord's world where the gravitational pull was 3900 times of Earth's, his area wasn't even 100m.

"My spiritual force can't even spread out to a radius of 1,000 meters" The old Ao Gu said.

"The Death Desert, is one of the World of Thunder's most dangerous territories." Hong said, "and right now it's late night over here, I can't pinpoint direction accurately. However the

longer one stays in the Death Desert, the more dangerous it gets! We have to set off immediately, randomly choose a direction and proceed with the quickest of speeds."

The Death Desert, one of the forbidden areas of the World of Thunder, even the wild beasts didn't dare live here.

"Right, let's quickly set off." Thunder God added.

"Then this direction, let's move." Luo Feng randomly picked a direction.

Suddenly...

Luo Feng and his group floated up, despite the incredibly high gravitational pull, it wasn't powerful enough to stop a Star level warrior from being able to fly. Of course...because of the strong pull, their flying speed was much slower than before.

.....

After flying for 5 minutes.

Luo Feng and his group continued to swiftly fly through the death desert, suddenly, the team's strongest spirit reader Ao Gu creased his eyebrows, "Master, something doesn't feel right."

"Doesn't feel right?" Luo Feng looked at Ao Gu.

“Look behind us.” Thunder God shouted.

“Behind?”

Luo Feng, Hong, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu turned to look, it was a huge sandstorm that swallowed everything, a pitch black wall of sand moving towards them at a shocking speed. At the same time below the storm, there was a group of young men and women fleeing for their lives.

“It’s the death dust storm!” Ao Gu’s face went pale.

“It’s the death dust storm, quickly flee!” Thunder God also shouted.

“Quickly, quickly, quickly.” Hong was also flustered.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The five quickly fled with their greatest speed, and under the worry and anxiousness of Ao Gu, he grabbed on to the slowest flyers Hong and Thunder God and flew. Luo Feng stood on his Soaring Shuttle, flying at about the same speed as Ao Gu dragging along the other two.

Luo Feng and his group had bought a book that had recorded the dangers of the World of Thunder, the death dust storm was one of

them. The death dust storm was one of the three great dangers of the Death Desert, it came without any warning without any pattern. It just came suddenly, engulfing both land and sky...it made it impossible for one to dodge or hide, many earlier generations with experience had warned the later generations...

Facing the death dust storm, drilling below the storm is suicide! Flying as high as possible is also suicide!

The only way was to race against it!

If the death dust storm disperses before it catches up to you, then you'll live.

"We just entered this World of Thunder and we encounter the death dust storm, just what the hell is this?" Thunder God cursed, "Look, behind us, it looks like one of the four Black Cloud Guild groups from before that entered ahead us." One of the four groups.

Luo Feng poured his spirit energy into his soaring shuttle, maintaining his maximum speed.

"Hm?" Luo Feng turned to look behind.

There was indeed a small team of young men and women being chased down madly by the huge wall of sand! Looking at their uniforms, they were indeed one of the four groups that had entered the World of Thunder just before Luo Feng and his group, a group from the Black Cloud Guild. There were a total of six of

them madly trying to flee, four men and two women.

Flee! Madly fleeing!

The Death dust storm gradually grew closer and closer to the Black Cloud Guild group, the group's last member was a thick and sturdy man with a single horn on his head, he roared out in rage.

"Chi chi..." The death dust storm finally touched this man, immediately engulfing him and twirling him into the storm.

Under the whirlwind of the universe energy infused sand grains, this man seemed to almost be like going through a meat grinder, the battle uniform he was wearing was immediately torn apart, large amounts of fresh blood and meat, bones were scattered all about.

"Ah!"

"Quickly escape."

"Quickly."

This little group from Black Cloud Guild's other five members had malevolent expressions, in the face of death, they all exploded with their fastest speeds.

.....

And in front of this little group, a few kilometers away was Luo Feng's little team, they were all so shocked they began to move even faster.

"Quick, quick, quick, hurry and escape."

"Don't let the death dust storm catch up."

"Damn, this death dust storm is too scary. It actually produced such a strong storm, I can guarantee, even those underground in the Death Desert would be affected by its powerful whirlwind force. No wonder the books said that even drilling underground would mean death." Thunder God was extremely anxious, but seeing as there was nothing else to do, after all, he and Hong were both being carried by the spirit reader Ao Gu.

Ao Gu alone was carrying both of them, Luo Feng on his Soaring Shuttle and Tie Nan He flying alone.

Their speed was indeed quick.

.....

Behind them, the Black Cloud Guild team lost another two slower members, and finally the death dust storm began to slowly slow down and descend, the sky reaching torrent began to lower, obviously this death dust storm was reaching its end.

“Phew, we’ve managed to escape one danger.” Luo Feng took a sigh of relief.

“Look, the Black Cloud Guild group is left with only three people. A Star level 9 spirit reader and two Star level 2 and 3 youths.” Thunder God looked at the three that were swiftly approaching them, amongst the three, a Star level 9 man was stepping on a round disc, carrying the two youths.

“Very normal.” Luo Feng too looked at the distant three people, “The Black Cloud Guild would have organized the teams, every little team will always have a star level 9, the Star level 9 member will play the job of a nanny, the ones who are really here to train and take the exam is the Star level 2 and 3 youths. These are the real later generation elites of the Black Cloud Guild.”

The three of them deliberately lengthened their distance from Luo Feng’s group and headed in another direction away from them.

This sudden death dust storm had caused their team some major losses, even though Luo Feng’s team hadn’t had any losses, they didn’t dare relax even a little.

After about another half an hour of flying.

“Master, there’s a large mountain range ahead.” Tie Nan He’s sunken eyes could see into the distance, spotting the unremarkable mountain range.

“We’ve discovered mountain ranges?”

Luo Feng and his group increased their speed, as said, a long continuous mountain range that exceeded one’s line of sight appeared before them. On this mountain range there were even large numbers of trees and plants, compared to the Death Desert, this mountain range seemed to be filled with vitality.

“It’s really a mountain range.” Hong lowered his head and looked at the quantum computer, saying, “second and third brother, according to the map, I think we should have reached Long Suo mountain range.”

“Long Suo mountain range?” Thunder God rushed into the sky, flying to a high point, carefully examining the outline of the mountain range, looking at some of its special points, before lowering his head to look at the quantum computer, “Hm, this should be the middle point between the Death Desert and the Long Suo mountain range, the distance from here to one of our destinations…Demon Moon River is about 16,000 km away.”

Demon Moon River was situated within the Long Suo mountain range.

It was a 100 km wide river. As there were large amounts and plentiful water sources, there were many species of ferocious beasts that gathered around the river, one of them was the “ Horned Iron Rhino”.

The horn of the Horned Iron Rhino was one of this test’s

required items.

“Big brother, second brother, we have to be even more careful in this Long Suo mountain range. The elements are the dangerous part of the desert, but in this mountain range, with many mountains and trees and plants, there are ferocious beasts about and many other participants of the test! There are many incidents of killing between humans and the beasts along with the other participants here.” Luo Feng warned them.

“Understood.” Hong and Thunder God nodded.

In terms of danger, the Long Suo Mountain range was the true danger.

Of course...

Within the World of Thunder, Demon Moon River wasn’t the only place with the Horned Iron Rhino herd, there were other places about that had them. However, Demon Moon River was the closest location out of all the places.

“Be careful of humans, be careful of this Sector Lord world’s natural dangers, especially the lightning! If there are any signs of lightning, immediately distance yourself from wherever the lightning may hit.” Luo Feng remembered from the books they bought about the introduction of the place, the most treacherous and terrifying natural danger of the entire World of Thunder was...lightning!

This world was called the World of Thunder.

Mainly because the lightning of this world was too scary, far exceeding any other natural dangers! The moment one was struck, even a weaker Domain Lord would immediately be turned to dust. Star level? There was absolutely no chance of survival.

Chapter 15 – The Horned Iron Rhino Herd

Long Suo Mountain range, danger was concealed everywhere.

“There are ferocious beasts 18km to the right.”

“3 o’clock direction, 19km ahead there are beasts.

……

Luo Feng calmly reported each and every figure, the entire little team was proceeding with shocking speed, this level of progress speed, was something a large majority of teams in the Long Suo mountain range couldn’t imagine! Because in this world of the Sector Lord, one’s spirit reading area was very small, and using spiritual force to search was easily detectable by the ferocious beasts. Hence usually, progress speeds were very slow.

Using one or two years to complete the Universe Mercenary trainee exams was very normal.

However, Luo Feng and his group moved extremely fast.

“Babata, your security search ability is indeed a lot more convenient.” Luo Feng complemented in his mind.

“This is something I took from the Yun Mo Planet ship, it won’t omit anything within an area with a 20,000 (m/km) diameter! Even

Sector Lords cannot escape its search, much less these incomparably stupid beasts.” Babata was especially pleased with himself.

The mountain forest was especially hard to travel.

Luo Feng’s five man team was completely unable to fly, because flying within the Long Suo mountain rage…was akin to becoming a target for all the beasts! The beasts herds could look up and easily spot them, one had to know…these beasts could fly too. Then, with large numbers of herds and beasts surrounding and attacking, one wouldn’t even be able to escape.

Spending close to about two days of time, Luo Feng’s team finally arrived at Demon Moon River.

Demon Moon River.

It was a vast and endless river, surrounding it were large empty fields of land; a few trees were already smashed from having been trampled on, obviously a large number of beasts usually frequented the river’s surroundings.

“There are no beasts around.” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

“We can’t do anything about it, we just have to slowly wait,” Thunder God laughed, “Waiting here would still be better than us rushing to the next spot that has the horned iron rhino herds.”

“Our luck is not bad, since coming to the Sector Lord’s World of Thunder, we haven’t had a true blood battle yet.” Hong was very relaxed, of course the main reason they haven’t had a battle was due to Luo Feng’s security surveillance device.

They slowly waited.

Within the World of Thunder, there were nine sun-like balls during the day, and it was pitch black at night, only having a faint thread of light leaking down from above. Within the Demon Moon River forests, they waited. During the first night, Luo Feng and the others discovered three huge lizard type ferocious beasts.

During the second day, they discovered three groups of beasts.

They even witnessed the terrifying scene of beasts fighting amongst themselves and killing each other.

During the sixth day, the nine balls of light floated high above in the World of Thunder.

Luo Feng and the other four patiently waited.

“We are hunters waiting for a rabbit? I never expected us to actually have to sit and wait.” Thunder God sat on a branch of a tree, occasionally looking into the distance.

“You come down, if the horned iron rhino comes, I’ll discover it immediately.” Luo Feng looked up and smiled, there was some

stewed meat on the ground, these were all preserved very well, “Attention all!” Luo Feng’s expression grew serious, beside him lay the sleeping Hong, along with Ao Gu who was sitting crossed legged and finally Tie Nan He who was standing guard, they all swiftly looked over.

“What’s the matter Luo Feng?” The others looked at him.

“The horned iron rhino has come.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“They’ve finally come!”

The group immediately stood up.

“Follow me.” Luo Feng stepped on the Soaring Shuttle, leading the way swiftly through the forest, even though there was a large number of trees and plants within the forest, Luo Feng’s nimble movements never even touched a single one of them. Behind, Hong, Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu swiftly followed, very quickly the five arrived not far off from the lakeside.

“The horned iron rhino are arriving from that direction, their speed isn’t fast, they’ll be here in about 5 minutes.” Luo Feng pointed ahead, “There’s a total of twenty one horned iron rhinos.”

After a while.

Beast after beast that looked like trucks appeared within their line of sight, their rock like skin was undoubtedly solid and sturdy,

that piercing blade-like single horn...reflected and gleamed with a chilly light under the sunlight from the nine light balls above, yet their eyes seemed gentle.

The single horned rhino was a very simple beast.

These ferocious beasts, the reason why they were ferocious was mostly because of their low intelligence. Within the universe, the beasts were mostly sorted into two main categories, the demon beasts and the ferocious beasts.

The demon beast race groups are directed towards species that have intelligence similar to that of the human race's student level. Like the beasts on Earth, they belonged to the demon beasts, more matured demon beasts' intelligence weren't even lower than humans! As they had intelligence, hence in the vast universe, the demon beast's race was one of the extremely huge and powerful races.

Ferocious beasts had strength but low intelligence.

They couldn't learn, be it brutal and savage, or gentle, their common point was that they had low intelligence.

Of course the beasts, besides the demon beasts and ferocious beasts, there were still the god beasts, like the space beasts that were also known as space god beasts.

"Damn, that horned iron rhino's power is very strong." Thunder

God was looking at the screen on his arm, its power level.

“It’s very strong, it’d be hard for five of us to deal with it, we can only think of a way to separate them. After all we just need five horns.” Luo Feng communicated via spirit reading.

“Separate? These beasts have low intelligence, they should be easy to deceive.”

“What method should we use?”

When Luo Feng’s group was in soft discussion, Luo Feng’s expression suddenly changed, saying softly: “A small team of humans is swiftly approaching, they should have discovered the horned iron rhinos drinking water.” As the Demon Moon River was a lake, there weren’t any things obstructing its view, even from far way, one could still see the beasts around it.

A team of humans appeared within their line of sight.

All of them were wearing the same black battle uniform.

“Kill!”

Black terrifying silhouettes exploded with the fastest of speeds, creating air explosion sounds, directly rushing towards the herd of horned iron rhinos drinking water. The twenty one horned iron rhinos fiercely raised their heads, the leader of the herd immediately let out a strong and angry roar: “Roar!!!”

Everyone of the human team were incredibly calm, joining their hands and surrounding and attacking one horned iron rhino, killing it with the greatest speed.

There were a total of ten members in the team, they swiftly killed four of the horned iron rhinos.

……

“Nine Star level 9 stages, one Star level 2 stage.” Luo Feng looked at his screen, softly saying, this little team, arranged for too many Star level 9 stage warriors. The weaker one…I estimate he is probably the one with status, hence he brought so many underlings with him.” Participating in the Universe Mercenary trainee test, this was extremely normal.

One had to know 99% of the strong had all experienced this.

Several large family heirs regarded this trainee mercenary exam as necessary, but for safety, they sent along a large group of Star level 9 stage warriors, this was very normal. Even though the family insists on training their heirs, over the long periods of times…several rules and methods of teachings warped and resulted in the original intended motive being far from what it was.

“Nine Star level 9 stages, they can definitely deal with the twenty one horned iron rhinos.” Hong said softly.

“Damn, after waiting for so long, they get snatched away by some pampered heir.” Thunder God cursed softly.

It was displeasing.

But against nine Star level 9 stage warriors, with proper preparation and coordination, what could their own little team do? They could only watch stupidly by the side.

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, “Something good is coming.”

“Something good?” Thunder God looked suspiciously at Luo Feng, “What good is there?”

“We might be able to get our horns.” Luo Feng looked anxiously at the distance.

……

“Kill!”

“Kill all of them and collect all the horns, then we’ll leave immediately.” The white skinned youth, wielding a long and narrow battle blade was currently engaged in battle with the smallest built horned iron rhino, this little horned iron rhino’s strength was only about a Star level 1, he could indeed handle it without a problem.

“Yes.” The group of Star level 9 warriors immediately complied.

Fresh blood splattered all over! Raging howls and roars resounded! Beast after beast shook the earth as they fell to the ground! This group of horned iron rhinos strongest was only about a Star level 9, the others were all weaker. Against nine Star level 9 humans, they definitely were disadvantaged, losing more and more of their fellow beasts.

“Rumble…”

The earth shook violently.

“Howl!!!” An enraged roar resounded from the forests.

The earth began to tremble violently, the remaining five horned iron rhinos immediately roared excitedly, from not far off, a huge horned iron rhino’s silhouette appeared.

“Not good, let’s leave quickly!” One of the nine black clothed underlings shouted.

“Lord, over fifty single horned rhinos are rushing over, the leading few are all very powerful, let’s leave.”

“Quickly, protect the ninth prince well.”

“Quickly.”

Immediately, one of the nine black clothed underlings grabbedhugged the ninth prince, stepping on a streamlined huge blade-like flying spirit weapon and escaped swiftly. And the other eight underlings fled swiftly behind seeing the remaining horned iron rhinos madly rushing at them.

“Roar!”

“Roar!”

Large numbers of enormous horned iron rhinos rushed out, every one of them eyes scarlet, seemingly mad with rage. Over fifty horned iron rhinos...obviously these were the mature males from the horned iron rhino herd, each madly stomping through the land of the forests, madly chasing after the group of black clothed men.

Luo Feng’s team of five looked at the majestic group of horned iron rhinos madly chasing after the elite team, leaving behind the bodies of the remaining horned iron rhinos.

“Quickly!” Luo Feng led the way and rushed out.

“Haha, we got it so easily.”

“Which empire is that ninth prince from? A basic level empire or from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire? I think he’s from a family that probably only controls one or two basic level empires. “Thunder God muttered, the group swiftly headed over the bodies

of the falle horned iron rhinos. Even though the group of black clothed men had chopped off ten horns.

There were still six bodies with their horns intact.

“Pu chi!” The Soaring Shuttle became a golden swordfish, immediately chopping off one of the horns from the forehead of a dead rhino.

Hong, Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu too swiftly cut off and obtained their horns.

“Roar!” From the distance, among the group of rhinos chasing down the black clothed men, there was one that turned and stared at Luo Feng’s group, letting out an enraged howl. Immediately, over twenty horned iron rhinos turned and rushed madly towards them, against the same race of humans that had killed so many of their fellow beasts, they were filled with hatred!

“Hurry.” Luo Feng urged.

“Luo Feng, about 12 km away, a team of humans that were originally waiting by the river is approaching you very swiftly, I think they want to kill you all.” Babata warned Luo Feng in his mind.

Chapter 16 – Hundred Tiger Building

Luo Feng swiftly moved all the horned iron rhino's horns into his storage space, and quickly used his spiritual force to say: "Let's leave quickly, there's a little team behind us coming to kill us!"

"What?" Hong and Thunder God were shocked.

They didn't have any time to hesitate, the five immediately flew into the forest beside, leaving behind the huge bodies of the horned iron rhinos. 12km, to a Star level...if it were in the outside world, they could breeze through it within a second. Even within this Sector Lord's world, with their speeds slowed, it still didn't take too much time

Within the forest.

Luo Feng, who was standing on the Soaring Shuttle flipped his hand and a shield along with an alloy battle knife appeared, he was even wearing a normal alloy battle uniform. Alloyed battle uniforms, battle blades, even though they weren't expensive, this was mainly because they didn't have any amplitude abilities! However in terms of material, they were incredibly sturdy and reached up to D grade.

D grade alloys, if it were a universe ship, it would be extremely expensive. However the battle knife, uniform, shield and other such items were very cheap.

"Chi chi..." A blood red helmet grew swiftly on Luo Feng's head.

This was from the cloud contact vine.

……

Hand wielding a six corner shield, alloy battle knife, the metal uniform wrapped around Luo Feng's body reflected the cold, at first glance, it looked almost like a fur clothing. His entire person was fast as lightning, swiftly escaping, anxious and worried within, "Babata, how is the strength level of that team?"

"Seven Star level 9 stages, one Star level 2 and one Star level 3." Babata said.

"Bastards." Luo Feng cursed under his breath.

"Their speed is very fast, they are closing the distance, 2.8km... 2.6km..." Babata continuously updated Luo Feng.

"There are seven Star level 9 warriors behind us." Luo Feng used his spirit reading to inform Hong, Thunder God, Ao Gu and Tie Nan He.

"That's big trouble."

Hong and they others felt the pressure.

At the time, the team chasing to kill them from behind was

constantly closing the distance, the distance slowly became not even 1km.

******

With a face like a blade, skin sparkling and translucent, just like precious stones, one could even see the veins below his skin. His eyes squinted, laughing like an innocent youth, he was dressed in a fur clothed like raw energy battle uniform, carrying on his back a huge battle knife that was almost as big as him. He was currently being pulled by his partner beside, using his spirit weapon to swiftly chase.

“Hmph.” He looked down at his quantum computer on his arm, “Two Star level 9 warriors, along with three Star level 1 and 2 stages ? Hmph! Too weak!”

“600m, 500m, 400m...” He constantly calculated the distance.

He could already see the little team flying ahead of him.

The other eight members, many were wearing goggles, these goggles also had a screen effect, constantly flickering with numbers.

“Surround them!” He gave off an order.

“Yes!”

Seven out of the eight members all complied.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

The group swiftly separated, surrounding Luo Feng's team of five.

……

Luo Feng's team stopped as they looked at the nine that had surrounded them. This was still within the forest of the Long Suo Mountain range, around them were many large trees, on the branches of the trees above there were even some scratch marks from ferocious beasts before, such solid and strong trees were rarely seen in the universe. Because of this, people couldn't help but to compliment this sector lord's work.

"Who's the head?" The youth who led the nine shouted, his gaze however staring at Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, sweeping through the three of them. It was very obvious, participating in the mercenary trainee exams, most would arrange for stronger warriors to protect their more important younger members. The weak ones, are usually the ones giving the orders.

"It's me."

Luo Feng stared at the youth before him, "Who are you all, what do you want?"

“Haha, your question is really stupid, don’t you even know what we want?” The youth laughed, eyes seemingly arrogant and condescending, as though he was looking at a beggar, “Punk, hand over the six horns from the horned iron rhinos and we can spare your lives. If you don’t…”

The youth laughed coldly.

Luo Feng looked at the group surrounding them, the screen on his arm began to display large amounts of numbers.

“Why are we bothering to talk with them, just kill them.” A young lady beside the youth dressed in a black battle uniform said coldly, the youth thought to himself, “This idiot, can’t she see that the enemy also has two Star level 9 stages? Even though we can win, however if we really fight it out and the enemy risks it all, even if we can kill them, we might lose some of our people too! If we can acquire the horns without anyone dying, isn’t that better?”

“My partner is impatient already.” The youth’s gaze swept past Luo Feng’s team, “Better give an answer now.”

Being surrounded.

Luo Feng and his team, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu naturally looked at their master Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder god too naturally exchanged glances with Luo Feng.

“Horned iron rhino’s horn?” Luo Feng flipped his hand, a horn appeared in his hand, looking at the youth before him, “A horn? We’ll give you one.”

“Six of them! Not one less!”

The youth said coldly.

The other eight stared at Luo Feng’s team. They had all seen earlier twenty one horned iron rhinos drinking by the lakeside, of which sixteen died and ten of the horns were taken by the earlier group…hence they were very sure that this yellow skinned black haired man’s team had taken away six horns.

“Black haired punk!” The young lady beside shouted, “We are from Hundred Tiger Building, hurry and hand over the horns, otherwise…hmph!”

Hundred Tiger Building? One of the four big organizations of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire?

Coming from Hundred Tiger Building, it meant that this group were well trained, at least in battle prowess, they were definitely powerful.

“Are you going to hand them over or not?” The youth too seemed impatient now.

“Don’t waste your time speaking anymore.” The lady urged.

Luo Feng and his team who were surrounded in by the group, felt immense pressure, Luo Feng could feel too that this group were losing their patience.

“Ao Gu.” Luo Feng used his spirit reading to speak.

“Master.” The old Ao Gu replied.

“The moment we make a move, follow the plan I told you before we entered this Sector Lord’s world, do you know what to do?”

“Understood.” Ao Gu replied.

Luo Feng surveyed the group from Hundred Tiger Building coldly, gazing past the Star level 9 stages with goggles and finally stopping at the young couple, “The horns, we’ll at most give you one. If you’re still not satisfied...let me warn you, there’ll be no turning back from certain actions.”

“Threatening me?” The youth laughed coldly.

“Hmph.” The young lady turned and exchanged glances with the youth.

The two almost simultaneously retreated.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!...

Except for one Star level 9 protecting the two of them, the other six exploded together. And within that instant of which they exploded, Ao Gu who was standing beside Luo Feng gazed coldly, shua! A blue shard appeared from nowhere, Ao Gu's spirit reading seemed like a hand that grabbed it, grabbing it hard by it's body, revealing a blade!

This blade, seemed to have a hint of a little red.

Yes!

This was the newly camouflaged hybrid copper essence shard that was covered with a layer of alloy, only the sharp tip wasn't covered. This move...was Luo Feng's current ultimate move! Allowing his strongest spirit reader slave Au Go to use the hybrid copper essence shard, with its sharpness and Ao Gu's control, even Universe levels would be hurt!

"Xiu!"

The blue knife blade became a beam of light, flashing towards the oncoming Star level 9 enemies.

"Master, be careful, it's a spirit reader's attack." Ao Gu who had released his spirit energy earlier warned, he was using half of his spirit energy to control the hybrid copper essence and the other half on defense, this was because Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God's soul defense couldn't withstand a soul attack of a Star level 9 spirit reader.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Ao Gu blocked three spirit attacks.

Pu! Pu! Pu!

The blue knife blade easily flew through Star level 9 warriors after another, with it's absurd speed and sharpness, the serious looking and fully confident fighters, spirit readers with goggles all lost their heads, the top of them being sliced off and flying all over. They died one by one with their eyes behind their goggles filled with fear.

"That's not possible!" The not too distant couple watching the battle who were very confident before looked on with shocked expressions and wide eyes.

Star level 9 stage warriors!

They were defeated even without a fight?

They didn't know...just how terrifying the spirit weapon and its level of sharpness was! When the Yun Mo Planet ship sped up, whatever rocks, little stars could be immediately smashed through, even a small star could be easily sliced right through! Against the oncoming rush of the Yun Mo Planet, it's piercing and sharpness was terrifying!

Even Sector Lord warriors, under the speeding Yun Mo planet ship, it's sharpness could easily cut right through them!

"Escape!" The youth gave an order to the underling beside him, a Star level 9 spirit reader.

The underling quickly took the youth and the young lady.

"Leave her, quickly." The youth gave the order.

"Yes."

In terms of position, the young lady was lower than the youth by a little. Also, this bodyguard was clear...the enemy's spirit reader if sped up,he wouldn't be able to escape them carrying two people. Hu! The bodyguard took the youth, stepped on the spirit weapon and swiftly became a beam of light as he escaped.

"Wait for me." The young lady's face revealed defeat, she turned her head, seeing the blue light that had killed the six Star level 9 warriors flying towards her.

The young lady panicked, her eyes filled with venomous hatred: "Chou Yu!!!"

Pu!

Her head exploded open!

……

Within the blink of an eye, six star level 9 warriors including a Hundred Tiger Building elite youth, were all killed! And that Chou Yu youth and his bodyguard had escaped way out of sight.

“Stop chasing.” Luo Feng said.

“Yes, master.”

Ao Gu and Tie Nan He said respectfully.

Luo Feng immediately put the hybrid copper essence back into the storage ring, if he really wanted to chase after those two, he’d have to let Au Go take off by himself and chase! And Ao Gu couldn’t bring anyone along, if he did, he wouldn’t be able to catch up…if that happened, with only Luo Feng and the other three left behind, it was very unsafe within the Long Suo mountain range.

Also, Luo Feng couldn’t possible allow Ao Gu to take the hybrid copper essence shard far way with him to chase and kill the other 2.

“Babata, is it fine for us to let them escape?” Luo Feng asked mentally.

“No problem! They have no clue about your identity or news

about you, even if they knew, you don’t have a fixed residence, even if you return, you return to Earth, what is there to be afraid of?” Babata couldn’t care much about it, “It’s akin to bare feet not being afraid of people who wear shoes, right now, you are bare footed.”

Chapter 17 – Planet Fort

Cang Lan Star, within the Sector Lord's world.

Luo Feng and his group of five were swiftly cleaning up the battle remains. "Haha, truly a young elite from the Hundred Tiger Building, this little lady actually uses an AI quantum computer. I don't have to buy one anymore, I'll just use this!" Thunder God was very satisfied, Luo Feng was using something that exceeded the AI, a living AI, Hong used an AI quantum computer and Thunder God was only using a normal quantum computer.

"There's even a storage ring."

"And spirit weapon."

"These six Star level 9 warriors combined together don't even add up to her treasures." Tie Nan He made a move and swiftly collected every treasure that was valuable.

Among the six Star level 9 warriors, there were three spirit readers and three fighters.

However their standards were close to the Nuolan Shan guards, hence they were only at the bottom of the Hundred Tiger Building, sent just to help protect the two elites this time.

"Ao Gu, this flying spirit weapon will be yours."

“Tie Nan He, you can take whichever genetic weapon you like.”

“This storage ring.” Luo Feng’s gaze swept past Thunder God, Ao Gu, Tie Nan He and Hong, Thunder God suddenly shouted: “Let me look at this storage ring, the one I’m using is the smallest capacity.” Among the group, Luo Feng and Hong already had their own storage rings, Thunder God had to buy his.

He bought the smallest one.

“Haha, it’s really bigger than what I have.” Thunder God was very satisfied.

……

Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu reorganized and prepared, after which the group swiftly left the scene of battle, arriving a thousand miles away below a mountain before stopping.

“The next step, we should go look for the wind corner stone.” Luo Feng looked at the group.

“The wind corner stone can only be found in one place of the Sector Lord’s world, right at the very core of the World of Thunder, the Valley of Wind and Thunder.” Hong looked at the screen on his arm, gently tapping and looking, “From here to Valley of Wind and Thunder, the distance is over 300,000km, even if all goes well along the way, it’d still take about a month to get there.”

300,000km.

Within the Sector Lord's world, one was that the gravity was extremely strong, two, Luo Feng and his group couldn't fly up high, hence they had to rely on Babata's security surveillance. If everything went smoothly, they were able to travel about 10,000km a day. It would still take about a month.

"The horned iron rhino herds can be found living in several places of this world, but they are all far from the core territory."

"No matter where we go to hunt the horned iron rhino, we'd still finally have to head towards the Valley of Wind and Thunder." Thunder God creased his eyebrows, "This Universe Mercenary Alliance arranged this mission obviously to make us explore at least half of the Sector Lord's world."

Within the Sector Lord's world, there were many natural disasters and risks.

Travelling through half of the world...one would definitely encounter many life or death situations, even with the surveillance system, it wasn't much use towards natural disasters.

"This is training, experience, and elimination." Luo Feng shook his head, "The Universe Mercenary Alliance wants to eliminate the group of people who are unfit for them. If they can't even pass through this, they wouldn't have the right at all in the future to roam the dangerous universe."

“Agreed.” Hong nodded, “From where we are right now, heading to the Sector Lord’s world core, the Valley and Wind and Thunder, there are three routes, everybody take a look, which should we take?”

“These three routes…” Thunder God looked at the map on the screen, “Are all pretty dangerous.”

“The first route,” Luo Feng said.

The first route has many ferocious beasts territories, naturally the threats were lesser. Of course…this was only in comparison to the other two routes.

“Alright, the first route.” Hong nodded.

“Then let’s depart!” Thunder God said.

……

Luo Feng and his group began rushing through their longest trek within the Sector Lords world, they didn’t dare to fly in mid air, that would simply attract all the ferocious beasts, suicide.

The Sector Lord’s world was heaven as well as hell.

An unexcavated Sector Lord’s world, for too many explorers and

mercenaries, was a huge treasure heaven! At the same time, it was filled with dangers, the moment one was not careful, one could lose his life. However...there would still be a large number of explorers and universe mercenaries entering. And this World of Thunder was excavated long ago, right now it was specially used as a tool for the trainee mercenary exams.

"Bastard!"

Beside a thorny undergrowth within the Long Suo mountain range, Chou Yu was singlehandedly carrying his huge battle blade, gritting his teeth.

The moment he thought of his female counterpart's venomous voice from before, the scene of the 'beautiful' blue shard piercing and slicing through the Star level 9 warriors, Chou Yu was extremely shocked and enraged. His entire body couldn't help but tremble from the rage. This was his first time entering a Sector Lord's world.

He was known before as a genius, along with other geniuses, he was nurtured and trained by the Hundred Tiger Building, having a solid foundation.

While the nurturing was tedious, it didn't have any dangers to his life.

This time however...

“I almost died, I almost died!!!” Chou Yu’s heart shuddered within, he had had so much hopes and dreams for the future, he had killed many before too, however when he actually faced death itself…he realized just how much he was afraid of death.

“The military instructor said fear isn’t bad, but one has to absolutely remain calm. Fear is a form of energy, an energy able to make the body evolve.”

“Relax, calm down.”

Chou Yu gradually calmed down, looking at the bodyguard beside him, ordering him, “Help me secure my surroundings, I’m entering the Virtual Universe Network.”

“Yes.” The bodyguard respectfully complied.

……

The Hundred Tiger Building had an order towards all the young elites entering the Sector Lord’s world to take part in these exams. They had to send a message to their supervisor everyday via the Virtual Universe Network! If their comrades died, the mail had to explain such matters too.

As long as they sent that mail, it meant that the member was still alive!

……

Within the Virtual Universe Network, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

A fat man with two horns on his head lay on a chair. A screen appeared before him, “Di!” A message appeared on the screen.

“Another message of a report on being alive, open it.” The fat man said slowly.

The mail opened automatically.

The fat man looked through it slowly, however after a while he stood up suddenly, shocked as he stared at the mail, “the eighth team actually only has two people alive? And they’ve lost the second elite?” The fat man quickly sent a message request to the other seven members of the eighth team.

As expected...no one replied.

Usually, the young geniuses are prepped with bodyguards depending on their own level of importance. For example, a team of ten usually has five youths and five bodyguards. And some teams only have one youth and nine bodyguards. This eighth team originally had eight bodyguards and two youths.

They had lost one body guard earlier.

Obviously...the eighth team was an important team. To the Hundred Tiger Building, the loss of level 3 elites would be more painful, the loss of level 2 elites would be even more painful. And the loss of level 1 elites, that was simply devastating! As for the special elites...even the Hundred Tiger Building rarely got one.

Those absolute geniuses were rarely ever acquired.

Within the universe space.

The fat man opened his eyes and looked out through the external simulator, looking at the huge objects in the distant space: “Since we are almost at the headquarters, I’ll personally deliver this report. “That huge object was a planet! Correctly speaking, it was an alloy made object that was made to model a planet, this was the Hundred Tiger Building’s headquarters...

Black Tiger Star.

This Black Tiger Star, was basically a huge planet fort! It’s entire body was black, on it were deep passages and alleys, connecting straight into the planet’s interior. And the surface of it, was a thick and bulky cannon that was capable of blowing up a D grade universe ship in one shot, along with other magnetic orbit cannons, large laser cannons, etc these type of weapons.

The entire planet had several spots where there were occasional flashes of blue light.

Ship after ship covered the land and skies, almost like the countless locusts, occasionally large amounts of them flew through the deep alleys into the planet's interior. Also occasionally large amounts of universe ships would fly out from there. These ships, with a brief look, seemed like the lowest grade was a C grade, even D grade ships, one could even spot an E grade ship once in awhile!

They covered the land and skies, almost like locusts.

And this planet fort was such an enormous object, it seemed like it swallowed these large amount of ships. Over here, this was one of the four huge organizations of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, the headquarters of the Hundred Tiger Building! There were many Sector Lords that had been stationed here for many years. The entire planet used to be a very normal mineral planet and spent heavenly amounts of money and wealth to change it into the fort it was.

A planet fort!

……

"Di."

The fat man sat in the universe ship, following the planet fort's pulling signal, it followed one of the Black Tiger Star's surface many deep alleys and flew in. From space, these alleys seemed small and nothing impressive, however when one flew close to it, he would realize that every alley was more than 100km wide.

The universe ship entered the deep alley.

“Oh, the new installation is ready?” The fat man looked carefully at the two sides of the walls within the alley, the walls seemed to have a few more black alloy frames that were like centipedes, embedded into the walls themselves.

Within a moment.

The universe ship docked at the docking bay, the fat man dressed in a blue robe, followed a spacious pathway that had skies and clouds simulated on both sides, with a glance, this pathway alone had more than a hundred people, everyone seemed to be dressed in blue robes, only two of them were dressed in white robes, and on their chest were 2 star mercenary medals.

“I greet the lord.” Passing by the the white robed men, the fat man bowed.

Everyone within the pathway did the same.

In Hundred Tiger Building...

The blue robe meant Universe level! Along with several important people with status. The fat man was a Star level, but because his position was big, he had the right to wear the blue robe.

The white robe, meant Domain Lord and the lesser upper

echelons.

A black robe meant a Sector Lord.

As for the Undying Beings?

Even though the Hundred Tiger Building had produced Undying before in its history, these Undying beings had long gone to the Ganwu Empire, or to other places. To the Undying Beings...the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, this little pond couldn't hold them!

No matter, the Hundred Tiger Building, Black Cloud Guild, The Northern Dragon City, the Three Axe Mountain, these four large universe organizations were considered enormous powers within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, their roots went deep, and the Universe level warriors under them were plenty! Even the empire emperor wouldn't willingly mess with these groups. Just looking at the Hundred Tiger Building's main headquarters with its countless universe ships, that alone was enough proof of its power.

Chapter 18 – Ten Thousand Blade Soul Seal

Volume 9 Chapter 18: Ten Thousand Blade Soul Seal

Black Dragon Mountain star sector, in the World of Thunder on the famous ‘Cang Lan’ Star.

Thirty six days has passed since Luo Feng first entered the World of Thunder.

Weeds were rampant on the plains, and some of the weeds were even taller than 10 meters. These weeds also became tough after absorbing the energy of the universe, rivaling A grade alloys, which were much harder than the diamonds on Earth. When the wind blew, the grass bowed down, sometimes revealing the resting monsters on the plain.

Five flowing lights flew past the plain.

A huge monster covered in blue scales lay there like a hill. It seemed to notice something and glanced over as he let out a roar, “ROAR~~”, and then lowered its head again.

“We have already left the territory of the ‘blue scaled alligator’. There is a horde of monsters at 11 o’clock, 18.9 km away. We’ll go around them”. The five flowing lights slightly paused. Luo Feng, in his alloyed battle uniform set, spoke through his spiritual force, “Let’s go. We’ll advance 3,000 km more and then rest”.

“Yes, master”.

Tie Nan He and Ao Gu were very respectful.

Whoosh!

The five flowing lights continued to fly forward.....

“With Babata’s warning, I thought this Universe Mercenary Trainee exam would be easy. Who would’ve thought that it would be even more complicated than I originally thought.” Luo Feng looked towards the distance as he flew on his soaring shuttle. The weeds to the side swiftly retracted, “I thought it would only take a month to reach the Valley of Wind and Thunder, but it looks like it’ll take at least 50% longer than planned!”

After almost four hours later.

“Stop!” spoke Luo Feng telepathically.

The five of them stopped at the same time.

Even Hong and Thunder God listen to Luo Feng’s commands in the World of Thunder, because they knew.... Luo Feng had a special sensor that could detect all danger within a certain radius.

“Tie Nan He, Ao Gu, you two take turns being on guard. My brothers and I will rest first.” said Luo Feng.

“Yes, master.”

The two of them replied respectfully.

Luo Feng surveyed his surroundings. It was currently night time and weeds were everywhere, so the naked eye could barely see anything.

“We were lucky today, didn’t encounter much danger” Thunder God let out a smile, “Right now, we can finally let out a breath.”

“I was also afraid something like yesterday would happen again” Hong also let out a sigh of relief.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but to recall the scenes from yesterday. He was still a bit frightened. Yesterday, his squad was moving forward according to their normal path. Originally, his squad had a relaxing time following the path that people used in the past. Suddenly, five monsters were discovered charging at his squad 18 km away. It was clear that they clearly discovered his squad a long time ago.

If there is nothing to obstruct their vision, it is normal for star level fighters to see past a distance of over a hundred km.

It actually isn’t too difficult to escape from those five monsters, since weeds were everywhere.

However.....

Maybe one of those monsters had an extraordinary nose, so they just kept chasing. While they chased, they even roared over and over again, which attracted the attention of the other monsters on the plains. Originally five monsters, over a hundred monsters ended up chasing after his squad.

Finally, with ‘Ao Gu combined with the hybrid copper shard’, and the two liquid silver guards, their squad did everything they could to escape.

“We were lucky yesterday” sighed Luo Feng, “If that ‘Black Ringed Snake’ horde appeared earlier and worked together with those hundreds of monsters to surround us, we probably wouldn’t have been able to escape”.

“Black Ringed Snake horde?” Thunder God glared, “Don’t remind me. Whenever I think of yesterday I get a bit scared. Yesterday was the worst day we had in the World of Thunder.”

“Use your time wisely and train” commanded Hong, “There are very few opportunities to train in the World of Thunder.”

“Okay”

“Alright”

Luo Feng and Thunder God spoke no more and then closed their

eyes to train.

Luo Feng was quite pleased with his days of training in the World of Thunder. Even though some accidents have occurred on their journey and all of them almost ended up getting killed several times! This kind of pressure..... caused them to improve very rapidly in the past 36 days.

Maybe it's because the World of Thunder is packed with the universe energy essence, causing them to train faster.

Or maybe, it's because of the 'evolution catalyst' they received from the virtual universe.

Anyway!

Thirty six days, along with the days of them rushing from Bai Lan star to Dragon Star, and then from Dragon Star to Cang Lan Star, in these two months, Luo Feng was able to step into the 'Star level 2 stage' from the 'Star level 2 stage'. This is simply an improvement of the body itself. The biggest improvement..... is his progress he made with the《Soaring Shuttle》and《Soul Seal》.

Luo Feng's personal virtual space.

On top of a huge mountain that entered the clouds, Luo Feng appeared in a white robe. Beside him was a blood red castle erected on the top of the mountain.

“RUMBLE~~” the castle doors opened.

“Master” the eighteen rock golems respectfully yelled.

“Yea”

Luo Feng directly entered the castle. Under the lead of some beautiful women, he entered the training room. All four sides of the training room were bookshelves, which contained tons and tons of books. These were all the training manuals from the Yun Mo planet sect. Luo Feng directly walked to one of the bookshelves on one side and took out a golden book《Soul Seal Part Two》.

“Crunch, crunch” in his black robe, the blood red eyed demon Babata sat to the side and chewed at a red apple. He took a quick glance at Luo Feng and started chewing away at his apple again like nothing happened. Suddenly, he froze and stopped, and then looked at Luo Feng. He carefully looked at the book Luo Feng was holding.

“LUO FENG?” Babata yelled with surprise.

“Hm, what is it?” Luo Feng looked at Babata with a confused look on his face.

“You, you finished the basics of《Soul Seal》?” said Babata with shock.

In the Yun Mo planet sect,《Soul Seal》is ranked at the top. Ever

since Luo Feng received these training manuals, he learned all of the basics of all the training manuals deemed high priority by Babata. After that, he started learning according to his interests. Luo Feng mainly focused on《Soul Seal》and《Tower of the Void》.

Because, according to the training manuals, the master of Yun Mo planet clearly prided himself on these two training manuals.

The master of Yun Mo planet once said in the training manual of《Soul Seal》: “The Soul Seal method is the most important technique in our Yun Mo planet sect, and is also the biggest reason for my, Hu Yan Bo’s, rise to power.”

And the master of Yun Mo planet also said in《Tower of the Void》: “Young disciple, you mustn’t relax on your training of the Tower of the Void. If I was able to finish the ‘Seven Floors Tower’ of the Tower of the Void back then, I wouldn’t have ended up dying! When venturing into the universe, defensive techniques are extremely important!”

And so, Luo Feng always practiced these two techniques seriously.

Training a technique takes a large amount of time, energy, and talent! However, Luo Feng hasn’t had these training manuals for long. Even though his strength improved quite rapidly, the main factor for that is mainly due to the Golden Horned Beast’s body.

Otherwise, according to Babata’s plan, it would take him 50 years to reach the Star level! Mainly because he needs to build up a solid

foundation..... and so, after spending so much time, Luo Feng finally met the most basic requirements of《Soul Seal》. And《Tower of the Void》still remains at the most basic level of the first stage.

"What, Babata, is that weird?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"You met all of the various requirements in《Soul Seal Part One》?" followed Babata.

"I have" said Luo Feng.

"Oh? Hehe, the soul nurtured by the Golden Horned Beast is powerful after all" Babata couldn't help but to compliment, "I thought it would've taken another few years."

"Oh yeah, Luo Feng, from now on, you can practice the 'Ten Thousand Blades Soul Seal' in《Soul Seal Part Two》. This is the most basic 'soul seal'. Once you completely learn the 'Ten Thousand Blades Soul Seal', you'll have the qualifications to form your 'Slave Seal' explained Babata.

Luo Feng started to get a bit excited after listening.

To truly control someone based off of the soul seal technique is very difficult. There are various requirements that must be met on the《Soul Seal》technique. At least, the current Luo Feng couldn't do it.

“First learn the Ten Thousand Blades Soul Seal?” Luo Feng flipped through the book.

“Babata, there are so many different techniques in here, so why learn this one?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but to ask.

“Stupid!”

“Focusing on one thing always yields better results” scolded Babata, “Aren’t you mainly focusing on the Soaring Shuttle? Then the soul seal technique you practice has to be able to affect the enemy. This ‘Ten Thousand Blades Soul Seal’, transforms the soul seal into a blade and directly attacks the soul! It can make the enemy feel like their head is about to split apart. A single moment of delay in battle is enough for your soaring shuttle to rip him to shreds.”

“Okay” nodded Luo Feng.

“Begin then. Training the Ten Thousand Blades Soul Seal is not easy. After you finish your training, with your progress on the soul seal, you’ll be able to form your ‘Slave Seal’. When that happens, you can directly enslave other people and make them become your slave for eternity. Just like how your teacher had nine Undying slaves” Babata cast out the bait.

The slave seal!

How exciting! Luo Feng was looking forward to this technique.

Even if it was only for this ‘Slave Seal’, he had to seriously practice the ‘Ten Thousand Blades Soul Seal’.

.....

While Luo Feng’s consciousness was in the virtual space reading the《Soul Seal》training manual and training the first offensive soul seal technique—— the Ten Thousand Blades Soul Seal, his other body—— the Golden Horned Beast, completely delved into its training of《Absolute Realm》.

Inner world.

On the golden continent, the Golden Horned Beast that was as large as a mountain range continued to cast the《Absolute Realm》technique.

“Hm?”

There was a sliver of dissatisfaction in those dark golden eyes, “After so long, I can’t even finish the first stage of《Absolute Realm》, what’s going on?”. In the World of Thunder, the pressure seemed to raise Luo Feng’s comprehension skills quite a bit. He also made a bit of progress on《Absolute Realm》. However, he was still very far away from completing the first stage of《Absolute Realm》.

“WU——”

The Golden Horned Beast let out a roar of anger. As of now, its current body length exceeded 900 meters.

Indeed, after consuming the alloy combinations that lead to 89 times efficiency for over three months, it's as if the Golden Horned Beast has normally evolved for 22 years. It already entered the Star level 9 stage from the Star level 7 stage! A Golden Horned Beast at the Star level 9 stage..... only one step away until the Universe level! And this single step, is the hardest step in the entire Star level transformation!

Chapter 19 – Valley of Wind and Thunder

Immersed in training, time flew by quickly.

“Luo Feng, it’s already daybreak. Hong and Thunder God have stopped their training.” Within the quiet training room, lying in a chair sleeping, Babata said with his eyes closed.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng closed the book within his hands, closing his eyes, recollecting the images within his mind regarding the Ten Thousand Blade Soul Seal secret technique’s training process, unleashing process along with its theories and explanations, etc. After which, Luo Feng smiled as he opened his eyes, he at least had a grasp on the logic behind the ‘Ten Thousand Blade Soul Seal’ technique.

From tomorrow, he would begin training it properly! The moment he finished, this Ten Thousand Blade Soul Seal would become Luo Feng’s number one soul attacking technique.

“Babata, I’m leaving.” Luo Feng placed the book back on the shelf.

“Countdown reminder, the amount of time before the Nuolan Shan family’s troops arrive on Earth is another 2 years 4 months and 29 days.” Babata shouted.

“2 years 4 months and 29 days...” Luo Feng repeated the words softly, his eyes gleaming coldly. The Nuolan Shan family troops that would arrive on Earth after 2 years, while he couldn’t have any hopes or wishes for the others to be able to help within the short 2 years, he’d have to fend them off himself!

“A little more than 2 years.”

“What do we do?”

“If the Nuolan Shan family fleet sends a Universe level 6 or 7 warrior, how will I deal with it?” Luo Feng was troubled, his Golden Horned Beast’s body was definitely able to break into the Universe level in a few months! However, the moment it breaks into the Universe level, the evolution time required would be greatly increased, and if he wanted to use the proper metal groupings, those prices were much much more than those used during the Star level, the amount of money he had wasn’t sufficient.

Milky Way, Dark Space.

A D3 grade streamlined ship shaped like an axe was swiftly flying through space.

“Bai Kalo, you’ve broken through?” Within the control room, with pointy ears, the Nuolan Shan’s second head De Wen Nuolan Shan turned to look at the approaching person.

“Yes.” Covered in a black robe, Bai Kalo nodded his head.

De Wen felt dissatisfied within.

He, as the family’s second head, naturally bowed before the head ancestor much earlier. And this Bai Kalo was even his junior! However...his awareness level was extremely high, he was the most exceptional amongst the heirs of the Nuolan Shan family, right now De Wen was at Universe level 6 while Bai Kalo was at Universe level 8! This Bai Kalo naturally had an air of arrogance around him!

Universe level 8, in terms of awareness, battle experience, Bai Kalo far exceeded the previous head De Wen.

“Bai Kalo, what warriors did you mention were on Earth? Since even our elite team hasn’t responded at all, and are all probably dead, this enemy must not be weak at all.” De Wen looked at the beautiful scenery of space ahead of him, asking his junior beside him, Bai Kalo’s eyes looked outside, “The automaton ship has been there for so long without anyone taking it. Even with a strong person there, he can’t be that strong.”

De Wen’s eyes gleamed, smiling, “Junior has a point.”

“Senior, how long before we arrive on earth?” Bai Kalo said coldly.

“About another 2 years, 4 months and 26 days.” De Wen said.

“Oh, then I’ll first enter the virtual universe.” Bai Kalo said, turning and leaving the control room.

De Wen looked at the back of Bai Kalo, cursing within his heart, “This bastard, he probably only left his cabin just to come and ask about how much longer we needed to travel. Before, while we travelled through the wormhole, he didn’t even show. Now that he knows how much longer we need, he’ll probably not ever show himself again until we arrive at Earth.”

Bai Kalo was an exceptional loner amongst the Nuolan Shan family heirs.

If Luo Feng were to know that this time the Nuolan Shan family had sent two powerful Universe level warriors, one Universe level 6 stage and the other 8 stage, the pressure he would feel would be greatly increased.

……

It had been fifty one days since they entered the World of Thunder.

“No problem, let’s continue advancing.” Thunder God sat on the ground and shouted, at this time, Thunder God’s waist was covered in fresh blood, completely drenching his robe and visible from the outside.

“Don’t show off, afterall we are pretty close to the Valley of Wind and Thunder, another 8000 or so kilometers, we can reach in a day.” Luo Feng said softly, “Your injuries are heavy, even if you use the Mu Ya crystal, it’d take a few hours to recover.”

“Right, second brother, even if we leave tomorrow, it’d wouldn’t be late.” Hong looked at Thunder God.

Thunder God gritted his teeth, cursing softly, “Damn, that scum bird!”

Luo Feng felt helpless with the situation. Since the trek from the Long Suo mountain range heading to Valley of Wind and Thunder, they had travelled a good half of the World of Thunder. Before, in Long Suo mountain range they relied on Babata’s surveillance devices, hence they never really met with dangers, thus the group had been really positive till now, who would have thought...

That when the group truly began their trek across half of the World of Thunder, only then did they truly find out, as an elimination exam world, it wasn’t as easy as they thought.

A scanning diameter of 20,000 meters?

It was useful within the mountain range and forests, as there were an abundance of trees and growth within the forest, a distance of 20,000m was still very safe.

However of a flat land area, grass land area, swamp area, reef

mountainous region etc, a few ferocious beasts could see over a 100 miles and spot them immediately! With the ferocious beasts' speed, even if the gravitational pull of the World of Thunder was huge, it'd still only require them only one or two seconds to travel over the 20 km distance.

A 20km surveillance area, with the time needed for Luo Feng to react and inform the others, it gave his group less than a second to escape.

Hence meeting dangers was extremely common!

And just before...

An eagle like golden bird flying high in the skies had surveyed the group below it from far away, hence it rushed over to kill them. This golden bird's speed was extremely quick, and also very powerful. Much stronger than average Star level 9 fighters, Tie Nan He was captured and flown away on the spot!

It's powerful claws wreaked havoc, Luo Feng and Hong were both wearing alloy battle armors, however their internal layer was covered with the cloud contact vine, hence they were unharmed. Thunder God however felt the brunt of it.

Luckily he only received scratches from claw attacks from a distance, had it been a physical contact itself, he would have lost his life.

And that golden bird, after suffering a soul attack from Ao Gu knew it would be hard to win, hence it turned and fled into the skies.

“Everybody needs to be on alert.”

“The ferocious beasts’ speeds are extremely fast, by the time I discover them and inform everybody…we’ll have very little time to escape and dodge.” Luo Feng said softly, “We are only about 8000 km away from the Valley of Wind and Thunder, a day’s trek at most, let’s not get careless on the last day.”

“We’ve had such a perilous journey, those teams without the surveillance system, coming here, must definitely go through complete life and death situations.” Thunder God couldn’t help but say.

“The amount of danger we’ve encountered isn’t little too.” Hong said.

Another night of quiet training.

Tonight, Luo Feng was training within the slaughter space of the Killing Fields, these ten days of training, he was partially training the Soaring Shuttle while working on his Ten Thousand Blades Soul Seal, this move’s first layer was finally completed, its targets and requirements were simple…to be able to produce a soul seal blade.

“Soul attack, relied on using spirit reading theory to arrange and form the most effective path of attack.”

“Back then, the spirit readers of Earth’s awareness level and soul attacks were extremely weak, even the same stage and level fighters, couldn’t be killed with a soul attack.”

“This soul seal blade’s construct is obviously astonishing and meticulous, much more orderly.” Luo Feng was extremely happy, with the soul seal blade, his power had doubled! Even a higher level fighter, if attacked by a soul seal blade, if he survived, he’d mostly blank out for a moment mentally.

And the Soaring Shuttle could take the opportunity to kill this enemy!

One mental and one real!

This was the true power of a spirit reader! If it were purely mental (relying of the soul attacks, illusions etc), or pure force (relying on the spirit weapons), these ways weren’t the true power of a spirit reader. It was a pity...whether it was spirit weapon control techniques or soul attack techniques, these were all not to be divulged!

Every secret technique was extremely valuable.

And the higher level the techniques, the harder it was to be even bought! The <Soul Seal> which the Yun Mo Planet Master was

most proud of was a special technique that an Undying Being wouldn't even trade for an entire star field.

This was also why the heirs and disciples with background and teachers train so quickly and breakthrough so easily!

……

Five beams of light stopped, it was these five.

This little group gazed at the distant mountains, those mountains seemed to be covered in snow, accurately speaking, that wasn't snow, but large amounts of rocks and stones madly flying about! Also above the mountain in the skies were cumulus clouds, lightning snakes flying all about, seemingly as though lightning could strike at any time.

"Big brother, third brother, according to the map coordinates, ahead is Valley of Wind and Thunder." Thunder God held his breath.

"The thunder clouds have hovered above for long periods of times, this World of Thunder, besides the Valley of Wind and Thunder, there's no other place like this." Hong too squinted his eyes.

Luo Feng held his breath and watched.

The Valley of Wind and Thunder was the core of the World of

Thunder, it's center point, and also it's most dangerous place! And one of the required items to pass the Universe Mercenary Trainee exam was here...the wind corner stone, one had to acquire it here at the Valley of Wind and Thunder.

"Let's go." Luo Feng said softly.

The five didn't fly anymore, walking towards the Valley of Wind and Thunder...oddly enough, there wasn't a single ferocious beast around, most probably it was because they knew of the Valley's dangers. There weren't any plants on the valley, just bare stone, these stones were dark and black, occasionally with hints of silver.

"The wind's really strong." Luo Feng felt that his walk alone wasn't stable.

"Just how strong is this wind?" Thunder God and Hong couldn't help but exclaim as well.

The level 12 typhoon on Earth, to a Star level, couldn't and didn't have any impact on them at all. However at this moment, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God couldn't even walk properly, this was on an unbelievable level altogether.

"According to the books, the wind from the Valley of Wind and Thunder, gets stronger as we head more to the center and deeper within. The wind at the most center region is like knives! It carries with it strong amounts of universe energy, even Universe level warriors flying into the center would be madly torn and shredded apart, no questions about it."

“The mad wind covers the most dangerous region within, however that’s the place with the most wind corner stones.”

“Of course there are still many wind corner stones dancing about in the wind.”

“The entire Valley of Wind and Thunder’s most dangerous thing is the thunder and lightning. The moment lightning strikes, even a weaker Domain Lord will die immediately. Universe levels have no chance of survival, much less us Star levels. Everybody think, how are we going to go acquire those wind corner stones.” Luo Feng looked at the four beside him, at that time a voice resounded in his mind: “Luo Feng, around the 20km area of your team, there are a total of 1092 humans.”

Chapter 20 – Black Hole

“So many?” Luo Feng was shocked, looking at his surroundings, he could barely make out the silhouettes of two to three teams.

“A large number of teams are close to the Valley, they are all hidden, hence if we don’t look carefully, it’ll be hard to actually spot them.” Babata’s voice resounded.

“Understood.” Luo Feng said

……

The mountain range was bare, the stones on it were mostly all black, mixed with the occasional silver. Luo Feng’s team carefully progressed, the center region of this mountain seemed as though it was struck by a heavenly battle knife, splitting it completely open, creating the Valley.

This enormous valley that seemed to have been split in two by a blade, is the Valley of Wind and Thunder.

With universe energy as it’s core and source and the winds blowing violently about, mixed with large amounts of stones, amongst them were wind corner stones, dancing in the wind. And within the valley at the two sides of the mountain, groups from families from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, various powers and youths from different planets.

They were the younger generation, youths who hadn't yet become true Universe warriors. This time, was their first step and exam into becoming strong!

"Luo Feng, this is the map, on it the location I've marked out is an extremely good spot. It'd be best for your team to hide out there." Babata communicated mentally.

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at the screen on his arm.

"Follow me." Luo Feng said softly.

Hong, Thunder God and the other two quietly followed, the closer they got to the valley, the more violent the winds got. Luo Feng came to a particular huge stone and fiercely moved it away, revealing a cave, communicating mentally, "Everyone get in, there's a cave within connecting directly to the valley mountain."

"You can even find such a place?" Thunder God couldn't help but compliment.

"Go in." Hong led the way in.

In this World of Thunder, the spirit readers' area of scanning was very small, that was their ability in the air, and for their spirit reading to pass through the universe energy infused stones, Star levels and below weren't able to do so. Without spirit reading to scan, these sort of places were extremely hard to find.

And for someone to actually dig himself? With the mountain rubble that had been strongly ground and moulded for long periods of time by the mad winds, it would take at least one to two days of work to dig through.

“Good thing we have Babata.” Luo Feng jumped into the cave, covering it with the boulder.

This cave was within the mountain.

Following the cave, it led directly to one of the Valley of Wind and Thunder’s mountain walls, on it was a hole that was about 30cm wide.

“What’s this?” Thunder God’s eyes lit up.

“Hm?” Hong picked up a smooth little stone that was close to the hole’s entrance, it was mostly black, but its membrane seemed to emit a peculiar blue color, the normal stones here were all black, or black stones mixed with a little silver. Only the wind corner stones’ surfaces had that layer of blue shine, from what they heard, these wind corner stones had endured the lightning strikes and not get vaporized, absorbing some on the lightning’s power and forming the peculiar stones.

“Wind corner stone, it’s a wind corner stone.” Thunder God said.

“I’d never expect to be able to just pick up one wind corner stone.” Luo Feng laughed as he walked towards the hole’s

entrance, outside, the wind outside howled bloody murder, and as the cave was completely sealed up, the wind inside was very small. Luo Feng turned over to the other four, “The wind outside is terrifying, it’d be hard to obtain another one like that.”

The only reason why there was one within the cave, was probably because it coincidentally flew into the hole because of the wind.

However these sort of things were purely based on luck, otherwise there wouldn’t even be one.

“Second and third brother, according to the book, we have three options right now.” Hong said softly, “The first is to go to the peak of the canyon and risk our lives to pick up the wind corner stones. As the winds get stronger the deeper we get, the more we get to the center the stronger it’ll be. Hence, the wind above at the peak is much lesser, at least Star level 7 and 8 stages can withstand it. The only danger is...as it is the highest point, it’ll be easy to attract lightning! Those cumulonimbus clouds above could easily strike down, no chance of survival at all.”

“The second method is to get close to the valley and rely either on spirit reading or raw energy, collecting stones from the winds as they blow past and bring them in! This is much harder than just picking them, but the dangers are also much lower. It requires patience.”

“The third method, is to kill and obtain from the other teams, stealing from them!”

“Everybody decide, which method should we use?” Hong looked at Thunder God and Luo Feng.

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows and pondered.

Heading towards the peak to retrieve the wind corner stones would definitely be the fastest, if there wasn’t any lightning, it would be as simple as picking stones. However…according to the experiences of the earlier generations, when retrieving the stones at the peak, with all the metal on one’s body, the more metal there was, the more likely it’d attract lightning.

If one arranged for a metal robot to go, it would 100% get struck down!

And humans wearing their normal clothes, the possibility of being struck was about one out of two. If he wore alloy battle uniforms, the probability rose to two out of three. These were all experiences from the generations of elders who had been in the World of Thunder before.

“The first method is very dangerous, and it’s purely on luck, it’s not beneficial for us.”

“The third method, robbing and killing other teams?” Luo Feng shook his head, “Right now the position of the cave we have is extremely good, the cave’s hole is also on the mountain itself, we’ll use the second method for now. At the same time, we’ll see how the other teams obtain the wind corner stones and discuss again

then.”

“That’s good too.” Hong nodded.

Thunder God agreed, hence Luo Feng and his group began their waiting game.

To catch the flying wind corner stones through the hole of the cave, one, it required luck, two it required strength! As the howling winds made it impossible to see clearly, with large amounts of rubble flying about, only occasionally would there be one or two wind corner stones flying by, hence it required luck. And one had to grab them when it flew past the hole!

Grabbing them in a blink of an eye! If you missed it, then you have to wait for a long time again for the next one.

There was no way around it...with the mad winds infused with universe energy, one’s spiritual force, the moment it was materialized and extended, it would immediately be destroyed and dispersed.

The spiritual force hand that Luo Feng conjured could only be maintained at about a distance of 20 cm outside the cave before dispersing. And the Star level 9 Ao Gu’s spirit hand could only be extended to about 1m without dispersing. More than 1 m and Ao Gu couldn’t maintain its stability.

Ironically...

The thing that made Luo Feng the most pleasantly surprised was the currently Star level 4 cloud contact vine, after shrinking, could form a vine that was extremely sturdy, and swiftly extend about 2 meters into the mad wind and grab back, even though the vines would be damaged, its regeneration speed could maintain it's lightning fast extension and retraction at 2m!

This was indeed a pleasant surprise for Luo Feng!

This universe energy infused howling winds probably had a destructive effect on spirit reading and these forms of energy existences, however it had lesser damage on plant like things like the cloud contact vine.

.....

Within the Valley of Wind and Thunder, most of the teams used this waiting method to try and catch the wind corner stones, while some others forced their slave bodyguards to head to the peak to risk their lives to acquire the wind cornerstones. However this was rarely seen as the slave bodyguards were after all battle strength, losing one or two of them had a big impact on the team overall.

On the third day of being in wind thunder canyon, Luo Feng's group acquired their second wind corner stone.

On the fifth day, they acquired their third wind corner stone.

On the ninth day, they acquired their fourth stone.

……

This was also mainly because their position was good, normal teams would usually require at least about one and a half years to travel across half of the World of Thunder, and another one and a half years to acquire the wind corner stones. Hence using a few years to complete the mission was very normal. Luo Feng's group was operating on extremely high efficiency.

On the thirty second day of being at the Valley of Wind and Thunder.

"This cave's position is really good, if this keeps up, in another month, we definitely would have collected enough wind corner stones." Thunder God laughed.

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu sat crossed legged.

A particular vine had extended from Luo Feng's hand and was stationed at the hole, ready to swipe at any time.

In front of the five on one of the cave's walls was a screen, that was something Luo Feng had ordered his living AI Babata to make, on the screen were four different scenes, surveying the images and scenes within their 20km area.

“Even though we are in a cave, we can still see the teams within a 20km area clearly.” Luo Feng laughed.

“It’s so comfortable.” Thunder God praised.

“Look, there’s another two teams fighting over there, their evasive skills are really quick, this spirit reader is not bad too. Thunder God’s eyes gleamed, evaluating the two teams that suddenly appeared on the screen, however his expression ashen, saying, “It’s Heruo!”

“Heruo?”

Luo Feng’s expression changed.

Back then he and his two brothers met a few good friends within the Killing Fields of the Virtual Universe Network, one of them was Heruo and Buleimu. Back then, the two had said they were going to join the Universe Mercenary trainee exams. The entirety of the Black Dragon Mountain star field participants would all gather here, hence the fact that Heruo was here was extremely normal.

“Let’s go.” Hong was the first to rush out, Ao Gu and Tie Nan He looked at Luo Feng.

“Quickly.”

Luo Feng didn’t hesitate too, immediately the five swiftly

followed the cave's other route and rushed out, using spirit energy to move the inconspicuous stone, the five left and placed it back.

In the distance.

The team Heruo was in was under pressure and attack from another team. Heruo's team only had two Star level 9 stages, and the enemies' team had five Star level 9 stages, however both teams were injured, obviously they battled fiercely.

"Hm?"

The two teams swiftly noticed another team rushing over in the distance.

"Heruo!" A spirit reading messaged resounded in his ears.

Heruo turned to look, the five lightning fast silhouettes rushing over were Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, his three good friends, he immediately revealed an expression of glee, and the two rushing ahead of them Tie Nan He and Ao Gu, especially Ao Gu who had long released his spirit weapon, becoming a beam of golden light.

"Two Star level 9 stage warriors?" The enemy's team looked, their quantum computers long detecting their opponents' strengths.

"Retreat!"

“Quickly retreat!”

The team leader ordered without any hesitation, the team quickly retreated.

Even though they were five Star level 9 stages, there were three with serious injuries…one had to know, even within the Star level 9 stage, there were strong ones and weak ones. The strong ones were able to fight up to ten of the same level. Heruo’s only had one pretty strong Star level 9 within his team, this was also the only reason why even though they were at a disadvantage, they could hold out for so long. And the two of them charging forward…that meant that they had confidence!

With the two teams joining together, the enemy team concluded they weren’t a match.

Even if they could fight back, with both teams incurring huge losses, that was something they didn’t want, hence they just retreated!

……

Luo Feng’s team and Heruo’s team united.

“Thanks.”

“You all are?” Immediately a bald youth with green marks on his both sides of his face walked over to say his thanks.

“They are my friends.” Heruo said, walking forward at the same time.

“Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God.” Heruo said.

“What happened, how did you end up like that?” Luo Feng and the other two looked at Heruo, Thunder God said, “Heruo, aren’t you from the Northern Dragon organization? How did you end up like this?” Thunder God and Hong had realized the importance of universe language after their first time in the Virtual Universe Network, hence they studied and learned it.

With their brain aptitude, learning was indeed very fast, while it wasn’t completely fluent yet, communicating wasn’t a problem.

“Talking about it, it’s really tragic.” Heruo shook his head, “Our team originally had five elites and five bodyguards. During the time we went to acquire the horns from the horned iron rhinos, we were surrounded by ferocious beasts and lost one bodyguard.”

“After that, along the way to the Valley of Wind and Thunder, we were even attacked six consecutive times by other teams, and in that process, we lost another two bodyguards and three elite comrades.” Heruo’s expression was pained, “Right now, our team only has two elites and two bodyguards left.”

Luo Feng felt a chill as he heard the story.

My god!

Even though his own team had experienced about ten life threatening situations, they were mostly dangers from ferocious beasts, as for robbing? With Ao Gu's power combined with the hybrid copper essence shard, it was a clean sweep! Along with Babata's surveillance system, Luo Feng and his group had had an arduous journey along with injuries, but they hadn't lost anyone.

However Heruo's team actually lost more than half of their members!

"What about Buleimu?" Thunder god asked, "Is he in another team?"

"He's dead." He Ruo shook his head.

Luo Feng was shocked, that build and sturdy youth who looked like a black bear, he was dead? Luo Feng still vividly remembered the scene back when he, Hong and Thunder God wished the two of them a safe return. He never thought that within the blink of an eye...Buleimu was dead.

How did it end up like this?

"There's no point being depressed about it." Heruo shook his head and smiled bitterly, "The many brothers and sisters I've lived

with for many years, I've already lost many of them. This is our so called elite's first exams, only through experiencing life and death struggles time and again will we finally be able to break through and become Universe levels, only those have the right to be called strong, and become an important member of the organization."

"Filtering!"

Beside, the bald green marked youth shook his head, "This is filtering, large numbers of the so called geniuses and elites, are eliminated through these life and death missions, dying! And only through these trials are some Universe levels are produced! Our training camp has tens of thousands of elites, the ones who manage to become Universe levels, if there are ten of them, that's not bad already."

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances.

Cruel...

Very cruel!

These were the rules of the universe organizations, collecting large numbers of geniuses and elites, giving the best education along with large amounts of conditions, before giving them the most cruel forms of elimination, finally producing a few strong warriors! One could say...joining the Universe Mercenary trainee exams couldn't even be deemed a strong warrior.

This was all to prepare the strong warriors, going through with a ratio of a 1000:1, no, that was the probability of the elites of the large organizations. Accurately speaking, it was tens of millions to one, they may be able to produce a Universe level.

“Rumble…”

The entire World of Thunder suddenly fiercely vibrated, without any warning, it quaked!

All the teams were shocked.

“What’s going on?”

“This world is about to collapse?”

“My god!”

The entire World of Thunder, with its 1000 km area, with tens of thousands of people taking part in the exams, the Star level explorers, all of them looked up and around terrified, looking at the world. And Luo Feng’s team and Heruo’s team naturally too were shocked as they looked up and surveyed their surroundings, the entire world was trembling, even the mountains were shaking.

“What’s going on?” Luo Feng looked around.

“Over there!!!” Somebody shouted out.

About ten thousand Star level warriors, as long as they were in the mountain range, they all saw simultaneously the not so distant mountain tear open, with black holes that seemed to have been rips in space and time appearing. Half of these holes were on the mountain range while the other half were within it. The space around it was getting ripped apart, it was extremely terrifying and peculiar.

Chapter 21 – Violent Storm

“Look, what’s up with that?” Thunder God’s eyes stared wide, pointing at the distant black holes.

“Black holes that can tear up the World of Thunder?” Beside them, Heruo from the North Dragon City team said, creasing his eyebrows. At the same time, Luo Feng was pondering and staring at the black holes, these black holes were far from the normal caves, they ripped apart time and space, peculiar existences: “Babata, just what are these black holes?”

“They should be…a world’s entrance! Right, a world’s entrance!” Babata said excitedly.

“A world’s entrance?”

Luo Feng held his alloy battle knife, feeling suspicious.

At that time, tens of thousands of explorers on the mountain range looked at the black holes, suddenly a voice resounded, “A world within a world! This could very well be the entrance to the world within this world!”

“Right, a world within a world!”

“It’s exactly a world within a world!”

“Quickly!”

Large numbers of Star level youths, coming from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire families, powers, or even some youths from other planets with peculiar appearances all burned up with raging enthusiasm, all becoming beams of lights, over ten thousand beams of lights swiftly flying straight towards the distant black holes.

“It’s a world within a world.” Heruo too was extremely excited.

“World within a world?”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were curious, at this time information popped out before them. Those explorers coming from families and different planets had understanding about several explorer stories and matters. However Luo Feng and his brothers hadn’t interacted with the virtual universe for too long, they didn’t really know much yet.

“Quickly rush, don’t let them go steal it first.” Heruo shouted, his team swiftly rushed towards the black holes.

Even though Luo Feng felt suspicious, his group still followed the large groups of teams and armies towards the black holes.

“Luo Feng, don’t be anxious.” Babata’s voice resounded, “You can wait a few minutes and it’ll be fine!”

“Babata, what’s a world within a world?” Luo Feng asked.

“A Sector Lord is able to create a world, this you know! And within this world itself, creating another concealed world. This second world, is known as a world within a world.” Babata explained, “However, to be able to build a world within a world, one first has to make sure that second world is stable enough, and that requires a huge amount of universe crystals as its foundation.”

Luo Feng understood.

World of Thunder, this was hidden within a villa on Cang Lan Star.

And this world within a world was hidden within a secret place within the World of Thunder.

“The cost of building a world within a world is extremely huge. Hence, it’s mostly used to store and hide treasures, only because of that will one not mind the costs and build it.” Babata said.

……

The black holes that appeared on the mountain range around the Valley of Wind and Thunder attracted the gathering of a large number of explorers.

Of which there was a group all dressed in black uniform, nine Star level 9 stages and one Star level 2, it was the initial group that

had attacked and killed the horned iron rhinos, the ninth prince team.

"Lord." A bodyguard said respectfully.

"Interesting, very interesting."

The pale skinned youth held a battle knife, looking at the black holes, smiling, "A world within a world? The cost of building a world itself is already huge enough! To build another world within the first one. The difficulty is more than ten times harder! Sector Lord...to actually bear to pay such a huge price to build a world within a world, there must be some real treasures hidden within."

"This World of Thunder was long excavated by others. And later it even became the Universe Mercenary's exam place! After so long, with countless people passing in and out, no one had discovered this world within a world."

"It was actually unintentionally opened by that team."

The youth revealed a smile, "Luck! This is pure luck!"

"The lord's luck has always been good." The black uniform bodyguard said respectfully.

"No, this world within a world is a fat piece of meat that's too big!" The youth shook his head, "Something that made the Sector Lord not care about the costs and build a new world to actually

hide it, it definitely must be treasures that would even make other Sector Lords crazy for! The news of this world within world will swiftly spread to the four organizations, the strongest from our empire, the Domain Lords and even the Sector Lords will rush over!”

“Hence, these group of Star level explorers won’t be able to get any real treasures.” The youth said condescendingly.

“If you, the lord were to get a treasure, the strong still wouldn’t dare snatch it from you.” The black uniform bodyguard said.

The youth smiled.

“Hmm, the team closest to the entrance had sent their robot in through the entrance and it’s returned! The entrance to the world within a world is safe. Let’s go, we’ll enter.” The youth ordered, the nine bodyguards complied.

……

“Quickly!”

“The entrance to the world within the world is safe, we can enter.”

“Hundred Tiger Building brothers hurry and enter.”

The Star level explorers were all mad with the rush, and Luo Feng's group along with Heruo's group swiftly passed through the black hole with others.

"This is the world within a world?" Luo Feng looked around, the world within was currently dark night, in its darkness little threads of light floated down, making one unable to see far with the naked eye.

"Brother Luo Feng, please wait, I have to report the news to my organization." Heruo said.

"Report to the organization?"

Luo Feng looked at Heruo, Hong and Thunder God too were shocked.

"Encountering such a big matter, if I dared to not report it, after the incident, I'll definitely suffer for it." Heruo shook his head, beside him, his other partner had already closed his eyes and his consciousness was connected to the virtual universe. After which Heruo closed his eyes. As for the two bodyguards, they stood beside them and guarded.

Luo Feng sighed quietly, these heirs and disciples under the organizations, the organizations influence on them was too absurd.

Looks like, the four organizations within the Black Dragon

Mountain Empire will come to know of the news very quickly.

……

The Black Dragon Mountain star field, contained over 8000 galaxies, the number of life planets ranged in the trillions. The four organizations' connections and roots spread over many galaxies, and of which in terms of position, power, the Black Cloud Guild, the North Dragon City, the Hundred Tiger Building and the Three Axe Mountain, the undisputed strongest would be the Three Axe Mountain!

The Three Axe Mountain was different from the other three organizations.

The other three organizations trained their elites etc, but the Three Axe Mountain didn't even accept Star levels, the lowest requirement to join them was to be a Universe level. In terms of position, the Three Axe Mountain...their Universe levels are soldiers, their Domain Lords are commanders and their Sector Lords are generals.

According to hearsay...

The three founders of the Three Axe Mountain have the highest ranks, generals. These three founders, two have become Undying while another reached the pinnacle of Sector Lords tens of thousands of years ago, deemed invincible amongst the Sector Lords. After this there was no news of him, no one knew if he became an Undying or died.

“You are talking about the World of Thunder on Cang Lan Star?” A man dressed in a dark red battle uniform, donning a peculiar black cape, said to an old man with a white cape and silver hair.

“Yes, general!” The old man said respectfully.

“You can go.” The general ordered.

“Yes sir.” The old man’s silhouette disappeared in a flash.

The man dressed in a dark red battle uniform curled his lips slightly, his eyes flashing with a electricity, his fingers gently motioning, the surrounding space began to ripple, even creating a slight tear in the space, the general ordered: “The World of Thunder, was something Kabu created back then. No wonder no one has been able to find the treasures he hid. He actually created a world within a world! The Universe Mercenary Alliance is also very interesting, they long discovered and excavated this World of Thunder for so many years, taking all of its treasures. Only after did they send a large number of ferocious beasts in and make it an exam ground. Who would have thought…this exam grounds would have a world within a world!”

“Very interesting!”

“Kabu, after dying for ten million years, you still make us worry.” The general’s eyes gleamed, his gaze seemed as though it could poke a hole through space, “Back then, his secret techniques of space which he acquired may even be left in that world within a

world.”

……

“World of Thunder, back then the World of Thunder Sector Lord Kabu created it, and there’s a world within a world? Sector Lord Kabu created this second world, the treasures he hid in them are definitely not your average treasures. Luckily, Cang Lan Star is not too far from where I am. Haha…”

……

“Quickly, quickly, quickly, hurry to the ships. Immediately set out for Cang Lan Star.”

In a particular base, large numbers of Star level 9 stages swiftly rushed into ships, after which two Domain Lords entered the ships and they departed immediately.

……

That day, the news shook the entire Black Dragon Mountain Empire, even though the Black Dragon Mountain Empire governed over 8000 galaxies, one Sector Lord was still considered the pinnacle of strength within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire already! For example the six great families, all got their position because of having one Sector Lord!

The creator of the World of Thunder, the Sector Lord Kabu was

the pinnacle of Sector Lords back then!

He created a world within a world, just what treasures did it hold?

The entire Black Dragon Mountain Empire, even the royal family sent its men and armies, the four organizations sent their strongest. In the eyes of the strongest...the Star level explorers may have been the ones to discover the world within the world, however the real people able to obtain the treasures within would undoubtedly be these people!

Star level? They were cannon fodder!

On a fire red planet, diameter of 8600 km, its surface was filled with red sand, this particular sand, rocky planet didn't have a chance for life. It's surface temperature reached up to over 3000 degrees, unsuitable for regular living by humans, this kind of planet could be found all over the universe.

On this planet, in a fire red tall mountain.

The wind blew the sand about, there was dead silence in the mountain.

"Rumble!"

Very suddenly, the entire mountain violently exploded open, trillions of rubble scattering in all directions and flying about, a

purple fire rushed towards the sky, engulfed in a purple flame, dressed in armor, eyes burning, a bald man floated in the air, his forehead had a peculiar flame tattoo: “Sector Lord Kabu actually left a world within a world? No wonder after so many years no one heard any news of where he left the secret space technique crystal ball, that crystal ball might very well be in that world within the world! That would be a complete inheritance, haha, it’s mine!”

Rumble!

A huge silver pyramid appeared before him, very similar to the automaton ship on earth, only a little smaller. This silver pyramid’s bottom automatically opened into a small pathway, within it colors flashed about, extremely beautiful.

Sou!

The bald man engulfed in a purple flame who looked like a god entered the ship, after which swiftly leaving that dead silent planet, increasing in speed and entering universe travel, heading towards Cang Lan Star.

Chapter 22 – Hardworking Luo Feng

World within the world.

Hu! Hu! Hu! The thousands to tens of thousands of Star level explorers entered through the black hole, all in their teams, swiftly heading in all directions and covering the skies and land.

“Third brother, where should we head to?” Hong looked at Luo Feng.

“We cannot waste any time.” Thunder God was extremely anxious.

Luo Feng looked in all directions, at that time, Heruo who had connected to the virtual universe to report the news opened his eyes, looking apologetic at Luo Feng’s group: “Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, my apologies, I have to act according to the orders and meet up with the rest of my organization.” After which his team swiftly left.

“Follow me.” Luo Feng too rose into the air.

Hong, Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu followed, the five man team swiftly flew close to the ground.

Before, the blurred images of the tens of thousands of explorers surrounded them, however once dispersed, and after flying for a few minutes, Luo Feng’s team was totally secluded with no one

around them. This world within a world....was simply too huge. The tens of thousands of people here were simply a drop of water within a vast ocean.

"Third brother, we're just going to fly like this?" Hong looked at Luo Feng.

"We can only do this." Luo Feng explained, "A world within a world, is a world itself. It's extremely huge, who knows where the treasure is hidden? Hence we can only search blindly like looking for a needle in a haystack. Luckily we have a surveillance area of 20km, as long as there's any treasure within this area we will definitely notice it immediately!"

Luo Feng was very clear, with the vastness of the world within a world, the optimum method of searching was this.

Sticking close to the ground, and letting Babata search within the 20km area, reporting the moment he discovers anything!

"Big and second brother." Luo Feng smiled, "Before when Heruo and the others went to gather with his North Dragon Castle group, you should both noticed something right?"

"Thunder God nodded: "The various big powers are arranging them to meet and work together."

Grabbing treasures from the world within the world!

The number of people was important, and the four great organizations, 16 big families had many people within the world within a world, the moment they gathered, they could form teams of hundreds. And for teams like Luo Feng's which were considered leisurely, without much background, if they fought against teams of hundreds, it was pure suicide.

"Hence, we must remain inconspicuous." Luo Feng laughed, "If we can find any treasures that'd be great, if not, we'll dig for some universe crystals!"

Every world has universe crystals.

A world that had yet to be excavated, the amount of universe crystals should be plenty! This was a currency that the entire universe used!

……

The world within a world, didn't have any ferocious beasts, it was a quiet world.

"It's really quiet." Luo Feng exclaimed.

"Quiet is normal, the ferocious beasts within the World of Thunder were there completely because the Universe Mercenary Alliance used the place as an exam grounds, bringing them in and moving them about within." Thunder God muttered, "Actually, without any ferocious beasts, it kind of takes away the thrill of

using flying to rush about.”

“Stop!” A voice resounded fiercely within Luo Feng’s mind.

“Stop!” Luo Feng immediately used spirit reading to mentally communicate, the suddenly shout caused the other four’s ears to ring loudly.

“Damn.” Thunder God couldn’t help but hold his ear, glaring, “Luo Feng, you could speak softer.”

Luo Feng couldn’t care less about his second brother’s rubbish, communicating mentally with Babata, following that he surveyed his surroundings and said softly: “Everybody be careful, we’ve found a place to start digging!”

“Digging?” Hong and Thunder God were shocked.

“Right, 3200m underground here there’s universe crystals.” Luo Feng said softly.

“Universe crystals?”

“Damn, universe crystals?” Thunder God immediately stared.

“This land is made up for earth and soil, 1900m deeper would be rocks and stones. However, the rock stratum here shouldn’t be too solid, unlike those at the Valley of Wind and Thunder, with long

periods of welding from the mad winds and lightning. It should only take a day to dig through." Luo Feng said softly.

Universe crystals, that was a windfall! And it was an absolute currency, much more valuable than Ganwu dollars.

And right now Luo Feng was very lacking in money!

Accurately speaking, the moment the Golden Horned Beast broke through to the Universe level, that was when Luo Feng would be severely lacking in money. The 10 billion Ganwu dollars his teacher had left him in his first account was left with less than 5 billion Ganwu dollars, however the moment the Golden Horned Beast broke through, from the Universe level 1 to the Domain Lord level 1, required one thousand years!

In order to accelerate the evolution, he required purchasing many valuable and expensive metal groupings!

And the metal groupings the Universe level required were much more expensive than the Star level, and it required an even larger amount! Luo Feng's 5 billion Ganwu dollars, using the optimum metal groupings, wouldn't even be enough for a month of the golden horned beast's consumption! Of course if he swallowed only normal metals and remains etc, it would be much cheaper, however the evolution speed would be much slower too.

Luo Feng couldn't afford to waste any time!

The armies of the Nuolan Shan family were approaching soon, arriving on earth in a short amount of time. Hence...he had to acquire with the greatest speed sufficient wealth to allow the golden horned beast to evolve at the fastest speed!

“Chi chi...”

Ao Gu used the hybrid copper essence shard to dig downwards at his fastest speed, Luo Feng too followed behind anxiously. Hong and Thunder God too followed, Tie Nan He was in charge of concealing the grounds surface behind them, defending against other star level explorers discovering them. That 1900m of soil was easily broken through after just half an hour of digging.

However the rock stratum below, their speed was greatly reduced.

“This is too slow.” Luo Feng was getting anxious, “Looks like we really need a day.”

Luo Feng, if you use the cloud contact vine to grip that shard and dig, it may be even faster.” Hong said.

“That’s right!”

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, digging a path underground to make a path for humans to pass through was indeed difficult, however allowing one long vine to slip through and dig was much easier.

“Ao Gu, you step back.” Luo Feng said.

“Yes.” Ao Gu stepped aside.

Luo Feng dug as deep as possible, with a thought, the cloud contact vine which was wrapped around his body immediately extended a vine, at the same time the arm guard that was originally on his wrist swiftly moved and attached itself on the vine, shrinking in size! This arm guard was where Babata laid, and it was also his storage space.

This long vine was slim but strong and sturdy, on its tip was also a leaf that wrapped around the hybrid copper essence shard, swiftly extending downwards! The hybrid copper essence dug deep, the slender vine continuously extended downwards, it was simply too fast!

Back then on Earth, the Star Traveller level 5 or 6 cloud contact vine’s extension was already shocking.

Currently the Star level 4 cloud contact vine could easily extend tens of thousands of meters. Hence...After about 20 minutes, with the piercing hybrid copper essence drill tip, the vine had already reached 3200m underground.

……

3200m underground.

A large dark blue, akin to a space colored huge body of crystal was among the rocks. A leaf wrapped around the hybrid copper essence shard had extended over a 1000m, finally reaching its destination. On the vine, there was even a bracelet.

“Wahaha! Collect it!”

Babata shouted loudly.

A huge dark blue crystal body, immediately vanished within the storage space.

……

Within the storage space.

This was an incomparably large storage space, even the Yun Mo Planet ship was here.

The huge dark blue crystal appeared out of thin air, beside it, a metal robot immediately flew over, the robot’s red eyes shined, sound coming from its mouth: “Luo Feng that idiot, actually following the rules of that Earth fighter team’s rules and sharing of rewards, this universe crystal is something he obtained, he’s even prepared to split it with Hong and Thunder God. What an idiot!”

“This universe crystal is pretty big, about 9000 cubic meters! Hm, cut it!”

Immediately, a few small robots appeared.

The small robots began to swiftly cut and split the universe crystal, the universe crystal's energy was shocking, however splitting it wasn't too difficult, within the universe, they were usually split into currency shapes. The universe's standard rule was for 1 cubic meter of universe crystal to be split into 1000 universe currency.

……

Underground.

Luo Feng's cloud contact vine armor's extended vine swiftly returned, at the same time the bracelet returned to Luo Feng's wrist, wrapping itself around.

"Babata, how many universe crystals was there?" Luo Feng asked.

"Haha, our luck is not bad, usually universe crystals that were scattered about in a world are lesser, only the center has more universe crystals. I'd never expect you to actually get 3000 cubic meters of universe crystal, your luck is not bad." Babata's voice resounded in Luo Feng's mind.

Luo Feng nodded.

“Big brother and second brother, let’s go up.” Luo Feng.

The five swiftly flew back towards the surface, quickly breaking through the surface.

“How did it go?” Thunder God looked at Luo Feng.

“How many universe crystals did we get?” Hong asked.

“Our luck is not bad.” Luo Feng looked around, it was silent and dark around them, they could vaguely make out the vast land, “These sort of scattered universe crystals within these world within worlds aren’t usually much. We actually got 3000 cubic meters this time, it’s considered quite a bit.”

“3000 cubic meters?” Thunder God’s eyes gleamed, “3000 cubic meters equates to 3 million universe currency. 1 universe currency if exchanged now, we’d be able to change for a little more than 3000 Ganwu dollars. Meaning, about 10 billion Ganwu dollars.”

“10 billion Ganwu dollars?” Hong too began to feel the huge amount of numbers.

“The first time Thunder God and I went to the Killing Fields, we heard some Universe level warriors talking about a newly discovered world, saying they acquired about 10000 cubic meters of universe crystal. We managed to get 3000 cubic meters just like that, it’s not bad.” Hong exclaimed.

“Indeed a Sector Lord’s world, the first amount and so much.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but exclaim too. “From the sayings of the universe explorers, whenever they discovered a new world, it was always a windfall! However these first excavations are usually snatched away by the Universe or even Domain Lord levels.”

“Let’s make the most of our time!” Luo Feng said, “Let’s continue!”

The first sum alone was 3000 cubic meters, catching up to the first account of wealth his teacher had left behind for him, this made Luo Feng very excited.

A Sector Lord’s world, was indeed a huge treasure!

The most inconspicuous crystals, these were huge amounts of wealth.

“However, the moment the Golden Horned Beast becomes a Universe level, its consumption of money would be shocking. This amount is far from enough, continue!” Luo Feng was filled with anticipation.

At this time, Luo Feng didn’t even know that the amount of crystal actually acquired was 9000 cubic meters, the evil Babata had intentionally hidden the other 6000 cubic meters.

……

Maybe some of the other teams had brought their own sensors, however...the abilities and designs of those sensors, how many could actually compare to Babata's surveillance device? Under the guidance of Babata's orders, Luo Feng and his group quickly discovered a second underground universe crystal location.

"Who knows, maybe relying on this Sector Lord's world, I could really get enough money to support the Golden Horned Beast's Universe level." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, controlling the vine and the bracelet digging underground, "Dig!"

Chapter 23 – If You Want to Die, Enter!

“The central region of the world within a world has many universe crystals. However all those explorers aren’t stupid, two holy lands, four organizations, sixteen big families, along with several universe basic level civilizations, explorers from different planets, everyone will be heading towards the center to fight for them. The competition there will be the most intense, also the rock stratum there is much stronger, just like the theory behind the Valley of Wind and Thunder! Digging there would be very difficult, it’s much better for us to look in the other areas of the world within a world.”

“The scattered universe crystals, if gathered together, it can be quite plenty.”

Babata advised.

Luo Feng listened, at the same time controlling his cloud contact vine to dig underground! Over 3 hours passed and this was their third spot where universe crystals were discovered.

“We’ve really struck it big.” Luo Feng was secretly excited.

The first spot, they acquired 3000 cubic meters.

The second spot was a little lesser, 2000 cubic meters.

The third spot…according to Babata’s scan and search, was 4000

cubic meters!

“Chi chi…” The cloud contact vine swiftly returned.

“Babata, how much? 4000 cubic meters?” Luo Feng asked.

“Yeah, 4000.” Babata said.

Luo Feng looked up to where Hong and Thunder God were smiling from, “4000 cubic meters.”

“Haha…” Hong and Thunder God also revealed looks of happiness.

It was said that brothers didn’t have to settle debts, however even though Luo Feng had helped them a lot, be it Hong, Thunder God or Luo Feng, they were very clear…the rewards of a universe explorer, if not stated clearly at the start, would generate a lot of problems and resentment later. They had witnessed these sort of things too many times on Earth.

Hence, the three stated clearly early on.

If it were the three of them working together, it would be split three ways.

If one person did most of the work while the other two assisted, the person with the most contribution would get 60% while the

other two got 20% each.

If it was one person doing all the work and the other two didn't help at all, the person doing the work would get 80% and the other two 10% each!

"We now have a total of 9000 cubic meters of universe crystal." Luo Feng was happy within.

"Let's continue searching." Hong was worried, "I'm afraid we don't have much time, when the large organizations' armies move in, we will definitely be disadvantaged.

"Right." Luo Feng nodded, his expression serious.

Those heirs and disciples of families, the youths of organizations had definitely all reported to their superiors. Very quickly, universe level and even domain lord levels were bound to arrive! Even...the pinnacle of strength within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, the Sector Lords may even appear. When that time comes, the cannon fodder star levels such as themselves would have no place at all.

A newly discovered world would originally make anyone go crazy, causing a lot of deaths of warriors.

Much less a newly discovered world within a world.

A world within a world was even more attractive than normal

new worlds.

“Let’s make the best of our time!” Luo Feng ordered, “Keep searching for the next spot.”

……

In the world within a world, it was simply a treasure trove digging site! The other teams may not be able to keep up with Luo Feng’s team, but even if they managed to acquire a 100 cubic meters of universe crystals, to normal star level explorers, that was already a heavenly figure of wealth! Hence, all the Star level explorers were currently madly digging and excavating!

Unless they went to the center and fought with the tens of thousands of explorers. Otherwise, in terms of excavating, they really couldn’t compete with Luo Feng’s team.

There was no way around it…

Babata’s surveillance and scanning system was taken from the Yun Mo Planet ship itself, even normal Sector Lords didn’t have such advanced technology.

A triangular charcoal black ship flew through universe travel and arrived in a space close to Cang Lan Star.

Two men wearing silver white capes stood side by side, on their chests were 2 star Universe Mercenary medals.

“Brother Ming Yu, this time the two of us brothers should be able to acquire some treasures. That World of Thunder’s Sector Lord, had a reputation back then, I heard his treasures were plentiful, and after his death, he self imploded, no one got anything out of it.” With long purple hair, silver white cape, eyes piercing like blades, a handsome man spoke.

“Brother Dong Lao, you and I aren’t stationed so far from Cang Lang Star, hence we are the first to rush over, getting treasures would be normal.” A bulky and imposing looking man spoke, dressed in green and black.

The two could be said to be polar opposites.

One had purple hair and was extremely handsome, carefree and at ease, the other yet was tall and sturdy, strong looking, like steel. The two were the renowned Three Axe Mountain warriors... Ming Yu and Shao Dong Lai! Both were elite fighters amongst the Domain Lords. Of course, the two of them were also the Virtual Universe Network company’s military external department members.

The Virtual Universe Network company’s military external department was very lax in allowing others to join other little organizations.

Compared to the Virtual Universe Network company...

Even the Ganwu Empire didn’t pose a threat, much less the Black

Dragon Mountain Empire's Three Axe mountain organization.

"Those Star level explorers, even though they were the first to discover the world within a world. However, the treasures within, aren't things that these little punks can take. The universe crystals they acquire would already be considered a huge windfall, they should be satisfied with that." The purple haired man Shao Dong Lai smiled.

"When we were Star levels, we didn't acquire any universe crystals." Ming Yu exclaimed.

Two domain lords, they naturally assumed...

Star level explorers didn't have any rights to contend for the treasures within the world within a world.

"Shall we go to the docking bay?" Shao Dong Lai asked.

"No need." Ming Yu shook his head, "I have property here on Cang Lan Star, we can fly directly through, it won't be considered a provocation or disrespect to the planet's leader."

This universe ship entered straight into the internal district of Cang Lan Star, very quickly, they went straight to stop in the air above the Universe Mercenary Alliance base.

.....

One handsome, the other tall and sturdy, both with status and silver white capes.

The two flew down.

“Ming Yu, Dong Lai.” Immediately a green skinned man dressed in armor flew over.

“Mo Le, what’s going on?” Ming Yu and Shao Dong Lai, the two domain lords flew over, the green skinned man, seemed to have another pupil within both of his eyes, he looked extremely unpleased and pointed to the not too distant villa: “Look, the entrance to the World of Thunder is blocked by people of the Universe Mercenary Alliance. They won’t let anybody enter.”

“What’s going on?” Ming Yu and Dong Lai were shocked.

Right now the big powers from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire had sent all their elites over, at this time, it was hard to believe that the Universe Mercenary Alliance had their personnel in charge of the Cang Lan Star base deny them entry?

“Let’s go, we’ll go over.” Ming Yu said.

Immediately the three Domain Lords went over.

At the entrance of the villa stood twelve Universe level warriors,

each either serious, or overbearing, or laughing and cheery, or even gloomy and cold, everyone basically had their own character. The guards of the villa definitely couldn't hold them, however at the entrance was a lady with short silver hair dressed in a bright silver battle uniform.

"Lord Ming Yu."

"Lord Dong Lai."

Immediately many Universe level warriors bowed.

Ming Yu and Dong Lai nodded slightly before looking at the lady, Ming Yu said softly, "A world within the World of Thunder has been discovered, it's no longer a suitable testing site! Since it's no long a testing site, then every mercenary should have a right to enter the world, why are you blocking us?"

"Who are you?" The lady with short silver hair exclaimed.

"Ming Yu, Three Axe mountain commander Ming Yu." The tall and sturdy Ming Yu stared at the lady.

"Listen well, my name is Rania." The lady with the short silver hair subtly emanated a cold aura, as though she was the surrounding area's master, god.

"Rania?" Ming Yu and Dong Lai creased their eyebrows.

The number of Sector Lords in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire was few, even the Domain Lords were rare, whoever had a reputation, they all recognized. However they both had never heard of this Domain Lord Rania before.

“The World of Thunder is an examination ground, it’s an examination ground of the Universe Mercenary Alliance, unless the alliance dissolves this status, otherwise, it remains as an exam ground! As a location used to select trainee mercenaries, only Star level explorers have the right to enter. Mercenaries are forbidden from entering!” The silver haired lady ordered.

Ming Yu, Shao Dong Lai and Mo Le, the three big domain lords were growing impatient.

Laws?

There were times where laws were meant to be abided by, however there were other times when they should be bent.

“Rania, what status do you have within the Universe Mercenary Alliance? To actually dare to block three Universe level 2 mercenaries!” Ming Yu ordered.

……

8 hours later.

It was already dark, at the entrance of the World of Thunder, that villa entrance, the number of Domain Lords had already reached six, the number of Universe levels had reached twenty one. However facing that silver haired lady Rania, none of them had been able to enter.

“Rumble!”

The earth and skies slightly tremored.

The large numbers of people stationed at the Universe Mercenary Alliance base looked up to see, a silver-white pyramid had appeared in the sky, immediately causing Ming Yu and many others to be shocked: “Automaton ship?” In the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, the number of strong warriors with automaton ships were few, each had a large background, and the ship before them…seemed pretty high leveled.

The silver-white pyramid suddenly vanished.

An incomparably well built bald man suddenly appeared, his eyes seemingly burning with a flame within, on his forehead was a fire tattoo, his gaze surveyed below, immediately causing all the Domain Lords’ souls to naturally lower their heads, the Universe level warriors had long bowed in respect.

“Lord An Mengzi!” the Domain Lords and Universe level warriors said respectfully.

An Mengzi was called the Flame Sector Lord. Among the Sector Lords in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, he was an absolute elite and the pinnacle of strength, his use of fire had already reached an unbelievable level. His flame could burn and crumble even space.

“Get out of my way!”

An Mengzi stared at the silver haired lady.

The silver haired lady looked at An Mengzi, her gaze focusing on the fire tattoo on his forehead, revealing a strange smile: “An Mengzi? You already attained the recognition of the elemental source laws of the universe? Truly an elite Sector Lord. However... this is an examination grounds world, a Universe Mercenary Alliance decreed exam grounds world! Only participating Star level explorers can enter, mercenaries are forbidden.”

“I told you to let me through!” An Mengzi’s voice was thick, it made people tremble.

Weng!

A silver white light appeared around the silver haired lady’s body.

“Impudence!” the silver haired lady shouted, pointing angrily at the powerful fighter before her, “An Mengzi, you actually dare to disregard and provoke the laws of the Universe Mercenary

Alliance? The examination grounds world, all but Star levels are forbidden, if you wish to die, then enter! I can guarantee, if you enter now, later on, the Universe Mercenary Alliance law enforcement will come kill you, causing your soul to return to nothing, as though you never existed!”

“Along with the others, all listen up.”

The silver haired lady stepped back, pointing at the villa, “If you want to die, enter!”

Within an instant.

Six Domain Lords, twenty one Universe level warriors all went silent, even this Flame Sector Lord An Mengzi seemed to ponder hard upon hearing the words of this silver haired lady, no one actually moved to barge through.

The days passed one by one.

The number of warriors on Cang Lan Star grew, however none were able to enter the World of Thunder. It seemed as though the words ‘If you want to die, enter” had a terrifying effect on all of them. And that world within a world, the Star level cannon fodder were all excited amidst their madness, Luo Feng and his group were also grasping every bit of time they had and excavating.

Chapter 24 – Big Earnings

In the vast skies, a large light ball floated high above, shining and lighting up the world within a world.

"Rumble..." A waterfall over a 100m high poured and down, smashing into the deep natural pond below, the pond itself emanated a chilly air. Suddenly, five human silhouettes burst out from the surface of the pond, landing on the shore beside. The light shone down on them, their alloy battle armors reflected the glaring light, these five were Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu.

"We finally got a huge score." Thunder God exclaimed, "The past few days have been killing me."

"Separated into the different regions of this world within a world, the universe crystals that are scattered don't follow any pattern at all! At times we find a few hidden underground, at times periods pass without anything. This is very normal." Luo Feng's gaze surveyed their surroundings, around them the forest was silent, no other life forms about.

"Third brother, how much universe crystals do we have in total?" Hong asked.

"The three days added up, there's a total of 31,000 cubic meters of universe crystals." Luo Feng smiled.

This was a number that deserved excitement and happiness.

From the time they entered the world within a world, his group had been scouring close to the ground and searching, it couldn't be helped that the world was extremely large, with an area stretching over a million km, such a big world, if they truly wanted to cover every inch, it would require tens of thousands of trips just to complete it!

No!

Even if they came and went tens of thousands of times, they would have only searched everything within a 20km area search span.

This world's depth alone far exceeded 20km.

Just searching 20km down from the surface would require thousands of years! As it was too huge, hence even searching required a large amount of luck!

The first day, during the first 10 hours, his group had continuously found ten universe crystal locations, a total of 15,000 cubic meters of universe crystals.

However from then till the second day afternoon, after about 20 hours, they had only found one spot with only 300 cubic meters.

From then till now, their luck got better.

They continuously found five spots, especially the last spot deep in the pond where they found 6000 cubic meters.

The three days added up together, the total reached 31,000 cubic meters of universe crystals.

“31,000 cubic meters, means 31 million universe currency, close to 100 billion Ganwu dollars. Back then my teacher only left me 10 billion Ganwu dollars! This newly excavated world, is indeed good to earn from...” Luo Feng felt elation within, his little team had just left Earth and begun exploring the vast universe.

The first time entering the Universe Mercenary trainee exams and encountering such a huge fortune.

“Luo Feng, according to logic, there should be Universe level warriors coming in here and chasing us out.” Hong creased his eyebrows. “Why hasn’t there been any news up till now?”

“It is weird.” Luo Feng shook his head, “The World of Thunder may be huge, but to fly to the Valley of Wind and Thunder from far, with a Universe level’s strength, no need to fear the ferocious beasts, one day should suffice. These three days have passed...and we haven’t discovered a single Universe level within the world within a world, much less the Domain and Sector Lords.”

“Why think so much, since they aren’t coming in here, let’s continue to search and dig for the universe crystals, the moment we miss this opportunity, we’d lose a huge advantage.” Thunder God urged.

“Haha, makes sense.” Hong was also filled with anticipation.

In the universe.

Even planets could be bought and sold, also feeding and nurturing the cloud contact vine with Mu Ya crystals these could be purchased and sold, basically, everything required sufficient wealth. With that, even Universe level slaves could be bought! As the three man group from Earth exploring the universe, Luo Feng naturally wanted to madly dig up more crystals.

The more wealth he had, in the future with their help, earth had more chances of evolving.

They were Earth’s pioneers!

“Let’s go!” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, filled with hope.

“Haha, Let’s go!” Thunder God and Hong felt the same way.

The five man group became five beams of light. With the help of the surveillance device, they continued to search and excavate for more crystals.

Cang Lan Star.

At the entrance to the World of Thunder, within the villa that

was brimming with history, stood the bald sturdy man who resembled a mountain with his eyes closed, the fire tattoo on his forehead made people tremble, making people cower in reflex. Looking at the tattoo, it was like an ant looking at a tall mountain.

He stood there, the surrounding space was trembling, the air around his body occasionally sparking with flames.

Before him stood the silver haired lady Rania, as for the other Domain Lords, Universe level warriors, they were outside the villa's flower garden, within the flower garden stood only An Mengzi and Rania.

"An Megnzi, why aren't you entering?" a powerful voice resounded within the garden.

Dressed in a dark blue battle armor, wearing a helmet on his head, a man that seemed even more imposing and sturdy than An Mengzi, almost like a god, suddenly appeared, his hollow steps made the air around tremble, when he landed in the garden, the entire garden immediately vanished and became a vast spacious land, beside a huge mountain.

While talking, changing the landscape and controlling both land and skies.

"Who are you, you are the one stopping An Mengzi?" The tall and sturdy man looked at the silver haired lady, his eyes seemed extremely glaring for a moment, akin to a sun shining down on the land.

“Rania! Universe Mercenary Alliance Ganwu special forces Rania.” The silver haired lady looked at him, “You should be middle Sector Lord Ba Si Ha from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire sacred land.

“Special forces?”

The tall and sturdy man looked at the silver haired lady before him, turning suspiciously to An Mengzi, a voice resounded within An Mengzi’s mind, “An Mengzi, who is she? Seems as though she has background and status, able to call you directly by your name, just what is her identity?”

“No idea.” An Mengzi muttered.

“If you don’t know, then why have you stopped just because of a Domain Lord?” Ba Si Ha crease his eyebrows.

“I don’t know who she is, but I know she has an Undying behind her!” An Mengzi said.

“Undying?” A huge wave of shock erupted within Ba Si Ha, however on the surface he remained like a rock, very stable. Following which his gaze turned to Rania, his world energy gently feeling about her surroundings, indeed there was a heart stopping terrifying power about her.

“Lord Ba Si Ha.”

The silver haired lady's eyes were calm, "This World of Thunder is our Universe Mercenary Alliance examination ground, unless the alliance itself decrees that it no long has that status, otherwise, it is an examination ground world. Only participating trainee mercenaries, Star level explorers can enter, no one else is allowed."

"If anybody were to barge in, it would be a breach of the Alliance laws!" The silver haired lady looked at Ba Si Ha.

Ba Si Ha felt his headache.

To think that he, Ba Si Ha, with such a lofty position, a high rank in even one of the two sacred lands of the Black Dragon Mountain star field. Even the emperor of the Black Dragon Mountain Empire had to respect him...however now, against this silver haired lady he couldn't do anything. Killing her was too simple!

However...

One, the silver haired lady 's background was huge.

Two, she had made it very clear, barging would mean a breach in the Alliance's laws, who would dare to barge in? Offending the Universe Mercenary Alliance was simply suicide.

Laws were laws, however with such matter people usually closed one eye and let things pass. Who would risk themselves and offend such powerful beings? However it seemed that this silver haired

lady's background was obviously not small, she didn't have any qualms about offending them!

"An Mengzi, where did she come from?" Ba Si Ha creased his eyebrows, troubled within.

"No idea." An Mengzi communicated softly and seriously mentally.

One day later.

A third sector lord arrived.

Dressed in a dark red battle armor, with a black cape around him, an extremely demonic handsome man moved in a flash, the skies about turned to thunder and lightning, and he appeared within the garden. The handsome man had a lightning tattoo on his forehead, when he blinked his eyes, there were sparks of lightning.

"Rania, why are you here?" The handsome man stood within the garden, creasing his eyebrows at her.

"Three Axe mountain, Jiang Tian Chen!"

An Mengzi, Ba Si Ha, these 2 were powerful and shocking Sector Lords, in strength however, Ba Si Ha was much stronger. However...compared to Tien Chen, he was still much weaker. Tien Chen was definitely amongst the top five absolute strongest within the Black Dragon Mountain star field! As one of the absolute

warriors of the Three Axe Mountain, he was also a key position holder within the Virtual Universe Network Black Dragon Mountain department.

“I represent my teacher from the Black Dragon Mountain star field to patrol this area, discovering this incident, I definitely have to attend to it!” Rania looked at Tien Chen, “Right now I represent my teacher and forbid any breaches against the laws of the Universe Mercenary Alliance.”

The extremely handsome Jiang Tien Chen creased his eyebrows, Pa! Pa! Pa! Lighting and electricity struck around the area.

“What rubbish.” Tien Chen was frustrated.

“What rubbish!”

Rania raged, “Jiang Tien Chen, these are the laws of our Universe Mercenary Alliance, not something for you to govern over! I definitely can’t stop you, however I will make a record of what happens here and report to my teacher. Whoever dares to openly disregard the rules will have to be reported and exterminated, soul destroyed, as though he never existed. Don’t say I didn’t warn you.”

Jiang Tien Chen’s squinted.

An Mengzi, Ba Si Ha really handed it off to this lady. So what if one had a big background? To actually dare to speak to Jiang Tien

Chen this way, really took guts.

"You doing this, you realize you are offending the strongest within the Black Dragon Mountain star field." Jiang Tien Chen creased his eyebrows and looked at Rania.

"Don't try and scare me with these! Whoever dares to enter, I will abide by the rules, and report to the alliance." Rania said coldly.

Jiang Tien Chen shook his head, "Your power is far from your teachers, but your temper is pretty similar."

"An Mengzi, Ba Si Ha, I'll arrange for our Black Dragon Mountain star field's four organizations and two sacred lands to hold a meeting and discuss this world within a world." Jiang Tien Chen looked at An Mengzi and Ba Si Ha.

The two nodded.

"Jiang Tien Chen, why, gathering people to pressure me?" Rania grew even more imposing.

She was enraged.

It wasn't just a ruse, she was prepared to back everything up!

"You've even taken out the rulebook of the Alliance, who dares to

fight with you?" Jiang Tien Chen looked at her, "Relax, I will act according to the Alliance rules, definitely won't send any Universe levels, Domain Lords or Sector Lords in." At the same time, he sent a thread of thought into the Virtual Universe Network.

Maintaining his consciousness in reality while separately sending a part of it into the virtual universe. To a Sector Lord, this was extremely simple.

Chapter 25 – Sector Lord Meeting

Virtual Universe.

The sky was azure blue, pure without a single blemish, clouds and mist were scattered about, in this cloud filled sky virtual space, a solid stone round table with a diameter of 10m floated, on it were a motley of scars. Around the floating stone round table floated stone chairs of the same material.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Human silhouettes appeared one after another, appearing out of nowhere, of which there were Tien Chen, An Mengzi, Ba Si Ha, they each chose a stone chair to sit in.

“I represent the Three Axe Mountain.” Jiang Tien Chen sat in the stone chair, saying coldly.

“I represent the Ice Neptune Empire.” Dressed in a white robe, with long almost translucent hair, a lady smiled.

“I represent Black Dragon Mountain Empire.” With a face covered in scales, revealing only two red pupils, a Sector Lord that was almost 4m tall said lowly.

……

Twelve human silhouettes.

Each representing the four organizations, two sacred lands and sixteen families. Of which, the sixteen families only sent one representative while the four organizations and two sacred lands had a total of eleven sector lords.

“Then, let’s begin the meeting.” The scaly huge man from Black Dragon Mountain Empire said seriously.

“The entrance to the World of Thunder is currently being guarded by the Universe Mercenary Alliance Ganwu special forces Rania, forbidding anyone other than Star level explorers to enter.” Jiang Tien Chen’s voice resounded about the virtual space.

“This Rania, what’s her status?” A gentle voice resounded from the lady Sector Lord from Ice Neptune country.

“Her teacher is Ganwu Empire’s 3rd corps military master.” Jiang Tien Chen said, “the third master spoils her.”

“3rd corps military master?”

The other eleven Sector Lords were stunned.

“Right, hence we are unable to force our way in.” Jiang Tien Chen’s gaze swept past every Sector Lord, “Hence I was thinking… there’s only one way, which is to arrange for a large group of Star level 9 explorers to take part in the mercenary trainee exams and

enter the World of Thunder."

"Good idea!"

"Yes."

Jiang Tien Chen's words had roused up and gained the approval and nod of a group of Sector Lords.

"If there are any other suggestions please speak." Jiang Tien Chen said.

"With that Rania blocking the entrance, who would dare blatantly go against the Alliance rules?" The scaly big man laughed softly, "Alright, Brother Jiang, we'll do according to what you said! We'll arrange for a large group of Star level 9 explorers to enter."

"So how much should each party arrange?"

"How are we dividing the numbers?"

Immediately the twelve Sector Lords began to specifically calculate and discuss, the more men they could send out, the better the advantage at getting the treasures. Actually it was mostly a big discussion between the four organizations and the two sacred lands!

"Sixteen families, every family can at most send 10,000 Star level

explorers.”

“The four organizations, every one can send at most send 200,000 Star level explorers.”

“The two sacred lands, each side can at most send 500,000 Star level explorers.”

……

This Black Dragon Mountain star field meeting of the upper echelon’s result, led very quickly to the four organizations and two sacred lands dividing up their troops internally. Under each organization there were other Sector Lords, Domain Lords, Universe levels, and according to their strength, their positions were different too. The number of troops they were allowed were therefore different.

Cang Lan Star.

Since the two sacred lands, four organizations and sixteen families combined their forces after having been barred with no one but Star level explorers being allowed into the world of thunder…

“Wow, so many are headed over.”

“It’s totally black, just how many are there?”

At the Universe Mercenary Alliance base, a few explorers were shocked as they looked at the sky, all they could see were huge battle ships floating in mid air, at the same time large amounts of dark grey armored soldiers flew down from above, covering the entire sky. In a flash, they all flew in an orderly single file towards the entrance of the World of Thunder...the villa.

“What’s going on?” Dressed in a silver armor, Rania shouted.

“Lord, we are all Star level explorers who have accepted the Universe Mercenary trainee exam mission.” A star level fighter leading the group said respectfully.

“You are all here for the trainee exams?” Rania was shocked, looking at the team before her.

This team that had formed an extremely long line stretched all the way to the skies.

Just how many were there?

Rania however did a sweep of everyone of them, this extremely long line of explorers, were indeed all Star level explorers who had accepted the mercenary trainee exam mission.

.....

Within the villa's flower garden.

An Mengzi, Ba Si Ha and Jiang Tien Chen watched as this team swiftly entered the World of Thunder.

"An Mengzi, your speed is amazing." Ba Si Ha looked at An Mengzi.

"10,000 Star level 9 explorers, just nice." An Mengzi's lips curled into a smile, "Sorry all, I was prepared in advance."

……

Even the Nuolan Shan could produce 10,000 Star level 9 warriors, much less a Sector Lord existence! To them, finding 10,000 Star level 9 warriors was as easy as breathing! For someone like An Mengzi, just his territory alone was three galaxies, excluding the other places that admired him and worked under him.

……

From then on, the skies of Cang Lan Star were filled with team after team arriving.

They were all Star level explorers, almost all Star level 9 warriors! Be it teams of ten of teams of thousands, or even large teams of ten thousand. The teams of Star level 9 warriors entered single file into the World of Thunder! Ironically, several explorers from before who were here to take the trainee exam were held up.

Cang Lan Star, Universe Mercenary Alliance base, within a bar beside it.

Ming Yu and Shao Dong Lai, two domain lords were sitting within. Other than the two Domain Lords within the bar, everyone else was at the Universe level! Normal explorers all didn't even dare to enter. And at this time, an obviously very icy man dressed in dark green armor with pointy ears entered, his gaze surveyed the bar before discovering Ming Yu and Shao Dong Lai.

"Lord Ming Yu, Lord Dong Lai."

"Nuolan Shan, you've brought your armies too." Ming Yu and Dong Lai nodded, even though the two of them were Domain Lords, the one before them was Nuolan Shan who had the Battle-axe fighter title. Back when they were in Universe level, they couldn't even achieve this title. Hence they still had respect for Nuolan Shan.

"Just a few troops." Nuolan Shan smiled, "They are all outside."

Ming Yu and Shao Dong Lai glanced outside.

Outside the window in the plain fields, teams dressed in standard uniforms were all lined up.

"Not that little, there's 200 of them." Ming Yu complemented, "Universe levels, some of them were only allocated 50, or some

others a 100.”

The 200 Star level 9 warriors from the Nuolan Shan family headed towards the villa in an orderly fashion, entering into the world single file.

These 200 were Star level 9 warriors with the highest battle abilities, hand picked specially by Nuolan Shan from the family.

“It was just luck.” Nuolan Shan smiled.

“Ok, you can go.” Ming Yu said indifferently.

“Yes.” Nuolan Shan slightly bowed and walked to a corner of the bar, sitting with two familiar Universe levels. The entire bar was filled with Universe levels in groups, Domain Lords too, everybody was waiting for when the Star level 9s all returned.

In the bar, in a spot against the window, Ming Yu and Shao Dong Lai were engaged in conversation.

“The number of people who entered are certainly plenty.” Shao Dong Lao exclaimed.

“The two sacred lands, four organizations and sixteen families, added up together, it’s about 2 million Star level explorers!” Ming Yu too exclaimed, “Look, the Star level explorers outside getting ready to enter the World of Thunder have already formed such a long line, lining up to the skies.”

“Right.”

Shao Dong Lai glanced outside through the window.

The skies were completely covered and dark, almost as though a huge black cloud was covering the skies!

“You and I have both sent one thousand people in, who knows what we’ll get from it.” Shao Dong Lai shook his head.

“The Star levels fly really slow, and there are ferocious beasts blocking, even with a huge army who dare to fly strongly within, it would still take about seven to eight days to reach the Valley of Wind and Thunder!” Ming Yu shook his head, “Hence, those who take advantage of being there first, the first group of explorers within the World of Thunder, those are the ones most likely to acquire treasures within the world within a world.”

Shao Dong Lai nodded, asking, “How many do you have under you that were there initially?”

“No one, you should know too that the Three Axe Mountain doesn’t nurture young people.” Ming Yu shook his head, suddenly recalling, his eyes gleamed, “Right, the three youths that I recruited, the ones that I advised to take part in the universe missions. Back then it seemed as though they were quite moved by my speech, if they wanted to take risks then they could have very likely joined the mercenary trainee exams.”

“Three youths?” Shao Dong Lai was shocked.

“Right, it was Lord Man Luo who asked me to observe them, they are called Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God.” Ming Yu revealed a smile; “I’ll contact them now.”

“Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God?” Shao Dong Lai muttered, “Able to gain the attention of Lord Man Luo?”

It was dark night in the world within a world.

It was already the eighth day since they entered the world within a world, in a large plain field, with wild grass growing a plenty, the land slightly shook, following that with a boom, five human silhouettes emerged from the land.

“We’ve gone eight days without rest, it’s getting tedious. How come those Universe levels still aren’t arriving?” Thunder God mocked.

“Complaining after getting a good deal.” Hong laughed.

“It is tiring, however it is still thrilling.” Luo Feng was feeling extremely elated, Thunder God nodded, “Right, thrilling! Digging for universe crystals is thrilling, just thinking of how Earth’s price was 2.1 billion Ganwu dollars, and right now we’ve already dug up...about 96000 cubic meters of universe crystals, close to 300 billion Ganwu dollars, you could say we’ve dug up a 100 Earths

already.”

“This comparison is indeed interesting.” Luo Feng laughed out.

96000 cubic meters of universe crystals. It’s worth was 300 billion Ganwu dollars!

It was a huge sum.

To a Universe level warrior, this was already a huge sum of wealth. Discovering and excavating a new world was indeed a very thrilling matter.

“Hm?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“What’s up?” Hong and Thunder God looked at him.

“Give me a moment, I’ll enter the Virtual Universe Network. “Luo Feng said and closed his eyes.

……

Black Dragon Mountain Island, Nine Star Bay.

Luo Feng appeared within his own house, with a glance he saw Xu Xin who was checking through the news.

“Luo Feng?” Xu Xin stood up excitedly, “These few days you haven’t been entering the Virtual Universe Network.”

“It’s been busy these few days, time is money, time is power. These few days, every minute and second cannot be wasted.” Luo Feng laughed, these words made her suspicious: “What do you mean? These few days every minute and second cannot be wasted, where have you been these few days?”

“I’ll let you know when I return.” Luo Feng’s thoughts moved, a screen appeared before him with a message request.

It was the Virtual Universe Network company’s military department based in Black Dragon Mountain Empire, external department Ming Yu’s message request.

“Di.”

Luo Feng connected the call.

“Lord Ming Yu.” Luo Feng smiled at Ming Yu.

“Luo Feng, I want to ask you, are you in the world within a world in World of Thunder right now?”

Chapter 26 – The Central Area

“A world within a world?” Luo Feng looked at the screen, his heart trembled slightly.

Several thoughts raced through his mind, according to logic, his participation in the Universe Mercenary trainee exams wasn’t leaked out or divulged at all. The people who knew were very few! Even though ‘Heruo’ knew, he was from the Northern Dragon City, he didn’t have the rights to contact someone like Ming Yu! That, this Domain Lord, lord Ming Yu, how did he know he was in this world within a world?

“It’s not strange! Back then when I spoke to you three, I could see you guys had the idea of exploring the universe. And with your strength, the first mission you’d think of naturally would be the Universe Mercenary trainee exam. And within the entire Black Dragon Mountain star field, there’s only this World of Thunder.” Ming Yu was very frank and open.

Luo Feng looked at the tall and sturdy man man in the screen, “Lord Ming Yu, and the reason for your call?”

“This world within a world is something a very reputable Sector Lord within the last ten million years of the Black Dragon Mountain star field created, his name was Kabu, known as the Thunder Sector Lord.” Ming Yu swiftly spoke, “And this Sector Lord Kabu’s luck was really good, even amongst the Sector Lords he was very wealthy, with several very renowned treasures that would make even Sector Lords green with envy!”

Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat, asking, "The Lord Ming Yu, why haven't you all entered the world within a world?"

This question was something Hong, Thunder God and himself had been wondering for awhile.

"It's a long story, when you exit from the World of Thunder you will know." Ming Yu spoke in a low serious tone, "The reason for my call is to tell you! Even though non-Star level explorers are unable to enter the World of Thunder, however the treasures within are too alluring. Hence, the large organizations and powers within the Black Dragon Mountain star field have all sent out Star level 9 teams to enter the World of Thunder."

"What?" Luo Feng was shocked.

Teams and armies of Star level 9 warriors?

The entire Black Dragon Mountain star field, had over 8000 galaxies, and just the Silverblue Empire alone had over 500! Such a large area star field, sending out Star level 9 warriors, how many would that add up to?

"A total of how many?" Luo Feng asked.

"With the gathering of all the elite and upper echelon within the Black Dragon Mountain star field, organizing the Sector Lord meeting, the final verdict ended with the total number of explorers from all sides adding up to 2 million." Ming Yu said softly.

Luo Feng went silent.

Two million?

As the saying goes, the moment the numbers exceeded tens of thousands, it would already feel overcrowded. This two million strong army, the moment it was formed, that would be a sea of people that couldn't be seen end to end. And they were all Star level 9 warriors! A million strong army of Star level 9 warriors, even Universe levels who saw that would be scared and would retreat.

Even ants can bite an elephant to death!

To a Universe level warrior, Star level 9 warriors were akin to ants, however if it were 2 million ants, to be able to kill them all, his internal energy maybe not even be enough.

"The explorer teams are big and small. Some are underlings of Sector Lords while others are underlings of either Domain Lords or Universe levels." Ming Yu smiled, encouraging, "As they are not united, you don't have to be too worried, just as long as you hide and take cover, there's hope for your survival."

"Okay." Luo Feng couldn't relax at all.

Two million Star level 9 warriors!

It made one's scalp go completely numb! If it were a single Sector Lord, two million Star level 9 warriors wouldn't be an easy feat to gather, however since this was the combined forces of the entire Black Dragon Mountain star field, it was naturally simple.

"What a magnificent sight." Luo Feng sighed to himself.

"Lord Ming Yu, what's the reason for your call?" Luo Feng asked again.

"There's definitely a reason for my call." Ming Yu smiled, "I'll tell you, even though there's a huge army of 2 million Star level 9 warriors entering, the problem lies on Cang Lan Star, there's a huge gathering of all the strongest in the Black Dragon Mountain star field! Each district's strongest have gathered and barricaded Cang Lan Star, stopping other explorers from entering the World of Thunder, simultaneously... the moment somebody exits from the World of Thunder, like for instance, you, Luo Feng! As long as he isn't from either the two sacred lands, the four large organizations or the sixteen families...then the result and consequence, you should understand immediately."

Luo Feng's expression changed drastically.

That's too heinous!

The large organizations of the Black Dragon Mountain star field have teamed up, obviously all wanting to have pieces of the world within the world pie! As long as it wasn't from either of their powers, blackmail or threatening would be a simple let off, most

probably one would be robbed and killed altogether!

“Right now on Cang Lan Star, there’s a large group of Universe levels!”

“There’s over one hundred Domain Lords!”

“And close to ten Sector Lords!”

“Luo Feng, think about it, if you were to exit from the World of Thunder, wouldn’t the outcome be tragic?” Ming Yu smiled as he looked at Luo Feng, however with his huge tall and sturdy frame, his smile was indeed terrifying.

Luo Feng too was stunned.

Domain Lords?

Those were existences that could destroy life planets like Earth with a simple slap! The renowned interstellar fleets were nothing but playthings in the face of a Sector Lord. Even the Silverblue Empire trembled in fear of the Sector Lords. The Nuolan Shan family was nothing but ants compared to a Sector Lord, and there were close to ten of them here on Cang Lan Star?

My god!

“Lord Ming Yu, what should I do then?” Luo Feng looked at Ming

Yu, even though he had already guessed what this absolute warrior thought of already.

"You should have already guessed what I'm thinking."

Ming Yu said very casually, "Very simple, you guys are the first batch to enter the world within the world. And the other Star level 9 armies, even though they are huge in numbers, but they are still too late! You all are the ones with the most hope of acquiring the treasures. Sector Lord Kabu had many treasures that would make even Sector Lords grow green with envy, if you share some with me, I, this Domain Lord would be moved."

"The thing that you have to do is, after acquiring the treasures, find something that can interest me and give it to me!"

"Of course I will not mistreat you!" Ming Yu smiled.

"Also, wearing my banner, the other large powers naturally will not bother you."

.....

One had to be smart to become a strong warrior, hence Luo Feng naturally didn't reject his offer.

After finishing the conversation with Ming Yu, Luo Feng left the Virtual Universe Network.

“Sister-in-law, my big brother returned earlier?” Luo Hua seemed rather tired as he walked outside from the wooden house, sitting on a chair outside and sipping a drink was Xu Xin who nodded and smiled: “Right, he came into the Virtual Universe Network for awhile just now. However, he just returned to reality.”

“I have matters to tell him! Oh, I missed the chance.” Luo Hua creased his eyebrows.

“What matters?” Xu Xin closed her virtual diary, within the virtual universe , the screen could be set to display whatever and however, since Xu Xin came from Earth, she was already used to having a diary, she naturally relied on the quantum computer to assist her.

“It’s a meeting on Earth.”

Luo Hua explained, “The leaders of the countries of Earth had a meeting, they were thinking of ...sending out a few pioneers out into the universe to establish contact with the universe.”

“What?” Xu Xin creased her eyebrows.

“Humans are that way. Since they had the transmitter helmets and connected with the Virtual Universe Network, now they want more, not just virtual, they want to experience the real thing.” Luo Hua shook his head, “They told me to tell my brother, since I’m just a messenger, I have no power or say.”

“Don’t be worried.”

Xu Xin creased her eyebrows, “Your brother is currently very busy, when he’s done with it, you can tell him then.”

Luo Hua thought for awhile before nodding slightly, “Right, that’s good too.”

World within a world.

Within the grass fields, Luo Feng and his team squatted low.

“Third brother, your acceptance of Lord Ming Yu’s terms was right.” Thunder God thought as he nodded. “What he says makes a lot of sense, those large organizations have definitely teamed up and will not let any little shrimps without background leave with the treasures.”

“I thought so too hence I agreed.” Luo Feng nodded.

“However, I’m very worried about one thing now.” Thunder God creased his eyebrows, “When we leave, we have to leave with Ming Yu! However, if this Ming Yu secretly kills us and takes our treasures, he wouldn’t have to deliver on his end, and he’d be able to take all our treasures.”

“Right, we cannot be unguarded about this.” Hong nodded.

“I was worried about this too.” Luo Feng was troubled.

Working with Ming Yu, they could avoid dealing with the other powers. However if Ming Yu turned on them and killed them, what then?

A Domain Lord warrior, if he wanted to kill them it was as easy as flipping his hand.

“Relax Luo Feng.” A clear crisp voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind, “This Ming Yu actually sought you guys out as just another method for more treasures! One has to know, there are tens of thousands of people within the first batch who entered the world within the world! Tens of thousands of people fighting for the treasures, Ming Yu wouldn’t have too much faith in you guys getting the treasures,it’s just more of a comparison of your luck compared to the later 2 million army entering!”

“Also!”

“Right now on Cang Lan Star, Universe levels, Domain Lords and Sector Lords, large numbers of powerful people have gathered. This is a rare gathering within the Black Dragon Mountain star field! Anyone who dares to rob and kill on Cang Lan Star, the Sector Lords would be the first to notice. That Ming Yu isn’t that evil or stupid enough to make a move on Cang Lan Star. The strong all care a lot about reputation and respect.”

“Trust in the strong’s promise!”

“Especially where the strong gather, like Cang Lan Star. No matter how sly or devious one is, he still has to maintain the most basic behavior as a powerful person.”

Babata’s speech made Luo Feng realize.

That was true.

A Domain Lord warrior, an absolute warrior enough to terrify a basic level empire, especially in such a large gathering, indeed wouldn’t take his reputation as a joke.

……

“Right now the two million explorer army are steadily entering the World of Thunder. They only require about seven to eight days to reach the world within a world. Hence, we cannot stay in the edges around the world within a world anymore.” Luo Feng said softly, “We have to grasp the opportunity and head to the center region!”

“Right! Universe crystals are valuable.” Thunder God nodded, “However, the treasures that could make the Domain and Sector Lords go crazy are the real treasures.”

Hong slightly nodded.

“However we do have to be careful, there were tens of thousands of people in the first batch to enter.” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, “Especially the large organizations, powers, the little teams have all teamed up together. Compared to them, our team of five is simply too weak and little. Hence we have to remain discreet, we’ll discuss again after we’ve figured out the center region’s terrain.”

“That makes sense. The universe crystals are mostly situated around the center region, that place would definitely be filled with killing and robbing.” Thunder god was getting excited.

On the eighth day in the world within a world.

Luo Feng’s team hadn’t dared to go near the center region mostly because they had guessed that it would be chaos and killing there.

And right now, they had no choice but to go.

That was because in seven to eight days, the two million strong army would enter and they would first appear at the edges of the world.

“Let’s depart!” Luo Feng ordered.

The five man team immediately became five beams of light and headed towards the center region of the world within a world.

Chapter 27 – Black Eating Black

Flying within the world within a world, at least there weren't any ferocious beasts.

The ferocious beasts of the World of Thunder were specially chosen by the Universe Mercenary Alliance as part of the tests and shipped in. This world within a world was just discovered, hence it was still as it was! However…this new world made humans even more crazy. Luo Feng and his group were heading towards the center from the outer regions.

Within six short days, they encountered twenty one incidents of attacks on their lives!

The first day they encountered one.

The second day three times.

The third day two times.

The fourth day two times.

The fifth day five times.

The sixth day eight times.

Very clearly, the closer they got to the central region, the number

of robbing and killing explorers grew. Luckily Luo Feng could check within a 20km area, hence...even though they encountered twenty one attacks, they were only surprised occasionally, without any real losses.

And right now, was the seventh day.

“Looking at the position of the light ball, we should be pretty close to the central region, I estimate it should be either today or tomorrow that we arrive.” Luo Feng looked up to look at the light ball in the sky, its position was located exactly in the central spot of the entire world. Hence, as long as they proceeded towards the location of the light ball they would be heading towards the central region.

“The closer we get the more dangerous it’ll get, yesterday we actually encountered eight attacks from robbers.” Thunder God didn’t dare to relax.

“Universe crystals, large amounts of universe crystals do indeed make the explorers go crazy.” Luo Feng sighed.

Star level fighters and spirit readers.

On an aboriginal planet, they were deemed as kings and even tyrants! However in a Sector Lord’s world that was created with the formation of a large amount of universe crystals, they would go crazy.

“Everybody be careful.” Luo Feng’s expression changed.

“What’s wrong?” Hong, Thunder God, Ao Gu and Tie Nan He looked at Luo Feng.

“3 o’clock ahead, 19.2 km, there are fifty explorers, forty eight of them are Star level 9 warriors.” Luo Feng’s thoughts communicated with the rest, “Everybody change direction! Quickly!” Having been in this world for some time, Luo Feng’s group had had enough experience and immediately changed their direction and fled.

However after just 2 to 3 km of flight.

“Stop.” Luo Feng’s expression changed slightly.

They stopped suddenly, Hong and Thunder God were surprised as they came to a sudden stop, the strong weeds and grass below them dropped low as the wind pressure forced them down.

“What’s up?” Hong and Thunder God asked with their raw energy.

“There are fifty explorers ahead too.” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

“What?”

“We have to change our direction.” Luo Feng was very direct, the team once again changed their direction.

The team of five from Earth once again stuck close to the ground and flew, however in a blink of an eye, in a distant grass patch black silhouettes rushed towards the sky, at the same time from another direction another large group of black silhouettes swiftly flew over, a total of six groups of men flew over, very united as they surrounded Luo Feng’s team.

“There’s actually six groups, every group with fifty men? A three hundred man team!” Thunder God stared hard.

“Quickly flee!” Luo Feng ordered ferociously.

Rumble!

Ao Gu grabbed onto Thunder God and Hong while Luo Feng and Tie Nan He also fled at their greatest speed.

“Not good, they are faster than us.” Thunder God’s urgent message communicated via raw energy.

“Trouble.” Hong too was flustered.

Luo Feng lowered his head and looked at the screen on his arm, there were three hundred dots on the screen chasing their five! Very clearly these three hundred were one team being ordered about, they separated like a fan formation, the moment a little

team enters their area, the three hundred would surround them together and swallow them like eating dumplings!

“Luo Feng, they are faster than you.”

“Their leading batch are all Star level 9 spirit readers standing on flying spirit reader weapons. And you only have one such spirit reader and he’s carrying Hong and Thunder God. By my calculations, in another 600km, they would catch up.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

600km?

With the speed that they were flying at, 600km was too short.

“They are getting closer.” Thunder God said urgently.

“Follow me.” Luo Feng communicated mentally.

The five beams of light became one, swiftly flying, heading towards the distant lands, behind them were blurred images of lights that covered both land and sky, chasing after them. The three hundred beams of lights that chased them were led naturally by spirit readers with spirit weapons below them, and the fighters were a little slower, focused on protecting the elite.

“Master, the are just about to catch up to us.” Ao Gu said, “I’ll just carry you my master.” In Ao Gu and Tie Nan He’s eyes, they only recognize Luo Feng as their master, in times of crisis, they

would naturally want to protect him.

Luo Feng's eyes were fixed hard ahead, ahead was where the grass fields connected with the large forests.

"Ahead!"

"Down!" Luo Feng's voice ordered mentally.

The five rushed downwards immediately entering the forests.

The three hundred beams of light madly rushed downwards too, continuing their chase…after several minutes, they gathered in the air above the forests.

"Captain."

"Don't bother with them. A cold and cool youth with purple lips, dressed in a silver armor and black battle shoes, ordered, "This forest's area is too huge, it'd be hard for us to find them in there. Also, a small five man team probably wouldn't have acquired too many universe crystals. Return, we'll continue our hunt in the grass patches."

"Yes."

The three hundred beams of light swiftly returned.

……

In the forests.

Luo Feng and his team finally let out a sigh of relief.

“Luckily we managed to rush into the forests.” Thunder God let out a long sigh of relief.

“In the forest we have the advantage.” Hong slightly nodded, with the large amount of undergrowth and trees, it was easy to dodge and hide. And at this time, Luo Feng’s surveillance system was a great benefit.

“Luckily we escaped quickly, if we were slower by just a second it would have been over.” Luo Feng smiled, if they had been slower, then he would have to unleash the Golden Horned Beast! However if that had happened, the news of a Golden Horned Beast in the world within a world would spread like wildfire. A Star level 9 Golden Horned Beast would definitely still be considered an infant!

When that time came, even the Undying Beings would be attracted over!

Undying Beings, as long as they watched the entrance to the World of Thunder, it was simply like fish into a net, Luo Feng wouldn’t have anywhere to run!

“The Golden Horned Beast’s usage has to be at night, the moment

it’s used, we have to kill the enemies clean, we definitely cannot allow the news to be leaked.” Luo Feng thought secretly.

“Third brother, those grass patches are hard to hide in, just flying a little faster and the air waves would rustle the grass and alarm the explorers from before.” Thunder God said.

“The grass patches and flat land fields are more dangerous.” Hong nodded too.

“We’ll advance from the forest side. This detour wouldn’t be too much.” Luo Feng nodded.

……

However the closer they got to the center, the number and density of other explorer teams clearly grew. At the start of the seventh day, Luo Feng’s team immediately encountered three teams, of which two teams were over a hundred people! Against such a big team, Luo Feng didn’t dare use force against them, after all if a huge battle ensued, they might encounter losses on their side.

On the seventh day.

Luo Feng’s team had already progressed about eight hours in the forest, the light ball in the sky seemed to dim down a little.

About 120km away from Luo Feng’s team.

At the top of a huge and sturdy tree, there were three human silhouettes hiding within the leaves of the trees, these three even had binoculars, surveying down from above and looking far ahead.

“Captain.” One of them lowered his head to look down.

At the bottom of this sturdy tree, there were twelve humans resting.

“Hm?” One of which was green-skinned with a face filled with scars and dressed in a dark black colored alloy armor, with two axes on his back, . He creased his eyebrows and looked up.

“There’s prey, a total of five people.” The scout above said.

“Hm?”

The captain immediately flew up and floated within the leaves, grabbing the binoculars from one. Devices such as binoculars were a very normal thing for explorers, with many places in the universe with high gravity force, or magnetic fields, or under the effects of spirit readers. At those times, seeing with the naked eye was the best method, and with the binoculars, naturally it enhanced this much more.

“Hm, five people?” The captain looked through the binoculars, with his already amazing eyesight and the directions from his members beside, he very quickly spotted five silhouettes appearing

through the thick forest occasionally.

“Get up all of you, get ready to move.” The captain’s raw energy resounded.

Hu!

The group below all swiftly stood up.

“Captain, what’s the strength of the prey?”

“Don’t worry, there’s a total of five of them, they can’t be that strong.” The captain said, these words immediately made the members smile, they loved these hunts that didn’t entail much risks! And the rewards were always the highest, one had to know that the first batch to enter the world within a world, as long as they managed to survive the initial chaos and battles, would definitely have some treasures.

A few hundred cubic meters of universe crystals, that was very normal.

Outside, a few hundred cubic meters of universe crystals, one could buy a few Star level 9 slaves or even a ship!

“After risking it all this time, our later generations would be good for tens of millions of years.” Many members without hope of reaching Universe levels were simply wishing for the wealth to enjoy and nurture the later generations, etc.

……

“Quickly, be careful, don’t let these five fat sheep discover us. The moment they discover us, they’ll flee, it’d be very hard to find them in this forest again.”

“All be careful.”

“Quickly, another 20km.”

“10km.”

“5 km.”

“Everybody get ready…move!”

These fifteen hunters suddenly appeared from behind a large tree, or even rushing out fiercely from behind the trees, each with mad speed, becoming beams of lights and killing towards Luo Feng’s team.

……

“Xiu!”

A blue light flashed, its speed reaching critical point, forming a

single flash through thirteen silhouettes, cleanly cutting off the heads of thirteen Star level 9 explorers, fresh blood and brains flying about. The blue light then swerved and headed towards the two elites, of which the green-skinned captain's eyes were filled with fear, obviously he didn't expect the five weak and frail fat sheep to suddenly turn into ferocious wolves.

"Master, they've all been killed." Ao Gu said respectfully.

"Okay." Luo Feng nodded, looking at the scattered fifteen bodies around them, since the 20km distance, they had already discovered these fifteen people.

After surveying that of the fifteen, thirteen were Star level 9 explorers, Luo Feng naturally wouldn't escape, rather swallowing up his prey.

Even though...

Since rushing over from the outer regions to the center, over the course of seven days, they had encountered many robberies and attacks, many of which they had to escape. However there were still six times where the enemies were swallowed by Luo Feng! With Ao Gu and the hybrid copper essence shard, as long as it was within twenty Star level 9 explorers, it was a massacre.

"Check around, see how many universe crystals they had." Luo Feng started searching.

Chapter 28 – Enticement

“Wow, not bad. This fifteen man team actually has close to 8000 cubic meters of universe crystals.” Luo Feng laughed as he handed to the two new storage rings to Hong, “Big brother, you keep these.”

Hong extended his hand and caught them, “The more of these little teams we meet the better.”

“Right!”

Luo Feng smiled as he nodded, “With enough universe crystals, we’ll be able to buy Universe level slaves! That way, our Earth’s foundation would be a little more solid.” Right now, Earth, as an aboriginal planet was simply too weak. A slightly larger wave of power would cause it to capsize.

Hence, the three of them had to fight hard!

“Including this 8000 cubic meters, we have a total of…” Thunder God lifted his fingers, muttering, “In the past eight days, we dug up a total of 96000 cubic meters of universe crystals. During the time we rushed over here, it took about seven days, we dug up close to 26000 cubic meters along the way. Before, we had six attacks on us and we killed them, we acquired about 52000 cubic meters. Plus today’s 8000 cubic meters, a total of…haha, over 180,000 cubic meters!”

“These numbers, with just a thought, one should know the

answer already. Why do you even need to count with your fingers!" Luo Feng mocked jokingly, "second brother, look at yourself, do you even resemble the head of the Thunder Dojo? From what I see, you are just a small hawker selling tofu, counting his earnings for the day."

"I'm just that satisfied, what's wrong with that?" Thunder God blinked hard, rubbing his bald head, "Have you never seen that much money?"

Over 180,000 cubic meters of universe crystals!

This was a huge fortune. Even to the Nuolan Shan family, this was still a heavenly figure!

A normal life planet's cost price ranging up to a trillion Black Dragon dollars was not bad. A trillion Black Dragon dollars is around 700 million Ganwu dollars. One thousand life planets costs 700 billion Ganwu dollars. And with 18,000 cubic meters of universe crystals, the difference between that and 700 billion Ganwu dollars wasn't that much.

"World within a world, it's really a treasure trove." Hong couldn't help but exclaim.

"The construction of a world within a world is ten times harder than the construction of a normal world." Luo Feng laughed, "It needs to be even more stable, naturally requiring even more universe crystals! To build a world within a world, even to a pinnacle Sector Lord, that was still a high price! To the Sector

Lords, casually joining any empire and acquiring a galaxy as territory, one galaxy usually has tens of thousands of life planets, some even with millions of life planets."

"The wealth within this world within a world doesn't pale in comparison to an entire galaxy."

"What we've acquired now is only a drop in the ocean. Similar to a few planets only." Luo Feng said it casually, however he was very happy within.

The Nuolan Shan family's wealth was only about one thousand life planets.

Hence...

Discovering new worlds, Universe level warriors would fight and kill amongst each other, causing the loss of several strong warriors. And it's because of the wealth that motivates them. If it weren't for Rania blocking the entrance of so many strong warriors, would these Star level punks even have a chance of obtaining the treasures and wealth?

"Only 180,000 cubic meters of universe crystal! In the universe the little corner of the milky way, that's considered an absolutely wealthy person. However, our wealth right now is only about one third of the Nuolan Shan family's." Luo Feng smiled, "Compared to a Domain Lord, we are severely lacking! Hence we all have to continue working hard!"

“Haha, right, still not enough.” Thunder God laughed.

“The chance of a world within a world is something one rarely encounters even in ten thousand years, if we don’t work hard to gather what we can now, how would we be worthy of ourselves?” Hong chimed in and laughed.

“Let’s go!” Luo Feng waved the allow battle knife he held in his hand, pointing towards the center region.

The sunlight shone down, the battle knife’s reflection was glaring.

“Third brother, your posture seems somewhat flashy.”

“Can’t I be happy for a bit?”

“Haha…”

Luo Feng’s team was feeling good and happy, laughing for quite a bit, after which continuing their trek towards the central region.

******

When night fell, Luo Feng and his team finally reached the central region, at this time, their wealth had already risen to over 190,000 cubic meters of universe crystals. The reason for such earnings, one, was due to Babata’s surveillance device, two was

because of the combination of Ao Gu and the hybrid copper essence shard that gave them an overwhelming strength.

……

At the central region of the world within a world, it was a beautiful flat land, it's surface was filled with peculiar short flowers and grass, these flowers and grass were about 10 cm high, very orderly, as though someone maintained and trimmed them.

The land was flat with little uneven patches.

"My god."

"Just how many have died here?" Luo Feng and his team were extremely shocked in the night at the flat land.

Late night, the sky occasionally emanated a little white light, causing Luo Feng to be able to somewhat make out within the surrounding 100m area with a look. Just within that area there were over thirty bodies, male and female, their appearances similar to beast men, while others like that of Earth's, all of them dead, their bodies even torn open.

"Snap!" Luo Feng's alloy boots, that pure alloy boots' sturdiness stepped on some bones, causing the sound.

"This…"Luo Feng creased his eyebrows slightly.

“Third brother, what you said before was indeed right, the central region is indeed the place where mass killings occur.” Thunder God said seriously, “We haven’t entered this area for that long and we’ve already seen bodies in the hundreds! The entire central region is so huge, just how many have died?”

“The central region, has 99% of the universe crystals of the world within a world, hence the killings here are naturally the craziest.” Luo Feng sighed.

“If we were here, we’d be killing too.” Hong exclaimed.

Ninety nine percent of the universe crystals were here in the central region.

The central region was the cornerstone of the entire world within the world, hence the universe crystals would be here to protect it. The cornerstone wasn’t meant to be dug up, the moment it was dug up, the entire world would collapse. A world’s construction was based on the universe crystals at the core supplying continuous energy, naturally they absorbed energy from the universe, this was why there were large amount of crystals around the center.

As for the distant regions, the places where Luo Feng and his team were digging.

Those were the scattered crystals, much lesser!

“Birds and animals die for food, humans die for wealth. That’s nature!” Luo Feng sighed, “Let’s go.”

The five were being extra careful, heading closer and closer towards the most central part of the central region. The places that they passed by, they would occasionally see deep holes in the ground, obviously dug up universe crystals from before, surrounding these deep holes were usually several dead Star level bodies, their blood all dried up.

One hour later.

“Get down!”

“Forward.”

Luo Feng’s team were all sprawled on the ground, coming to a slightly protruding hill peak, looking at the distance. From far they could make out some light, at the same time spotting many human silhouettes.

“That’s...” Luo Feng flipped his hand, retrieving a binoculars, this was something that they hadn’t purchased before entering, however after killing the team from before, they discovered its special usage and naturally took it for themselves.

“That’s a lot of people.” Looking through the binoculars, Luo Feng clearly saw many silhouettes up to a 100 km away.

“Damn.” Beside, Thunder God was also holding a pair of binoculars, muttering, “That’s about a thousand of them.”

“That’s quite a number.” Hong nodded.

“There’s sound.” Tie Nan He said, “Right, there’s sound.” Ao Gu said too.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God looked at Tie Nan He and Ao Gu, these two were Star level 9 bodyguards, their hearing and seeing ability far exceeded Luo Feng and his brothers.

“What did you say?” Luo Feng asked.

“Master, if you head forward one to two hundred kilometers, you’d be able to hear it clearly.” Ao Gu explained.

“Alright.” Luo Feng nodded.

Afterall they were close to 600 km away from the large army, another one to two hundred kilometers ahead should still be within a safe range. “Forward!” Luo Feng and his team carefully but swiftly headed forward, as they grew closer, they began to hear shouting noises.

“Attention all explorers! Normal worlds alone would make Universe levels and even Domain Lords go crazy. This world

within a world is ten times more than a normal world, ten times more valuable! Hence right now on Cang Lan Star, at the entrance to the World of Thunder, there are already large numbers of Universe levels, Domain Lords and even the great Sector Lords!”

Our Black Dragon Mountain star field’s two sacred lands, four large organizations, sixteen families have all brought their strongest over!”

“The treasures in this world within a world is destined to be for our Black Dragon Mountain star field to obtain.”

“Hence, all the large powers have all agreed, if someone wasn’t from our two sacred lands, four large organizations or sixteen families, the moment they leave the World of Thunder, they would immediately be captured.”

……

The voice from far away was huge and broadcasted over a 100 km, Luo Feng and his group heard it clearly. Obviously it was intentional.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances, they had realized this from Ming Yu’s words earlier.

After which, Luo Feng and his group continued to listen.

……

“No matter how many universe crystals, or even if you acquired some special treasures, it’s useless! As long as you are not from our two sacred lands, four large organizations or sixteen families, the moment you are captured, you’ll be dead!”

“And right now, you all have a chance.”

“As long as you join our North Dragon Castle, temporarily becoming one of our external members! Our North Dragon Castle, with our name and reputation as guarantee, will ensure that when you leave the World of Thunder and return to Cang Lan Star, you’ll receive our protection. You won’t be captured! As for your previously acquired universe crystals, no one will take them from you. All you need to do is join us and help us, the North Dragon Castle get treasures!”

……

“As long as you join our Hundred Tiger Building, temporarily! You’ll definitely be safe!”

“The universe crystals you’ve acquired won’t be touched, we just need to you follow our orders and join us, help our Hundred Tiger Building acquire treasures.”

……

Thick strong voices of universe language spread throughout the

entire flat lands.

Luo Feng and his team exchanged glances.

That's right!

Hundred Tiger Building, North Dragon Castle, Black Cloud Guild, sacred land Black Dragon Mountain, sacred land Ice Neptune Country. Right now they were all madly enticing explorers, with their organizations' names as guarantee, to not touch their previously acquired universe crystals.

"Right, universe crystals? Even all the universe crystals within the world within a world wouldn't make the four large organizations or two sacred lands care less." Luo Feng nodded slightly, "What they care about is the important treasures within Sector Lord Kabu's world. Those are the real treasures!"

"Right now they are roping in explorers." Hong laughed, "Seems right, the four large organizations, two sacred lands explorers that came here are all for the mercenary trainee exams, they are all elites. Since they are elites, there wouldn't be too many. I'm afraid the organizations would only have about a hundred to a few thousand people. The real people with power are those with tens of thousands of explorers!"

Coming from different countries, galaxies and races.

Large numbers of explorers didn't have any background or

support!

They were weak.

However, they had numbers! Added together, they far exceeded the numbers of the four large organizations and two sacred lands.

“What should we do?” Hong creased his eyebrows.

Chapter 29 – Younger Brother Luo Hua

“Why aren’t there any Three Axe mountain people?” Thunder God suddenly said.

Luo Feng was stunned, right, the five shouting voices were individually from Hundred Tiger Building, North Dragon Castle, Black Cloud Guild, sacred lands Black Dragon Mountain and Ice Neptune Country, there weren’t any from Three Axe Mountain.

“Let’s ask Heruo.” Hong said.

“Right.” Thunder God nodded.

“Nan He, Ao Gu, you two help keep guard.” Luo Feng said.

Following which, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God closed their eyes and their consciousness entered the Virtual Universe Network.

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain Island, Nine Star Bay living district.

“Madness, madness, madness.” Luo Hua rampantly tugged at his own hair, at a loss, he along with Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan were all sitting together surrounding a table, in their own garden sipping tea.

“Little Hua, what are you thinking about, why so troubled?” Luo Hong Guo lifted a cup of tea and smiled.

“Why is it wrong, no, it should have risen greatly, it’s the problem with the capacity, the movement of the assets in the other stocks, seeing that there’s momentum in the movement, it should either fall greatly or rise greatly, not stagnate this way.” Luo Hua seemed in pain, “Dong Hua Star field is even rushing to sell off. How could this happen, how could this happen! The speed is not keeping up at all, not at all.”

“What are you saying Little Hua?” Gong Xin Lan smiled.

“The capital utilization rate is not right.” Luo Hua looked up and glanced at Gong Xin Lan, “Mom, don’t interrupt me, I’m thinking.”

“Tsk tsk, on Earth, don’t you play with the stock market a lot? What’s wrong now, weren’t you very confident last night during dinner?” Gong Xin Lan said jokingly.

“It’s different.”

Luo Hua shook his head, “Every investment I make, I first have to establish my own working system. And on Earth, the way the stocks work, is very different from how the universe one works. It’s almost like a second class world compared to a third class world. Also in the virtual universe, I can invest in many places, like the Black Dragon Mountain star field, along with the Dong Hua Star field, etc, even in other Empires.”

“One never knows, a few absolute warriors may battle and destroy an entire organization.”

“Hence, the investment is very complicated, it changes extremely fast!”

“Just like the stock market on Earth, it takes a decade for a single large market! However it’s different in the universe, different levels of empires have different economies and power, some are religious countries while others are empire controlled. If you say that the financial market on Earth is like a flat brook, then the universe financial market is like a huge ocean with a magnitude 12 typhoon!”

“It’s filled with dangers and opportunity!”

“The powerful and adept, can in ten days to half a month increase their capital by a thousand times!”

“At the same time, these well adept could lose everything if they were to meet with a barrier.” Luo Hua shook his head, “Right now I’m only a small shrimp, rolling behind people’s frontal charge.”

“You are still considered a small investor?” Luo Hong Guo stared, “These few months, haven’t you said that you’ve made ten times more than your initial capital?”

“Taking a few months to make ten times more is considered

normal.” Luo Hua shook his head, “The changes in the universe financial market are extremely fast, faster than Earth’s by hundreds to thousands of times! The dangers are also hundreds to thousands of times more! I wanted to guarantee the safety of my capital, hence I only made ten times of the amount. However from yesterday to today, I lost 30%, losing close to 2 billion Ganwu dollars.”

“What?” Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan stared.

2 billion Ganwu dollars!

Luo Feng had given Luo Hua 500 million Ganwu dollars before, Luo Hua had almost peaked at 10 billion Ganwu dollars after.

“Relax, I’m considered very stable already.” Luo Hua shook his head, after which he smiled at his parents, “However dad and mom, honestly, I feel that the financial market in the universe is more meaningful, surging with momentum, gives one the feeling of being pushed around by the big waves, thrilling!”

“Thrilling is good, but you lost 2 billion Ganwu dollars! Your brother spent only 2.1 billion Ganwu dollars to buy Earth.” Luo Hong Guo was obviously unhappy.

He was unhappy with the loss of such a huge figure.

“2 billion Ganwu dollars is nothing.”

Luo Hua shook his head and laughed, “Dad, mom, you have to open your eyes and look further! The universe financial market, a few absolute oligarchs, even kingdoms that control up to middle level empires, those are the true heavenly amounts of wealth. A few universe absolute warriors all mixed up in it. These waters are indeed very deep.”

“I’m just a small shrimp. This level of financial markets that transcend universe empires, the lowest level of investment is 100 million Ganwu dollars. If not for big brother giving me a sum at first, I would probably be able to only mess around in our own empire, unable to participate in many other investment markets.”

Suddenly...

In the garden of the 3 level building, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God appeared. Their three families all built on the same plot of land.

“What lowest minimum investment is 100 million Ganwu dollars?” Luo Feng walked over.

“Big brother.” Luo Hua stood up, “Just encountered some little trouble, lost some money.”

“How much did you lose?” Luo Feng sat down casually, lifting a cup of tea and drinking.

Right now in the world within a world, the large powers were

busy enticing others to join them, Luo Feng wasn't too worried.

"About 2 billion Ganwu dollars." Luo Hua said.

"Ah!"

A mouthful of tea was spat out right onto Luo Hua's body.

"Big brother..."Luo Hua looked helplessly at Luo Feng.

"How much did you say, 2 billion Ganwu dollars?" Luo Feng stared, damn, the metal that he bought for himself, he had to first consider the price etc, the first amount of money he got from his teacher was only 10 billion Ganwu dollars, and finally buying Earth, the universe ship, slaves, planet defense system etc, giving some money to his brother, Hong and Thunder God, the amount of money he had left wasn't even 5 billion Ganwu dollars.

Of course, right now he had struck a huge amount in the world within a world.

"Big brother, don't make a big fuss over nothing will you?" Luo Hua said, "I still have over 3 billion now."

"Over 3 billion Ganwu dollars?" You are sure it's Ganwu dollars?" Luo Feng stared.

"Right! Ganwu dollars!" Luo Hua nodded.

“Damn!”

Luo Feng stared, and at this time Hong and Thunder God walked over too. Hong laughed, “Luo Feng, why haven’t you contacted Heruo, what are you talking about?”

“My little brother was playing in the financial market of the universe or something and lost 2 billion Ganwu dollars.” Luo Feng said, Hong and Thunder God were both stunned, “Also, he still has over 3 billion dollars left. I’m making it clear, I only gave him 500 million Ganwu dollars.”

Hong and Thunder God both stared at Luo Hua.

“Why are you all looking at me like that?” Luo Hua seemed dumbfounded, “It’s normal, investments all depend on capital.”

“A capital of 100 million Ganwu dollars, 5 times becomes 500 million Ganwu dollars.”

“And with a capital of 10 billion Ganwu dollars, 5 times, becomes 50 billion Ganwu dollars.” Luo Hua said, “The larger the capital, naturally the amount one makes would be more. Similarly...the losses too would be greater. What I need to do is to lower my chances of loss as much as possible, cutting down on the chances and increasing my chances of rewards!”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God all exchanged glances.

“Di!”

“Your account has received an amount of 4 billion Ganwu dollars.” A message appeared on a screen before Luo Hua, he was stunned.

“Don’t look, it’s for you.” Luo Feng looked at Luo Hua.

“Big brother, why are you giving me so much?” Luo Hua said, “I have no way to guarantee no losses, the changes in the financial market in the universe are extremely fast, I can only guarantee... that the maximum amount of losses would be 30%.” Luo Hua was Luo Feng’s natural brother, born with natural genius, along with studying under the largest investors and elites on earth, he was definitely one of the biggest and most influential investors on earth.

Maybe the financial markets of earth compared to that of the universe were considered small and immature.

However thinking wise.

There were many thoughts in the investments of Earth, many old theories, it was indeed unique. At least Luo Hua, who had just entered the universe financial market for not too long, has quickly adapted and even made profit. Falling a little occasionally could only add to his experience and improve his investing strategies.

According to Luo Hua's words through his experiencing failure time and again, increasing his experience constantly, only that way could he improve on his loss and rewards ratio and control it better. With that, he would be better prepared and he would never let the failure knock him down.

"It's only a 30% loss, go ahead and invest." Luo Feng smiled.

"This financial market really has such a huge turnaround, it's terrifying. However... my younger brother does indeed have talent in this." Luo Feng thought to himself, "Hm, in the future, whatever I earn, I'll pass 30% to him and let him invest. I believe that'll allow him to progress and improve even further!"

.....

After completing his conversation with his younger brother, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God contacted Heruo.

"Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, seeing the three of you makes me happy." Heruo on the screen was extremely excited, "There's been too many deaths in this world within a world, it's simply too savage."

"To be able to see you too, we are very happy." Hong laughed.

"Heruo, right now the large organizations are all pulling in explorers?" Luo Feng asked.

“Right.”

Heruo nodded, “We North Dragon Castle, along with the Hundred Tiger Building, Black Cloud Guild and the two sacred lands are all pulling in explorers! To be able to gather any treasures, the first thing you need is numbers!”

“The Three Axe Mountain isn’t pulling anybody in?” Thunder god asked.

“Oh, the Three Axe Mountain is different from the other three organizations. The Three Axe Mountain is known as the leader of the four organizations! They do not nurture the youth. To actually be able to join the Three Axe Mountain, the lowest qualification is to be Universe level. As they don’t nurture any new people, hence in this world within a world, you only occasionally see a disciple from the Three Axe Mountain, with little people, hence they have no power.” Heruo explained.

Luo Feng, Thunder God and Hong realized.

No nurturing of the young, hence the number of people taking part in the trainee exams was naturally small. No wonder Ming Yu looked for them.

“Hence, it’s mostly our five sides in competition.” Heruo smiled, “Luo Feng, right now we’ve already mostly confirmed the location of the treasure. However the five sides are all fighting for it, hence they are all working hard to pull new people in. Luo Feng, you all should join our North Dragon Castle, just temporarily.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were shocked.

“You all are sure of where the treasure is hidden?” Luo Feng and Thunder God said almost simultaneously.

“Right,” Heruo nodded, “We have a 90% certainty of where it’s hidden. Right now it’s being watched by the five sides! If you don’t join any of our five sides, you wouldn’t even have a chance to get it.”

“Huh?”

Luo Feng and the other two nodded slightly, they exchanged glances and made up their minds.

Chapter 30 – Opening The Treasure Trove

World within a world, dark night.

Luo Feng and his team of five temporarily joined the North Dragon Castle faction. The entire central region had been split into five big factions.

The North Dragon Castle faction.

“Senior, these are the ones I mentioned, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God.” Luo Feng and his team were talking to the people of the North Dragon Castle, Heruo was introducing the teams, “This is my senior Kazan Lun.”

“So it’s you all that saved my two juniors, thanks. Oh, I still have important matter to attend to, I’ll let Heruo entertain you all.” Kazan Lun smiled as he left, his entire body was skinny, height about 1.5m, eyes glowing slightly green, he had a heavy aura about him.

They watched as Kazan Lun left.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances, obviously this guy didn’t care much about them, it was only out of respect for Heruo that he came over to say hello.

“My senior is like that, please don’t mind him.” Heruo explained.

“No problem.” Luo Feng smiled.

“Our North Dragon Castle faction has a total of about 2100 people, every 100 forms a square formation. The main reason is to prevent any chaos from happening.” Heruo pointed at their surroundings, they were surrounded by explorers, every 100 of them gathered together, that way, if any group were to have any incidents, it wouldn’t affect the others.

“Where would you like to go? There are six square formations that are pretty lacking.” Heruo smiled.

“As close to the main formation of the North Dragon Castle organization as possible.” Luo Feng said.

“Alright, no problem.”

……

Luo Feng’s team was situated in the 18th formation of the North Dragon Castle Faction.

Daybreak, on the second day.

After half a night of talking to the other members of the other formations, Luo Feng’s team had come to know of many new things and news.

“So the treasure trove is there!” Luo Feng looked at the center position of the five big factions, a dark blue castle was constructed there on the flat lands.

“The guesses of the five big factions are indeed rational.” Thunder God nodded, “In this entire world within a world, with the swamps, deserts, lakes, flat lands, mountain ranges, grass lands, etc, they are all natural environments. There’s only this one construct! And it is located in the most central position of the world within a world. Above it is a ball of light! This sort of position for this castle, it is very likely the position of the treasure trove.”

“Treasure trove!”

“The treasure trove must be within this castle, however with the five factions around, no one dares to make a move.” Luo Feng shook his head.

Hong laughed, “It’s very normal, in the beginning, there weren’t too many of the five faction people here, they were worried that the moment the battles began, it would allow a large number of the other explorers to gain rewards through the chaos, hence they began recruiting people, when one side does it, the others naturally joined in! In the meantime, they looked for an opportunity to begin their excavation and robbing.”

“Who knows until when we’ll wait before anyone makes a move.” Thunder God muttered.

“They are not rushed. The first group of people from the outside of the two million army have just begun to enter the world within a world.” Luo Feng smiled, “From the outer regions of the world within a world to the central region, it would still take about another seven days.”

“Hence, the battle could very likely explode within seven days!”

Luo Feng’s predictions weren’t wrong, on the third day of joining the North Dragon Castle faction, a big incident happened.

World within a world, the white ball of light floated in the air, emanating light below.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

The sky was filled with blurred images of black silhouettes suddenly flying towards the five factions from afar.

“So many people?”

“How did so many people appear in such a short time?” There was some distress within the five factions.

The group Luo Feng was in all looked up into the sky, just a glance and one could make a guess of the numbers: “About 600 of them? Also from the looks of it, they are all from one power. 600 over people, to the five factions, this totally affected the balance.”

Five factions, over 10,000 explorers, all engaged in soft discussion.

“Black Dragon Mountain Empire, Saqisen greets the ninth prince your majesty!” A booming voice resounded through the air.

“Greetings to the ninth prince your majesty!”

Neatly in a single row, almost as though a rumble through the air, a large group of the Black Dragon Mountain sacred land people all bowed in unison. Within the 600 or so people in midair was one particular youth with white pale skin. The youth stood in mid air, his eyes like lightning, surveying his surroundings, his voice boomed at all below him, “I, the Empire’s ninth prince Brolin, am here to take the treasure trove. Anybody who defies me will die!!!”

Silence!

The entire five factions had all gone silent, the Black Dragon Mountain faction naturally supported the emperor, as the sacred land Black Dragon Mountain was the emperor’s roots!

And the other four factions were in chaos at the moment.

“Powerful.”

Among the crowd, Luo Feng looked up high at the flamboyant

ninth prince, exclaiming within, “This ninth prince didn’t appear initially, he was constantly pulling people in in other areas, and now at the most critical time he’s appeared! In a short amount of time he increased the power of the Black Dragon Mountain by a lot, making the other four factions unable to do anything.”

……

On the flat lands, the other four factions were buzzing with discussions.

“Ninth prince your majesty.” A loud powerful voice resounded from the Hundred Tiger Building faction. A tall and sturdy looking youth, on his forehead were two curved black horns, he looked up at the ninth prince, saying, “This world within a world’s treasure trove, for you, one person to take it all, don’t you think…”

“Chi!”

A blinding white light pierced right through that tall and sturdy youth suddenly, his head vaporizing to nothing.

Silence!

The five factions were all stunned.

Within sight was still a slight glimmer of white light residue from before, everybody was stunned, they understood what just happened! At that moment, a laser beam killed the leader of the

Hundred Tiger Building.

……

Amongst the crowds.

Luo Feng and his team were shocked, Thunder God said softly, “That’s too fast, that laser weapon didn’t even need any preparation time before it fired.”

“It was indeed fast, killing in an instant.” Luo Feng was shocked within.

Back when he used the B6 grade laser cannon to attack the golden horned beast! That laser cannon still required a certain amount of time before it could fire, and just now…that laser beam didn’t seem to require any time at all.

……

In the air.

Behind the ninth prince, the nine bodyguards, all of them holding within their hands a weapon akin to earth’s singular rocket launcher, about 3m long with an opening of about 30cm.

“Let me introduce to everyone.”

“C2 grade laser cannon, nine of them! These are the latest models, we just acquired them.” The ninth prince surveyed the crowds below, discovering that the leaders of the other factions had gone all pale, he laughed, “It’s power, one shot alone can almost kill a Universe level 2 warrior. This time I came into the World of Thunder to take part in the trainee exam, for safety sake, I brought a few. I never expected this world within a world to happen.”

“I believe no one else wants to get in my way?”

The ninth Prince Brolin surveyed everyone below with his gaze.

Everyone just stood dumbfounded.

Nine C2 grade laser guns, normal energy grade weapons reaching the C grade was already legendary. Very hard to purchase, even if one managed to buy one, it would be extremely costly! One C2 grade laser gun, in terms of price, wouldn’t even be that much cheaper than a Universe level 1 or 2 slave.

An astronomically priced weapon!

“Very well. Everybody is cooperating.” The ninth prince smiled as he looked around below, 600 of them followed suit.

Following which, the ninth prince took the 600 over people and a large army of the Black Dragon Mountain and headed majestically towards to castle. The other four factions all hesitated but slowly

followed behind, towards the castle.

The crowds headed forward, Luo Feng and his team were mixed in with the North Dragon Castle faction.

“Damn, just like that he’s taking everything?” Thunder God stared.

“We are helpless.” Luo Feng looked in the distance, at the most foremost person leading.

“He has nine C2 grade laser guns, he could be said to be invincible now. He even has three to four thousand people below him! The strongest strength with large numbers, along with the title of prince, a prince of the Black Dragon Mountain, killing those elites of the organizations without any hesitation at all.” Hong shook his head, “This way, with his attitude and momentum, no one can stop him.”

Luo Feng and his team could only watch on.

……

North Dragon Castle, Black Cloud Guild, sacred land Ice Neptune Empire, the four large faction armies, they could only watch as this happened.

The nine C2 grade laser guns, in a place where there are no Universe level explorers, that was indeed an invincible weapon to

have! Whoever they wanted to kill...no one could escape. If it were just the nine laser guns, it wouldn't be enough to scare of the other four large factions of explorers. The main thing was that he still had three to four thousand people under him!

"Stop!" The ninth prince raised his left hand high.

Shua!

The armies of the Black Dragon Mountain sacred land stopped, the other four factions all stopped too.

Among the distant crowds.

"Majestic." Thunder God exclaimed softly.

"This is power, big power." Hong sighed.

"No one can stop him." Luo Feng watched quietly.

The ninth prince Brolin ordered and everybody simply stopped. And Brolin took his nine bodyguards and headed towards the castle. Under the gaze of about ten thousand people, he carefully headed towards the castle.

"Sang Bi, open the castle for me." The ninth prince Brolin pointed at the castle.

“Yes.”

Behind him one of the bodyguards complied, with curly hair dressed in black alloy armor, a helmet automatically grew on him and wrapped him up. Following which he carefully walked towards the ancient castle, this ancient castle that no one had opened in 10 million years.

The castle’s huge door was about 12m high, 8m wide.

The bodyguard walked up to the door and placed both hands on it, forcefully using strength...

……

Over ten thousand explorers were staring at this castle...

The ninth prince Brolin too was staring at the castle, his face flushed red with excitement...

Among the crowds, Luo Feng and his team of five were also watching the bodyguard push at the door from far...

……

Following the bodyguard’s use of strength, the door slightly trembled, flecks of dust falling all over.

“Chi chi…”

Electric snakes fiercely rushed out from the castle, large amount of thunder surrounding the entire castle, within an instant, the bodyguard wasn’t able to retreat at all, the electric snakes weaved through his body. Almost as though he was fried, with a ‘Chi’ sound, that bodyguard was reduced to ashes, all that was left was the burning red alloy armor.

This scene caused the over ten thousand explorers to be shocked.

“This…” The ninth prince had cold sweat beading down from his forehead, with a flash he hid behind his other bodyguards, if it were he who pushed the door, he too would have died.

The electric snakes continued to revolve around the castle.

There was an increasing amount of thunder and lightning, gradually, the entire castle became a thunder castle, engulfed within the electricity.

Luo Feng’s team amongst the distant crowds were all shocked from witnessing this scene.

Chapter 31 – 312 Pieces of Treasure

Over 10,000 explorers all looked over, all equipped with alloyed armors, split into five big factions, almost like a metal army altogether! Under the glare of the thunder and electricity surrounding the castle, with occasional flares of green light, almost everybody's eyes were burning while fixed on the castle.

That, was the treasure trove of the world within a world!

"Oh? What's going on?" The ninth prince Brolin creased his eyebrows and looked.

"Your majesty, the other explorer armies from outside are still far from here. It's still early, we have sufficient time!" Of the nine bodyguards, one lady with green hair said softly, "Right now we have the absolute advantage, we'll slowly survey this. The treasure trove in this world within a world will definitely belong to you."

Brolin looked ahead solemnly, that lofty ancient castle enveloped in the protection of the thunder.

Suddenly...

"Kakakakaka..." The castle made a low noise, the huge doors of the castle began to slowly open.

"The door is opening!" The ninth prince Brolin who was surrounded by his bodyguards looked as his eyes gleamed, almost

like a ravished wild dog spotting bones, “There’s a 99% probability there’s treasure within!”

Kaka...

The huge castle doors slowly opened, allowing the people outside to faintly see the blurry interior. This made everyone who gathered outside to stare wide-eyed, with many even taking out their binoculars, etc, all highly anticipating to see what’s within.

Star level 9 warriors, maybe on several normal life planets like Bai Lan Star, they could be considered powerful and tyrants.

However in the entire galaxy, even the Black Dragon Mountain star field, they were only normal soldiers, cannon fodder, bodyguards!

This group of cannon fodder were allowed the chance to explore this world within a world only because of lady Rania’s powerful background! This allowed 99% of this group of people to experience the most glorious moment in their lives.

“The doors are open.” Among the crowds, Thunder God looked from far at the enormous thunder castle, “The treasures are about to be taken away.”

“Anyway, there’s nothing left for us.” Hong said softly.

Luo Feng lightly chuckled, “This treasure trove is too shocking,

what's more, there's that ninth prince. That is his majesty from the Black Dragon Mountain Empire! Also those C2 grade laser guns...even weaker Universe level warriors can be killed! We'll just watch the show, the real people who are unhappy are probably the other four faction leaders."

Luo Feng was very calm.

This treasure in the world within a world, naturally he wanted it too. Ambition was a good thing, however when the heat is on and one doesn't know his own power, he could lose his life very easily!

That laser gun would only require one shot...no one here could defend against it.

"Chaos."

"Only through chaos, or some other situation arising, might we be able to get something from the fray, right now, there's no hope." Luo Feng looked at the forefront of the crowd, the leaders of the four factions were all there.

.....

The Black Cloud Guild, the Hundred Tiger Building, North Dragon City, sacred land Ice Neptune, these four large factions, their Star level explorers and elite leaders, all of them seemed to have been intimidated by the ninth prince. No one dared to oppose or disrupt him, they could only watch quietly as things unfolded.

“Ka!”

The castle doors opened fully.

Silence.

The fully opened castle, no one dared to enter first. The ninth prince only looked on quietly, almost as though he was waiting for other things to happen.

“Your majesty?” The female bodyguard shouted seriously from behind.

“Don’t be anxious.” Brolin said softly, his eyes fixed dead on the thunder castle ahead.

……

Among the crowds, Luo Feng was also staring at the distant castle.

Suddenly…

The surface electricity and lightning swiftly vanished from the castle, however, the old and ancient castle seemed to have been revamped and looked totally new. “Tsk! Tsk! Tsk!” A voice resounded from the castle, the entire castle lit up with light, very

quickly engulfing the entire castle.

“Haha, hahaha...”

A carefree laughter resounded from the castle, reverberating throughout the entire place.

“Welcome everyone, to the world within a world. I’ve been waiting over 10 million years for this day!” A thick voice resounded through the land and skies.

……

Over ten thousand explorers were all shocked.

“What voice is this, who’s speaking?”

“No idea.”

“Don’t tell me the creator of this world within a world isn’t dead?”

“Dream on, the World of Thunder was discovered over ten million years ago, even Sector Lords can’t live that long, unless he was Undying.”

“Back then if the Sector Lord had become an Undying and hid

himself in this world within a world for ten million years, is that possible? He may be perverted.”

Outside the castle, over ten thousand explorers were engaged in discussion, of which Luo Feng and his two brothers were just as shocked.

“This?” Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances.

“What’s with this?” Luo Feng said softly.

“Do you even have to ask, after living for so long, the dead Sector Lord definitely had an AI to assist him.” A condescending voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind, “Loneliness for ten million years, I wonder if the AI managed to evolve to a living AI, if he did, ten million years of loneliness would probably have messed him up!”

“Mad?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

……

The leaders of the five big factions including the ninth prince stared at the castle.

In the air above the castle, beams of light gathered, finally forming a virtual human silhouette, it was a fat chubby old white man, this old man squinted his eyes and surveyed the over ten thousand people, this made the explorers all shocked, those present were mostly experienced.

The light human silhouettes were normally AIs or technology created.

“Little punks, for you to have come here, you want to obtain the treasures in this world within a world?” The white bearded old man smiled as he gazed down, “Right, the master did put his treasure trove in this world within a world, and I’m guarding it.”

“The master had many treasures.”

“Look!”

The white bearded old man pointed beside him, in the air above the castle, lights gathered and a big screen appeared. On it were many many object pictures, different treasure pictures, there were so many one would be at a loss initially. And at the most central region, there was a peculiar colorful crystal ball.

“Inheritance crystal ball!” The ninth prince Brolin’s eyes lit up.

“It’s an inheritance crystal ball.” The other leaders of the factions all were very excited with anticipation.

Among the crowd.

Including Luo Feng, over ten thousand people watched the screen with its many pictures of treasures.

“The master has many treasures.”

“If I broke it down specifically, there are a total of sixty eight different treasures, three hundred twelve of them in all.” The white bearded old man pointed at the screen, immediately the screen arranged in order.

“No.1 The bank account to the entire spatial instruction manual inheritance crystall ball (three accounts)

No. 2 Master’s bank account

No.3 Domain lord bloodline evolution potion (one portion)

no.4...

.....

No. 68 level 5 genetic energy weapon ‘Fire Wheel’

Silence.

Everyone stared hard at the screen, it was too magnificent, some of the treasures had three or four of the same items, even six or seven. There were a total of three hundred twelve items!

“This is too, too…”

“Madness, madness.”

“The lousiest item is still a level 5 genetic energy weapon. My god!”

“Obtaining one treasure and I’ll be able to become Kuna Star’s leading wealthiest person.” over 10,000 explorers’ were going crazy, their eyes gleaming.

Luo Feng and his team were excited too, their eyes staring so hard they were almost popping out.

“This is too, too…” Thunder God’s mouth dropped open.

“No wonder the four large factions and two sacred lands don’t care about the universe crystals! The universe crystals added together can’t even compare to these treasures. The treasure no. 2 the bank account. A Sector Lord’s savings, just how much would it be? It would definitely be even more than the cost of all the universe crystals in this world within a world!” Luo Feng too was finding it hard to conceal his excitement.

“This Sector Lord is indeed very wealthy!”

Babata’s voice resounded within Luo Feng’s mind, “It’s too crazy, this Sector Lord definitely acquired some Undying Being’s inheritance. Otherwise it wouldn’t be that crazy! The entire set of

space techniques inheritance, this means that the entire secret techniques have been broken down. And the no.3 treasure, the bloodline evolution potion, represents a bloodline that can reach the Domain Lord at maturity bloodline! Like the Manka people.

"The moment it's used, one can completely change his bloodline."

"Also the ninth treasure, the life fruit, there's actually three of them! If a Sector Lord were to suffer heavy injuries, the moment he uses one he'll be fully recovered. To the Sector Lords, this could mean one more life altogether. Who knows how this Sector Lord died, never actually getting to use his life fruits."

"Really wealthy, really wealthy. Comparable to a poorer Undying Being." Babata was excited too.

Cang Lan Star, in a wooden house constructed at a peaceful lakeside.

In front of the house sat two men, even though they were sitting there, one gave off an aura of a large mountain, while the other gave off a chilly icy aura. The two were dressed in battle armors, their legs in boots, also both had black capes on.

The two were drinking wine of the highest quality.

"Hm?"

“Hm?”

The two revealed a slight sense of shock.

“This Kabu Sector Lord, was surrounded and killed by enemies, his treasures are indeed shocking.” The icy man couldn’t help but exclaim.

The tall and sturdy man nodded slightly, “Even a Domain Lord bloodline evolution potion, I wonder which race it is from.”

Among the human race, there were few that had bloodlines that reached Domain Lord at maturity.

And only these few races.

For example creating a Manka bloodline evolution serum, then, one would require killing six to seven Manka people to create it! Hence, these sort of things greatly angered the people of the stronger races. As their people were naturally small in population, they would kill those who owned these serums.

“Let’s go, to the base.”

“Right.”

The two men got up, shua! Their two silhouettes vanished, as for their real selves, they had already reached over ten thousand km

away at the Universe Mercenary Alliance base. Their immense speed didn't even damage their surroundings in the slightest.

World within a world.

In the air above the castle, light beams shone down, the white bearded old man pointed at the screen, smiling, "Have you looked closely enough, these are the treasures my master left behind."

Over ten thousand explorers looked up excitedly.

Who wouldn't want to obtain them?

Any one treasure alone was probably thousands to ten thousand times the Nuolan Shan Family's entire fortune.

Chapter 32 – Madness over the Treasures

Amongst the crowds, Luo Feng raised his head to look at the distant air above the castle, that screen that was formed from light. On it were sixty eight different types of heavenly treasures, this led to a strong sense of greed growing within him, out of the over ten thousand explorers around, none of them wouldn't want any of the treasures, the only thing was they didn't have the strength or power to obtain them.

"What a pity, no one dares to fight with the ninth prince. If things aren't chaotic, we can only sit quietly and watch." Luo Feng's gaze swept past the forefront, looking towards the ninth prince who was currently surrounded.

……

"Thinking of obtaining the treasures?"

The white bearded old man laughed carefree, "You just need to obtain Thunder stones to exchange for them! Every treasure here can be exchanged with Thunder stones. Look, these are the detailed prices of each treasure!"

Suddenly, the screen beside slightly changed.

"No.1 The bank account to the entire spatial instruction manual inheritance crystall ball (three accounts), every account is priced at 10 million thunderstones, three accounts as a set, one can retrieve the inheritance crystal balls from the Universe First bank.

No.2 Master's bank account, requires 8 million thunderstones.

No.3 Domain Lord bloodline evolution potion (one portion), every portion is priced at 3 million thunderstones.

No.4...

.....

No.9 Life fruit (three pieces), every one of them at 800,000 thunderstones.

.....

No.32 D6 grade Orbit cannons (three cannons), each of them priced at 210,000 thunderstones.

.....

No.68 Level 5 genetic energy weapon Fire wheel (one portion), every one is priced at 100,000 thunder stones.

The entire list had everybody jumping up in madness.

"What are thunderstones?"

“I’ve never heard of thunderstones before?”

“They are actually able to be swapped for these treasures, these thunder stones must be very valuable.”

The discussions were rampant.

“Aren’t you all very curious as to what the thunderstones are?” In the air above the castle, the white bearded old man formed by light smiled, “Thunderstone is the name I’ve given it, these type of stones is a special stone found only here in this world within a world, It isn’t really worth much money! However it is unique only to this world within a world.”

“Look carefully, this is a thunderstone!” A picture of a thunderstone appeared on the screen, simultaneously, a large amount of details introducing the stone.

Silence.

Over ten thousand explorers went silent.

Carefully examining the appearance of the thunderstone, or using the assisting AIs and quantum computers to swiftly record its appearance.

“However the thunderstones and universe crystals are different, the energy of the thunderstones are very low, hence your energy scanners will have a hard time locating them. In order to make

your lives easier…”

“This is a thunderstone location map.” The white bearded old man waved his hand and a map appeared on the screen, “This is the simplified map of the world within a world, according to its mountain regions, swamps, deserts, etc, it is segregated into twenty six regions. The thunderstones are separated into these twenty six regions on this map are how they are located.”

“Go on!”

“Go dig for the thunderstones! You can kill each other and steal, I don’t care. As long as you have sufficient thunderstones, you can exchange with me for any of the treasures.” The white bearded old man’s eyes gleamed with a sense of madness, “If you want the treasures, then go risk it all. I’ll be in the castle waiting for you all!”

“Obtain the thunderstones and come exchange with me in the castle for treasures!”

“Go on!”

The white bearded old man’s light image vanished, in the air above the castle, only the large screen remained.

Over ten thousand people were silent, after which the discussions began once again.

Among the crowds.

“That’s great.” Thunder God said softly, his face flushed with excitement.

Luo Feng too felt excitement within.

“Using thunderstones to exchange, which are unique to this world within a world. This living AI white bearded old man, just what is he thinking of?” Babata’s voice resounded, “From the way he spoke and gestured, this guy has definitely evolved into a living AI. Loneliness for ten million years..living AIs can also feel moved, longing, hate, loneliness, etc, after such solitude for so long, this white bearded old man must have gone crazy.”

“Babata, who cares if he’s crazy or not, as long as we can swap for the treasures.” Luo Feng said.

“Understood, it’s rare for me to meet another living AI, so I was just a little surprised.” Babata said.

Living AIs were extremely rare.

Because in order to evolve into a living AI, one first had to already be a high level AI. After which after experiencing a whole lot, over a long period of time, one may have a chance to evolve.

If it doesn’t evolve.

AIs, are just tools.

The moment however one broke through, he would become a special form of life altogether! Like the vast universe's pinnacle of strength race the automatons, this was a race of living AIs. Only having a machine body, etc living AIs.

"Grasp the time you have."

"Quickly quickly."

"No. 17,18 and 19 three big formations, you'll form one team. You'll head to the closest swamp region on the map and dig for thunderstones." The North Dragon City leader shouted loudly, swiftly dividing up the teams, "All explorers, if you want to leave the World of Thunder alive and leave Cang Lan Star, please help us."

"Quickly, move."

"This way, this way."

Below the castle, the five big factions swiftly began their actions, with two to three hundred people in a team, swiftly heading in all directions, the fight for the thunderstones had begun!

Everybody was clear...

The earliest to go dig meant the highest hopes of obtaining them.

……

Luo Feng and his team of five were the North Dragon City's 18th formation, they were gathered into a close to three hundred person team and were swiftly heading towards the swamp regions.

The vast number of people were all flying at breakneck speed.

"Madness." Thunder God shook his head, "This fight for the thunderstones will drive everyone crazy. I saw just now, the ninth prince right in front, his expression grew extremely ugly."

"How could he not?" Luo Feng smiled, "This treasure trove was originally all for his taking, who'd expect this to happen! It's right too, after a true absolute warrior's death, one would definitely have some sort of arrangement for his treasures and belongings after." Back then the Yun Mo Planet master too acted this way, this Kabu was the same.

"Luo Feng."

"Back when we first came in, checking along the way, I already discovered two places with the thunderstones. Only back then I felt they didn't have any value, hence I didn't care about them." Babata's voice resounded.

“Two places with thunderstones?” Luo Feng felt a mad rush of excitement within.

That simple map of the allocation of thunderstones was, very simple.

One had to know that with the world within a world spanning over a million km in vertically and horizontally, that map at most let people know that there were thunderstones at some places, as for the details, one still had to slowly search for them!

“The thunderstones’ energy reactions are very low, much lower than universe crystals. Hence it’s very difficult to search for them for the other explorers. At least, in this aspect we have the advantage.”

“However, when that 2 million man army arrives!”

“I believe that two million man army will definitely bring long powerful and valuable scanning devices. When that time comes, our advantage will be gone.” Babata said, Luo Feng understood and nodded, this treasure trove had attracted the largest powers within the Black Dragon Mountain Empire, how could the later armies not be fully prepared for it?

……

Close to three hundred people in this team were flying in the air in the world within a world, following which, members left once

in awhile.

"The thunderstones are the real treasures, we'll go dig for them on our own. Relying on the thunderstones, we can join the other organizations, the Black Cloud Guild, the Hundred Tiger Building, Black Dragon Mountain etc, I expect those groups will be willing to pay a high price for the stones. When that time comes, we'll naturally be able to leave Cang Lan Star safely."

"If our luck is good, we might even be able to exchange for a treasure. Then we'll really strike it rich."

Many of the explorers had the same thought.

The moment they saw the treasures, the greedy people would naturally want to exchange for them. Just like Luo Feng and his group.

The less greedy and ambitious, would think of obtaining the thunderstones and join the other organizations, selling the stones at a high price! This led to the close to three hundred strong team to constantly have people drop out along the way, with the North Dragon City members unable to keep count.

World within a world, darkness.

Five beams of light were swiftly flying through the air, it was Luo Feng's team which had fled from the big team.

“Babata, how much longer?” Luo Feng was feeling extremely anxious.

“With this speed, 3 hours 29 minutes later, we’ll reach that thunderstone region.” Babata replied.

“Good!” Luo Feng’s blood was boiling red with adrenaline.

Sixty eight types of treasures!

Every one of them was worth a thousand to ten thousand times his current wealth! Even just one treasure would make a Domain Lord warrior eye it with madness. One could only imagine just how valuable these treasures were!

“If we don’t fight hard during this opportunity, we’ll be struck down by lightning!” Luo Feng thought to himself.

“If a god obstructs us we’ll kill him, if a Buddha blocks us, we’ll kill him!” Thunder God said using mandarin.

Madness.

People could go mad!

300% profits alone was enough to make any business man go mad. Ten times of profits, was enough to make Luo Hua and other financial investors’ blood boil and enter a state of madness! And

Luo Feng and the others encountering such treasure...even Universe level warriors would risk their lives, Domain Lords would kill and battle for it! What about these Star levels?

Who wouldn't go crazy?

.....

Along the way they met another team, slightly detouring, their time to arrival was 3 hours and 40 minutes, at the time, the sky was still dark.

This was a grass patch area, filled with wild grass growing everywhere.

Squatting, the five, Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu.

"About 800m underground there'll be thunderstones, in a 20km area underground, there's a total of 128,926 of them." Babata's voice resounded in Luo Feng's mind, "The surrounding area might have more, however, I need to scan carefully, since I can only scan in a 20km area right now."

"128,926 thunderstones?" Luo Feng's eyes lip up, flushed red.

He vividly remembered the prices of the sixty eight types of treasures and their exchange prices.

Of which the level 5 genetic energy fire wheel, only required 100,000 thunderstones to exchange for! Meaning right now the thunderstones they had discovered in this 20km area was already enough to exchange for one treasure.

“Luo Feng, how many thunderstones are there?” Hong and Thunder God looked at Luo Feng.

“128,926 stones.” Luo Feng said softly.

Hong’s face flushed red immediately.

Hong stared wide eyed, his pupils almost popping out, as let out one word: “Damn!”

“We’ve really struck big time.” Hong couldn’t help but say.

“We’ll make it even bigger, this sort of heavenly opportunity, if we don’t grab it now, we’ll regret it till we die later.” Luo Feng could barely contain his excitement, “Hurry and dig down, begin searching for the thunderstones. Nan He, you are in charge of covering up the surroundings.”

“Yes master.” Tie Nan He complied respectfully.

Chi!

Luo Feng led first and dug straight down, following which Hong, Thunder God, Ao Gu and Tie Nan He followed and dug behind him.

“Go on, cloud contact vine!” Luo Feng’s thoughts moved, immediately a long vine extended itself from his arm, almost like ten arms extended, swiftly growing more and more to grab the thunder stones below.

Chapter 33 – Time of Crisis

The thunderstones were shiny, every one of them was almost similar in size, the largest were at most only twice the size of the smallest ones. At the same time, they stored a little bit of thunder energy within. This led to Luo Feng conjecturing that these stones were probably forged when the world within a world was first opened.

128,926 of them!

Even if they spent every second obtaining a 100 of them, they would still require 1300 seconds. What's more, even if the cloud contact vine extended more vines, including little vines, it was mostly the digging…that took up a lot of time.

"This job of obtaining the thunderstones, requires quite a bit of time." Within the cave underground, Thunder God lamented.

"We have the cloud contact vine, hence it's a bit faster. If it were just a fighter looking for it, even with a spirit reader, this digging would be a real problem. I estimate that it would take about a thousand people to catch up with the vine's speed." Luo Feng laughed, the cloud contact vine as a plant, originally was meant to have its roots extend deep into the ground, plus it was slender, hence its speed was very fast.

If it were a human, with the world within a world's mud, the rock stratum's sturdiness, it would indeed take very long.

……

Luo Feng and his team waited patiently in the underground cave, letting the cloud contact vine do all the work.

Two hours later.

“All done.” Luo Feng was extremely excited, he couldn’t help but rub the vine wrapped around his arm, “Vine, it’s been hard on you. These few days we will require your help a lot, come, eat a Mu Ya crystal.” Luo Feng threw a Mu Ya crystal at the cloud contact vine, it extended a vine immediately and shook excitedly.

Since the first evolution, it already recognized Luo Feng as it’s owner.

Hence it was very reliant on Luo Feng, like he was its parent.

“This is a thunderstone.” Luo Feng flipped his hand, a thunderstone appeared in it.

It was a incredibly shiny stone, with a slight sense of thunder energy emanating from it, however its energy was very little.

“Let me look.” Thunder God took it curiously.

“120,000 thunderstones.” Hong couldn’t help but exclaim, “This sort of chance encounter, it’s really a huge windfall.”

“Let’s grasp the time, right now time is thunderstones! Time is the treasure!” Luo Feng laughed as he said, leading the group towards the surface.

“Let’s go, up.”

The five swiftly reached the surface.

“Luo Feng, this area’s thunderstones have probably been separated by more than this 20 km area. You should look around more.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

“Understood.”

Luo Feng and his team began to swiftly search around the surrounding area.

“Within this 20 km area over here, there are 16,924 stones.”

“This area has 9,156 stones.”

“This area has 3,208 stones.”

“This area has 853 stones.”

……

“Haha, we’ve struck it big, Luo Feng, this area actually has 159,835 stones, close to 160,000 of them.” Babata shouted excitedly.

Indeed.

This area of thunderstones was close to a hundred km area in total, of which there were two spots with more stones gathered together. One was the first spot Luo Feng and his team dug from, with 128,926 stones. The other was the later discovered spot with close to 160,000 stones. The other spots, the ones with more ranged over ten thousand while the ones with less didn’t even reach a hundred.

Luckily they had Babata’s scanner, scanning with every detail and carefully.

“This is the true treasure trove.” Thunder God was extremely excited.

“So much treasure.” Tie Nan He and Ao Gu, the two slaves were also very shocked, these thunderstones represented invaluable amounts of treasures. These were the treasures in this world within a world, if they were used to buy Star level 9 slaves, they could completely buy a huge strong army.

“Begin digging.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, ordering.

Immediately the five pierced into the ground.

Relying on the cloud contact vine, they began the process of swiftly collecting the thunderstones.

Luckily as this place was very far away from the center region, most of the ten thousand explorers from before were searching close to the center region and away from them. Luo Feng and his team flew non stop from day to night to reach this place. After all, this place had plenty of thunderstones.

Compared to the size of the whole area, ten thousand explorers were indeed very little.

“Vine, I’m relying on you.” Luo Feng was extremely elated, feeling his blood pumping with adrenaline.

This time it took about 8 hours before all the thunderstones were dug up, not one was left!

“How many?” Hong couldn’t help but ask.

“Third brother, how many thunderstones do we have?” Thunder God couldn’t help but ask too.

“Including the just dug up 128,926 stones, our total amount at the moment, is…” Luo Feng smiled, “396,201 stones.”

“Damn, close to 400,000?” Thunder God stared.

“Just this area alone and we’ve struck it big.” Hong laughed.

It was indeed true.

This area’s thunderstones, if it were the other teams digging around here, it would be hard for them to sweep it clean. Afterall they were scattered randomly with some clustered and others dispersed, Luo Feng relied on Babata’s scanning system to sweep it all clean. With one area, they obtained close to 400,000 thunderstones, the level 5 genetic energy fire wheel was only priced at 100,000 stones.

“Let’s go, grasp the time and head to the next place.” Luo Feng said.

On the path they came from, Babata had discovered two places, this was but one of them.

“Right, to the next spot.” Thunder God’s eyes gleamed, almost like a beggar spotting a golden mountain.

……

From the central region to this first digging spot, it took about 10 hours of flight. And the digging time took close to 11 hours.

Luo Feng and his team continued flying.

Another 38 hours later, they arrived at their second spot, within the mountain region.

……

The sky was dark.

This was a continuous mountain region, it was filled with plant life, trees and vegetation.

“According to the thunderstones distribution map, in this 20,000km area, there are two thunderstone areas. However, that’s a 20,000km area! Every area will require spending quite a bit of time, normal scanning devices are completely useless. Only the top tier devices, those two that we have are useful, using those two, walking around this entire 20,000 km area, how long would it take?”

“Don’t complain, just do it seriously.”

A team with a vast number of over a thousand was scattered searching around, and the conversation before was from two of the searching members.

18 km away from this team.

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao gu were

squatting on the surface.

“Big trouble.” Hong said softly.

“The 2 million strong army outside has arrived.” Luo Feng was anxious, “In this forest, there’s a team with at least 10,000.” They were preparing to head to the second spot to dig, but along the way they met another 10,00 strong team, detouring, but during that detour, they met another 1,000 strong team.

Along with the distant flying group of people.

With a guess...

Within this forest, there should be a large team of close to 10,000 gathered.

The initial group of explorers was only a little more than 10,000, so there was no way that so many people could appear. Then it could only mean one thing, the 2 million man army had arrived! Actually since the treasures were first displayed at the castle, the 2 million strong army’s first leaders had already arrived, however they were at the outer reaches of the world, and after two to three days.

World within a world, the silhouettes of the 2 million strong army appeared throughout the areas.

As for the simple map of the thunderstones layout, it was obvious

that they had acquired it too.

“Quickly, continue to detour.” Luo Feng ordered.

The night was dark, mountain region.

Luo Feng and his team swiftly re-routed again, along the way meeting another 1000 man army, detouring again...after flying a few thousand km, they finally reached the second digging spot!

******

“They haven’t dug here.” Luo Feng and his team hid amongst the thistles and thorns, extremely excited.

Obviously, this area didn’t have any traces of digging yet.

Babata’s scanning had shown that this area had a lot of thunderstones below.

“Thunderstones aren’t like universe crystals, scanning for them is very difficult. From the conversation of the members earlier, this large team only has two top tier scanning devices able to scan for the thunderstones.” Babata was very satisfied, “And the thunderstones map is only a simplified map, the entire diameter of this world within a world is about a million km, it only at most lets them know that in an area of tens of thousands of km, there are some thunderstones.”

“Begin digging.” Luo Feng ordered.

The five quickly dug downwards, Tie Nan He was in charge of covering up the hole entrance behind.

Underground.

In this 20km area, there are 210,397 thunderstones.” Babata said.

“Vine, I’m relying on you.” Luo Feng didn’t hesitate, with a thought, a large amount of vines extended from Luo Feng’s arm and swiftly pierced through the mud, heading in different directions.

Babata was in charge of directing them.

The cloud contact vine was in charge of grabbing the crystals, the vines extended through the mud and rock stratum, the moment it touched a thunderstone, the vine would extend a leaf and swiftly wrap them up.

……

In a 20,000 km area, with the gravity force in the world within a world, required Star level 9s to fly close to about an hour. The most important thing was…with a 20,000km area, it required multiple flights back and forth with they top tier scanning devices

as their scanning area wasn't big, Babata's 20km scanning was considered very strong.

Even scanning with a 20 km area scanner, a 20,000km area required 1000 scans!

One hour of flight, with two devices, required a total of 500 hours to completely scan the area.

……

Underground.

After digging for over 3 hours.

The vines were swiftly retracting, shrinking and returning into Luo Feng's skin.

"Very good, this area's excavation is complete. Let's go look around." Luo Feng communicated mentally, "Everybody be careful, don't ever be discovered."

"Understood."

The five carefully swiftly came out from the underground, beginning their search around. Very quickly, they searched around, this thunderstone area was about 96 km long, 129 km wide, with such a huge area, there were three spots with more

clusters of stones. These three spots, each had 210,397 stones, (Just excavated), 128,302 stones, 198,355 stones.

And the other places, were all below 50,000 stones, the least with just a few hundred.

Overall, this area had more stones than the area they had just dug up before.

“Next area quickly, 198,355 stones.” Luo Feng swiftly ordered.

They fought to grasp every second!

Every minute represented a large amount of thunderstones being dug up. When Luo Feng was digging hard for the stones, there were occasionally other teams flying in the air above them, oblivious to the fact that there were people underground.

“You all, go dig over there, this area hasn’t been scanned by the devices.”

“Yes Captain.”

A little team finally headed towards the area where Luo feng and his team were digging.

“Captain, thunderstones, there’s thunderstones here!!!”

“What, thunderstones?”

“Quickly inform the Head Captain, also the Sector Lord.”

……

Underground.

“Luo Feng, quickly there are people digging here.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

Luo Feng’s expression changed.

The cloud contact vine was swiftly digging, every second gaining more and more thunderstones.

“They’ve dug up some thunderstones and are reporting to their superiors. Very soon, many other members will come down. Let’s leave!” Babata roared.

“Vine, quickly, quickly, quickly.” Luo Feng ordered.

The vine swiftly retracted, leaving behind the other thunderstones. Within the blink of an eye, it returned to Luo Feng’s arm.

“Let’s go!” Luo Feng ordered.

“Everybody be careful, the moment we burst out from the surface, immediately follow me and flee. Right now above us there are about a 1000 Star level 9 explorers. However with the forest area, we still have a guarantee of escaping.” Luo Feng ordered through genetic energy, they other four slightly nodded.

Chapter 34 – What Treasures to Exchange for?

According to Babata's scan of the outside over one thousand Star level 9 warriors and their distribution, Luo Feng was very clear that they had a chance of escaping. However, even if he was clear… there were still over one thousand people, that was a huge number! To be able to evade so many people's sight and hearing, they required extreme caution and some luck.

"Charge!" Luo Feng communicated mentally.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

Five beams of light rushed out from underground, Luo Feng's excavation of that spot was about 6 hours, the sky had gone from dark night to daybreak with light beginning to fill the land.

"Follow me."

"Be cautious, don't make any noise." Luo Feng communicated mentally, swiftly piercing through the forest.

The living AI Babata was swiftly calculating the most suitable path of escape.

"There's people there!"

“Not our people.”

“Chase.”

Immediately over a 100 Star level 9 warriors swiftly flew and began their chase, even though Babata’s calculations were accurate, it was impossible to get all five of Luo Feng’s team to act and react 100% accordingly to his directions.

“They’ve disappeared.”

“They disappeared in that direction.” There were already over a hundred people floating in the sky, carefully scanning the surroundings, the trees were tall and huge, with large amounts of vegetation, the place untouched for ten million years was already overrun with vines and roots, from mid air, it was impossible to see past the vegetation to the ground, and Luo Feng’s team fled fast and nimbly.

“You all go this way, we’ll go this way, quickly.”

……

Luo Feng and his team fled continuously tens of thousands of kilometers before stopping.

“Phew, we finally escaped.” Thunder God rubbed his head, there were beads of perspiration on it, he laughed, “That was really dangerous before.”

“It was dangerous indeed, if we were in the grassland areas or flat lands, it would have been over for us.” Hong exclaimed.

Luo Feng nodded.

It was because it was in the mountain forest regions, hiding in the mountains, the trees and it’s thick vegetation, that they were able to escape so easily.

“If it weren’t the mountain forest region and we were discovered by so many people, I wouldn’t dare take such a risk.” Luo Feng laughed.

“Haha, Luo Feng you punk you are really cautious.” Thunder God laughed, “Right, how many thunderstones did we acquire from that spot.”

“Just now, there were three spots with more clustered thunderstones, we were digging in the two more populated spots, 210,397 and 198,355 stones. However the second spot, we only managed to get most of it, there wasn’t any time to finish it off. We got about 170,000 stones.” Luo Feng laughed, “Added together, we dug up a total of about 380,000 stones in that mountain forest region.”

“That entire region, what’s the total?” Hong asked.

“About 630,000 stones.” Luo Feng laughed.

“Not bad, we got about half of it.” Hong nodded, Thunder God however curled his lips, “If that group had been slower by a few hours, we could have gotten 90% or more.”

“The first spot gave us close to 400,000 stones.”

“The second spot gave us about 380,000 stones.”

Luo Feng smiled, “Right now we’ve already dug up close to 780,000 thunderstones, however…right now, the 2 million strong army has already begun to occupy the different regions. Hence we have to grasp the time and quickly find more thunderstones. The moment all the thunderstone regions have been occupied, we won’t have any hope.”

The other four nodded.

Right now the 2 million strong army had just arrived, some earlier while others later, plus the vastness of the world within the world, it would still take a few days of work to fully occupy all the thunderstone regions.

These few days, there was still some hope in them.

An interval of time was worth an ounce of gold.

The time right now was incomparably precious! Luo Feng and his

team acted accordingly to Babata's scanning, flying towards the distant regions.

That was because the 2 million strong army was dispersing from the entrance constantly.

The further they were away from the entrance, the more hope they would have!

……

This long flight took over eight days!

Luo Feng and his team flew for eight days straight without resting, finally stopping to eat a piece of 'meat'.

"The 2 million army, should have just about occupied all of the regions in this world within a world. We don't have much hope anymore, right now, let's return to the center and head to the castle to exchange for treasures." Luo Feng and his team burst out from a large river that spread over thousands of km.

"Haha, we've really struck it these eight days." Thunder god laughed.

Hong smiled too.

"Yes indeed." Luo Feng was very happy, the eight days of flying

without rest was tiring, however they were lucky enough to discover a region where no one had dug yet. Even though the amount wasn't as extravagant as their second spot, it was however close to the first spot's amount, Luo Feng and his team were naturally more than satisfied.

After all, these eight days, they relied heavily on luck.

"Digging up those three spots, added together, we have a total of 1,125,638 thunderstones." Luo Feng was incomparably elated.

The search for the thunderstones was complete, Luo Feng and his team began their journey back to the central region. Along the way...they clearly discovered that the regions marked on the map before indicative of thunderstones were all occupied with teams. Every region had at least 10 thousand people gathered, this made the little teams have no hope at all.

.....

"Tomorrow we'll be able to reach the castle, the search for the thunderstones took eleven days, flying back took another five days, over half a month of no sleep or rest. Everybody rest well tonight." In a forest not far from the flatlands, Luo Feng's team finally stopped to have a good rest.

Sixteen days of no sleep or rest.

Tiring?

Even though they were slightly worn out, however they were all still extremely excited, the process of looking for the thunderstones before was exciting, and right now they were heading to exchange for treasures, who wouldn't be excited?

"Third brother, what treasures are we exchanging for?" Thunder god couldn't help but ask.

"We have a total of 1.12 million thunderstones." Luo Feng looked at Hong and Thunder God, "Big brother, second brother, you have the list of treasures too, what are you prepared to exchange for?'

"The D6 cannon!" Thunder God was anticipating, "That D6 cannon, even Domain Lord level 6 warriors have a hard time blocking that shot! That level of weapon...also it's a D6 grade, it's definitely extremely costly. Leaving this land, no where else would have stock of it."

"Right." Luo Feng couldn't help but nod.

D6 grade cannon!

Hiding and shooting a Domain Lord from far, killing him. This level of weapon... even many Sector Lords didn't have one. It wasn't that they didn't have the money, it was that there was no way to get it at all. Or maybe to the Sector Lords, it wasn't worth the money.

“Item number 11, the heart of stars.” Hong’s eyes gleamed, “This heart of stars, you guys should know about it too.”

“Right.”

Luo Feng was slightly excited.

The heart of stars, is a legendary item. In the vast universe, several planets that have the ability to produce and sustain life, for example plant life, beasts, humans, life planets. These life planets all have a limited life span, when one life planet grows old, its core would gather all of its remaining life energy into a crystal... forming the heart of stars.

“Dumb, dumb dumb!”

“Stupid, stupid, stupid!”

The clear crisp voice filled with rage and dissatisfaction resounded loudly.

“Whoa, Babata?” Luo Feng was suspicious, “What’s wrong?”

“Don’t tell me you are prepared to exchange for a D6 cannon, or even the heart of stars?

“A D6 cannon, firstly it’s size is huge, also it requires gathering enough force before it can fire...just it’s preparation time is about

30 seconds. The most important thing is...the automaton ship on Earth, that was an Undying's ship!" Babata said, "The Undying that died within the Yun Mo Planet ship."

"Right..."Luo Feng clearly remembered.

Back then there was indeed an automaton warrior amongst the Undying in the Yun Mo Planet ship.

"The automaton race, with its advanced technology, on the ship, there's definitely something stronger than the D6 grade cannon!" Babata said, "There'll be plenty better than this, why waste the thunderstones on it?"

"As for the heart of stars!"

"It's good."

"It has beneficial effects for the body's evolution, however the speed is too slow. It's good for normal fighters. However Luo Feng you already have the Golden Horned Beast's body, hence your human body isn't limited by the bottleneck, you can greatly enhance your evolution! You have no need to slowly swallow this." Babata said, "As long as you have sufficient wealth, you will have many ways to evolve. No need for the heart of stars!"

"Also!"

"You made the biggest mistake, that is, you have no ambition!"

Babata was very dissatisfied.

"No ambition? What do you mean no ambition?" Luo Feng was suspicious.

"Looking at the way you are prepared to exchange for the treasures, are you planning to end everything the moment you've exchanged?" Babata asked.

Luo Feng replied helplessly, "The 2 million army has already arrived in the world within a world, the thunderstone regions have all been occupied. Right now there's no hope for anymore thunderstones, I believe as time passes, it'll only reach a time of savagery and battles! And in the battle for the thunderstones, with the 2 million army fighting, my little team of five..."

"Stupid!"

"The life fruit, item number 9, the life fruit!!!" Babata shouted.

"What's up with the life fruit?" Luo Feng was suspicious, "The life fruit definitely stores a large amount of life energy, as long as a Sector Lord's soul isn't destroyed, no matter how heavy his injuries, one fruit alone can help him recover fully. It's called the Sector Lord's second life. However what's it got to do with me, I can't use it now right?"

"You can use it, why can't you use it?"

Babata said, “The life fruit stores a large amount of pure life energy, you should know the usage of life energy.”

“I understand, don’t the Mu Ya crystals store life energy too.” Luo Feng was very clear, “The Mu Ya crystals can make humans, plants and animals evolve.”

“Right, evolve.” Babata said. “Mu Ya crystals can make humans evolve, and the trillions of times more valuable life fruit too can make humans plants, and animals evolve. Accurately speaking, it’s a Mu Ya crystal that’s a thousand to ten thousand times higher grade. Even a Sector Lord’s wounds can immediately be recovered immediately.”

“You are saying, let me use the life fruit and make me evolve?” Luo Feng asked.

“Wrong! Don’t you remember on Earth what happened to some beasts that ate the Mu Ya crystals?” Babata said.

Luo Feng remembered.

On Earth, back on Misty Island, some of the beasts exploded when they ate the Mu Ya crystals, while some successfully evolved to emperor level. The main thing was one’s cell strength...the stronger it was, the better it could digest the energy. Just like that tentacle beast that became an emperor level!

“The life energy in the life fruit, is incomparably pure and

concentrated! If you were to swallow it, you'd immediately explode!" Babata said, "Only things with incomparably strong cells, and larger physiques can actually absorb the life energy and evolve."

"You are saying?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

"Right, the cloud contact vine!" Babata said, "Right now the cloud contact vine is at Star level 4, its limit is at extending 36 vines, each vine itself can separate into many more smaller vines! At the same time, every vine's limit is about 30,000m. Also, it even has a huge root network!"

Luo Feng's eyes lit up.

Back on Misty Island, the Star Traveller level cloud contact vine, one vine alone was about 2000m.

"Also the cloud contact vine's cell strength is very strong." Babata said, "Back on Misty Island, you know it too. Even a normally nurtured cloud contact vine, if it broke a vine it would swiftly regrow. In terms of its cell strength...your particular one has had special nurturing, it's much stronger than normal ones."

"In terms of its cell strength, the cloud contact vine, these sorts of plants, because of its species, even Domain Lords may not compare to it. Plus it has an incomparably huge physique!"

"Shocking cell strength! Incredibly large physique! This is the

best host to absorb the life fruit."

"Also, you don't have to worry about it exploding!"

"If it cannot absorb it all, it'll break a few vines and let the life energy disperse. It won't die." Babata was incredibly excited, "Cell strength that surpasses a domain lord, thirty six 30,000m long vines and a large root network. The moment it swallows the life fruit, it would definitely evolve greatly!"

"Right now it's a Star level 4, with the life fruit, it would break through straight away to the universe level, no problem at all!"

"When that time comes, with a Universe level cloud contact vine as your partner! You definitely be able to kill the leaders of many of these groups, taking away their storage items. Taking away all their thunderstones!" Babata was extremely satisfied, "First invest in the life fruit and strengthen the cloud contact vine. After that rely on it and get more thunderstones, exchange for more treasures, that's the trump card plan!"

.....

Luo Feng's blood was totally boiling from hearing Babata's plan.

The cloud contact vine was an incredibly strong assisting plant life, otherwise the Yun Mo Planet master wouldn't have cultivated one himself. The moment it reached the universe level...with the universe level cloud contact vine's sturdiness, it could easily kill

fighters from underground with a few vines. When that time came, even though the enemies had numbers, they could still kill the leaders and take away the storage items.

"Right!"

"What was over a million thunderstones worth?"

"We'll first make the cloud contact vine incomparably strong, and then get more thunderstones!" Luo Feng was totally decided.

Daybreak on the second day, the light ball was high in the sky of the world within a world, light shimmering down from above, Luo Feng's team headed straight for the center region.

The flat land center region, the castle was right there.

"Hm?" Luo Feng's team looked at the distant center region.

"Third brother." Hong slight creased his eyebrows, "There's a lot of people at the central region."

"That's a lot."

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, in the distance where the thunder castle was, large numbers of Star level explorers gathered and filled the land and skies, filling up the entire area! It was much more than any team Luo Feng had seen along the way.

“It seems that exchanging for the treasures won’t be that easy.” Thunder God sighed softly.

Chapter 35 – Exchanging within The Castle

The flowers and blades of grass were fluttering in the wind, and the large numbers of explorer groups around were heavily surrounding the thunder castle.

“So many people have surrounded the thunder castle?” Luo Feng looked from the distance, creasing his eyebrows.

The scene before them was an obvious sign…these large groups of people must have teamed up together to set up a security barrier before the castle. Even if one had thunderstones, with other parties blocking outside, what could one do?

“Big brother, second brother, I’m going to look for Lord Ming Yu.” Luo Feng communicated via genetic energy.

“Alright.” Hong and Thunder God nodded.

Luo Feng closed his eyes, swiftly connecting to the Virtual Universe Network.

……

Virtual Universe Network, Black Dragon Mountain Island, 9 Star Bay.

Luo Feng stood in the lawn of his own house, a screen appeared

before him, on it appeared an incomparably tall and sturdy man, it was the Virtual Universe Company's Black Dragon Mountain base military department external affairs Ming Yu.

"Haha, Luo Feng." Ming Yu laughed carefree, his smile was very happy.

"Lord Ming Yu." Luo Feng slightly bowed, displaying respect." I'm at the central region right now, heavily surrounded by large numbers of explorer armies. What's going on?"

"Oh, Monopoly!"

On the screen, Ming Yu smiled, "This is a major decision from all the organizations, after the announcement from that AI in the castle! Forming an alliance army with explorers from all sides. Heavily surrounding the castle, surveillance and restricting anybody from exchanging for treasures."

"Oh." Luo Feng realized.

That was tyranny!

10% of the army, that was almost 200,000!

A 200,000 man Star level 9 army, restricting anyone from getting close to the castle, that was simply too easy. This way, the other explorers that were without any background, even with the thunderstones, wouldn't be able to enter the castle to exchange for

anything.

“However you all shouldn’t have any problems. You, Hong, and Thunder God, the three of your appearances and data have been given to my underlings and to the headquarters! So if you three go over…that 200,000 strong army will know you are the underlings of the Three Axe Mountain Ming Yu, they won’t stop you.” Ming Yu smiled.

Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief in his heart.

That was indeed cautious!

They actually gathered everybody’s information together, the moment one wasn’t on the list, he wouldn’t be able to enter the thunder castle.

“Lord Ming Yu, my team still has another two members.” Luo Feng sent over Tie Nan He and Ao Gu’s physical appearances and information.

“Alright, they’ll go under my name list too.” Ming Yu smiled.

“Thank you Lord Ming Yu, then I’ll first leave the Virtual Universe Network.” Luo Feng bowed.

“Haha…right, Luo Feng, the fact that you are heading to the castle, you should have had some earnings?” Ming Yu asked, his eyes gleaming with a sense of anticipation.

“The situation in this world within a world, I’m sure you Lord Ming Yu should know.” Luo Feng said helplessly, “With the arrival of the 2 million army, my little team of five doesn’t have any chance of a struggle at all.”

On the screen, Ming Yu nodded.

“However, we will work hard, we won’t let you go disappointed! If we work hard to exchange for treasures…” Luo Feng smiled.

“Relax, I definitely won’t treat you poorly.” Ming Yu said directly.

“Thank you Lord.”

Following which the call ended.

World within a world.

The winds howled, Luo Feng and his team of five swiftly flew towards the alliance army.

“Freeze!” The grand explorer army was akin to an impenetrable fortress, even a fly wouldn’t have a chance of sneaking in. Amongst them, a lion head strong looking man shouted as he raised his hand.

Luo Feng and his team landed.

“We are the underlings of the Three Axe Mountain Ming Yu.” Thunder God shouted.

“Hm?”

The lion head man gazed at them with his dark yellow eyes, behind him was a vast army of close to a thousand people! Surrounding this castle was an army of close to 200,000 explorers, of which this was separated into thirty six teams, every team had close to a thousand people. Securing the castle every minute and second, these 36,000 explorers would then change shifts with others, absolutely restricting access to anyone without any background.

“Di.” The lion head man lowered his head to look at his quantum computer, on the screen appeared Luo Feng and his team’s information, the lion head man looked carefully at them.

“Haha...” The lion head man let out a carefree smile, “So it’s brothers from the Three Axe Mountain. The people from the Three Axe Mountain aren’t too far from here, if you five just ask around, you should be able to find them.”

“Thanks.” Luo Feng smiled.

The five drew close to the vast crowds of people.

The lion head man transmitted via genetic energy, “You five, do you have any thunderstones to sell? I’m willing to purchase them at one thunderstone for ten cubic meters of universe crystal.”

“My apologies, my Lord forbids any sale of it.” Luo Feng glanced at him, transmitting via genetic energy.

“Well your Lord doesn’t even know how much thunderstones you have.” The lion head man replied, “Why not sell some and get some universe crystals.”

“Hm… let me think about it.” Luo Feng smiled.

After which, he led the other four away quickly.

Watching Luo Feng and his team leave, the lion head man rubbed his huge and thick nose, scoffing unhappily, obviously he was dissatisfied from being unable to exchange for any thunderstones!

……

The alliance base was tight on security outside but lax inside.

The external thirty six security teams were cautious and prudent, however there was laughter and discussions inside. There were even a lot of secret buying and selling of the thunderstones within. As the saying goes, every man for himself, and the devil take the hindmost, everybody was Star level 9 warriors, the trades of the thunderstones were pretty rampant.

Amongst the crowds.

Luo Feng and his team sat around the grass field, the entire army was also scattered with everybody sitting around, many people hopping from group to group engaging in deals.

“That lion head guy was devious enough, saying he’d exchange for one thunderstone with ten cubic meters of universe crystal. Look at the rates here, there are some saying they’d exchange with a 100 cubic meters, even 200 cubic meters for one thunderstone!” Thunder God said dissatisfied.

“Even though the universe crystals are valuable, but compared to the treasures, they aren’t worth anything.” Hong said.

“Exchanging for treasures.”

Luo Feng looked at the ancient castle right in front.

1 minute, 2 minutes...

1 hour, 2 hours...

Luo Feng looked at the castle for a solid 3 hours, within these 3 hours, he realized a peculiar thing. There would occasionally be people dressed in armor with their helmets covering their entire heads entering the castle. Within these short 3 hours, there were

close to a 100 of them entering and leaving.

"Don't tell me within these 3 hours, 100 people actually exchanged for treasures? There are only a total of 312 treasures!" Luo Feng was suspicious.

"Haha, brother you are wrong."

A skinny monkey-like silhouette walked past and stopped, smiling as he looked at Luo Feng, "Brother, the people entering the castle, nine out of ten of them are just going in to make a scene! One must know...this alliance army may be called an alliance, but it is still separated into little teams, representing the different Domain and Sector Lords."

"The 2 million man army, the killings and chaos later will be brutal. Hence, no one wants to let anybody know that they've acquired treasures."

"So, they've been arranging their underlings to enter the castle and purposely distract and confuse people. They even pay for other team people to enter for them. Since they can acquire a large amount of money just from entering the castle and wandering about, who wouldn't be willing?" The skinny monkey smiled as he looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng realized.

Smokescreen?

Right!

The name may be called alliance army, however the internal definitely wasn't united, they were still competing with each other.

"Brother, do you have any thunderstones to sell? I can give you 250 cubic meters of universe crystals, a high price for one thunderstone." The skinny monkey man laughed again.

"I'll pay 300 cubic meters for one of your thunderstones." Luo Feng looked at him.

The skinny monkey laughed awkwardly and left.

The thunderstones represented the treasures within, no matter how high the price, it wouldn't be expensive. It was just that some of the armies were preying on some of the Star level 9 explorers' greed for wealth! 300 cubic meters of universe crystal, that was akin to 1 billion Ganwu dollars. How could normal Star level 9 explorers resist that temptation?

However those treasures.

Just like the level 5 genetic energy weapon, if one sold it outside, it would go at a heavenly price.

Normal level 3 genetic energy weapons would sell for 20 to 30 billion Black Dragon dollars. (Average price) A level 4 genetic energy weapon would sell for close to 100 billion Ganwu dollars. A level 5 genetic energy weapon would reach close to 100 billion Universe dollars! That was close to 100 million cubic meters of universe crystals! Normal Domain Lords that just broke through to the Sector Lord level would find it hard to part with such money.

Only Sector Lord Kabu, the pinnacle of Sector Lords with incomparable wealth, akin to a poorer Undying Being would have such shocking wealth.

……

Minutes and seconds passed.

People frequently entered the ancient castle, almost all of which with full armor and helmets, no one knew just who exchanged for treasure or not.

“Phew!”

Luo Feng took a deep breath, dressed in armor and with a helmet, with only his eyes showing. He headed straight for the castle.

Walking out of the crowd alone towards the castle.

This led to many looking over, carefully observing Luo Feng…No one could be sure whether this person heading to the castle was

really going to exchange for something or not.

"Your majesty, these are the thunderstones sent from the second large team, they excavated two districts and killed three small teams. They acquired a total of 2.1 million thunderstones." Amongst the allied army, surrounded by eight bodyguards, the ninth prince Brolin sat, beside him a man respectfully handed over a space bracelet.

"2.1 million thunderstones?" Brolin took the space bracelet over, softly saying, "Give the order, let the other teams all quickly send over their thunderstones. The three passwords for the inheritance crystals, requires a total of 30 million thunderstones, we are still far from it."

"Yes your majesty."

The man respectfully nodded.

Brolin slightly turned his head, looking at the castle, at this moment Luo Feng had just stepped into the castle.

"Tsk, a bunch of poor ghosts!"

Brolin laughed coldly, "Exchanging for treasures, all covered up and hiding, the things they are exchanging for are ultimately those poor objects! Tsk, the second item, the Sector Lord's bank account, I'm not even looking at that. Only the incomparably valuable entire space technique crystal balls, those are the most important.

Compared to the other treasures, these are so much more important!”

“Your majesty.”

Another man rushed over and bowed respectfully, passing over a space ring, “This is the fifth large team’s thunderstones, a total of 1.68 million thunderstones.”

Brolin’s eyes lit up, picking up the space ring and swiftly turning, “Let’s go, follow me into the castle, right now we can exchange for one of the numbers.”

“Yes.”

Brolin brought four bodyguards with him, without even concealing his identity, walking directly towards the castle, immediately drawing the attention of countless people from the allied army.

Chapter 36 – Life Fruit

“Senior, the 9th prince his majesty Bu Luo Lin has entered the castle.” Amongst the people from Bai Hu tower, Chou Yu said softly.

“Hmph.”

A skinny man with silver eyes stared in the distance, snorting, “The power that Bu Luo Lin has is too large, 1, he’s the 9th prince, every power under the sacred land black dragon mountain supports him. 2, hiss grandfather has an extremely high position in the black dragon mountain sacred land, another group of people support him. Out of the 500,000 army from black dragon mountain, there’s 220,000 that actually respond to his command.”

The 2 million army.

Black dragon mountain, Ice Neptune country, the 2 sacred lands with their 500,000 army.

The 4 organizations each had 200,000 in their army.

The 16 families, each had 10,000.

However the 9th prince Bu Luo Lin, with his special background, commanded an army of 220,000 himself. This was a very united 220,000…with huge power.

“He split his a little more than 220,000 army into 7 large teams, each with 30,000.” The skinny man snorted softly, “With a team 30,000 fighting for territory, who’d be able to fight back?”

……

The allied army were all engaged in discussion, however while many elites were feeling unfair, with their position, they were only a generation of elites from the organizations, far from the position of universe level warriors! As for the 9th prince, with his mother’s lineage and his own power, his position was much higher.

If it were outside and not the exam world.

Bu Luo Lin wouldn’t even have any problem ordering the death of a universe level warrior! However this was the world within a world, Bu Luo Lin had to follow the given rules.

Ancient Castle.

When Bu Luo Lin entered the castle with his bodyguards, Luo Feng was already at the instruction of the castle’s AI, entering into a cold ancient room within the castle.

In that ancient room, a dim light lit up the entire room, the scars and marks on the walls depicted the history of the castle, greenish black stone slabs on the wall, all with a lingering odor.

“What do you want to exchange for, punk.” A serious voice

resounded within the room.

The room was silent.

Luo Feng surveyed his surroundings, there wasn't anyone around.

"Of course exchange for treasures." Luo Feng said.

"Do you have thunder stones? These few days there've been many who have come here on purpose but without any thunder stones to exchange." The serious voice continued.

"I do."

Luo Feng waved his hand and a pile of thunder stones the height of a person appeared.

"Very good." The voice said.

Footsteps could be heard vaguely from the corridor outside, following which a fat, short and stout white bearded old man walked in, his body emanating light. Luo Feng could see from a glance that this old man was a living AI, similar to Babata on the Yun Mo ship from before, forming his own energy body.

"It's rare for someone to exchange for something." The white bearded old man smiled as he looked at Luo Feng.

“How are you old man, what should I address you as…” Luo Feng was very respectful.

No matter the case, the white bearded old man before him was a living AI, one that had followed sector lord Kabu and lived in solitude for over 10 million years. These sort of beings deserved respect! And according to Babata, having lived in solitude for ten million years, this old man must have been somewhat mentally perverted, he had better not get on his bad side.

“Little punk, you can call me Lord Wu.” The white bearded old man smiled, the light around him slightly swirling.

“Lord Wu?” Luo Feng was shocked.

What a weird name.

“Lord Wu, I want to exchange for treasures.” Luo Feng said.

“Won’t you keep me company and chat, what’s the rush?” The white bearded old man was disastisfied.

Luo Feng said, “Lord Wu, that’s…”

“Since you are in such a rush, let’s exchange.” The white bearded old man’s expression changed very quickly to indifference, “What do you want to exchange for?”

“Level 5 genetic energy weapon ‘Ice soul blade’.” Luo Feng said, “And the level 5 spirit weapon Pressure void cauldron.”

“Hm?” The white bearded old man seemed shocked.

“And the last one, a life fruit.” Luo Feng bowed slightly, “Lord Wu, just these 3.”

“Just these 3?” The white bearded old man’s eyes glimmered brightly, seemingly shocked at this black haired youth before him, “The level 5 genetic energy weapon Ice Soul Blade requires 130,000 thunder stones. The level 5 spirit weapon Pressure Void Cauldron requires 180,000 thunder stones. One life fruit requires 800,000 thunder stones! Within 10,000km around this castle is my surveillance area, you don’t seem to have a large position within this explorer army, how did you get so many thunder stones?”

Luo Feng smiled.

10,000km surveillance area?

Babata had actually warned him much earlier before. In terms of surveillance, even though this white bearded old man’s area was huge…just like the earth’s security defense system, which covered the entire solar system.

However with such a huge area, the level of scanning was however much lower.

“Lord Wu, do you have to ask something like that?” Luo Feng was taken aback.

“Just asking for kicks.” The white bearded old man blinked his eyes, very casually saying, “3 treasures, alright, no problem.”

Luo Feng felt incomparable anticipation within.

The 3 treasures were actually suggested by Babata. According to his plan…the entire treasure list and prices were somewhat chaotic.

For example, the entire space technique crystal balls, those were priceless treasures! Price wise, it could be said to be 10,000 times or even 100,000 times the level 5 genetic energy weapon Fire Wheel’s! However, the fire wheel only required 100,000 thunder stones while the crystal balls 3 codes only required 30 million thunder stones.

It was a total of 300 times only.

For example, the life fruit was 800,000 thunder stones, however it’s true price outside was akin to a sector lord’s life, more than even a hundred Fire wheels.

Hence…

The prices weren't synced with the outside world prices. Buying itself required skill.

The level 5 genetic energy weapon Ice Soul Blade, in the outside world would be 5 to 6 times that of the Fire Wheel, the Pressure Void Cauldron was about ten times that of the Fire wheel! However in terms of exchanging...the prices weren't too different.

Within the silent ancient room.

The white bearded old man covered entirely in light stood.

"The total sum of the 3 treasures is 1.11 million Thunder Stones." The old man said.

"Lord Wu, please keep it well." Luo Feng handed over a normal space ring, killing along the way had gotten Luo Feng many space rings.

"Hm?"

The white bearded old man waved his hand and the space ring flew into it, after which he smiled, "Hm, just nice, 1.11 million thunder stones."

"This is the level 5 genetic energy weapon 'Ice Soul Blade.' The old man flipped his hand and immediately an entirely silver blue colored double tiered arc blade appeared, immediately, the entire room's temperature dropped and the entire space's humidity

began to freeze, this peculiar blade's edge was incomparably sharp.

The Ice Soul Blade floated before him...

Luo Feng felt like his soul was being sliced, extending his hand and keeping it in his space ring.

"This is the level 5 spirit weapon 'Pressure Void Cauldron'." The white bearded old man flipped his hand and a pure purple, like a copper cast little cauldron about 30cm tall floated before Luo feng, on it were large amounts of complex engravings, tens of millions of times more complex than the engravings on the soaring shuttle. It was similar to the golden engravings on the body of the golden horned beast.

Peculiar engravings...

It caused the surrounding space to feel like it was separated, even though it was only 30cm high, it made Luo Feng feel like it was incomparably huge, as though it was a mountain that couldn't be seen end to end, high than no mountain he'd seen before, breathtaking.

"Don't look at it stupidly, a level 5 genetic energy weapon and a level 5 spirit weapon, they all have source engravings that are close to the universe's origin laws. Each have immense amount of power. However, only after becoming a sector lord, obtaining the universe source energy will one truly be able to use them." Babata's voice resounded in Luo Feng's mind.

Luo Feng awoke from the trance, extending his hand to keep the Pressure Void Cauldron in his space ring.

My god!

Just 2 level 5 weapons made him totally unable to resist. It was said that when sector lords battled, they would changed the land and skies, one move could destroy all life on an entire planet. It was indeed true!

“Little punk. Those 2 are both sector lord weapons. What I’m giving you now…is akin to a sector lord’s second life, it stores an incomparable amount of pure mystic life energy, a special spirit fruit formed from the gathering of universe energy…life fruit!” The white bearded old man’s expression was serious, producing a peculiar translucent stone box.

The box had a faint glow of green about it.

“The life fruit, is a special condensed crystal from the vast universe, storing unbelievable amounts of life energy. Even the powerful sector lords capable of destroying an entire planet with a wave of their hands, with immense amount of energy within them would be able to fully recover no matter how heavy the injury!” The white bearded old man was shocked, “Mystical, this is the universe’s wonders!”

Luo Feng held his breath as he received the box, pa, opening the stone box.

.....

Within the silent ancient room.

After opening the stone box, within a flash, the surrounding area seemed to lose it's color, only the surface green glow from the life fruit seemed to be present and glaring!

The green glow shot all over.

A thick aroma that entranced people emanated throughout, the entire room was immediately filled with life energy, all emanating from the core...the life fruit! Just this one fruit, sector lords would use an entire galaxy to exchange for, with countless Sector Lords willing to exchange!

It was incredibly valuable!

Incomparably costly!

"Sniff!" Luo Feng took a deep breath and that aroma filled his body, his every cell excitedly jumped up, as though they were eating a heavenly dish, changes began to naturally happen within his inherited genes, his entire bone structure letting out snaps, even his muscles began to change.

"Idiot, quickly close it. The moment you open it, the life fruit's life energy will constantly dissipate!" Babata raged.

Luo Feng quivered before awaking from the trance.

Pa!

He closed to stone box.

“Wow, it’s unbelievable.” Luo Feng looked at the stone box, staring wide eyed, “I only took a couple of breaths and I feel like I’ve evolved so much.”

“Idiot, your 2 breaths, you lose about a hundred breaths from that.” Babata raged.

Luo Feng excitedly closed the stone box.

Chapter 37 – Kill Them

When Luo Feng was engaged in exchanging with the old bearded man, the ninth prince of the Black Dragon Mountain Brolin was in another ancient room.

Within the dark ancient room.

Brolin stood there smiling as he shouted, “I’d like to exchange for treasures.”

“Little punk, what’s the rush.” A serious voice resounded within the ancient room, “One at a time, after this other punk is finished, I’ll exchange with you.”

“Hm?”

Brolin’s eyes gleamed coldly.

One at a time?

“The person who entered before wasn’t just putting on an act and is really exchanging for treasures?” A thought appeared in Brolin’s mind, following which he smiled coldly, closing his eyes and entering the Virtual Universe Network.

Virtual Universe Network, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

It was a huge city, in it were many palaces that were continuous, amongst which there was an inconspicuous purple palace, two guards stood outside this palace.

Sou!

Within the palace, a handsome pale skinned man appeared on the throne, it was the ninth prince Brolin.

Dressed in mostly black, with gold embroidery around the robe, Brolin sat on the throne, immediately requesting for communication with his nine bodyguards. His nine bodyguards were all his slaves who were completely loyal to him! Of course there was one that died when the castle opened. Luckily the thunder castle's thunder didn't destroy the space ring, hence the laser gun within that bodyguard's space ring wasn't damaged.

Sou!

A silhouette appeared within the large palace, dressed in a black guard uniform, with greenish flame like hair that was spiked up.

"Your Majesty." The guard respectfully knelt down.

"Camelot."

Brolin glanced down at his guard from high above, ordering, "There was a punk who entered the thunder castle just before I did, one dressed in gold armor with a helmet. He has many

thunderstones, and is currently exchanging for treasure with the thunder castle's living AI right now."

"What?" The guard was shocked.

There would occasionally be people entering the thunder castle, many of which were simply decoys, with very few actually exchanging for treasures.

"I'm very sure he is really exchanging for treasures." Brolin said coldly, "Hence I want you to keep an eye on him, do you understand what I mean?"

"Understood!" The guard said respectfully.

"Very well."

Brolin nodded satisfied, following which his body vanished into nothing from the throne.

World within world.

The white bearded old man walked into Brolin's ancient room, Brolin revealed a smile.

"Little punk, what do you want to exchange for?" The white bearded old man looked at him.

“The inheritance crystal ball’s first account passcode.” Brolin looked at the white bearded old man, “And one life fruit.”

The white bearded old man couldn’t help but reveal a shocked expression.

……

When Brolin was exchanging, Luo Feng had just walked out of the thunder castle’s huge entrance doors, the moment he stepped out, separately in the distance, with up to 200,000 of the allied army surrounding the thunder castle, there were at least about 10,000 people watching him, carefully observing his actions, Luo Feng however was steady.

There were people constantly entering the thunder castle with many as decoys, he guessed that not many would have known that he had truly exchanged for treasures.

“That’s him.”

“The one that entered before his majesty.”

“Watch him well.”

From the ten thousand that were looking at Luo Feng, there were a few with ulterior motives, communicating via genetic energy.

……

Luo Feng mixed into the crowds of the allied army, after wandering within for awhile, finally he met up with Hong, Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu. Ao Gu naturally spread a spirit barrier around them, preventing anyone from hearing or eavesdropping.

“How’d it go?” Hong and Thunder God looked at Luo Feng.

“Everything went well, according to plan.” Luo Feng smiled, “One life fruit, two level 5 weapons.”

Thunder God was elated: “That’s great, one life fruit will let your cloud contact vine evolve greatly! That way, our little team in this world within a world won’t be as tragic as before, having to flee the moment we meet any big teams!”

“Investment first, only then will there be rewards.” Hong smiled, “Third brother, you have to remember what you said…when we get another batch of thunderstones, you have to get another life fruit for my cloud contact vine too.”

“Definitely!” Luo Feng smiled.

“Tsk!” Thunder God rubbed his nose, glancing at Hong , “Don’t expect too much, the life fruit is a good thing, if third brother exchanged for it, others might too. And there are only a total of three of them. By the time we get another batch of thunderstones,

who knows if there would be any left!”

Hong didn’t bother about Thunder God’s banter.

This whole exchanging plan, after Luo Feng had discussed with Hong and Thunder God, they were in complete approval. That was because they didn’t know before that the life fruit would be able to make the cloud contact vine evolve greatly. Even Hong said...when they got a chance later, he would also like his cloud contact vine to evolve.

However, Hong’s cloud contact vine was firstly much lower in grade compared to Luo Feng’s.

Luo Feng’s cloud contact vine was currently a star level 4, while Hong’s vine had just stepped into the star level 1. Hence with the life fruit’s incomparably huge amount of pure life energy, Luo Feng’s vine had a larger guarantee of being able to withstand and absorb it.

“Actually, from the weapons we exchanged this time, we would be able to do many things already.” Thunder God was all smiles.

“Right.” Hong nodded.

“With sufficient wealth, we can do a lot of things.” Luo Feng was excited too.

The Ice Soul Blade and the Pressure Space Cauldron.

These were level 5 genetic energy and spirit weapons! These were weapons that only Sector Lords could truly utilize. And for Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God who were only star level...to them, these two weapons were no use at all. If Luo Feng used a level 5 weapon, it's power would probably not even compare to using the soaring shuttle.

The best weapon was one that was suitable.

Hence...

These two weapons were only to be exchanged to sell! These were level 5 weapons! In the world within a world, selling them would be a huge loss, but outside, they were worth fortunes. These two level 5 weapons represented incomparable amounts of wealth.

"I have to think, what do I do with so much money later?" Thunder God muttered.

"First, we have to get rid of the Nuolan Shan Family." Hong said seriously, "As long as they are around, we will never have peace."

"Everybody else is easy to deal with, this Nuolan Shan however is hard." Luo Feng shook his head, "Buying Universe level slaves, one can at most buy a level 9. This is the highest level of slaves...and that Nuolan Shan, he actually has the Battle-axe fighter title. Normal Universe level warriors aren't even his match."

“No rush no rush, we’ll work around it with money.” Thunder God smiled.

“Everybody first take a rest.”

Luo Feng said seriously, “We’ll wait till nightfall and leave the allied army.”

For the cloud contact vine to evolve, it first had to unleash it’s full size and structure for it to be able to easily absorb the most life energy. And with it’s large form, and the evolution noise itself... there was no way for it happen in this central region.

“Ok, we’ll leave at nightfall.”

……

Luo Feng and his team of five were very normal within the allied army. However there were people secretly watching them.

The allied army had close to 200,000 people.

With the characteristics of a Star level explorer, it was impossible to squeeze them together as with the soldiers of Earth. The moment a Star level speeds up and accelerates, one would disappear a few kilometers away in the blink of an eye. And this was still only because of the world within a world! Hence, the space between the groups was much larger, Luo Feng’s team was closely gathered, the rest were casually grouped around.

And some bigger teams, their distance between each other was 1 to 2 km.

If they were too close, it would be harder to manage.

This distance...

To a Star level, they could easily see each other, with a flash they could reach each other. Hence the entire allied army was dispersed over 60 to 70 km.

And the powerful ninth prince Brolin, his army was at the most central region, over 30 km away from Luo Feng's team, this made it impossible for Babata to pick up on Brolin! And Brolin's scanning systems were from the Black Dragon Mountain sacred land.

Compared to Babata's, they weren't that far off.

Nightfall, the strong winds howled.

Within a tent.

Bu Luo Lin sat crossed legged and shut his eyes.

"You majesty." Camelot said respectfully.

“You haven’t lost sight of that five man team right?” Bu Luo Lin’s voice was very calm.

“No.” Camelot said respectfully, “Your majesty commands up to 20,000 men from the allied army! With our strategic placement around, almost the entire allied army camp is under our surveillance, and since the entire army is only dispersed a few tens of km, that five man team has no way to escape our sights.”

“Right.”

Brolin replied, suddenly opening his eyes, gleaming like sharp knives at Camelot, Camelot slightly bowed.

“According to the agreement, there’s no killing allowed within the allied army.” Brolin said coldly, “I too don’t want to break the rules, just watch them…the moment they leave the allied army zone, immediately send a small team and kill them, take all their storage items, understood?”

“Yes your majesty.” Camelot said respectfully, “I’ll arrange for it immediately.”

“Ok. Go on.” Brolin said indifferently.

Camelot respectfully left the tent, at this time a man walked in, kneeling on one leg, he said respectfully, “Your majesty, the sixth big team killed six other teams today, up to about 5,000 explorers. They acquired about 2.59 million thunderstones.” Following

which, he respectfully handed over a space ring.

“Hm, the sixth big team has done well.”

Brolin couldn’t help but reveal a smile, “Tell the other big teams, make them work harder, make use of the time and acquire more thunderstones.”

“Yes.”

The man retreated.

Within the tent, Brolin held the space ring, weighing it in his hand, revealing an arrogant confident smile, “We almost have 10 million thunderstones! We should be able to exchange for the second pass code. However since the thunderstones in the different regions are almost dug clean, what remains is to kill and fight for the thunderstones.”

……

To someone as high up as the ninth prince Brolin, even if these 2 million people died, he didn’t care at all.

Born into royalty.

His mother’s family had been incomparably strong, he had seen too much of the strong eating the weak in the universe, with an

order, tens of planets and their civilians could become slaves…with such power, killing these other teams for thunderstones became a very natural thing for him. As for ordering a team to kill Luo Feng…

Brolin didn’t really care at all.

That little team of five were nothing but ants to him, an order from him just results in a few ants being squished.

Chapter 38 – Sudden Waves

Late night, the winds howled.

World within a world, amongst the allied army.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder exchanged glances and revealed smiles.

“Let’s go.” Luo Feng said softly.

The five man team swiftly stood up and seemingly casually moved towards the outer areas of the army. Entering the allied army itself was difficult requiring identification! Anyone not from any powers or organization was forbidden from entering, leaving however was easy. After all the large powers constantly sent people in and out to deliver thunderstones.

The number of people entering and leaving was indeed not small.

“Captain, the five of them are leaving.”

“Quickly follow.”

“Quickly.”

“All, move faster.”

The underlings of the ninth prince had been preparing for when the little team began to move.

One had to know that the ninth prince controlled over 220,000 people, the seven large teams, each had 30,000 people. And even their small teams were 1,000 per team! As for the surveillance group, that too was a 1000 man small team that exchanged shifts.

Late night, amidst the howling winds, Luo Feng's team flew up and away from the allied army base.

And behind them, a 1,000 man team lifted into the skies too and followed them.

"Everybody don't be rash and impatient. This is still close to the allied army base, the moment they re enter the base grounds, we will be unable to do anything."

"We'll first follow and once a bit of distance has been made, we'll act."

The captain of the 1,000 man team was communicating softly to his team.

.....

Ahead in mid air, Luo Feng's team.

“Haha, thrilling, thrilling.” High in the sky, Thunder God’s voice resounded as he smiled with satisfaction, “I’m already feeling uncontrollably excited just from thinking about the life fruit and the two sector lord weapons.”

“Before we came here, I was worried too that we’d have problems after exchanging.” Hong smiled, “Looking at things now, it seems everything went smoothly.”

“1st and 2nd brother, after the cloud contact vine’s evolution, it’ll be even more thrilling.” Luo Feng smiled, his heart filled with anticipation.

Before when they were digging for the thunderstones, they were totally relying on Babata’s initial scans and discoveries of the stones, hence they got so much. And when the 20 million explorer army arrived in different regions and dug up all the other thunderstones...what followed would be the most brutal and savage massacre period! This point, Luo Feng was definitely sure.

Some Sector Lord underlings were able to exchange for treasures while others were not...

Those that didn’t would naturally be ordered to kill and rob! In the eyes of those Sector Lords, even if they lose ten thousand explorers, it didn’t mean anything.

“Hm?” What’s going on, there’s a team following us behind.” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows and communicated.

“There really is one.” Thunder God creased his eyebrows.

“They are following us, are they going to get more thunderstones and just happen to be moving the same way?” Hong said.

“Let’s increase our speed and make a turn.” Luo Feng communicated.

“Yes, master!”

Tie Nan He and Ao Gu followed his command.

When the five made an arc in mid air and increased their speed, becoming five beams of light turning left.

Among the 1,000 man team behind them.

“Captain, they are trying to escape!”

“Right now there’s about a few hundred km between us and the allied army, everybody listen, with the quickest speed chase the 5 man team ahead and kill them.” The captain ordered.

“Yes!”

“Yes!”

“Understood!”

In the dark night, Star level 9 explorers dressed in black alloy armors complied to the order, exploding one by one with immense speed into beams of light into the night sky. It was akin to thousands of shooting stars, different speeds madly rushing towards the five shooting stars. The shooting stars behind were quickly catching up with the ones in front. They were all Star level 9 spirit readers on spirit weapons, much faster than Luo Feng’s group! Among Luo Feng’s group, only the Star level 9 Ao Gu could compare to them, and he was busy carrying both Hong and Thunder God.

“Not good.”

“They are catching up.” Thunder God’s expression changed.

“Master, quickly flee.” Ao Gu’s old face was filled with fear.

Luo Feng glanced back.

The beams of lights were catching up to them with terrifying speeds, almost instantly closing the distance to less than 1 km.

“What do we do?” Thunder God and Hong’s expressions were worried.

Tie Nan He and Ao Gu, the two Star level 9 slaves were worried too.

“There are 1,000 Star level 9 explorers behind.” Luo Feng looked down at his arm screen, his heart getting colder, that 1,000 beams of lights were quickly closing in on them, he watched as they were about to be swallowed.

“Master!!!”

Ao Gu and Tie Nan He looked worriedly at Luo Feng, Thunder God and Hong as they rushed hurriedly.

Luo Feng was in a mess within, since entering the World of Thunder, world within a world, even though their team had met with danger time and again, they had never been so close to this entirely overwhelming situation before. An entire 1,000 man Star level 9 army, if they all attacked together with their weapons, it would be over instantly.

Unless.

Should he use the Golden Horned Beast?

However they were not too far from the allied army base, the moment it appeared, it would be revealed to everybody! And the moment the existence of a Golden Horned Beast was known... many Undying Beings would arrive on Cang Lan Star, taking away Luo Feng the Golden Horned Beast, making him into a slave.

Beast taming, slave soul imprints etc, within the vast universe, it wasn't just the Yun Mo Master that knew these techniques!

When that time came, Luo Feng...was destined to become someone's slave.

"Kill them!" The captain ordered.

"Yes!" A few hundred voices resounded from behind.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Covering both the land and the skies, it was a blur with large amount of spirit weapons flying about, almost as though rain was pouring down on Luo Feng's group, at that time, Hong, Thunder God, Tie Nan He and Ao Gu were in despair.

"Come out!" Luo Feng stared straight at the large amount of blades.

Rumble!

A large object appeared before the five of them, one could only hear a crash sound, the large object didn't move at all. This was a disc shaped universe ship that was about 100m in diameter, entirely black, C9 grade. A Universe level 5 or 6 would find it hard to damage this ship.

In the universe, one never knew when they would use a ship.

Even though there was a ship at the Cang Lan Star docking bay, however with the money from the first account from his teacher, it was easy for Luo Feng to purchase a few other universe ships.

“Ship!”

“He actually brought a ship! He must have a storage item that’s over 100m wide!”

“Quickly, kill them.”

The hundreds of Star level 9 spirit readers, after their first wave of attack had failed, they immediately gathered their energies and immediately circled their weapons, as quick as lightning going around the universe ship and headed straight for Luo Feng’s group.

“Master, quickly!”

“Quickly flee.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God swiftly rushed towards the entrance of the ship, luckily when Luo Feng took out the ship, the entrance was faced right at them. However, their flying speed was far lower than the spirit weapons! Luckily they weren’t too far

from it.

Quickly!”

“Quickly!” Hong and Thunder God’s eyes were flushed red.

“Rush in.” Luo Feng’s eyes were also flushed.

Ao Gu and Tie Nan He were the last two behind. Those hundreds of spirit weapons made a huge arc and gathered, raining down from behind. Blocking the weapons first was the Star level 9 fighter Tie Nan He, and behind him was Star level 9 spirit reader Ao Gu.

Rip! Rip! Rip! Rip! Rip! Rip!

Like a rain of arrows, the spirit weapons cut through Tie Nan He instantly, tearing him like paper...against hundreds of the same leveled spirit weapons attacking him at once, even a Battle-axe Star level fighter would lose instantly without a doubt!

“Rumble!”

“Rumble!”

The external entrance door and the gate within closed.

Shutting out the external world completely.

Sou!

The universe ship violently accelerated, leaving the group of Star level 9 explorers far behind, swiftly disappearing without a trace.

……

The blurred silhouettes of the 1,000 man army floating in mid air all looked as the ship left their sights, helpless.

“1,000 people killing five, and they escaped?” The captain whose face was covered with a beard raged, “How am I to answer to the ninth prince like this?”

“Captain, you can’t blame us, who knew he had a universe ship!”

“Right, a universe ship is at least about 100m. Amongst the five of them, there was one that actually had a storage space that huge, it’s unbelievable.”

“Right.”

The captain nodded, “That big a storage space, it is indeed unbelievable.”

The universe ship was swiftly leaving the center region, its speed was at least a hundred to thousand times that of their flying speeds.

Within the ship.

“Quickly Ao Gu, absorb the life energy within the Mu Ya crystal.” Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were anxiously surrounding Ao Gu, the alloy armor on him long gone, his lower body below his chest were in shreds, only above it was ok.

The earlier attack of hundreds of spirit weapons earlier.

The one right in front of them, Tie Nan He was instantly shredded to pieces, no piece of him was left. And Ao Gu who was behind Tie Nan He relied on the hybrid copper essence and barely protected his head. As for below his chest, it was attacked by weapon after weapon, slicing it into pieces.

“Hu hu…” Threads of life energy seeped into Ao Gu’s body.

Ao Gu gradually recovered.

“Bastards!” Luo Feng reacted, rage boiling within his chest, “Babata, whose people were they?”

“All of the allied army’s people’s appearances and information is recorded, these 1,000 people are underlings of the ninth prince Brolin.” Babata said, back when Luo Feng first entered the allied

army, when he was resting within, Babata naturally recorded the basic information of everyone within the allied army.

For example, odors, appearances, strength etc.

“Brolin?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, raging even more within, “Why would he try and kill me, I have no grudge with him.”

“It’s probably due to the treasures.” Babata said.

“How would he know I exchanged for treasures, there are people frequently going into the thunder castle.” Luo Feng was feeling incredibly terrible, especially since his two bodyguards, Tie Nan He had died and Ao Gu also almost died.

Man wasn’t like plants or trees, he had feelings.

Even though they were slaves that he had bought, the voices of them shouting, “Master, quickly flee!” still resounded within his mind and ears, when danger and crisis struck, both of them used their lives to protect him.

“Brolin, Brolin!!!” Luo Feng raged uneasily within.

It was painful!

“Luo Feng, don’t dwell on it for now. Even though you didn’t use

the Golden Horned Beast, you still used a universe ship, it's still big trouble." Babata said, "A storage item over a 100m wide is incredibly valuable. Back when I gave it to you, I told you never to reveal it. This is because these are a special grade of storage items, only a few Domain Lords have them. And after that battle before, Brolin will definitely keep an eye on you now. Now that he's looking out for you, you'll have trouble."

"Watching me? I'm watching him!" Luo Feng roared.

Chapter 39 – A Dog with its Tail between its Legs

Brolin?” Luo Feng clenched his fists, his knuckles pale, cracking sounds coming from them. His eyes filled with killing intent, raging from within.

“Third brother, are you alright?” Hong who was beside him asked shocked.

Taking a deep breath, heavily suppressing his rage.

“No problem.” Luo Feng shook his head.

No one else knew, but Luo Feng was very clear that after becoming the Golden Horned Beast, he was affected by its characteristics! Back when he massacred in the Killing Fields, he felt a huge sense of relief, however since he relieved himself through that madness, the killing intent within his bones only grew stronger.

Just like a strong addictive poison, when he couldn’t bear it anymore he would take the poison again and relieve it, however the addiction would only get stronger.

One theory was that Luo Feng was now addicted to killing. And the Golden Horned Beast, as the leading bloodline of the twelve species of space beasts, with its strong offensive characteristics, its cold savageness and brutality was purely from its bones and soul,

no one had ever heard of a kind and gentle Golden Horned Beast.

"Third brother?" Thunder God also walked over.

"I'm fine." Luo Feng squatted down beside the heavily injured Ao Gu, his dark red hair was in a mess, his face still pale from the injuries, this made Luo Feng bite down on his lips.

Luo Feng looked up at his two older brothers, Hong and Thunder God were both old enough to be his grandfathers, of course they naturally cared about the youngest, peerlessly talented third brother.

"First and second brother, relax, I won't let my rage take control." Luo Feng said.

"Phew, that's good." Thunder God nodded, "We cannot forget this grudge, but we have to remain calm! Just like when your big brother and I experienced the Great Nirvana period before, many humans died and cities were destroyed by the attacks of the beasts. However enraged we became, we still had to bear with it!"

"Compared to that, this little grudge really doesn't mean much, when we get the chance, we'll kill him." Thunder God said casually.

Hong nodded too.

In terms of experience, Hong and Thunder God were indeed

much more experienced than Luo Feng.

“I understand.” Luo Feng nodded, “Also, those people were sent by the ninth prince Brolin! Compared to him, we have no resistance at all.”

“Brolin?” Hong and Thunder God were both taken aback.

“Right.” Luo Feng nodded, “During the time we wandered around the allied army before, I recorded everybody’s data and appearances with the surveillance device. Those are the underlings of Brolin.”

“That’s troublesome.” Thunder God shook his head.

“This grudge will be hard to repay.” Hong shook his head, “We’ll have to bear with it for a long time.”

Luo Feng was clear too.

Brolin, that level of status, in the vast Black Dragon Mountain star field, was definitely considered one of the upper echelons.

“Nan He’s death, we cannot just let it go too.” Thunder God sneered, “I don’t believe the other powers will just watch as Brolin takes control! Afterall from the 2 million army, that Brolin only controls a little more than 220,000. When the battles really begin, we’ll get him at the crucial time!”

Hong too smiled.

“That’ll have to wait until the cloud contact vine evolves too.” Luo Feng said.

……

The Universe ship constantly distanced itself further from the central region, swiftly flying towards the outer rims.

Along the way.

The news of the appearance of a universe ship in the world within a world was spread as much as possible.

In the outer rims of the world within a world, in the vast uneven mountain range, a universe ship appeared in mid air before vanishing again.

In a dark cave within the mountain range.

“First and second brother, you two help look after Ao Gu.” Luo Feng said.

“Ok.” Hong nodded.

“Relax.” Thunder God smiled.

“Master, I’m fine.” Ao Gu shouted, he had recovered quite a bit from before.

Luo Feng glanced at him, smiling as he swiftly flew out of the cave, a few kilometers away. The vegetation and trees on the mountain range had grown for ten million years, it was thick and lush.

Dressed in alloy armor, Luo Feng stood on the soil ground, his eyes sharp like knives as he surveyed his surroundings.

“Cloud.”

Luo Feng transmitted his thoughts.

“Howl!” The cloud contact vine happily replied, Luo Feng opened both his hands and immediately vines madly extended out, piercing in all directions...with Luo Feng as the venter, the vines were close to 1m thick with lengths that couldn’t be seen from end to end, almost like super large snakes that covered both the land and skies were moving about.

Simultaneously, those thick and long vines extended smaller vines and even leaves.

It covered the land and skies!

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

The large number of vines and roots dug straight into the soil, almost like piercing through tofu, swiftly extending deep underground.

……

Every vine grew to 30,000m, which was 30km! A total of 36 vines that were 30 km long, on them were large amounts of smaller vines and leaves, along with lush amounts of roots and networks, in the blink of an eye, the entire mountain region and its surroundings was totally covered with the cloud contact vine's vines and roots.

The cloud contact vine's core, was Luo Feng, who was dressed in his alloy armor.

"Right now is the most crucial time." Luo Feng took a deep breath, a large leaf shook in front of him.

With a flip of his hand, that almost translucent stone box appeared. He stared at the colors vaguely shimmering from the box, taking a deep breath before opening it.

Pa!

The moment the box was opened, he shook his hand and the

thick aromatic life fruit immediately flew up and headed straight for the huge leaf. The leaf fiercely extended upwards, almost like a large mouth, immediately swallowing the life fruit whole.

Chi chi...

The huge leaf swiftly retracted and went underground.

“Such a pity.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind, One life fruit, something even Sector Lords treasure so much. If used to exchange for Universe slaves, we could even exchange for a whole bunch of of them! And right now it’s given to a cloud contact vine, it is such a pity.”

“Ten birds in the forest cannot compare to one in hand. Babata, this is what you told me.”

“I know what to do, but it is still a pity. It’s a waste of a treasure.” Babata sighed.

Luo Feng was fully concentrated on the cloud contact vine, “Babata, how long do we have to wait?”

“Why don’t you look for yourself?” Babata said indifferently.

Immediately, Luo Feng looked at his the screen that was projected from his arm, the thick vines began to emit shining green lights that revolved about, and the body itself was almost like a heart, pulsing and expanding and contracting constantly,

however every time it expanded after contracting, it seemed like it would grow by quite a bit.

World within a world, central region.

Allied army, Black Dragon Mountain sacred land center, within a large tent.

“Peng!”

The tea cup flew as fast as lightning, violently smashing against the floor and bursting apart with its pieces shattering in all directions, hitting the sides of the tent.

Bastards, bastards, bastards, a bunch of bastards.” Brolin stood in the large tent, raging as he roared, “I told them to increase their speeds and they grow overconfident. Now? I’ve only got two of the three pass codes. Just that one passcode…without that, there’s no way to get the inheritance crystal ball!”

“Stupid, a bunch of idiots.”

“Useless!!!”

Brolin cursed madly, without any of his former composure, losing all sense of self.

One couldn’t blame him, he was from the Black Dragon

Mountain sacred land, and before his grandfather and other elders, he said he would definitely get the inheritance crystal ball and give it to his grandfather. The ninth prince Brolin was very clear, in terms of position and status among the other princes, he was special only because his mother's lineage was strong!

With his grandfather's blessings, he definitely had to work hard to get the inheritance crystal ball to him.

However, who would have thought that when he went to exchange for the second passcode earlier, the living AI, the white bearded old man would exclaim and say, "Little punk, your luck is good. There's only one passcode left of the three, if you were a little later, you wouldn't have been able to get this second passcode anymore."

"Good luck my ass!"

"Good luck my ass." Brolin's expression was pained.

Indeed.

Only with the complete three passcodes would one be able to acquire the inheritance crystal ball. Without the other number, the two pass codes he had were useless.

"Puff, puff." Bu Luo Lin's breathing was heavy, his gaze swept past the two bodyguards before him.

The two bodyguards were both on one knee kneeling, not daring to make a sound.

“Your majesty, “A silhouette ran in from outside, it was one of Brolin’s bodyguards Camelot.

“Hm?” Brolin coldly stared at him.

The bodyguard Camelot was shocked, kneeling down and saying respectfully, “Your majesty, earlier we sent a 1000 man team to chase and kill that five man team, however…we didn’t expect them to actually bring a universe ship along with them.”

“What, a universe ship?” Bu Luo Lin creased his eyebrows.

“Right, a universe ship.” Camelot said, “The enemy took out a universe ship and escaped.”

The two bodyguards kneeling beside glanced at each other, beyond shocked. There was actually someone who brought a universe ship into the world within a world…that was too unbelievable.

“Forging a storage space item requires cutting up a space in the universe to make the item.” Brolin creased his eyebrows, thinking within, “The bigger the space, the harder the actual process of slicing up the space. To be able to store something as huge as a universe ship, this level of storage space item…it’s said that only the Undying Beings can create something like that.”

“Every one of them is priced extremely high.” Brolin was suspicious, “And that five man team actually brought a universe ship in.”

Brolin was very suspicious.

This was because with his status as the ninth prince, the last item his grandfather actually got for him was a storage ring, and that could barely fit a universe ship in. Back then his grandfather even very carefully explained the details of such a high level storage item and its price and worth.

“They may have gotten lucky, picking it up from some warrior along the way.” Brolin didn’t overthink it.

“Give the order, pass the information of these five to the seven large teams, if anyone discovers them, kill them.” Brolin ordered, at the same time his eyes gleaming with severity, “These five are a small matter, most important thing now is to find out who managed to get the last passcode!”

Chapter 40 – Universe Level

"Yes your majesty!"

The three bodyguards knelt down respectfully.

"My speed was definitely sufficient, I didn't expect some other party to acquire 10 million Thunder Stones within that short time too." Brolin sat in his chair, his long pale fingers tapped on on the arms of the chair, suddenly his eyes gleamed, ordering, "Give the order, let the 1st, 2nd and 6th team swiftly draw close to the center region, station themselves about 10,000km around the center region."

"Yes."

The three complied, swiftly leaving the tent.

Only Brolin was left in the tent.

He sat in the chair pondering, as for Luo Feng and his team of 5, Brolin didn't even bother to think twice...in the vast empire of the black dragon mountain empire territory, there were many examples of people getting lucky and acquiring treasures, what's more within this black dragon empire region, he even dared to kill the elites from the other groups.

There wasn't anyone he couldn't trifle with!

If Luo Feng and his team truly had a large background, the word from an absolute fighter would have come down already. To the 9th prince who was so high above others, those five weren't a match at all.

"Vicious, someone actually had the gall to take the inheritance crystal ball passcode from under me." Brolin muttered, "Is it the Holy Sea of Frost? Three Axe Mountain? Hundred Tiger Building? Black Cloud Guild? North Dragon Castle?" Even the families were a probability, Brolin wasn't sure at all just who had taken that last passcode.

About 10,000km from the center region, the grass fields had many explorers gathering.

Many had prepared their tents, these tents' materials were similar to the alloy armors, incredibly sturdy.

In one of the larger tents.

A tall and sturdy, about 3m tall black gorilla man sat within, his strong pectorals forced the armor on his body to slightly protrude, his head was almost totally similar to that of a black gorilla, his bulging eyes with a sense of madness. The apeman race was a large race within the universe.

The apeman could be specifically divided into over a hundred races, many of which were brave and valiant soldiers.

And him, Chakra, was one of the previous absolute warriors of the Three Axe Mountain underlings, sector lord Tian Chen, a star level 9 warrior. Initially, he was simply one of the countless star level 9 cannon fodder, however now...

“Chuckle, chuckle...” A weird sound resounded from Chakra’s throat, his eyes filled with excitement.

“I never expected to be able to break through.”

“Hahaha, this world within a world is indeed my lucky place, the lady of luck has chosen to shine down on me Chakra.” Chakra was extremely excited.

Yes!

He was excited, incomparably excited.

That was because he had broken through from the star level 9 to the universe level 1!

Back when I was drafted from Wei Ke star, I had made a vow to definitely become the greatest warrior. All this, is really happening, it’s happening!” Chakra couldn’t forget his 3000 year life.

He was forcefully taken from his home ground Wei Ke star.

Going through training, sold, transferred again, finally becoming one of the soldiers under the sector lord Jiang Tian Chen, finally reaching star level 9 through hard training, just one of many elite soldiers. A long tedious 3000 year struggle, he was very clear...if he didn't reach the universe level, he would always remain one of the small fries!

Star level 9 and universe level!

It was just a step difference, however that step was akin to the distance between heaven and earth.

"I just broke through and became a universe level and I've already become the Main captain of the large team by the Sector lord, and the original captain has become my assistant. What's more the lord has even given me 30 life planets as my territory. Haha...I definitely have to acquire 3000, no, 30,000 women and produce a lot of children." The apeman Chakra thought excitedly within.

"Lord."

Two voices resounded from outside.

"Enter." Chakra said indifferently.

Two silhouettes entered, these two, one was a star level 2 while the other was star level 3. They were the two leading members under another sector lord from the Three Axe Mountain.

Each leaders of their own teams, however they were usually only star level 2 or 3. That was because they were elites, geniuses!

Ironically, the large group of star level 9s were only cannon fodder, that was because the hope of the cannon fodder breaking through to the universe level wasn't large.

"Didn't expect a stupid apeman to break through to the universe level."

"This kind of luck, it's simply a step to heaven."

The two youths thought within.

"Lord." The two slight bowed, one of the youths smiled, "Lord Chakra, I wonder if you've acquired the passcode already?"

"One of the inheritance passcodes, I've already acquired and transferred it via the virtual universe, telling the noble sector lord." Chakra's voice was bright and clear, however there was a genetic barrier around the entire tent, preventing any sound from escaping.

"Lord Chakra is indeed formidable." The 2 complimented.

"Right."

Apeman Chakra nodded, his black nose snorted out warm air, “The two of your armies should have gathered already right.”

“Yes Lord.” The 2 bowed.

“Very well.” The apeman Chakra praised, his eyes gleaming, his aura surging out from his body, causing the 2 youths to feel pressure, as though the end of the world was nigh.

“Hm?” The apeman Chakra suddenly creased his eyebrows.

“You two can go.” Chakra waved his hand.

“Yes.”

The two youths bowed and left.

Normally, star level 9s were their bodyguards, however this cannon fodder apeman actually broke through to the universe level, one had to know that out of the elites and geniuses, even amongst them the chances of breaking through to the universe level was extremely low. In terms of position, they were far below that of this universe level warrior Chakra.

If they didn’t break through, they would become bodyguards and cannon fodder.

The moment they broke through, they would immediately own

planets and territories, becoming huge figures.

……

World within a world, there were a total of close to 2 million star level 9s! And even if 10 galaxies of star level 9s combined together, there was hardly 2 million star level 9s! And these star level 9s, were all elites picked by the sector lords, domain lords and other strong figures.

With sufficient time…

Out of the 2 million star level 9s, 6 or 7 universe levels breaking through were possible. However that required sufficient time! Hence in these sort of life or death situations, 1 universe level breaking through out of the 2 million star level 9 army was indeed normal.

How much treasure the 9th prince Brolin exchanged for was a secret!

Even the fact that the underling from the Three Axe Mountain, Chakra, becoming a universe level, was a secret!

And at that time…

Luo Feng’s cloud contact vine evolving, was also a secret!

……

World within a world, outer rims, the vast continuous mountain region.

Luo Feng stood within the vegetation, lowering his head to look at his arm screen, on it displayed blood red vines that were evolving at a rapid rate, almost like boiling water, the vines had already seemed to have become much thicker and stronger, with green leaves popping out from them only to be re absorbed and disappear. Occasionally, there were several protrusions that simply exploded just like bubbles.

“Chi chi…”

A large amount of vines and thinner vines were madly waving about.

Even though it was evolving underground, Luo Feng could still feel the earth shake through it’s violent movements.

“3rd brother.”

“3rd brother.”

3 human silhouettes ran over from far, it was Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu, who was already capable of walking.

3rd, it's been over 2 hours, is it not done yet?" Thunder God ran over.

"Right." Luo Feng nodded, "Take a look."

Following which, Luo Feng extended his arm and the screen displayed the scene of the vines evolving, as the cloud contact vine was simply too huge, it was also why Babata could only display a segment of it at a time, naturally the only segment being displayed was its core body part, the center.

"Peculiar indeed." Thunder God stared wide eyed.

"Is it shedding?" Hong stared wide eyed, curious.

Luo Feng stared too, at the time, the thick vines were undergoing rapid change, with the vines constantly shedding large layers of broken skin, revealing fresher vines within, but with its rapid twisting and movement, it would once again shed and the vines gradually got thicker and longer.

Almost as though a tree seed growing into a large tree, but condensed into 2 to 3 hours.

"After eating the life fruit, evolution that would normally take many years is happening within a short time." Luo Feng said, "Hence, it's normal for it to be peculiar."

"Just how big is this cloud contact vine now?" Thunder God

asked.

“The scan is unable to check its entire body, however, through deduction, right now the vine, one vine’s length can already reach about 210 km.” Luo Feng said.

“210km?” Thunder God and Hong were shocked.

Just how long was 210km? The highways on earth, some of the shorter ones were only that length, and just one vine from this was that long?

“And right now the cloud contact vine has a total of 72 main vines.” Luo Feng said.

Thunder God and Hong imagined, 72 main vines that were 210km long, all wrapped around protecting Luo Feng...that was crazy. Compared to his cloud contact vine, even the golden horned beast from back then was smaller by quite a bit.

Luo Feng continued to stare hard at the screen.

The evolution persisted.

Time passed by the minutes and seconds, Hong and Thunder God too didn’t ask anymore, just patiently waiting...The vine on the screen gave off a feeling of immense and unlimited power, the original blood red color of the vines before became even thicker, into an even darker red!

“Howl!” A thought filled with immense elation and devotion transmitted to Luo Feng’s mind.

“The evolution is a success.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

Sousousousousousousou....

Deep underground, the 72 long vines that had reached 300km each swiftly retracted, as for their thin vines and leaves, they too quickly disappeared. Simultaneously while the vines retracted, the cloud contact vine headed towards the surface, causing the ground below Luo feng to tremor, as though an enormous object was about to break through.

“Rumble...”

After shrinking a hundred times from it’s original size, the cloud contact vine broke through the surface, still huge as ever!

72 vines shrunk to 3 km each, about 30cm thick, dark red long vines that danced in the night, simultaneously, the incomparably thick and huge vines wrapped around Luo Feng, shrinking rapidly! Within the blink of an eye, the cloud contact vine that originally covered the lands and skies had swiftly shrunk onto Luo Feng’s body and became small and adorable.

It’s core root entered Luo Feng’s skin.

72 little vines as thick as thumb continued to disperse over a 100m area, dancing about, forming a dark red armor, helmet and boots on Luo Feng's body! Even Luo Feng's fingers were covered, like gloves.

Luo Feng could feel the strength of the cloud contact armor on him.

Even if he didn't use much strength, with a punch, just the explosive power of the cloud contact vine was enough to lay waste to a 100km of earth, rippling over a 1,000km further. This level of strength...was even stronger than when Luo Feng used the natural strengthening ability of the Golden horned beast at star level 9!

Chapter 41 – The Cloud Contact Vine's Power

"Third brother." Thunder God cleared his throat, staring at the cloud contact armor on Luo Feng, "Just how strong is this vine now?"

Hong also stared at Luo Feng's cloud contact armor, obviously the huge aura of the vine contracting had completely stunned him.

"I'm not too clear myself." Luo Feng smiled.

"Cloud contact vine." Luo Feng's thoughts moved, immediately a 2m long vine appeared from Luo Feng's body, landing on the ground beside him. "Babata, take a scan of this vine." Luo Feng communicated mentally to Babata. The cloud contact vine, as a very special plant life form, was hard to scan for its power level.

Usually for humans, scanning their powers with quantum computers or AIs was simple. For beasts, space beasts, etc, these were simple too. Humans and beasts all belonged to the flesh and blood type of living creatures.

Plant life however were unlike the humans having miniature planets within, hence, testing was hard.

Especially like the cloud contact vine, the moment it shrank and entered a human's skin...like before when people looked at Luo Feng and tested his strength, they'd only be able to test Luo Feng's

strength, no one was able to test the cloud contact vine's strength. This was because the vine was a special life form altogether.

Testing the vine's strength?

That would require the vine to leave it's host and make it release its aura alone.

"Tsk tsk, not bad at all." Babata seemed shocked.

"How much?" Luo Feng asked mentally.

"The cloud contact vine's level is...Universe level 2!" Babata said, "The cloud contact vine is a very strong and durable life form, at the same level and grade, 99.99% of humans aren't a match against one. Yours was cultivated and nurtured well, when it reached the Universe level, it developed seventy two main vines and every one of them is akin to a Universe level 2 human fighter, with the combined forces of the seventy two vines...along with its shocking cell strength! Cutting off a vine and being able to quickly regenerate, Universe level 3 humans aren't even a match."

A Universe level 2 cloud contact vine was much weaker than the same level and grade Golden Horned Beast. The Golden Horned Beast at Star level 7 was already capable of easily killing Star level 9 humans.

The cloud contact vine, relying on its cell strength, seventy two main vines, could still put up a fight against Universe level 4

humans.

……

After a while, Luo Feng and his group called out the universe ship, placing it deep within a river in the mountain region.

Universe ship, control room.

Dressed in alloy armor, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God stood at the control board, looking ahead at the virtual screen before them. Ao Gu was still within the cabin resting.

“The biggest scan of the world within a world.” Luo Feng ordered.

“Yes master,” the ship’s AI replied respectfully. This ship was considered stock. Babata hadn’t made any adjustments to it, hence the ship’s AI… was still the stock AI provided when they were building the ship.

Du!

The screen before them immediately displayed the huge scene of the world within a world.

“Luo Feng, just how wide is this ship’s scanning area?” Thunder God asked.

“With the ship as the center, 100,000km.” Luo Feng smiled.

“That’s quite a wide area.” Hong nodded.

Universe ships all came with their own scanning equipment, if any universe explorer ship was to arrive on a planet, it could definitely in a short amount of time scan the approximate condition of the entire planet. However these scanning equipment were primitive, it could only give an estimate of the population, whether there were any shocking amounts of energy or abnormalities etc.

As for the planet’s minerals, accurate population and strength etc, it couldn’t detect.

These scans emphasized the area and size.

And Babata’s scanning equipment, even though it only had a 20 km area, however it could scan the planet’s mineral construct, human strengths, armor grades, materials, the human’s mental aptitudes, etc. All in very specific details.

“Master, there are 32,169 humans in this area.” The ship’s AI reported.

“32,169 of them?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, “Separated into how many teams?”

“One team has 16, 300 humans, another has 10,000, another has 5862, and one team has 7.” The ship’s AI reported respectfully.

At the same time, the virtual screen swiftly split into four scenes, each displaying the four teams, and the seven man team was currently being chased...by the largest team of 16,300 explorers, split into three groups to chase them.

“It’s over, these seven cannot escape.” Thunder God stared.

“They cannot escape, they’ve been surrounded.” Hong said.

Luo Feng sighed.

In this world within a world, it was hard for such little teams to survive.

“The first target will be this 16,300 man team.” Luo Feng said.

“Hm?” Thunder God looked shocked as he turned around.

“You have guarantee?” Hong asked suspiciously.

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

In the vast grass fields.

A team of seven was currently surrounded by many other explorers.

“We surrender.”

“We surrender, don’t kill us, we have thunderstones, we are willing to give our thunderstones.”

The seven man team shouted loudly, their faces filled with fear, that was because in all directions, they were surrounded by three large teams, each with up to 1,000 and even 3,000 people, how could they escape?

“Haha, surrender?”

“Why should we accept your surrender?”

The three teams were far away before, however in the blink of an eye they closed a few tens of kilometers, forcing the seven man team in the center into a corner. The three teams, one with 3,000 people laughed as they looked at the small team, this was because they had full guarantee of their victory, hence they didn’t rush to kill them.

“Haha, after killing you all, we’ll still be able to get your thunderstones.” A strong looking man with black stripes on his face laughed loudly.

The people in the seven man team’s faces went pale.

“Weren’t you gathering us before?” The captain of the small team, a handsome man with golden gleaming hair shouted loudly, “you said before as long as we were willing to join you all and help you collect thunderstones, with your organization’s name at stake, you would guarantee our safety,:

“Haha, stupid. That’s at the allied army base. At the base, it is forbidden to kill. Hence we gathered you.”

“And at the other places in this world within a world, we can kill you directly. Everything of yours belongs to us, including the universe crystals.”

“Poor fools, you’ve been too greedy!”

The 3,000 man team surrounded the little team of seven.

The seven man team was completely devastated.

“Captain.” The other six looked at the golden haired man, he could only shake his head painfully, raising it up, “I’m begging you, I’ll give you our universe crystals, thunderstones, just spare our lives.”

“Still dreaming?”

“So stupid.”

“Poor fools.” The 3,000 man team laughed.

“Stop playing around, kill them.” A bald man with a face full of scales shouted.

“Yes.”

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

In the despairing looks of the seven man team, a rain of spirit weapons shot over, immediately tearing them to shreds! And following which, the three teams surrounded the corpses, one member swiftly flew over and took all their treasures.

“Captain.” The member gave the storage rings to the bald scaled man.

“Yes.” The bald man nodded, “Let’s return.”

Among the vast teams, the bald man was just about to check what treasures they got from the storage rings when suddenly...

As quick as lightning!

Little vines suddenly broke through the soil below, swiftly binding the bald man’s legs and violently dragging him underground!

Crash!

A large hole immediately appeared in the ground and the bald scale man vanished.

Two other vice captains beside him who initially had smiling faces and were carefree suddenly turned to realize, the captain that was standing beside them had suddenly vanished and there was a hole in the ground.

Hole?

The two vice captains stared wide eyed at the hole.

“Captain!”

“What’s going on?”

“Where’s the captain?” The 2 vice captains and surrounding members were all stunned, under their watch, someone was actually stolen away.

“The captain is below, no life force, he’s dead.” A spirit reader member shouted, “12m underground.”

Immediately a group of Star level 9 explorers began digging underground, very quickly finding their captain’s body, bringing it

back up to the surface.

“This…”

“My god…”

The two vice captains and surrounding members all looked shocked at the dead body, his head was burst open, beyond death. The most shocking thing was…one of his fingers was broken off, and it was the one wearing the storage ring!

“Quickly inform the main captain. The captain has been killed and the storage ring has been taken!”

……

And deep underground.

A long thin vine swiftly retracted, on it was a leaf, wrapped around the broken finger and storage ring. The vine was even wearing a bracelet, the bracelet that Babata was stored in.

Babata let out his scanning radius, swiftly connecting to the universe ship’s 100,000 km area signal.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng.”

“Received, received.” Luo Feng stood within the universe ship.

“Three main vines separately killing the three captains of the teams. Success.”

“Very good. Continue dealing with that huge team.” Luo Feng said.

“Ok. However…that large team may very likely have detailed scanning equipment. That’s what they use to scan for the thunderstones, those might discover the cloud contact vine.” Babata said, “If I discover any of these equipment and their signal, I’ll stop the hunt.”

“Alright, this hunt, the priority is to not let the other teams discover the cloud contact vine. Guarantee its secrecy.” Luo Feng said.

“Alright, then I’ll continue.” Babata disconnected the call.

This hunt…

Relied heavily on the cloud contact vine with its piercing through the ground, and with Babata instructing it around. With his scanning area and level, it was naturally incomparably clear. With the cloud contact vine’s strength, they truly had no fear of any team.

Chapter 42 – A Month and a Half of Slaughter

The cloud contact vine's large physical structure along with it's strong cell regeneration, even if it got hit by a laser or rail gun, having a part of it destroyed, it could still regenerate. Hence in the world within a world, a Universe level 2 cloud contact vine was truly invincible.

……

About 10,000km away from the 16,300 man team, a universe ship parked on a grassy field.

Within the ship's control room.

A long vine entered the cabin, extending to the control room.

"Cloud vine." Luo Feng affectionately rubbed the cloud contact vine.

"We've successfully killed nine captains, acquiring twelve storage items." A voice resounded within, simultaneously, that long vine curled up and rested within the allied army.

"Tell me the exact details of the situation!" Brolin's voice was cold.

“The fourth large team, under your instructions were stationed at the swamp area. They were prepared to attack and rob other teams. However tonight, just before! There were three strong teams that attacked and surrounded the fourth large team. These three teams also had laser guns, and their strength was very much in an advantageous situation. That plus the fourth team didn’t have enough time to react…they were defeated in an instant.”

“The fourth large team lost one third of their troops, with the rest dispersing and fleeing.”

“During the escape, they were discovered by other teams and chased and killed. This resulted in less than 10,000 survivors in the team.” The bodyguard said, “Right now the remaining lucky survivors are swiftly rushing towards the central region.”

Brolin went silent for quite awhile.

“Surrounding the fourth large team with three teams, just how many were there?” Brolin asked.

“At least 60,000 people!” The bodyguard said.

“You can leave first.” Brolin waved his hand.

The bodyguard left.

Only Brolin was left in the large tent, he squinted his eyes and pondered, muttering: “60,000 people? The thunderstones in this

world within a world have almost been dug clean. The battles have begun even faster than what I predicted! What's more, in the blink of an eye, there is a 60,000 combined forces team...looks like the other sides aren't stupid."

Brolin controlled over 220,000 people, while if the other sides had lesser people, that would have been too advantageous for Brolin.

One had to know, each of the other large teams all had Sector Lords behind them!

Powerful Sector Lords, some friends while others in the same organizations. At crucial times like these, ordering their teams below them to team up was a very normal thing to do.

"Have the battles begun?" Brolin licked his lips, eyes filled with madness, "bring it on!"

.....

Virtual Universe, Black Dragon Mountain Island.

In a two level quiet villa, the Apeman Chakra sat in a chair, two screens appeared before him, both with people in them.

"Lord Chakra, that was really thrilling, Brolin's underlings were instantly defeated and they lost a good half of that team."

“I believe that Brolin must be raging.”

The two people on the screen spoke.

The Apeman Chakra laughed carefree, “you two, that was only our first attack! That Brolin may command a lot more troops than us, but with this loss, he’ll be more cautious. However after showing off before, with every side taking him as an enemy, he won’t have any good days to live!”

“Right, just one prince, daring to pick a fight with us! We have to teach him a good lesson this time, let him know…we aren’t ones to be trifled with.”

“You two have to be careful too, that Brolin won’t just let this incident go.”

……

War, that was how it began suddenly!

During the digging for thunderstones period before, a few enormous teams (10,000 or above), exercised control and avoided battle.

However, since the three teams allied and attacked Brolin’s fourth large team, the entire world within a world immediately

boiled over and war erupted. Whether it was the large powers or individual explorers, or even the large teams combining forces! Even allied armies of over 10,000 troops were formed, large battles erupted in the world within a world.

“Genetic long distance attack!”

Rumble...

Colorful glaring beams of genetic energy, over 10,000 of them, came from one side of the army, breaking through the skies and headed towards another.

Star level 9 genetic energy, leaving the bodies and attacking!

With over 10,000 beams of them combined, the power wasn’t any less than a C2 or C3 laser cannon.

“Second team.”

Pu! Pu! Pu!...

Spirit weapons gathered together, just like a school of fish, almost as though one person was commanding them all, over 1000 spirit weapons combining forces and attacking one point, following which they arced and attacked another.

.....

Elite soldiers!

These Star level 9 warriors, were the largest and most powerful force within the Black Dragon Mountain star field, the elite soldiers of the two sacred lands and four large organizations. In terms of combined and synchronized attacks, they were very well trained.

In a flash, the vast million km of the world within a world was filled with battles all over, blood stained the entire land.

In the swamps.

A universe ship stopped within, and in the control room, Luo Feng and his team of four were within checking on the storage items.

“Haha, acquiring so much in such a short time.” Thunder God laughed loudly.

“When everybody was digging for the stones earlier, all their scanning equipment were on all the time! And now since the dig is over and the battles have begun, these equipment have no use.” Luo Feng smiled, “with their equipment off, the cloud contact vine can make its move on all the head captains.”

90% of the time, within a large team, the treasures were held by the captain.

Hence, Luo Feng's rewards from killing all the little 1000 man team captains couldn't even compare to killing one head captain.

"How many thunderstones do we have?" Hong asked.

"We have close to 610,000, from that head captain's storage ring, and we also acquired the three treasures he exchanged for. These three are close to 800,000 thunderstones in total in price." Luo Feng smiled, "It's better to hunt the head captains, it's more worth it."

.....

In the world within a world, the 2 million man army was engaged in intense slaughter.

With many devious plans and ploys around, the teams could still maintain contact secretly due to the Virtual Universe Network.

It was troubled times!

And the Sector Lords behind those teams definitely couldn't just give up the treasures! Even if they lost a 10,000 strong team, as long as they could still acquire just one treasure, it was worth it! That was because with the Sector Lords' orders...these battles became a bloodbath! Star level 9 fighters, spirit readers, they were truly cannon fodder.

……

And in the process, Babata's coordination with the cloud contact vine worked with their sneak attacks.

When they first began, the teams in the world within a world were still oblivious, after all the communication between teams was sparse. However with the head captains dying numbers increasing, one had to know…in the entire world within a world, just how many large teams were there? Every large team had at least 10,000 people.

When their sneak attacks resulted in the death of the sixth head captain…

The Sector Lords controlling gave the orders.

"In the world within a world, there should be a Universe level spirit reader, his spirit weapon is able to penetrate the earth and dig! He used his digging to ambush a head captain. All squads need to be extra careful." Following the warnings from the Sector Lords, the large teams became extra careful, causing Luo Feng's hunting efficiency to drop drastically.

……

The battles were bound to end one day.

The battles in the world within a world lasted about a month and

a half, from the initial 2 million army, until the last remaining 600,000! One had to know…the 200,000 allied army in the central region didn't take part in the battles. That meant to say that the real battle between the 1.8 million people resulted in less than 400,000 left.

It was simply tragic!

In the dense forests, a universe ship was parked.

Within the control room.

"It's ended, the battles have ended." Luo Feng sighed, rubbing the cloud contact vine beside him, it proudly wiggled its vine body, following which, with a pop, it entered Luo Feng's skin and formed an armor.

"Even though we only killed six head captains and the teams became extra cautious, our earnings are still not bad." Thunder God said proudly.

Hong couldn't help but laugh too.

Luo Feng couldn't help but rub his finger, the storage ring was assimilated into his skin.

One and a half months! The earnings from this period were indeed huge.

“We have a total of nine treasures and 9.08 million thunderstones!” Luo Feng smiled, looking at Thunder God and Hong, “first and second brother, it’s time we returned to the allied army ground. These thunderstones have to be exchanged there.”

Chapter 43 – The Light and Shadow of the Blade

“Right, return to the allied army base!” Hong’s expression was serious.

“Returning there won’t be easy.” Thunder God rubbed his bald head and pondered.

Luo Feng nodded.

Right now with the thunderstones and treasures in hand, they still have to return to exchange for the treasures. The thunderstones by themselves weren’t worth anything…they were only valuable if used to exchange for the treasures! However even though the battle ended, the other powers would still attack the teams with fewer members!

“Our four man team heading towards the allied base isn’t safe at all.” Hong creased his eyebrows. “Those other teams from the big powers, even though they’ve stopped fighting and have all suffered heavy losses, a bad ship still has nails, if they see us, with the one and a half months of mad killing before, they’d definitely act and send a team of a 1,000 to wipe us out.”

Luo Feng’s expression was heavy.

Four man team?

These sorts of little teams, the large teams wouldn't spare them any mercy.

"Killing is forbidden in the allied base." Luo Feng emphasized, "However, outside there, there are no restrictions. Hence we have to rush all the way to the allied base, we have to be extra careful not to bump into any of these other teams."

"Right."

Hong and Thunder God nodded.

"Let's first rely on the universe ship." Luo Feng thought as he said, "We'll use it till we reach a flat land area, hide it and then sneak into the allied base."

"I agree." Hong nodded.

"I suggest leaving at night." Thunder God suggested.

"Alright, then we'll depart tonight." Luo Feng smiled.

……

Even though their moods were good, Luo Feng didn't dare get over confident or careless.

As the universe ship had scanning equipment, along with it being thousands and tens of thousands of times faster than Star level 9 warriors, it could easily slip past the other explorer teams, allowing them to easily pierce through the skies and arrive at the central region flat lands.

"Right now there's only about 10,000km to the allied base. We have rely on our flying." Luo Feng's thoughts moved, immediately keeping the universe ship within his space ring, at the same time looking at Hong and Thunder god, "First and second brother, earlier the ship scanned the surrounding area, from here to the allied base may only be 10,000km. However, there are quite a few teams stationed in between."

Hong and Thunder God nodded.

After one and half months of mad killing and massacre, many teams were exhausted, many retreating to the central region to recover. However, if Luo Feng's team met any along the way...it would be just like sneaking past the mouth of a dragon that could swallow them anytime. For their small team, being discovered meant instant death!

Afterall...

To be able to live till now, experiencing the battles along with life and death, which team didn't have treasures?

"Depart." Luo Feng communicated cautiously through spirit energy.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu followed their planned route, ready to avoid any of the teams stationed on the flat lands and reach the central allied army base.

……

10,000km.

To Luo Feng's group, it was indeed a very short distance. If they accelerated, even in the world within a world, it wouldn't require one hour. However they were being extra careful, hence they didn't dare move too fast…

"19.6 km ahead, there's a patrolling 1,000 man team. We are still 3,620km away from the base, this team should be some large group's little team. We'll detour around them." Luo Feng glanced at his arm screen and communicated to the three via spirit energy.

Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu didn't dare to relax.

They were currently dancing on knives' edges, the moment they were discovered…there would be big trouble.

"We've already went around them, let's continue to get closer to the allied base."

“2,110 km away from the allied base.”

“We’ll take a detour ahead, there’s a large team ahead.”

“800km away from the base.”

……

Luo Feng and his team were extremely cautious, under the cover of night, they sneakily flew close to the ground, detouring occasionally and flying fast occasionally, spending close to three hours and finally arriving at the allied base camp.

“That’s great.”

“We’ve finally arrived at the base.”

Luo Feng and his team all revealed expressions of glee, they were on high alert for the past three hours, that was because any of the teams could have sent a group to patrol at any time. One couldn’t blame their cautiousness, after all with the mad killing and battles for one and half months, sneak attacks were common.

Hence there were many patrol teams! Because of this, Luo Feng’s squad didn’t dare to relax at all.

“Phew, we’ve arrived.” Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief.

“Stop!”

The security captain outside the base shouted, behind him was a vast number of people, with over 1,000 people surrounding him, the captain’s gaze swept past Luo Feng’s team.

“We are underlings of Lord Ming Yu from Three Axe mountain.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Right.”

The captain lowered his head and looked at his quantum computer, Lord Ming Yu indeed had these four underlings and their their data.

“Enter.” The captain said coldly.

Luo Feng and his team immediately flew into the allied base, that captain glanced at them, biting down and gritting his teeth: “Three Axe Mountain scum! Hmph, if I didn’t meet you here at the allied base, I’d definitely kill you to avenge my fallen brothers, bastards! Bastards!”

Luo Feng and his team walked into the base, the entire base was filled with rage and killing intent, many teams looked at each other with hate, as though they wanted to eat each other up.

“What’s going on?” Thunder God said softly, “The last time we were here, the explorers from the different teams in here even recognized each other as brothers. However, now, the killing intent and hatred is incredibly prominent.”

Luo Feng nodded.

The whole walk through the allied base, was filled with very few smiling faces, many of the explorers all had icy expressions, their eyes filled with hatred.

“The last time we came here, that security captain outside was still smiling at us and inviting. That captain however just now was cold.” Luo Feng said softly, “Probably after one and half months of massacre, each side lost too many men. These explorer armies probably lost a lot of their friends and brothers, hence this reaction.”

……

When Luo Feng and his team entered the base and headed towards the Three Axe Mountain side, they didn’t know…others had already discovered him.

“It’s those four.”

“They’re one less this time.”

“They actually returned, hurry and report to the Lord, these are

the few that his majesty personally picked out.”

“Yes.”

A few silhouettes within the allied army base examined Luo Feng from far, following which some of them swiftly left to look for the prince’s bodyguards to report.

Allied base, sacred land Black Dragon Mountain side, within a large tent.

The ninth prince Brolin sat in a chair, closing his eyes, eyebrows creased, as though troubled by something.

“Your majesty.” A man ran in from outside, kneeling down on one knee.

“Camelot.” Brolin opened his eyes, surveying the kneeling bodyguard.

“Your majesty, our surveillance team has discovered four people! They are the ones you personally asked to kill before, also the ones that escaped in a universe ship, four of the five.” The bodyguard reported. Back then they actually kept watch on Luo Feng’s five man team for half a night before following them out to kill them.

Hence they were very familiar with their appearances and strengths. The moment Luo Feng and his team arrived, they immediately recognized them.

“Hm? Universe ship?” Brolin creased his eyebrows, revealing a smile, “I remember!”

One and half months of massacre with Brolin commanding a large army. This had caused him to use a lot of strength and concentration to battle with the other armies, Luo Feng’s incident was a small matter compared to that.

“Continue to keep watch.” Brolin coldly ordered.

“Yes.”

The bodyguard complied respectfully.

……

Within the Three Axe Mountain faction, whoever was under the Sector Lords or Domain Lords from Three Axe Mountain all gathered here the moment they arrived at the allied base. Luo Feng and his team thus entered the faction.

“Master, the last time we were ordered by the ninth prince to be killed, they’ll definitely recognize us. Our returned this time, they should have discovered us.” Au Go communicated via spirit energy.

“Right.” Luo Feng nodded.

Recognized?

This was long within Luo Feng's calculations, however even if they were recognized, they'd still have to return to the allied base.

"Even if I don't exchange for treasures, we still have to safely leave the world within a world, safely exiting the World of Thunder." Luo Feng said softly, "However, if I haven't guessed wrong, there should be a team stationed at the exit of the world within a world! The moment any little team exits, they'll definitely be killed and robbed."

"Only through following a large team can one exit." Luo Feng was very clear on this point.

As for Brolin?

There was nothing to be afraid of!

The whole mixing in with the Three Axe Mountain faction and returning to Cang Lan Star, Luo Feng had never thought of acting alone. He would be following the faction and large group. Wherever they went and stationed, he would follow. When they leave the world within a world, he too would naturally leave along with them.

"I don't believe he would dare make a move when I'm within this faction." Luo Feng thought secretly, "Maybe in his eyes, he never

thought of me as a target."

"Luo Feng."

"Luo Feng."

Voices resounded, causing the deep in thought Luo Feng to awaken, he looked up and saw a skinny man, along with a tall and sturdy gold short haired man walking over, the skinny man smiled, "Luo Feng, This is Lord Bendi, the head captain of Three Axe Mountain's second large team."

Luo Feng was shocked, the golden short haired man before him had an aura much stronger than everybody else.

"Lord Bendi." Luo Feng bowed, beside him, Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu bowed too.

Before they arrived, relying on Babata's scan, they already knew...in this allied base with a total of about 480,000 people, there were six universe levels! Obviously the long one and a half months of brutal battles, losing over a million Star level 9 warriors had forced out six Universe level breakthroughs.

Of which the Three Axe Mountain faction had two Universe level fighters!

"Luo Feng? Lord Ming Yu has mentioned you before to me." The golden haired tall and sturdy man smiled as he looked at Luo Feng

and his team.

Chapter 44 – The Final Transaction

“Weren’t you guys a five man squad?” captain Bendi looked towards Luo Feng’s group of four.

As one of the two universe level fighters in the world within a world, Bendi has access to a lot of detailed information.

“We were, but one of our squad members died” sighed Luo Feng.

“Killed by who?” frowned Bendi.

“One of the men under the ninth prince” Luo Feng wasn’t in such a good mood. Even though Tie Nan He was a slave, there weren’t any slaves on earth. So Luo Feng didn’t subconsciously treat his slaves as ‘goods’ and treated them like bodyguards instead.

So Tie Nan He’s death made Luo Feng grateful for Tie Nan He’s service and also angry at the ninth prince.

“The ninth prince?” Bendi shook his head, “Then we can’t do anything. Far too many people have died by his men”.

“I understand” Luo Feng nodded.

“If you guys can survive, Lord Ming Yu will surely be very happy” smiled Bendi, “A reminder, I’m also under Lord Ming Yu”.

“Oh?”

Luo Feng, Hong, and Thunder God were extremely shocked. As the head of the four organizations, Three Axe Mountain has many sector lords and domain lords. ‘Ming Yu’ isn’t exactly an elite in Three Axe Mountain, and yet one of the two universe level fighters that appeared in Three Axe Mountain’s group is under Ming Yu.

“So captain Bendi was also under Lord Ming Yu,” Luo Feng let out a face of joy.

“Haha, when we leave the world within a world and head back to Cang Lan Star, you guys come with me to see Lord Ming Yu together” Bendi smiled. If it wasn’t for their common superior ‘Lord Ming Yu’, Bendi wouldn’t personally come greet Luo Feng’s group.

“For sure,” Luo Feng smiled as he responded.

Bendi then left. As a higher up of the Three Axe Mountain’s group, there were many things Bendi had to deal with.

Even though it was late into the night, people wearing battle uniform sets and helmets could frequently be seen entering the Thunder Castle in the middle.

Luo Feng, Hong, and Thunder God looked at the Thunder Castle in the middle from far away in the crowd.

“Big brother, second brother, what are you guys preparing to exchange?” said Luo Feng through his spiritual force.

“A D6 grade rail gun and a Thunder instruction manual” said Thunder God.

“Alright” smiled Luo Feng.

This is what it’s like to be rich: just buy whatever you want.

“Big brother, what about you?” Luo Feng looked towards Hong.

“It seems like there aren’t that many things that are beneficial to me. If there are any ‘Life Fruits’ left, then help me buy one. Also, if there are any ‘Heart of Stars’ left, then buy me that too. That’s it for now” said Hong.

“Understood” Luo Feng nodded, and then let out a smile, “Big brother, second brother, I’ll be using the leftover thunderstones to exchange for other treasures..... those treasures also represent a huge amount of wealth. After we leave, we can use that huge amount of wealth to exchange for some things that we really need”.

“Alright” smiled Hong.

“Thirdie, do what you want, since you were the one that got all of these stones” snickered Thunder God, “Your big brother and me are just taking advantage of you”.

.....

Luo Feng wasn't in a rush to exchange immediately. He first silently observed. There were indeed quite a few people who entered the Thunder Castle. However, 99% of them are probably just decoys to confuse other people.

The night slowly passed, and a sliver of light appeared in the world within a world.

The cold breeze blew across the plain. Luo Feng, who was wearing an alloyed battle uniform set while wearing a helmet and had an alloyed blade on his back just like every other universe adventurer headed straight towards the Thunder Castle.

"He's going to the ancient castle"

"Is he a decoy, or actually going to exchange for something?"

"Who cares if he's actually going to make a transaction, hurry up and report this to the lord. The captain of that four man squad went to the ancient castle"

"Yes"

The adventurers on surveillance duty under the ninth prince immediately reported this information. Of this, Luo Feng knew

nothing about. However, even if he knew, Luo Feng would just laugh without a care..... as part of the army of the Three Axe Army, Luo Feng really wasn't afraid of anything.

While the large amount of people under the alliance watched, Luo Feng stepped into the gates of the castle.

Thunder Castle, a gloomy, cold, ancient room.

Luo Feng silently stood there.

"I want to make a transaction" yelled Luo Feng.

"Wait a bit kiddo" a low sound reverberated around the ancient room, "There are a lot of people making transactions these two days, so I'm a bit busy. Let me finish with this one first"

Luo Feng was shocked when he heard this: "The living AI is currently dealing with someone else?"

"MAN, THAT'S DIRTY!" yelled Babata.

"What's wrong?" inquired Luo Feng.

"This living AI is sure a messed up and sinister person" said Babata angrily, "Even though there are many people from the alliance entering the castle, it's just one person every few minutes. And that is when a lot of people are entering! Isn't the living AI

telling you directly..... that the person before you is actually making a transaction?”

Luo Feng was extremely shocked.

“You have no power or authority. But if you did have authority and was the leader of a huge team, what would you do?” asked Babata.

“I would arrange for people to keep an eye on him. After he leaves the alliance’s area, I’ll make my move” Luo Feng’s eyes were filled with shock.

Understood, he understood!

“So yeah. This living AI sure is sinister. As a living AI, could he not predict the consequences of every word he says? His computation ability is extraordinary, so he wouldn’t make such a stupid mistake. Which means..... he’s doing this on purpose!”

“There is only one reason he has for doing this: to make you guys kill each other!”

“This living AI is seriously sinister.” Babata was extremely angry.

Luo Feng was also a bit angry.

If their guess is correct, then the living AI in this ancient castle is

probably the reason why the ninth prince Brolin arranged for people to chase them down. Otherwise, there is no other explanation..... why would the great ninth prince only go after Luo Feng's group and not other groups!

The sound of footsteps carried from the hallway. A fat, white bearded old man smiled as he walked in. There was a layer of light surrounding his body. If you observe carefully, you could barely discover..... that this white bearded old man was not a real person, but a being made out of energy.

"Lord Wu," even though Luo Feng was a bit angry in his heart, he appeared to be very well-mannered on the surface.

Fighting against a 'messed up' living AI that has been lonely for tens of thousands of years is a very stupid thing to do.

"Hey kid, this is our second time meeting isn't it?" smiled the white bearded old man, "It seems like your harvest went well. Tell me, what do you want to exchange for?"

"One life fruit," said Luo Feng.

"You exchanged for a life fruit last time and you still want another one?" the white bearded old man looked at Luo Feng with surprise.

"Yes" nodded Luo Feng.

“None left, none left,” the white bearded old man shook his head in response, “all the life fruits I have are gone, not a single one left”

“Not a single one left?” Luo Feng froze.

Yeah, thunder stones represented treasure, but that doesn’t mean ‘thunder stones’ can absolutely give you the treasure you want. Because the treasures here are limited! Like even if the ninth prince ‘Brolin’ gets a ton of thunder stones later, he’ll never be able to get the third password to the crystal ball of inheritance.

“Then I’ll exchange for a heart of stars” said Luo Feng.

“Don’t have any of that left either” the white bearded old man shook his head.

“What? None of that? Then..... there at least must be a D6 grade rail gun left” Luo Feng stared at the white bearded old man.

The D6 rail gun is not that useful for sector lords and domain lords. So the chances of someone exchanging for it is quite low. And, there are even a total of three D6 grade rail guns available.

“None of that left either” the white bearded old man shook his head, “On the first day, a single person exchanged for all three of these D6 grade rail guns in one go”

“Uh——”

Luo Feng took in a deep breath.

None of that, none of this, none of anything.

“Lord Wu, what treasures still remain?” Luo Feng looked at the white bearded old man.

“There are still 63 treasures remaining” the white bearded old man smiled as he looked at Luo Feng, “Since you seem good, I won’t waste your time”. As he said that, he waved his head. In a moment, rays of energy gathered around him and formed a screen. On the screen was a treasure list which clearly displayed how many of each treasure remained.

“No.1 The bank account to the entire spatial instruction manual inheritance crystall ball (three accounts), stock: none.

No.2 Master’s bank account, stock: none.

No.3 Domain lord level bloodline evolution potion (one portion)

.....

No.18 Thunder instruction manual set (six manuals in a set), stock: five.

.....

No.68 level 5 genetic energy weapon ‘Fire Wheel’, stock: none.

Luo Feng looked at this list and took in a deep breath.

Holy.

None, none, none, none, none, none! A huge list of “nones” made one’s heart go cold.

“Kiddo, what’ll it be?” the white bearded old man smiled as he looked at Luo Feng.

And yet, Luo Feng was in a dilemma. Which one should he pick?

“Luo Feng, what are you so confused about? Stupid!” Babata’s voice rang in his mind.

“You want a heart of stars? There’s none here, but it’s available in the universe!”

“You want a life fruit? It’s also available in the universe!”

“As long as you have enough wealth and the proper connections, you can purchase them. So..... there’s no need to be confused. All you have to do is exchange for the more valuable ones out of this list. These treasures represent a huge amount of wealth. Can’t you just purchase what you want in the universe later?” said Babata.

Luo Feng laughed.

Such a simple idea, and yet his thinking was restricted to the list in front of him.

“These are the ones that are more valuable, so purchase these” Babata told Luo Feng which items to purchase as they communicated with their thoughts.

“That, and that”

“And those, I want all of those”

“And that Thunder instruction manual set, I want all of the remaining five sets” Luo Feng was rich.

The white bearded old man was stunned.

Because those with a lot of thunder stones purchased what they needed at the beginning. Towards the end..... those who come to exchange don’t have that many thunder stones. And yet, Luo Feng wanted so many items in one go. The amount of thunderstones required was quite an alarming amount.

“That’ll be a total of 9.02 million thunderstones” the white bearded old man stared at Luo Feng.

Chapter 45 – Return

At first, the leaders of the organizations, like the ninth prince, brought millions and tens of millions of thunderstones to exchange at the thunder castle! This wasn't weird.... however, later on, since those with thunderstones have already exchanged them a long time ago, barely any large transactions appear.

"Lord Wu, here are 9.02 million thunderstones" with a flip of his hand, a spatial storage ring appeared.

The fat, white bearded old man extended his hand to take it. With a quick check, he couldn't help but to raise his head towards Luo Feng: "Kiddo, you surprise me more and more. It seems like you don't have that much authority in the alliance. With your previous exchanges, the total amount of thunderstones you used exceeds 10 million"

"Luck," Luo Feng smiled.

"Luck can't explain some things," the white bearded old man smiled and stopped talking there.

With a flip of his hand, all sorts and types of treasures started hovering in the ancient room. All types of elemental source laws of the universe emanated around. There were several five stage genetic weapons and spiritual weapons. The extremely complicated engravings on them were similar to the natural engravings on the golden horned beast. The thick aura of the elemental source laws caused Luo Feng to hold his breath.

Each item is a valuable treasure.

Each item can exchange for tens of thousands of life planets, some can even go for hundreds of thousands of life planets!

All of these treasures added together far exceed the price of a galaxy! They are worth more than all the property of a fighter who just stepped into the ‘sector lord’ level.

“Wow” as Luo Feng looked at all of these valuable treasures hovering in front of him, his heart rate couldn’t help but to accelerate, his blood was boiling.

“I’ll put all of these treasures in this spatial storage ring” the white bearded old man threw a spatial storage ring to Luo Feng.

“Okay” Luo Feng took it and checked the treasures inside. He then frowned, “Lord Wu, what about the five sets of the thunder instruction manual?”

“The five sets of the thunder instruction manuals are stored in these five mini quantum computers” smiled the white bearded old man.

“Thank you, Lord Wu. I will be going now then” Luo Feng greeted and then left.

On the vast plain, the number of men in the alliance exceeded five million. Clearly, the other squads in the outer areas are returning.

After his successful exchange, Luo Feng left the ancient castle in a good mood and returned to Three Axe Mountain's area.

"Third bro" Thunder God saw Luo Feng and waved his hand.

"Coming" Luo Feng came with a smile on his face.

"How'd it go?" there was a bit of expectation in Hong's eyes as he carefully asked through his genetic energy.

"We were too slow, all the good stuff has been taken. Whether the D6 railgun, the life fruit, or the heart of stars, all of these legendary treasures are gone" replied Luo Feng through his spiritual force. He had to be careful, since there were many other people from Three Axe Mountain in the surroundings.

"They're all gone?" Hong and Thunder God froze.

"Yeah. Out of all the things you wanted, I only got the five thunder instruction manual sets" Luo Feng smiled as he looked at Thunder God, "Second brother, this thunder instruction manual is sector lord Kabu's instruction manual. It suits you nicely"

This thunder instruction manual wasn't that valuable compared to the other treasures.

Because sector lord Kabu was, after all, just a ‘sector lord’. The techniques he came up with can’t be that powerful (compared to the inheritance crystal). If it was an undying being’s instruction manual, then that would be a very big deal! Luo Feng received the inheritance of the Yun Mo Planet sect, which is way more powerful than that thunder instruction manual.

Of course——

On the path of thunder, the Yun Mo Planet sect is probably a bit weaker, since the Yun Mo Planet sect focuses on the path of spirit readers.

“Haha, let me see” Thunder God couldn’t control himself, since he practices the path of thunder.

“Don’t rush” yelled Hong through his genetic energy, “There are tons of people watching around us. If someone finds out..... there might be trouble. You can slowly look through those instruction manuals after we leave the World of Thunder. Also, it’s not like you’ll be able to get through them in a short amount of time”

“Yeah, okay, I’ll listen to big brother.” Thunder God’s mind became clear.

“Big brother, second brother” Luo Feng continued, “Even though I finished exchanging, I still have 60,000 thunderstones here”

“You still have so many?” Hong and Thunder God froze.

Hong replied: “These thunderstones cannot go to waste. Since you can’t exchange them, sell them quickly. After we leave the world within a world, these thunderstones are worthless”

“Right now in the alliance, there are still people purchasing thunderstones. Even though the prices aren’t as high as they were in the beginning, we should still try to find the best price possible” said Luo Feng through his spiritual force, “Big brother, second brother, let’s look for people who are purchasing thunderstones in the alliance for a few days and talk with them to see how much we can sell for”

“Alright” Hong and Thunder God nodded.

.....

In the next few days, the size of the army on the plain continued to increase. In the meantime, Luo Feng managed to sell the 60,000 thunderstones in several portions, since even those who are purchasing them can’t swallow so many thunderstones at once.

Because there weren’t many treasures left in the castle, so the exchange rate for the thunderstones dropped dramatically!

60,000 thunderstones, some sold well and some didn’t.

The average price was around 80 cubic meters of universe

crystals for one thunderstone, for a total of 5 million cubic meters of universe crystals! If you add the universe crystals that the cloud contact vine received from stealing and ambushing and also the universe crystals that Luo Feng and his squad dug up, then they have a total of 6.8 million cubic meters of universe crystals.

"6.8 million cubic meters of universe crystals, which is 6.8 billion universe coins! Haha, even that Nuolan Shan family probably doesn't have that much" Thunder God was extremely happy.

"Calm down, this is just the beginning," Hong smiled as he said through his genetic energy, "Those treasures are the main part!"

"Of course I understand that" Thunder God smiled.

Luo Feng was also extremely happy. In theory, only the large organizations should have been able to obtain the valuable treasures in the world within a world.

However, thanks to his precise scanner, his first excavation led to over a million thunderstones. With that, he managed to get the 'life fruit' to mega evolve his cloud contact vine! With the evolved cloud contact vine and Babata, they began their big steal!

In terms of profit.....

Many 10,000 man squads couldn't even compare to Luo Feng's squad!

Only gigantic teams like the alliance under the ninth prince ‘Brolin’ earned more than Luo Feng’s squad.

However, the truly valuable treasures like the three accounts to the inheritance crystal, the password to the sector lord’s bank account, and the domain lord level bloodline evolution potion, out of the top 10 valuable treasures, Luo Feng only got one of the three life fruits. As for the rest, he didn’t get a single one!

The fifth day after Luo Feng finished exchanging.

On the plain, the nearly 600,000 large alliance army gathered around the castle. White light scattered across the land.

“Haha….. little kiddos”

Above the Thunder Castle, the image of the white bearded old man appeared. The white bearded old man hovered above the castle as he looked towards the surrounding alliance army. He spoke with a smile on his face, “Just now, the final treasure’s transaction has been completed. As of now, all 312 treasures in my possession have been exchanged by you people”

“Now, the exchange is over!”

RUMBLE~~~

The doors to the ancient castle started to automatically close slowly. Yet, the surrounding hundreds of thousands of people in

the alliance's army froze.

It's over?

The exchange is over?

"I still have leftover thunderstones!"

"I still have some too"

"I just purchased some thunderstones, what, what should I do now?" all of a sudden, many people in the alliance were exasperated. Some of them even started to roar in anger. To these star level nine stage fighters..... the thunderstones in their possession represented an amount of wealth that would make them drool.

But in the blink of an eye, the thunderstones turned into useless stones.

Once you can't exchange with them, thunderstones become worthless.

.....

Some people were enraged, some people yelled, and some people were overjoyed. No matter what, the treasures in the world within a world have come to an end.

“I bet there are still more treasures in that castle” Thunder God looked towards the castle.

“Even if there are, they aren’t ours” Hong let out a rare smile, “A castle left behind by a sector lord definitely won’t go down that easily”

“Our trip in the world within a world comes to an end” Luo Feng also smiled.

Suddenly, a messenger not too far away yelled: “Luo Feng, I’ve come to notify you that the treasure exchanging here is over. In a bit, our Three Axe Mountain’s army will depart! We’ll leave the world within a world and head towards the thunder world. From the thunder world, we’ll return to Cang Lan star”

“Understood” yelled Luo Feng in reply.

“Also….. even though killing people is forbidden in the alliance, once we depart, each army is no longer bound under the rules of “the alliance”, so battles could still occur on the way back. Please be careful and don’t get separated from the main group” said the messenger.

“Understood”

“Thanks”

Luo Feng and his group smiled as they replied.

They knew about this a long time ago. The so called rule of ‘forbidden to kill within the grounds of the alliance’ exists so that every squad can safely exchange for treasures! Once the exchange time is over and every organization returns to their own side..... some squads have reaped large rewards while others barely got anything. It won’t be weird for squads that haven’t earned much to team up with each other to steal from other squads.

“Well, we’ll be following Three Axe Mountain’s main group anyway” Luo Feng smiled, “Three Axe Mountain’s side has almost 80,000 people and two Universe level fighters, so it is very safe”

“And we’ll be hiding in the back” Thunder God let out a smile, “We’re just a squad of four, and our identity shows that we are under Lord Ming Yu, so we don’t have to go to the front”

Indeed, the first Three Axe Mountain group that entered the world within a world will stay within the center of the main group. And the main group never thought of using a four man squad, since the power of a four man squad is way too weak. Also..... when they are following orders and moving into formation, thousands and thousands of people are moving at once. A four man squad in the middle will just get in the way.

“The North Dragon Castle’s group has departed”

In the eyes of the other members of the alliance.

A grand group soared into the sky all at once. They blocked the sky and sun as tens of thousands of people directly headed towards the distance.

.....

“Three Axe Mountain, everyone heed my order——depart!”

A low sound carried out from the gorrilla brute in the core of the Three Axe Mountain’s main group as it reverberated around every person’s ear. And in the grand army, Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God, and Ao Gu were naturally a part of it.

“It’s time to depart”

Luo Feng’s group of four, like everyone else, soared into the sky at the same time.

The grand army of nearly 80,000 people exceeded the size of the North Dragon Castle’s army by quite a bit..... what kind of sight is 80,000 people soaring into the sky at once? It’s as if an infinitely large cloud covered the entire sky. The entire plains became black. The army transformed into a countless number of flowing lights as they headed towards the distance.

Chapter 46 – One Shot, One Kill

Allied base camp.

The ninth prince Brolin glanced at the vast army of the Three Axe Mountain flying into the distance.

“Your Majesty.” A bodyguard beside him spoke, “Are we still not leaving?”

“Don’t be anxious.”

Brolin said coldly, “Everything, I’ve already determined.”

“Yes.” The bodyguard didn’t dare to speak anymore.

Within Brolin’s mind, he thought, “Should I hit or not? Grandfather, you did give me an order! Now that the other powers are leaving the allied base, we can start a war…”

In the vast universe, the amount of mystery and wonder couldn’t be measured, the blood and flesh life forms had the human race and the beast race, both of which were uncountable. There were even other metal life forms, plant life forms, energy beings, AI life forms etc, too many forms of living beings, and in terms of dangerous places, the white dwarf star and neutron star were the most average.

There were even more dangerous regions about.

At the same time, there were other mysterious items that were deemed as treasures. These treasures had peculiar effects on the blood and flesh life forms, some others having other effects on the other life forms.

……

In the vast universe, there was a star field, the Black Dragon Mountain star field, and in it, Cang Lan Star quickly became the center point of the entire star field in a blink of an eye, with many strong warriors arriving and landing there.

The cities on Cang Lan Star were mostly segregated into the ancient city and the urban city.

The ancient cities had a million years of history embedded into it, and the Universe Mercenary Alliance base, was within an ancient city! This city's highest skyscraper had a loft with a big hall that was about 8600m tall, and about 1000 square meters, within such a big hall, there two large wooden chairs facing each other.

In front of the chairs were tea and cups.

The two chairs faced each other, each with one person in them.

One of them had a beautiful and handsome appearance, almost like a deity, with eyes like lightning engulfing the world, an

absolute warrior...Three Axe Mountain's sector lord Jiang Tian Chen.

On the other end, was a bald old man with an aquiline nose, his eyes peculiar...Black Dragon Mountain sacred land's Sector Lord Hargrey.

Among the two, the center of Jiang Tian Chen's forehead had a thunder mark while Hargrey's had an ice mark, even though the two hadn't unleashed any power, the entire large hall was still under the pressure of the thunder energy and ice energy's influence.

"Jiang Tian Chen, the conditions you've given, I cannot agree to them!" Hargrey's voice was hoarse, akin to two knives rubbing against each other.

"You'll change your mind." Jiang Tian Chen said indifferently.

The two belonged to the pinnacle of Sector Lord existences, in the Black Dragon Mountain star field, they both stood right at the peak! The only ones stronger were the Undying Beings.

That ninth prince Brolin was Hargrey's grandson, because of Hargrey's power, hence the ninth prince himself had so much authority and power. After all there were many princes in the empire, many of which were destined never to take the throne and without much special power or privileges.

However because of his mother's lineage, Brolin had much more power.

"I can only agree to six of them." Hargrey's eyes were serious, as though his gaze was piercing a hole in the space, "Jiang Tian Chen, if you agree, then it'll be a huge celebration."

"There are nine conditions, not one less."

Jiang Tian Chen shook his head, "If you agree, I'll pass the final inheritance crystal ball password to you."

Hargrey found it hard to suppress the rage on his face.

……

At the same time, in the virtual universe.

"Abu." Dressed in a black long robe, the old man Hargrey with the aquiline nose immediately appeared in a palace, within it, Brolin stood.

"Grandfather." Brolin's eyes gleamed, "Should I act or not? Any later and we might not make it."

"Do it!"

Hargrey ordered, “Make the move against the Three Axe Mountain people, kill their leading people and steal their AI computers. See if you can get the last passcode from them.” Since acquiring the passcodes from the thunder castle, they naturally stored them in the AI computers, and transferred them into the virtual universe, informing their sector lord Jiang Tian Chen.

“Understood!” Brolin’s eyes gleamed, with a sense of excitement and madness, “Grandfather, relax.”

Hargrey rubbed his grandson’s head adoringly.

Brolin seemed extremely docile, he was very clear that whatever extra power and privileges he had obtained as one of the many princes was from this grandfather of his! Even in the royal family...it still depended on power, with a Sector Lord as a grandfather, his position was obviously different. And any prince that could reach the Sector Lord level could immediately take the throne.

World within a world, allied base.

“Depart!”

With an order, there were close to 150,000 survivors of the Black Dragon Mountain sacred land, of which 60,000 could clearly hear the ninth prince. Following his order, the 60,000 rose up and swiftly left.

60,000 people flying side by side, after two days of flying, they stopped to rest.

“Your majesty, these are the 2,000 elites that have been picked out.” A bodyguard said respectfully.

“Hm?” Brolin looked at the 2,000 strong team before him.

“Very well.”

Brolin smiled, with a wave of his hand, a disc shaped universe ship immediately appeared beside on an empty plot of land, right! His storage ring could just fit an universe ship within.

“Arrange for them to enter the cabin of the ship, the lower cabin.” Bu Luo Lin said.

“Yes.”

His eight bodyguards immediately began the arrangements, the entire ship was separated into three sections, top, middle and lower level, every level had tens of meters in height. Hence, the every room within had beddings that could be separated into four levels! A room that was tens of square meters in space with a height of ten meters could store up to eight people, without even squeezing.

The entire ship easily stored the 2,000 people.

“Your majesty, the 2,000 man army is ready.”

“Depart.”

Brolin was high spirited, with an order, the ship immediately rose up and tore through the skies, heading towards where the Three Axe Mountain army had swiftly flown to.

……

The army’s flying speed could never compare to that of the universe ship.

Within the universe ship control room.

The ninth prince Brolin stood at the control board, behind him were his eight bodyguards.

“Master, there’s 120,000km until we reach the Three Axe Mountain army.

“Another 100,000km.”

“80,000km.”

“60,000 km.”

The control board's screen constantly reported, "About to make contact, 20,000km, 10,000km, 5000km. The ship decreased its speed."

"Scan the entire army, pinpoint the twelve important targets." Brolin ordered.

"Yes, master." This D8 grade universe ship's scanning area was a total of 200,000km, easily scanning everyone within the Three Axe Mountain army, immediately, a robotic voice resounded, "Three Axe Mountain army, a total of 78503 people, the locations of the twelve important people are..."

A large screen appeared within the ship.

On it, a scene of the vast army, with twelve lit up dots. Simultaneously on the left side of the screen, twelve head figures appeared, of which there were two Universe levels, a few head captains, and Luo Feng's image.

"Use the D6 grade laser cannon and bombard their army, this will throw them into chaos. Don't attack these twelve, these twelve all have treasures, their AI computers might have the passcode, it'd be a waste if it were to be destroyed."

"Arrange for another twelve to use the laser guns and kill these twelve."

“And during the chaos, swiftly send the team to acquire the treasures from these twelve. Especially their AI computers.” Brolin said coldly.

“Yes!”

The eight bodyguards complied respectfully.

A C2 grade laser gun, even though Brolin had brought nine initially, when the 2 million army entered into the world within a world, they too brought along more. Pulling out twelve of them was indeed easy.

“Go on!” Brolin stifled his voice, yet his eyes filled with anticipation.

The vast army of the Three Axe Mountain was flying in the skies, Luo Feng and his team of four were mixed in, laughing and chatting, their moods especially good.

“Third brother, we’ve struck it big, even after training till Domain Lord, we won’t ever have a lack of money.” Thunder God laughed.

“Don’t get overconfident and satisfied.” Hong smiled.

Luo Feng however communicated via spirit energy, “Everybody be careful, my scanning equipment was scanned…there should be a large scanning system scanning us.”

“A large scanning system?” Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu were shocked within.

“Right.” Luo Feng nodded, his expression serious, “All be careful.”

Luo Feng and his team all went on high alert, the entire Three Axe Mountain army however were still engaged in discussion and laughter.

“”Rumble!”

“Rumble!”

“Rumble!”

Three large black silhouettes, like three black holes descended on the large army, Luo Feng and his team felt like the entire land and skies immediately went silent. Without a sound or trace, they could only see the distant explosions and tremors, the hundreds of Star level 9 warriors vaporizing into nothingness, also the visible ripples from the explosions dispersed in all directions, sweeping past the rest of the army, with a large number of the soldiers getting killed, fresh blood erupting from their armors and helmets.

The first attack, without a sound or trace had killed everyone within a 100m radius, with a huge rumble following it, causing a large number of explorers to suffer from the aftereffects.

“Rumble…”

Another cannon shot!

Losing thousands of people, this was also due to the close density of the army.

“”This…”Luo Feng opened his eyes wide, shocked totally from the terrifying cannon fire.

“Chi!”

Luo Feng felt as though his brain had been hit by a hard stick.

Twelve beams of light descended from the sky!

In a flash, they hit twelve people within the Three Axe Mountain army, including the two Universe level warriors and the other head captains, even Luo Feng!

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

Twelve beams of white light!

Twelve people fell immediately!

“Third brother!”

“Luo Feng!”

“Master.”

Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu awakened from the shock, and the fallen Luo Feng could only open his eyes dizzily.

“What?” Luo Feng’s head was still ringing.

“That was twelve shots of C2 grade laser guns, the eleven other people in the Three Axe Mountain, including the two Universe levels have all been killed. You were saved by your cloud contact vine’s sturdiness.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s consciousness.

Chapter 47 – Return to Cang Lan Star

“What!” Luo Feng was shocked as he spun around surveying the surroundings.

“Rumble…”

Almost as though the land and skies were torn apart, a large enormous universe ship suddenly appeared in mid air, at the same time the bottom of ship automatically split open with large amounts of black uniformed armored explorers rushing out, flying downwards, forming twelve teams and madly rushing down like a mad wind. Also, beams of lasers constantly shot down in different directions at the Three Axe Mountain faction, causing the to be thrown into chaos.

“Block them!”

“Kill them.”

“It’s the Black Dragon Mountain people.”

“Kill!”

Roars of rage resounded from within the Three Axe Mountain faction, even though they lost thousands, the remaining 80,000 people were still those that survived through countless struggles and battles, even with the mad chaos from the sneak attack, they quickly regained their composure.

……

Mid air, within the universe ship control room.

The ninth prince Brolin coldly stood at the control board, through the external simulator, he clearly observed the happenings below.

After the first three pronged attack of the D6 cannon, along with the twelve laser guns repeatedly firing, especially with the 2,000 elite soldiers forming twelve teams and fiercely rushing into the confused army, the 80,000 man army of the Three Axe Mountain scrambled to gather and defend against the attack.

Close to 80,000 people, however they were separated and dispersed.

And the twelve elite groups were valiant, they even had laser guns, seeking the treasures from the twelve people, naturally their efficiency was high.

“No.1 success.”

“No.8 success.”

“No.9 success.”

“No.6 success.”

……

Messages began to come in, the elite teams quickly gathered the quantum computers or storage rings and immediately returned.

This quick as lightning sneak attack lasted no more than three minutes, those twelve teams swiftly returned into the universe ship and it accelerated and disappeared into the skies.

The Three Axe Mountain’s army all looked up and watched as the ship left, roaring with rage.

Among the crowd, Luo Feng and his team too were filled with rage.

“Luckily you had the cloud contact vine as protection, otherwise…That ninth prince Brolin is really scum, bastard, garbage!” Thunder god was incomparably enraged.

“Almost.” Hong’s expression too was ugly.

“That Brolin, is truly vicious.” Luo Feng could clearly smell the air that was filled with the metallic smell of blood, also looking at the distant lands where armors, boots, helmets, filled with minced meat, bones and bone chilling large amounts of blood.

Amongst which there were a large amount of bodies from the ninth prince's own elite team.

"Don't think so much, right now we can do nothing about it." Luo Feng growled softly, "We have to bear with it first and follow the army out, that's what's most important."

"Right."

Hong and Thunder God were also filled with rage, but they could only bear with it.

The Three Axe Mountain army swiftly regained discipline and order, obviously losing a few thousand didn't have much impact, Luo Feng however had some lingering fear, if that shot earlier had pierced through his brain! If it were a normal human, they'd die without doubt! However his life core was stored within his internal world!

Even if his head was pierced, it could still regrow!

"If that happened and if I was discovered even by the Three Axe Mountain army...I Luo Feng, have the ability to survive even after my brains have been blown to bits. It would definitely arouse their suspicion! Even the Universe levels, Domain Lords, Sector Lords on Cang Lan Star would all be curious." Luo Feng was afraid of that the most.

Within the universe ship.

“We acquired seven quantum computers and eight storage items.” The ninth prince Brolin’s face seemed encased in a layer of ice cold, staring at the quantum computers and storage items on the ground, saying solemnly, “This, is your efficiency?”

“Your majesty! Of the twelve shot by the laser gun, eleven died, there was one that didn’t. And when we went to retrieve the quantum computers, those beside the bodies also took some of them…hence, we only acquired seven computers and eight storage items, that alone was no easy feat.” A bodyguard spoke.

Brolin glanced at him.

That bodyguard shivered, not daring to speak.

“In the future, if you don’t do a good job, don’t find excuses, understood?” Brolin looked at the bodyguard.

“Understood.” The bodyguard knelt down on one knee.

“One person didn’t die, who was it?” Brolin asked.

“No.12 target.” The bodyguard replied.

“Hm?” Brolin creased his eyebrows, “I remember him! It’s the same punk with the universe ship.”

“You can all leave.” Brolin said solemnly.

The eight swiftly retreated.

Only Brolin remained in the control room, after which he squatted down and began to examine each device along with the storage items.

“Six treasures?” Brolin didn’t seem to care, carefully looking through the quantum computers.

“No?”

“We didn’t find the passcode data?”

“These computers, none of them were used to exchange for the inheritance crystal passcode?” Brolin’s expression ashened, panicking within before raging about and stomping hard around, destroying every one of the quantum computers.

……

Cang Lan Star.

In an extremely tall skyscraper that soared through the skies, two peak Sector Lords Jiang Tian Chen and Hargrey sat facing each other.

“Hargrey, I stick to what I said, if you want the final passcode, then, you have to agree to my nine conditions, not one less.” Jiang Tian Chen said calmly.

“You are indeed vicious.” Hargrey squinted his eyes.

The two stared at each other.

“I agree to your conditions.” Hargrey took a deep breath.

“Hahaha…”Jiang Tian Chen stood up, his face full of smiles, “Hargrey, it’s been a pleasure working with you.”

“The pleasure is mine!” Hargrey stood up, smiling just a little.

Jiang Tian Chen’s smile however was full and wide.

“Don’t be so unwilling. You want the inheritance crystal ball, so it’s not much for me to ask for these.” Jiang Tian Chen’s lips curled into a smile, “Also, a soldier of mine in the world within a world exchanged for the passcode and has the quantum computer! I’ve ordered him long ago to completely destroy it! That soldier himself, I’ve also sent people to kill him. Hence, no matter what you do in the world within a world, you’ll never acquire the last passcode.”

Hargrey’s expression ashened, before he managed to squeeze out a smile, “Respect, respect.”

“Same.” Jiang Tian Chen smiled, “Prepare what you need to, when the time comes, I’ll hand over the passcode to you.”

“What you want, I require a month to prepare.” Hargrey said.

“I’m in no rush! No rush at all, whenever you’ve prepared the things on your side, I’ll pass the passcode to you.” Jiang Tian Chen laughed, “Hargrey, then I’ll leave first.”

“I won’t see you out.” Hagrey said.

“Poof!

A faint sense of thunder energy was left in the large hall, Jiang Tian Chen who was originally standing there vanished.

Hargrey walked towards a large window besides him, from more than 8,000m above the sky, he looked down out towards the ancient city, his gaze piercing and cold, saying softly, “Jiang Tian Chen, you’ve gained quite a bit this time, next time, I’ll definitely make you pay back even more than now!!!”

Hargrey’s expression was malevolent, this exchange had cost him almost his entire wealth to be taken away by Jiang Tian Chen!

“Howl.” Hargrey roared with rage.

Poof!

The cold air blew and Hargrey too disappeared from the large hall.

After a short while, the doors of the large hall finally opened and two waiters walked in, exchanging glances, “The doors were locked and the windows were locked, where did they go?”

After flying for about seven days, they finally reached the exit, arriving at the Valley of Wind and Thunder in the World of Thunder.

After that, after about seven days of flying in the World of Thunder, the Three Axe Mountain army finally reached the exit... the exit to Cang Lan Star! The only thing was, this exit wasn’t as large as the black hole at the Valley of Wind and Thunder, that allowed about a one hundred to pass at a time while this one only allowed a few people at a time.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

The explorers all became beams of light and headed out continuously.

“This exit is too small, with so many people, how long will it take?” Thunder God floated up, looking ahead.

“Even though the explorers’ speeds are very fast, it’ll take about

an hour for us to get there." Luo Feng calculated and spoke, even if ten people passed per second, it took about an hour for 30,000 over people, to get to the center of the group, which was where they were.

"We are finally about to exit." Hong smiled as he sighed, "This trip was indeed mysterious."

"Yes indeed." Luo Feng smiled.

They originally came to take part in the trainee exams, who would have thought that they'd discover a world within a world and everyone forgot about the exams immediately, throwing themselves into the world within a world to gamble. This world within a world represented immense wealth! Obviously gambling was the right choice, Luo Feng's rewards were incredibly large.

In terms of wealth, it was comparable to a Sector Lord! Of course, they still couldn't compare to the pinnacle of Sector Lords like The thunder Sector Lord Kabu, Jiang Tian Chen or Hargrey.

In terms of power, the cloud contact vine too acquired a large breakthrough.

"We have quite a bit of wealth, however, the difference between our power and wealth is huge." Thunder God muttered, "We have to increase our strength when we return."

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded.

During the wait, with large numbers of explorers flying and exiting, it finally reached their turn.

“Let’s go!”

“Charge!”

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu became four beams of light and swiftly entered into the light waterfall.

Cang Lan Star, Ancient city.

A pathway was specially made in a wall of the vial, allowing a large amount of explorers exiting from the World of Thunder to fly through.

Sou…

Countless explorers continuously flew out.

All explorers, please gather in front.”

“Anybody who tries to escape will be killed!”

“If you don’t listen to orders, you’ll be killed!”

In mid air, Universe levels from different powers floated above, occasionally there was a Domain Lord. These strong warriors looked coldly at the group of lucky survivors from the explorer army. Sounds of angry orders resounded through every explorers' ears, causing the army to remain orderly and not dare to fly about recklessly.

"Third brother, look over there." Among the large army, Thunder God said shocked.

"Hm?" Luo Feng turned to where Thunder God was looking at, in the distance floating amongst the powerful warriors, was one dressed in dark green army, ears pointy, the cold looking Nuolan Shan.

Nuolan Shan sensed that someone was looking and him and turned to look, easily spotting Luo Feng among the group.

Chapter 48 – Meeting Ming Yu

“Not good.” Luo Feng’s expression changed.

Originally in charge of governing the discipline of the army, the moment he saw Luo Feng, Nuolan Shan’s eyes’ gleamed and he immediately rushed over.

“What luck! I actually got to bump into this punk, haha…meeting him in reality, I’ll settle this now for offending me. With my status, who would stop me?” Nuolan Shan was very confident, in the vast universe, it was indeed this way, a universe level’s position was tens of millions of times higher than a star level!

Breaking into the universe level was a huge step upwards.

A universe level killing a star level was indeed just like killing an ant. And Nuolan Shan was prepared to kill that ant Luo Feng!

……

On the flat land of the ancient city within Cang Lan Star, the Three Axe Mountain army flew down and prepared to gather.

And the distant Nuolan Shan kept heading towards to army center.

“This is the Three Axe Mountain army, Nuolan Shan, what is

someone like you from the Hundred Tiger Building doing here, what do you want!!!" A powerful fierce spirit energy immediately transmitted through the entire 70,000 army, causing the vast army of explorers to turn over and look.

Within an instant they all spotted the human silhouette in the distance rushing over...Nuolan Shan!

"That's Nuolan Shan?"

"Hundred Tiger Building's people?"

"What's someone from Hundred Tiger Building flying over here for?" The explorer army immediately began to discuss.

With 70,000 people watching him, Nuolan Shan who was flying over suddenly stopped, his expression ugly, scolding secretly, "That Luo Feng sure has guts, only a star level cannon fodder and he actually dared to transmit via genetic energy all over, that's, that's too arrogant!"

Within an army, one small soldier broadcasting loud enough for everyone to hear?

One theory, normally, soldiers didn't dare shout that loud. However Nuolan Shan didn't even know...Luo Feng wasn't a soldier of the Three Axe Mountain organization.

"Nuolan Shan, stop."

“Stop.”

“What are you doing here?”

Immediately five other similar managers flew over, these five belonged to the Three Axe Mountain organization and were universe levels. The five all had ugly expressions.

“These explorers, many of them bring along with them treasures from the world within a world, the sector lords and domain lords haven’t come to retrieve them. Nuolan Shan, you, someone from Hundred Tiger Building actually dares to come barging into our army, are you thinking of stealing the treasures? He a universe level, surely he wasn’t that daring!” The five universe levels raged within.

“Five sirs.” Nuolan Shan revealed a smile.

“Nuolan Shan, you want to barge into our army?” The five looked at him.

“No, not at all.” Nuolan Shan communicated, “I am but one universe level, the number of people on Cang Lan Star stronger than me ranges in the thousands to tens of thousands. With the domain and sector lords here, I don’t even dare to have such thoughts. I just spotted a personal enemy, I didn’t expect to see him today, hence I thought of settling it now.”

“Oh.” The five universe levels nodded.

“Who is your enemy?” among the five, a tall and sturdy man with hair like steel spoke.

“He’s called Luo Feng, he is but a small soldier in the army.” Nuolan Shan spoke.

“Small soldier?” The five exchanged glances.

“Five sirs, giving me that one small soldier, that shouldn’t be a problem right?” Nuolan Shan didn’t dare mess around, after all there were many other universe levels and domain lords around maintaining the discipline, if he dared barge in, even if the other organizations didn’t do anything, his own Hundred Tiger Building would personally deal with him.

“The treasures obtained by the explorer army hasn’t been retrieved by the sector and domain lords! At this time, not one soldier can be passed to you.” The five universe levels were all calm and clear with their regulations.

Nuolan Shan’s expression grew even uglier.

“Nuolan Shan, right now the other universe levels and domain lords are looking over, I think you should leave now.” The five said looking at him.

Nuolan Shan bit down and turned to leave without saying

anything.

……

Among the army.

Luo Feng watched as the distant Nuolan Shan, after being held up by the five universe levels turned and left bitterly.

“Nuolan Shan? We have to find a chance to settle him once and for all!” Luo Feng thought within.

“This Nuolan Shan, we definitely have to kill him.” Hong’s expression was heavy, he transmitted, “Otherwise with his Nuolan Shan family eyeing the treasures on earth, our earth will never find peace.”

“Shall we get Lord Ming Yu to act?” Thunder god looked at Luo Feng and Hong.

Luo Feng’s eyes’ lit up.

Right!

They would be meeting Ming Yu in a second, and he was a universe 2 star mercenary, a powerful one even amongst the domain lords! Domain lord Ming Yu, if he was willing, it would be simple! Afterall, as the levels went up, breaking through got harder

and harder. At the same time, the difference in power would only get crazier.

“When we give our treasure to Ming Yu later, we can ask for his help, there’s a high chance of success.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Luo Feng, what treasure are you prepared to give Ming Yu.” Thunder god transmitted.

“Right, Luo Feng, what do you think about this problem.” Hong looked at Luo Feng, as most of the contributions were done by Luo Feng during this treasure exchange, the 2 decided to let Luo Feng decide.

“A level 5 good genetic energy weapon.” Luo Feng said.

“Just 1?”Hong and Thunder god looked at him.

“Right, just one is enough. This one…in terms of price, even with Lord Ming Yu’s entire fortune, he would still have a hard time purchasing this.” Luo Feng, with Babata’s guidance, was very clear on which weapon and their prices, even though the thunder stone exchange price for this weapon wasn’t that much higher than the ‘Fire wheel’, the worst weapon they had.

However, in terms of price it was tens of times higher.

Ming Yu, a domain lord, even if he was strong amongst the domain lords, would probably not be able to afford it even with his

entire fortune.

……

Time passed, the Three Axe Mountain's explorer survivors were stationed at the ancient city's flat land. A few strong people began to fly over, taking their men with them. As time passed even more, the number of the army gradually decreased, 70,000, 60,000, 50,000, 40,000…

"Luo Feng!"

"Haha, I've finally found you four. This is truly a joyous occasion, haha." That carefree laughter resounded, a tall and sturdy Ming Yu floated in mid air.

Luo Feng's 4 man team long with 200 others flew towards Ming Yu.

"Lord." The 200 explorers slightly bowed.

Luo Feng's team of four stood together and bowed respectfully as well." Lord Ming Yu."

"Very well, let's go over to my villa and have a rest." Ming Yu brought Luo Feng's group along with another 200 adventurers along and swiftly left.

About 20km away from the flat land, outside the ancient city.

An old department store penthouse, Nuolan shan was looking at the flat land through a window, the moment he saw Luo Feng leave with Ming Yu, his expression changed greatly, “Not good! I didn’t expect Luo Feng to actually be under someone like Lord Ming Yu, and from the looks of it, Ming Yu treats him well too.”

“Killing him…is going to be hard!” Nuolan Shan violently smashed the bamboo beside him, CHI CHI, it crumbled into pieces.

An elegant construct, a beautiful villa on a grass land, the 200 explorers had long been sent off.

Luo Feng and his team of 4 sat with Ming Yu around a table.

Being brought over by Ming Yu, Luo Feng was somewhat disappointed…after waiting there for so long, they never got to see any sector lords! The sector lords all sent people over to bring the explorer army over, none of them personally came.

“Speaking of which, this trip was indeed a pity. I sent a soldier called Bendi who actually broke through to the universe level to get me a treasure. However even though he got the lowest priced treasure, it was still an expensive treasure.” Ming Yu shook his head and sighed, “Who’d expect along the way he’d run into the army of the 9th prince and have his treasure taken from him.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god exchanged glances.

This Lord Ming Yu was indeed unlucky.

“So how were your earnings from this world within a world?” Ming Yu looked at them.

“We exchanged for one treasure.” Luo Feng smiled as he looked at Ming Yu.

Ming Yu’s eyes sharpened, immediately lighting up as he looked at them.

“What treasure?” Ming Yu was anxious and anticipating.

Luo Feng’s thoughts moved and immediately a 3m long broadsword floated in mid air, on its surface were extremely complicated engravings, the peculiar engravings gave off an aura that made people’s hearts palpitate, the space around it seemed to tremor.

An incredibly huge and powerful aura, it made Luo Feng and his team’s face go pale.

“Lord Ming Yu, this is the level 5 genetic energy weapon Air Cutter knife.” Luo Feng said.

“Good, good, good.” Ming Yu’s eyes burned with intensity, staring hard at the air cutter knife.

Treasure!

Compared to the treasure that his underling Bendi acquired, it was even more valuable! This air cutter knife, was an incredibly expensive weapon.

After all amongst the level 3 weapons, the highest grade cost a few hundred billion, the lowest costing a billion black dragon dollars, a difference of a hundred times! One theory...the price difference for a level 5 genetic energy weapon was even more crazy. That fire wheel belonged to the lowest grade, while this air cutter knife was actually close to the top. Just one was enough to get a few tens of fire wheels.

“Luo Feng, this present of yours sure is big.” Ming Yu’s expression was complicated, looking at Luo Feng and his team, “Do you know the price of this present of yours?”

“An astronomical price!”

Luo Feng smiled, “It’s a price we are unable to even imagine, I only know that.”

“Right, astronomical! Even all of my wealth together doesn’t come close to its price” Ming Yu looked at Luo Feng, “I said before, I won’t mistreat you! State, any requests!”

“I want to kill a man.” Luo Feng said.

“Kill someone, what’s his power? Domain lord level what?” Ming Yu creased his eyebrows.

“Universe level 9.” Luo Feng said.

“Haha…”Ming Yu laughed, universe level 9? To him, that was simply too easy.

“Killing 10 of them would still be far below this air cutter knife you’ve given me.”

“How about this.” Ming Yu thought for awhile, “I’ll give 1/3 of my territory to you! No…that may invite trouble and people to watch you. Okay, I’ll give 100,000 life planets, from today on, to you to have half the rights, the other half remaining with me. However you can govern all the normal affairs, the earnings from the planets, the soldiers, I don’t care.”

“As for cash…” Ming Yu thought about it.

Chapter 49 – The Appearance of a Sector Lord

"Lord Mingyu." Luo Feng said, "I'm just a star level, having so much property and money is useless!"

Mingyu looked at Luo Feng, that iron rigid face revealed a smile, "Luo Feng, too much wealth and property, indeed you cannot use it now. However...I as a domain lord, how can I just receive your goodwill like this? What's more having a few properties and being the leader of these planets has it's advantages. How about lesser property, 10,000 life planets?"

"Hm...just 100 life planets." Luo Feng nodded.

Having more planets as property wasn't really useful to Luo Feng. Getting a 100 of them as his own was just customary.

"Alright, then a 100 planets, with a 100 life planets as property, it won't be too eye catching in the universe, you won't gain any attention from the bigger powers." Mingyu smiled, "As for cash, I really don't have much cash now...far from the price of this air cutter blade."

"Lord Mingyu, just give whatever. We three brothers have had a big enough earning." Luo Feng was very clear that he shouldn't be too greedy.

Otherwise the moment he got one the bad side of the other

person, that would mean trouble.

What's more...

He had acquired many treasures this time, this air cutter blade alone wasn't even a 10th of his other treasures combined, it didn't mean much.

"Give me your account number." Mingyu said.

"Yes." Luo Feng told him his universe galaxy bank's account number.

"Tsk tsk, universe galaxy bank. You have some money too." Mingyu smiled, at the same time sending a part of his consciousness into the virtual universe network and engaging in the transfer procedures.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God were secretly guessing just how much this Lord Mingyu would transfer over.

"Luo Feng, you've received a mail." Babata said.

"Open."

Luo Feng swiftly closed his eyes, his consciousness entering the virtual universe network and allowing Babata to open the mail, it was a notification from the universe galaxy bank...

“Respected customer, how do you do.

Your account with us has just received a transfer of 20 billion universe dollars, since your account has reached the 10 billion universe dollar margin, it automatically rose to a 2 star account. You will also automatically become a respected 2 star client. As a star client, you will receive several special privileges.

At the bottom of the mail, there was a list of the special privileges and their explanations.

Universe galaxy bank.”

A very simple letter, however it really shocked Luo Feng. Back on Jade rock star, Luo Feng already knew the meaning of a one star account. And back then the 2 universe mercenaries were only 1 star clients. Obviously being able to become a one star client alone was a very hard thing to achieve.

“So, once one saves 10 billion universe dollars he automatically becomes a 2 star client?”

“10 billion universe dollars, 1 universe dollar was akin to about 3300 ganwu dollars, 10 billion universe dollars, equated to about 33 trillion ganwu dollars.”

“1 planet’s price range is usually 1 trillion black dragon dollars, or 7 hundred million ganwu dollars. That means that 10 billion

universe dollars is close to about 50,000 life planets.

With that thought, Luo Feng was shocked.

The domain lord Ming Yu just gave him cash, cash akin to tens of thousands of life planets! To the domain lords, even that was a pretty huge sum.

Within the villa.

“Lord Mingyu.” Luo Feng stood up.

“Sit, sit.” Mingyu waved his hand downwards, Luo Feng suddenly felt a formless energy pressing on his shoulders, he couldn’t even resist, allowing himself to sit back down.

“Don’t think I’ve given you a lot.” Mingyu shook his head, his eyes with a sense of laughter and goodwill, “I haven’t you given you much at all, if you were to give something like the fire wheel, then what I’ve given would have been considered much. However, you gave me an air cutter blade, if I gave you too little, I would feel guilty, and I’d feel like I owed you…it would affect my training.”

“Poof!”

The space around slightly tremored.

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God and Ao Go were all shocked,

another person had suddenly popped up within the quiet villa, a tall and skinny cold looking man with 2 horns on his forehead, his black cape drifting in the wind, his eyes gazed over, it seemed also though both the land and skies were all within his field of vision.

"Lord general." Mingyu stood up and bowed respectfully, at the same time communicating to Luo Feng's group, "This is one of the sector lords from the 3 axe mountain."

"Sector lord." Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu quickly bowed.

Sector lord?

They had never personally seen a living sector lord.

Luo Feng couldn't resist sneaking a glance at the sector lord, his aura wasn't very strong but his eyes made one's heart palpitate with fear.

"Mingyu, your luck is not bad." The tall and skinny man stood there, his legs slightly floating in mid air, looking at Mingyu.

"Hehe." Mingyu revealed a simple and honest smile.

"Air cutter blade, I'm buying it." The tall and skinny man said, "This knife suits me well."

“Level 5 genetic energy weapon, I’m unable to fully unleash its power.” Mingyu smiled, “To be able to let the general use it is my honor.” Following which, Mingyu handed over the storage ring, retrieving the air cutter blade which he had just gotten himself, that thick knife floated directly towards the tall and skinny man.

The tall and skinny man extended his arm and received the air cutter blade, his eyes gleaming!

Chi! Chi!

Two beams of golden light shot out from his eyes onto the surface of the blade, the peculiar engravings on the blade made his eyes glow even more.

“Good blade.” The tall and skinny man gestured with the air cutter blade, swinging towards the sky.

Hua!

The clear blue sky became almost like a piece of cloth, immediately a rip of about 2 to 3 km long was sliced through, extremely sharp and clean! The crack could be clearly seen for awhile before it started to recover and return to its original state.

“Hahaha…”The extremely cold tall and skinny man finally couldn’t help but laugh out loud.

“Congratulations general.” Mingyu bowed.

“Haha, this is indeed an air cutter blade, My understanding of the space origin is only but a hair’s thick, however with this air cutter blade’s help, my power has been greatly increased.” The tall and skinny man looked at Mingyu, “Mingyu, I’m keeping this, naturally I won’t let you lose out on this deal. I’ve already transferred the money to your account, also…I owe you a favor!”

Sou!

The tall and skinny man immediately vanished.

……

Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu were still in a trance.

Before, the sector lord had suddenly appeared, taken the air cutter blade, sliced open a tear in space and seemingly vanished.

“Space tear? 2 to 3 km long tear?” Luo Feng was shocked within, “He was actually able to slice a tear into the space? Also… he teleported?”

“He didn’t teleport, but flew. Just that his flying speed is incredibly fast, as for not conjuring up any wind resistance, that’s because of the sector lord’s control of the universe origin.” Babata’s voice resounded.

“Flew? How fast?” Luo Feng asked.

When he left, his speed reached about 32,169km per second.”

Luo Feng blinked a couple of times, lightspeed was but 300,000km per second, and that sector lord earlier, even though he hadn’t unleashed his full speed, he was still able to instantly reach 1 tenth of lightspeed, indeed a power that could easily destroy a planet and all it’s life with a wave of his hand.

Within the villa, the tall and sturdy domain lord Mingyu laughed carefree before standing up.

“Luo Feng, I took the air cutter blade you gave me and sold it at a high price. I really have to thank you.” Mingyu laughed as he looked at Luo Feng, “Speak, who’s the universe level 9 you wanted me to kill before?”

“Nuolan Shan.” Luo Feng said.

Hong and Thunder God too looked at Mingyu anxiously.

“Nuolan Shan?” Mingyu was slightly shocked, his eyebrows creasing, “Him?”

“Is there a problem?” Luo Feng asked.

“A little trouble, but no big problem.” Mingyu shook his head

smiling, “He acquired the battle-axe warrior title, hence his chances of breaking through to domain lord is very high. Hence the Hundred Tiger Building has always treated him as an elite, however he hasn’t broken through after so many years, especially now that he’s not too far from his life span ending, plus his status in the Hundred Tiger Building has fallen, it shouldn’t be anything.”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God let out a sigh of relief, the three exchanged glances.

Nuolan Shan…

He had to die!

That way, they could truly find peace.

“Let me take a look, just where on Cang Lan star has he gone.” Mingyu closed his eyes, a formless spirit energy swiftly spread out, covering the entire Cang Lan star while intentionally avoiding the sector lords.

1 second later, Mingyu opened his eyes.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God looked with anticipation.

“He’s not on Cang Lan star.” Mingyu shook his head.

“Not here?” Luo Feng and the other 2 were shocked.

“I’ve already checked the entire Cang Lan star, he’s indeed not here now.” Mingyu said apologetically, “My apologies...if I ever meet him next time, I’ll definitely kill him and fulfill my promise.”

“It’s not the fault of Lord Mingyu, that Nuolan Shan just got lucky.” Luo Feng said, feeling regretful.

Such a good chance and they didn’t manage to kill Nuolan Shan!

If they could kill him with this one blow, then this entire world within a world trip would have been perfect.

Within the dark universe.

A universe ship was swiftly flying, within the control room.

“Teacher, we are returning so quickly, there are so many strong people on Cang Lan Star, such a rare gathering, wouldn’t it be better to stay awhile longer?” two universe warriors stood beside, checking the records on just how Mingyu and Luo Feng were connected.

The 2 universe level warriors shook their heads.

“I’ve asked around, no one knows.”

“Me too, no one has heard of Lord Mingyu having anyone important under him named Luo Feng.”

Nuolan Shan’s face was ashen while listening to his disciple’s replies.

“This Luo Feng knew that I wanted to kill him, hence he made a good relationship with Lord Mingyu. He would most likely ask Lord Mingyu to kill me.” Nuolan Shan thought, “And Lord Mingyu and I aren’t from the same organization, he wouldn’t even think twice…no matter, it’s better that I leave Cang Lan star earlier.”

Ever since he discovered Luo Feng and his group leaving with Mingyu, Nuolan Shan hadn’t been able to relax.

Following which, he immediately took his ship and left Cang Lan Star!

Chapter 50 – Inheritance Crystal

Since they couldn't kill Nuolan Shan, Luo Feng and the other three could only regretfully leave. They first went to the Universe Mercenary Alliance to hand in the items to pass the 'mercenary trainee exam'. Even though they didn't receive enough 'wind corner stones', Luo Feng and the others killed a bunch of teams that tried to rob them in the world within a world. From the items those teams left behind, they received some wind corner stones.

"Universe mercenary trainee! We've become mercenary trainees, haha....."

"The number of powerful fighters on Cang Lan star are as numerous as the clouds, let's leave earlier"

"Alright, depart to earth"

Luo Feng and the others swiftly headed towards the port, retrieved their universe spaceship, and departed Cang Lan star.

"10, 9, 8, 7, 6..... 3, 2, 1! Pass through the universe!"

After slightly shaking for a moment, the spaceship started to maintain a speed of 1.2x the speed of light in Dark Space as it headed towards the appointed direction.

In the control room of the spaceship, Luo Feng arranged for his old servant Ao Gu to rest. Luo Feng, Hong, and Thunder God were

extremely excited as they stayed in the control room.

“Same rules as always, big brother, second brother, each of you get four billion universe dollars” Luo Feng and the others were currently dividing the spoils.

“Third brother” Hong shook his head, “This time, you did all the work. All your second brother and I did was experience the world within a world, accepting this amount of cash is just.....”

Thunder God also shook his head: “Way way too much. We don’t even need that much anyway”

Yet, Luo Feng didn’t hesitate as he directly sent four billion universe dollars to Hong and Thunder God. Hong and Thunder God both received mail from the virtual universe network.

“Big brother, second brother, this amount of money is nothing. Our main wealth is those treasures” smiled Luo Feng.

“Yeah” Hong nodded.

“Just a single air cutter blade is worth so much, then all these treasures added together.....” Thunder God’s eyes were flashing.

“Oh yeah. Second brother, your thunder instruction manual set, a total of five sets” with a flip of his hand, the five mini quantum computers started hovering on top of Luo Feng’s hand. After that, these five mini quantum computers fell to the ground, “Second

brother, each of these mini quantum computers contains a thunder instruction manual. You can study them carefully”

“Sector Lord Kabu’s instruction manual?” Thunder God bent down and took out all the ‘chips’ of the five mini quantum computers and then plugged one into his own mini quantum computer.

“Feels great”

Thunder God was so excited his face turned red. He closed his eyes as he started to study the instruction manual.

In the control room, Thunder God was looking through the thunder instruction manuals while Luo Feng and Hong talked with each other.

“Third brother” Hong said seriously in a low voice, “The prices of the other treasures added together are extremely valuable, even more valuable than the air cutter knife. How are you preparing to deal with them?”

“Sell them” said Luo Feng.

“How?” frowned Hong, “These treasures are too valuable and will probably attract super powerful fighters. Perhaps not only will we not be able to earn any money from selling them, we’ll give out our lives in the process”

Luo Feng nodded as he smiled, “I understand that concept, but, I have a way”

“A way? What way” asked Hong curiously.

“I’ll keep that a secret for now” smiled Luo Feng mysteriously.

In truth, all these treasures added together are worth way more than all the property of a sector lord! More valuable than ‘Eternal Love’. Taking treasures like these out..... with Luo Feng’s star level strength, it is indeed hard to deal with. If he’s not careful, he’ll bring disaster upon himself as powerful fighters realize what is in Luo Feng’s possession.

If it was back when he just arrived at Cang Lan star, then Luo Feng would indeed have no method of dealing with these treasures. But now, Luo Feng already has a way to deal with them, and in a very, very safe manner also!

.....

Dark Space was extremely quiet. Around 21 days was required to go from Cang Lan star to Earth.

In the control room, after Luo Feng and Hong chatted for quite a while, they suddenly noticed Thunder God widely opening his eyes.

“Second brother?” Hong smiled as he looked at him, “Why are

your eyes opened so wide?”

“I didn’t see such a dumbfounded look on your face even after we received so many treasures, second brother” Luo Feng also joked.

Thunder God blinked twice and looked towards Hong and Luo Feng, “Big brother, thirdie, I need to tell you guys something”

“Hm?” Luo Feng and Thunder God exchanged glances. Something wasn’t right!

“What happened?” Hong looked at Thunder God.

Thunder God mumbled: “Didn’t thirdie say that he received the inheritance of Yun Mo Planet. I seemed to have..... received the inheritance of sector lord Kabu”

“Hm?” Luo Feng and Hong widened their eyes.

Inheritance?

Receiving an instruction manual versus receiving an inheritance are two completely different ideas.

“I just swiftly browsed through those five instruction manual sets and plugged in the five different chips” said Thunder God lowly, “Four of the instruction manual sets are actual instruction manuals. However, the chip of the fifth instruction manual

actually contained an AI! And..... it, it, it....."

"An AI?" Luo Feng and Hong realized something.

"It's that white bearded old man" Thunder God blinked twice, "He even congratulated me saying that I became sector lord Kabu's student"

"Lord Wu?" Luo Feng froze.

The main entity of that messed up living AI 'Lord Wu' is actually in one of those five chips? Sector Lord Kabu's student?

How come this scene seems so similar to the scene where he became the student of 'Yun Mo Planet's master Hu Yan Bo'?

However, his teacher is Yun Mo Planet's master 'Hu Yan Bo'.

And Thunder God became the student of sector lord Kabu who has already passed away?

"I bought five sets of instruction manuals but ended up buying second brother a teacher?" Luo Feng was speechless.

.....

World within a world.

After the huge adventurer army completely left, a few internal members of the Universe Mercenary Alliance—— a sector lord and two domain lords, entered the world within a world and arrived in front of the ancient castle.

“RUMBLE~~”

The ancient castle collapsed with a rumble.

“My lord, there are no treasures inside the castle” an extremely fat bearded man with pink skin who seemed like a ball yelled respectfully.

“My lord, the AI inside this castle is just a regular AI and not a living AI. The white bearded old man living AI in the castle must be on one of the adventurers in the adventurer army and left the world within a world” said the other skinny bearded man.

The sector lord in the black battle uniform set hovered in midair as he frowned: “If so, then whatever. The world within a world itself is a treasure! Contact the Universe Mercenary Alliance in the Black Dragon Mountain sector! The Thunder World will stop being the examination world..... I need to redesign this world within a world. This world within a world can entirely become a secret location for our alliance to train our men”

“Yes, my lord” said the two domain lords respectfully.

The black clothed sector lord hovered in midair. Suddenly, he extended both hands——

RUMBLE~~~

All of a sudden, the sky turned black. The powerful source energy of the universe constantly streamed from the core of the world within a world. This world within a world began its new renovation! Only a sector lord is able to execute such a task.

.....

Cang Lan star, an old city, top floor of the skyscraper that was over 8,000 meters tall.

The two sector lords Hargrey and Jiang Tian Chen sat face to face.

“Jiang Tian Chen, here’s what you want” Hargrey mindlessly tossed a flashing spatial storage ring which drew an arc as it landed towards Jiang Tian Chen in front of him. Jiang Tian Chen smiled as he extended his hand to catch it: “Hargrey, you sure are a good business partner. Here’s the final password to the inheritance crystal”

Jiang Tian Chen directly sent an email to Hargrey via the virtual universe network.

Hargrey also immediately received it and knew that it contained

the final password.

As a sector lord, it is very easy to divide a bit of his consciousness to deal with it.

“You won’t send a fake password will you” Hargrey’s eyes glowed as they scanned across Jiang Tian Chen.

“I’m not so shameless” Jiang Tian Chen smiled lightly, “Hargrey, you can go to the Universe First Bank right now to try and see if you can take out the ‘stored inheritance crystal'”

Hargrey directly stood up.

Whoosh!

He vanished into thin air.

……

In just a second, on the other end of Cang Lan star in a dreamy city, Hargrey has already entered the Universe First Bank’s extremely conspicuous building.

“Three star customer?” the manager of the Universe First Bank branch of Cang Lan star was a three eyed, hunchback old man with a shell on his back. Right when the AI system of the bank alerted him that a three star customer has arrived at the bank, the branch

manager rushed to the first floor's lobby as fast as possible to welcome him.

A moment later, the lobby of the 19th floor of the building.

"Mr. Hargrey" the branch manager bowed respectfully. Since he was able to become a branch manager on an important planet like Cang Lan star, he has a lot of authority. His authority allows him to assist, at best, three star customers.

"I want to retrieve an item" said Hargrey coldly.

"Retrieve an item?" the branch manager was confused. This Hargrey never stored anything at this location.

"An item from 10 million years ago" added Hargrey.

"Mr. Hargrey, an item from 10 million years ago must have been transported to the 'Ganwu Universe Branch' for storage" smiled the branch manager, "As long as Mr. Hargrey successfully gives the correct account number and password, we will bring the item from the Ganwu universe and bring it to the customer's appointed location as fast as possible"

Hargrey slightly nodded: "The account is....."

Hargrey swiftly gave the account number.

“The security of this account is extremely high, three passwords are needed” the branch manager helped input the numbers on the side.

“The first password is.....”

“Correct” said the branch manager on the side.

“The second password is.....” continued Hargrey.

“Correct”

“The third password is.....”

“Correct” said the branch manager.

“BEEP!”

The branch manager smiled as he looked at Hargrey: “Mr. Hargrey, in just a moment, the bank’s system will quickly give you the detailed information. However, from my experience, it will take about a month to transport something from the Ganwu universe”

“Okay” Hargrey held his breath from excitement.

He spent a lot of time and effort to get this inheritance crystal,

especially for the last password. Jiang Tian Chen took a lot of his treasures away in the process of getting the last password.

“Hm?” the branch manager’s face suddenly changed as he looked at the screen beside him.

“What?” Hargrey looked at him.

“Mr. Hargrey, I think, there will not be a need to transport anything from the Ganwu universe” the branch manager looked towards him.

“Hm?” Hargrey frowned.

“The stored item, is a recording” said the branch manager.

“You leave first”

Hargrey ferociously waved his hand.

“Yes” the branch manager left the room.

Hargrey stood in front of the monitor. An audio file appeared on the display. Hargrey’s face was sullen as he tapped on the screen. In a moment, the audio file which has been stored for 10 million years started to play: “I’m extremely ecstatic to notify you, you’ve..... been duped! Hahaha, so how does it feel, you mad? Did you sacrifice a lot for the three passwords? HAHAHA, I definitely

won’t give the three passwords to the same organization. I made you guys work like mad crazy for them and then ruined everything for you in the end. LOL~~”

Hargrey fiercely clenched his teeth.

“PA!” with a furious wave of his hand, Hargrey smashed the monitor in front of him into pieces.

“Three star customer, you destroyed the property of our bank. Please pay according to the price our company supplies” an electronic sound reverberated around the room.

Hargrey was extremely enraged.

“DIE!!!” with a furious burst, Hargrey’s powerful aura started to emanate and cause the various items in the lobby to blow up. Huge amounts of shattered pieces and dust emanated around the room.

“THE INHERITANCE CRYSTAL, JUST WHERE IS IT?” in the dust, Hargrey clenched his teeth.